











3 1833 01753 6563

GENEALOGY

973.006

AM3529A

1923





Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2012

<http://archive.org/details/americanav17amer>











# AMERICANA

(AMERICAN HISTORICAL MAGAZINE)



VOLUME XVII

January, 1923—December, 1923

---

The American Historical Society  
80 East Eleventh St.,  
New York

107794





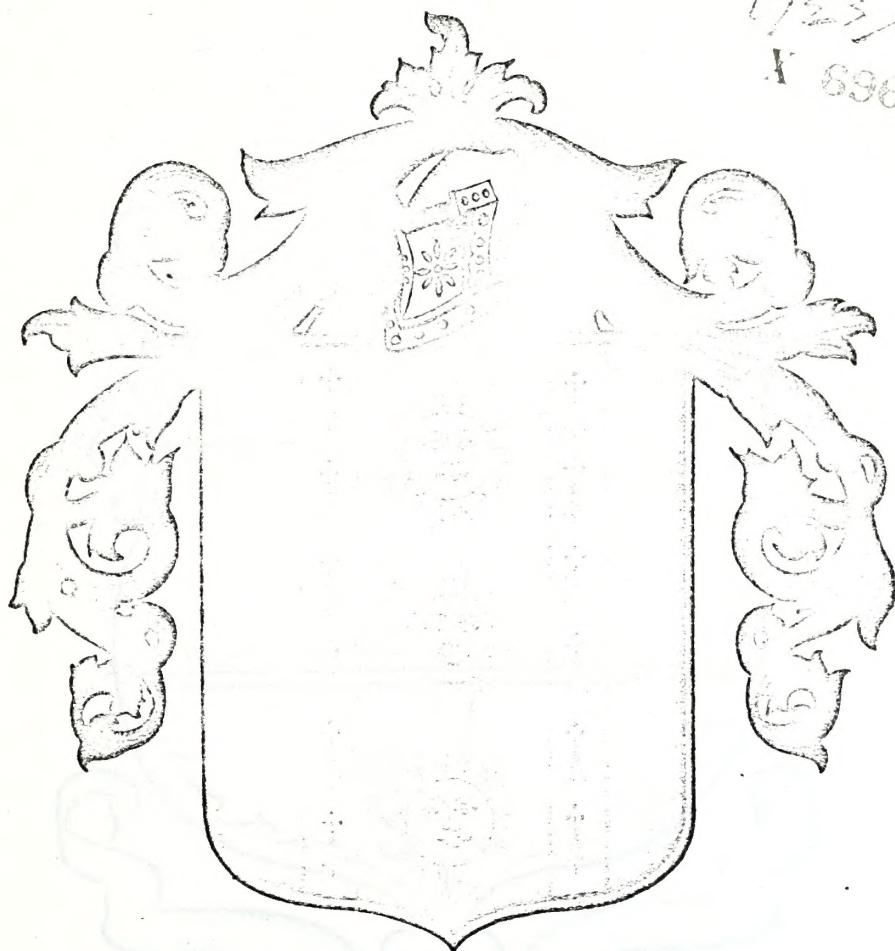
VOL. XVII

FIRST QUARTER

NO. 1

# Americana

ILLUSTRATED



1923/  
X 696384

Pierson

SAYLES

The American Historical Society, Inc.

167974





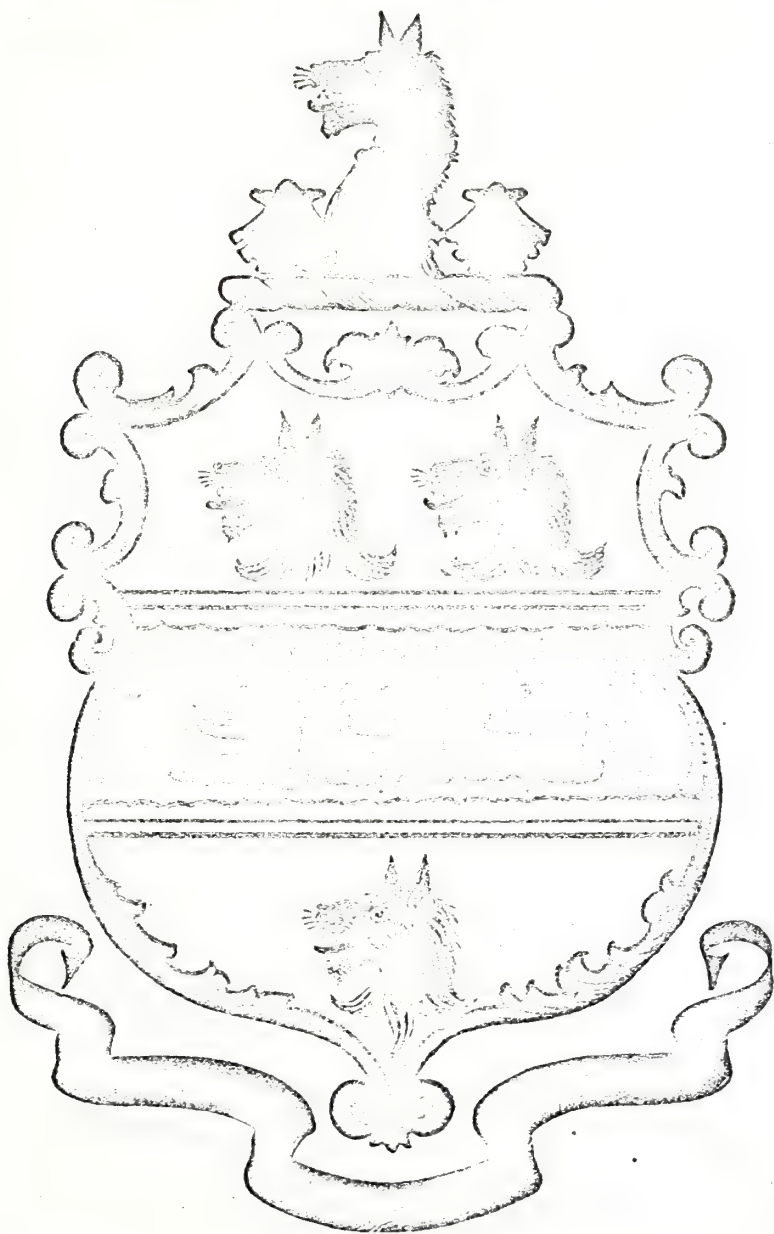
VOL. XVII

SECOND QUARTER

NO. 2

# Americana

ILLUSTRATED



SAYLES

The American Historical Society, Inc.



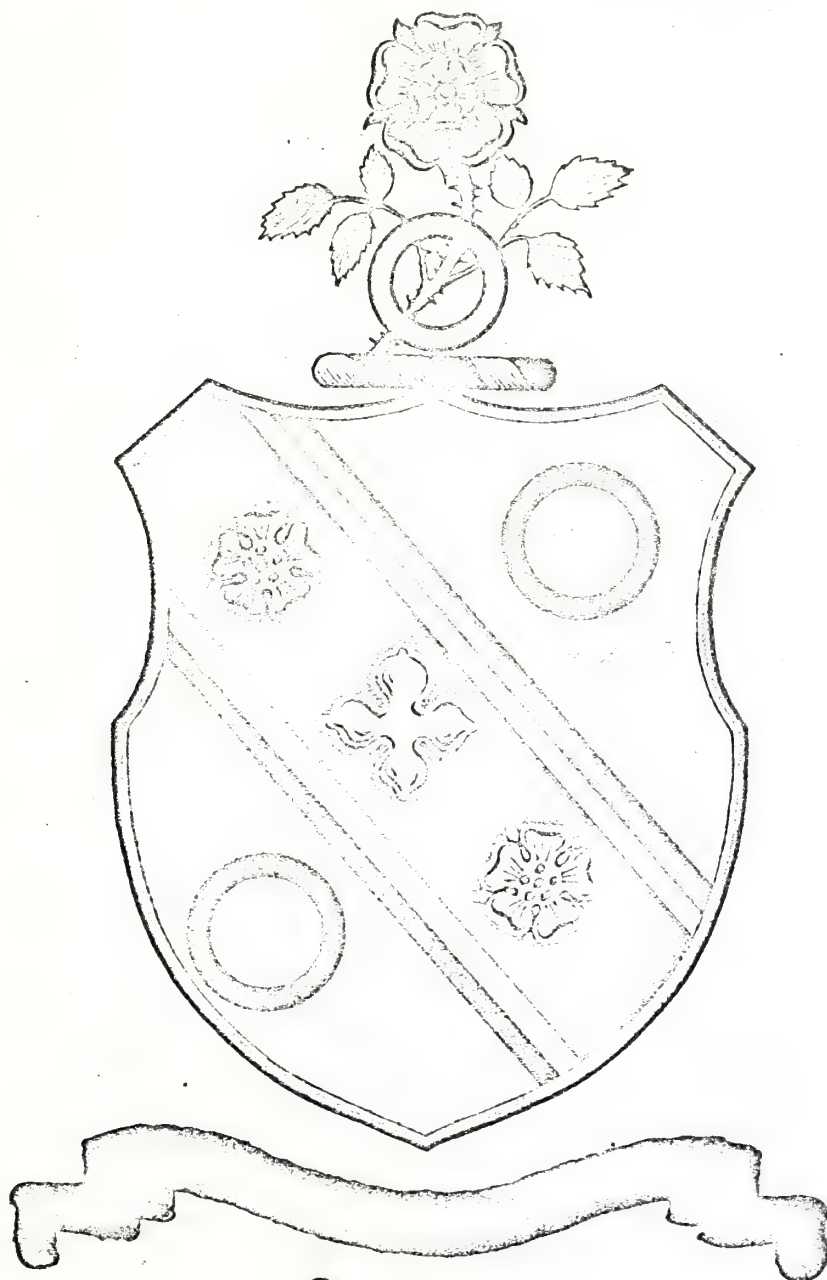
VOL. XVII

THIRD QUARTER

NO. 3

# Americana

ILLUSTRATED



Ames

The American Historical Society, Inc.





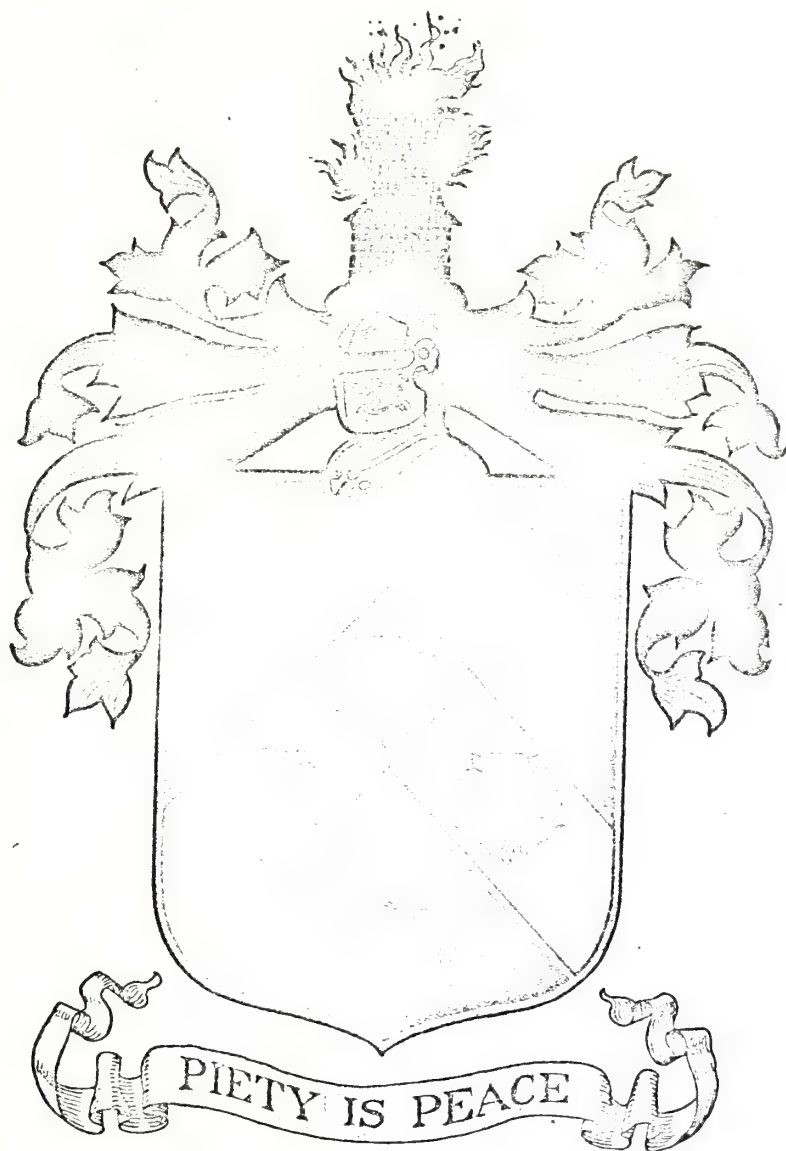
VOL. XVII

FOURTH QUARTER

NO. 4

# Americana

ILLUSTRATED

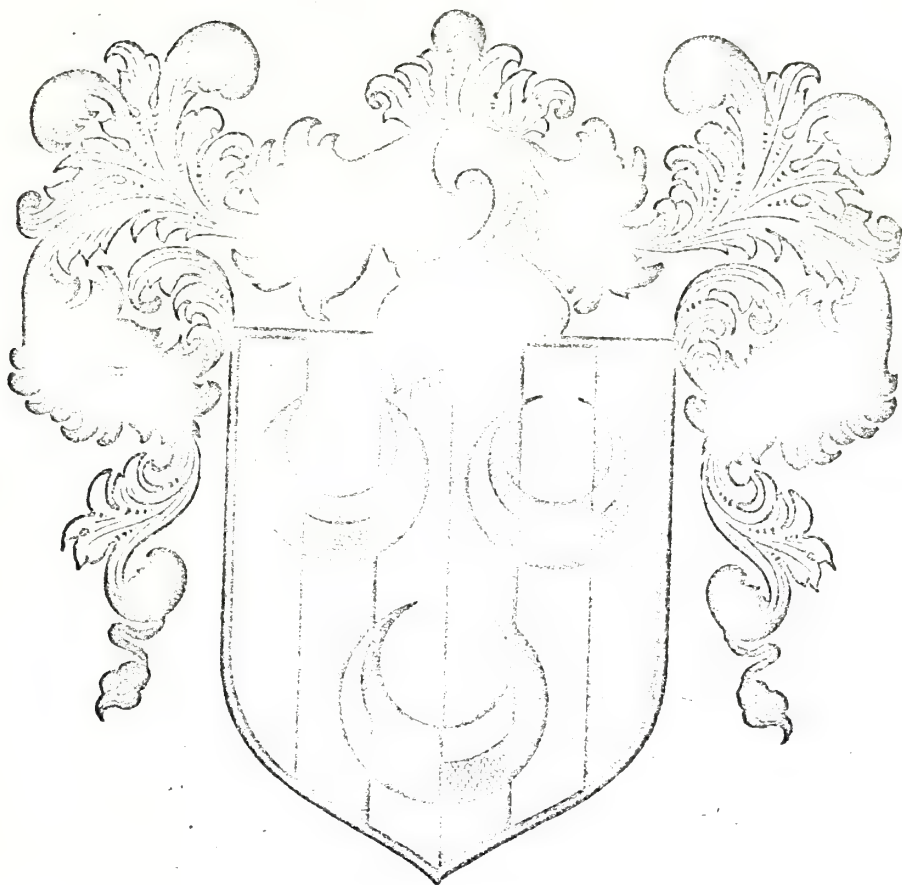


Hopkins

The American Historical Society, Inc.







Waterman



Copyright, 1923, by  
THE AMERICAN HISTORICAL SOCIETY  
Entered at the New York Post Office as Second-Class Mail Matter

---

*All rights reserved*

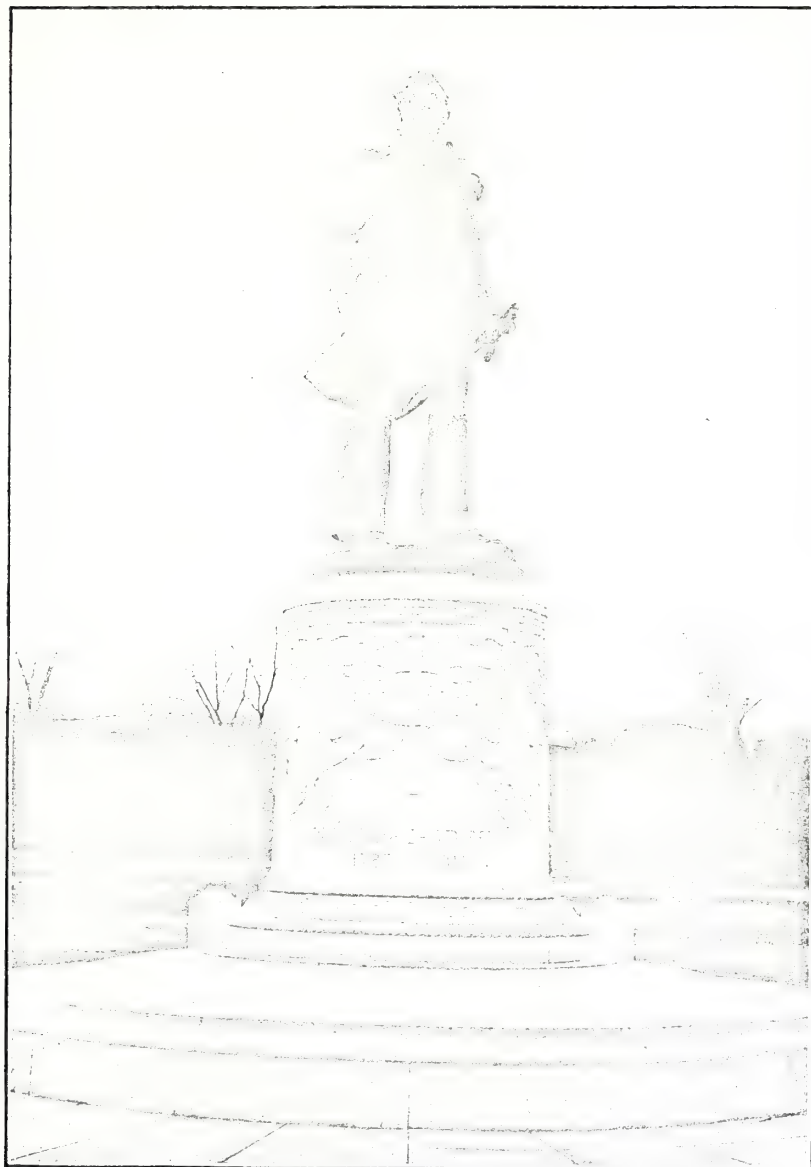
385738

(ii)

ENT  
RECEIVED  
MAR 28 1924







OLIVER HAZARD PERRY

Statue erected at The Front, Buffalo, by the Perry Centennial Commission,  
1915. Charles H. Niehaus, sculptor





PRESIDENT FILLMORE, AS CAPTAIN OF THE UNION  
CONTINENTALS, A BUFFALO HOME GUARD UNIT

From a photograph taken September, 1862, now owned by the  
Buffalo Historical Society



# AMERICANA

## JANUARY, 1923

### Literature of Buffalo

AUTHORS, LITERARY SOCIETIES AND LIBRARIES



THE CONDITIONS of pioneer settlements are not conducive to literary productions. While forests are being felled, lands are being cleared and settlements are being established, there is little time and less disposition on the part of settlers to engage in the fine arts. The subjugation of territory and preparing it for occupancy are the matters requiring the first consideration of any new community, and there is little opportunity for the exercise of the creative faculties. This condition may be rendered still less conducive to the cultivation of the fine arts by such stress and turmoil of social affairs as occurred along the Niagara frontier for a century or longer prior to the burning of Buffalo in 1813. Little can be expected from a community under such tumultuous and war-like conditions as prevailed in this region prior to the close of the War of 1812.

Aside from the literature attributable to the Niagara region which were the productions of explorers, travellers and visitors, little was produced worthy of the name of literature, prior to the advent of Smith H. Salisbury and Hezekiah Salisbury in 1811. That year they published the first number of "The Buffalo Gazette." The first book was entitled "Public Speeches delivered at the Village of Buffalo on the 6th and 8th days of July, 1812, by Hon. Erastus Granger and Red Jacket," published by S. H. and H. A. Salisbury, 1812. That book is reproduced in Volume IV of the Publications of the Buffalo Historical Society. Diplomatic and temperate as were the speeches of Erastus Granger, and eloquent as were the speeches of Red Jacket, the greatest of Indian orators, all contained

---

NOTE.—This narrative relating to "Literature of Buffalo" is from advance sheets of "Municipality of Buffalo, New York—A History," Hon. Henry Wayland Hill, LL.D., Editor-in-Chief. (Lewis Historical Publishing Co., New York and Chicago).





## LITERATURE OF BUFFALO

in that volume, they can hardly be classed as the literature of Buffalonians, though it may be said that Red Jacket, whose remains now peacefully rest beneath the heroic-sized statue in Forest Lawn Cemetery, poured forth the farewell sentiments of his vanishing race in words that will live as long as the words of any language will live.

The following excerpts from the utterances of Red Jacket show the sweep of his vision, the pathos and power of his matchless eloquence :

“When I am gone and my warnings are no longer heeded, the craft and avarice of the white man will prevail. My heart fails me when I think of my people so soon to be scattered and forgotten. But an evil day came upon us. Your forefathers crossed the great waters and landed on this island. Their numbers were small. They found friends, not enemies. They told us they had fled from their own country for fear of wicked men, and had come here to enjoy their religion. They asked for a small seat. We took pity on them and granted their request, and they sat down amongst us. We gave them corn and meat. Brothers of the pale race: We crave now, in our turn, but ‘a small seat’ in yonder domain of the dead.”

Hardly less touching and eloquent was the address of Chief Nathaniel Strong in Buffalo, on December 29, 1863, from which is excerpted the following :

“Thus perished the pride and glory of my people. His efforts to resist the advance of civilization among the Iroquois sprang from a mistaken patriotism. He knew not the irresistible power that impels its progress. The stalwart oak with its hundred arms could not hope to beat back the fierce tempest. He lived to see the power and glory of the confederate Iroquois culminate. He saw their friendship courted by the French and English monarchies, when those gigantic powers were grappling in a desperate struggle for supremacy in the new world. He lived to see his nation decline; its power, its influence, its numbers wasting away like spring snows on verdant hill-sides.

“I stand before you now in the last hours of a death-stricken people. A few summers ago, our council fires lighted up the arches of the primeval wood, which shadowed the spot where your city now stands. Its glades rang with the shouts of our hunters and the gleeful laugh of our maidens. The surface of yonder bay and river was seamed only by the feathery wake of our bark canoes. The smoke of our cabins curled skyward from slope to valley.

“To-night! to-night! I address you as an alien in the land of



## LITERATURE OF BUFFALO

my fathers. I have no nation, no country, and, I might say, I have no kindred. All that we loved, and prized, and cherished, is yours. The land of the rushing river, the thundering cataract and the jeweled lakes, is yours. All these broad blooming fields, those wooded hills and laughing valleys are yours—yours alone.”

The foregoing excerpts of Indian philosophy and eloquence, some of them in English, illustrate the flexibility, sonorousness and beauty of their language, as well as something of their command of the English language, of which they were apt students. If Buffalo had no literature of its own prior to the destruction of the village in 1813, it had the great background of Indian lore and French records, deposited in American and European archives, out of which is being produced by the Buffalo Historical Society such works as “The Red Jacket,” and other Indian papers, “The Life of General Ely S. Parker,” “An Old Frontier of France,” by Dr. Frank H. Severance, and others of priceless historical value. There are also being collected papers, manuscripts and books from European as well as from American sources of original material relating to the Niagara region. All such papers, manuscripts and books constitute a rich and copious collection in relation to this territory. Such collection in the Buffalo Historical Society is voluminous, as is the collection in the Grosvenor Library, and though Buffalonians, before the War of 1812, did not produce books or other literary productions to any great extent, since that time they have acquired from other sources and also produced many works of literary merit as will hereinafter appear.

In the development of the literature of a people, poetry usually precedes prose. This is true of the development of the Hebraic, the Hellenic, and other early literatures. We might expect that to be the order in the evolution of the literature of modern nations, were it not for the fact that back of them are the productions of the preceding ages from whose inexhaustible fountains they are continually making fresh draughts to supply their own educational requirements. That was the condition of the occupants of this territory in the first half century after the War of 1812. There was the imaginative aboriginal, the polished French, and the stately English literature, to draw from. The territory was rich in all essentials that constitute the foundation of good literature. How skillfully





## LITERATURE OF BUFFALO

those essentials have been utilized by the writers of Buffalo appears in their works.

Had this been a sterile rather than a region fertile in Indian lore, legend and song, as it was fertile in the thrilling episodes of peoples which had successively occupied it and whose adventures, hostilities and achievements comprise much of the history of the region, its literature might have been far less voluminous and far less illuminating. However, with such abundant data and records of the past, constituting a priceless literary heritage to the writers in and about Buffalo, much has been expected of them, and in that respect they have not fallen short of their opportunities. One of the earliest poems, of twenty-two stanzas, was that of Elder A. Turner, on "The Death of Mr. Job Hoisington, who fell in defence of Black Rock on December 30, 1813." One stanza reads as follows:

"British and Indians, all,  
The massacre began;  
Arrows of death, the leaden balls,  
Forbid our troops to stand."

Such productions were not uncommon, and were occasionally repeated at local entertainments.

During the early years of Millard Fillmore, who occasionally taught school, and was so engaged at Cold Springs, now a part of Buffalo, in 1825, one of his pupils produced eight verses on "The Death of Calib Dulittle," recently from Vermont, which were read at the New England Kitchen—one of the features of the Old Settlers' Festival. The opening and closing stanzas read as follows:

"One Calib Dulittle was his name,  
Who lately to this village came,  
Residing with his brother, Jeemes,  
Last Friday noon went out, it seems,

"To cut sum timber for a sled.  
The sno being deep, he had to wade;  
Full 40 rod to a ash tree,  
The top being dry, as you may see.

"Now, Skollars, all a warnin take,  
How Calib Dulittle met his fate,  
And when you have a sled to make,  
Don't let a tre fall on your pate."

To overcome such ignorance on the part of the pupils then in the village schools was not the least of Mr. Fillmore's problems.

Another effusive production of that period was the "Lamentable Ballad of sixteen stanzas on the murder of John Love by the





LAST DAYS OF THE COLD SPRING SCHOOL HOUSE

Millard Fillmore taught here when a young man



## LITERATURE OF BUFFALO

three Thayres," which appeared in 1826, full of orthographic and other errors. It is too long to quote, and has little or nothing of the poetic spirit. It is printed in Volume I of the Publications of the Buffalo Historical Society.

At the opening of the Grand Erie Canal at Buffalo in 1825, the following anonymous song was distributed on a broad sheet of silk and revealed something of the enthusiasm of the occasion.

### "MASTER DIXON—A NEW SONG."

"Ye brethren dear, who now unite  
In this grand scene of pure delight,  
We now have reached the glorious height,  
The level of Lake Erie.

"The waters of the east and west,  
The Hudson, Mohawk, and the rest,  
In sweet communion now are blest;  
They mingle with Lake Erie.

"This day we all rejoice to meet;  
The glorious work is now complete,  
The mountain's levelled at our feet,—  
Is levelled with Lake Erie.

"Accomplished is the grand design,  
The work of Level, Square and Line;  
O! Masonry, the art was thine,  
To triumph o'er Lake Erie.

"Where is the nation that can show  
Such streams as thro' our mountains flow  
To the Atlantic, far below  
The level of Lake Erie?

"The work of many a freeman's hand,  
A brave, a bold, a noble band—  
The guardians of this happy land,  
The conquerers of Lake Erie.

"Buffalo, O! who can ever view  
These works so grand, these scenes so new,  
And not admire, and love thee, too,  
Thou child of ancient Erie?

"Around thy paths I love to roam,  
For every house is here a home;  
I bless the hour when first I come  
To meet with thee and Erie.

"O! who will not this day rejoice,  
And lift on high his grateful voice?  
Come, men and women, girls and boys,  
Shout for Buffalo and Lake Erie!

"This happy day shall ever be  
Remembered as a jubilee;  
The Lakes, the Rivers, join the Sea,  
The Ocean weds Lake Erie."

There also appeared in the "Buffalo Journal," published by David M. Day, in January, 1826, a poem, of which the six concluding verses are the following:

"Let despots mock the joy with which we met  
Upon our shores our fathers' friend and son,  
And greeted him—the gallant Lafayette.  
Dare they insult the flag that bore him home?  
No! Europe never will again forget  
The due respect and proper courtesy  
Columbia's Banner claims upon the sea.

"My Muse wants breathing, she is too sublime  
For modern ears; 't were well to take good care  
Lest criticks ridicule her lofty rhyme,  
Which would, indeed, be a most sad affair,  
We'll lower our strain then, and devote a line  
To home concerns. 'Tis said that Buffalo  
Is soon to be a city, and I know

"No reason why she should not. The foundation  
Of Ararat we lately helped to fix  
And have had other public celebrations  
(According to my note-book sixty-six),  
And have a right to make our calculations  
Of future greatness. There is something pretty  
And quite harmonious in the name of 'city.'





## LITERATURE OF BUFFALO

"The year hath been to us a jubilee,  
A year of great rejoicing; we have seen  
Lake Erie's waters moving to the sea  
On their element. The bark I deem  
Which bore our gift, more famous yet shall be  
Than that proud ship in which to ancient Greece  
The intrepid Jason bore the Golden Fleece.

"Yet boast we not of mighty labors done  
In our own strength or wisdom; we would bless  
His sacred name in morning orison,  
Who stamped his footstep on the wilderness;  
And towns and cities rose, the busy hum  
Of congregated man, where erst He viewed  
One dark and boundless solitude.

"And the white sail now glistens on the Lake,  
Where late the Indian in his bark canoe,  
Bursting from some low marsh or tangled brake,  
Shot forth upon the waters joyously,  
Perchance his annual hunting tour to make,  
Where since the cultivated field, I ween,  
That savage mariner himself hath seen."

There were various other poetic productions more or less fugitive, and also such poems as "Invocation to Genius," "Saturday Evening," "The Hearthstone," "Address Spoken at the Opening of the Buffalo Theater," on June 22, 1835, and "Tehoseroron," all by Hon. Jesse Walker. There have been many other productions, some of which were occasional and others formal, by many Buffalo poets. Among such were the following writers, namely: Bryant Burwell, Edward Christy, A. Tracy, Thomas D'Arcy McGee, Guy H. Salisbury, Mrs. H. E. G. Arey, Agnes D. Emerson, supposed to be an assumed name, Rachel Buchanan Gildersleeve, Mrs. John A. Ditto, John C. Lord, Emily Bryant Lord, David Wentworth, Matilda H. Stewart, Anson G. Chester, J. Harrison Mills, Jerome B. Stillson, Charles D. Marshall, Amanda T. Jones, Elizabeth Kellar, James Kendall Hosmer, Rev. J. Hazard Hartzell, Jabez Loton, Mary E. Mixer, Clara A. Hadley, Augustus Radcliffe Grote, Mary Norton Thompson, Elizabeth M. Olmsted, Mary A. Ripley, James N. Johnson, David Gray, Annie R. Annan (Mrs. William H. Glenny), William B. Wright, Anna Katherine Green (Mrs. Charles Rohlf), Rev. A. Cleveland Coxe, Arthur W. Austin, Mary E. Burtis, Linda DeK. Fulton, Josiah Letchworth, M. J. Kittinger, James W. Barker, Joseph O'Connor, Esther C. Davenport, W. H. C. Hosmer, Grace Balfour, Ellen M. Ferris, Irving Browne, Allen Gilman Bigelow, John Charles Shea, Mary Evelyn Austin, Frederic Almy, Eugene V. Chamberlain, Mary J. MacColl, Agnes B. Earl,



## LITERATURE OF BUFFALO

Minnie Ferris Hauenstein, Josephine Wilhelm Wickser, Katherine E. Conway, William McIntosh, Rev. Patrick Cronin, Frank H. Severance, Edmund J. Plumley, Charles S. Parke, Frederick Peterson, George Hibbard, Carrie Judd Montgomery, Ada Davenport Kendall, Henry A. VanFredenberg, Henry R. Howland, Bessie Chandler, Rowland B. Mahany, Julia Ditto Young, Mark S. Hubbell, Walter Storrs Bigelow, Agnes Shalloe, Sophie Jewett, Theodore Francis MacManus, Charles Carroll Albertson, Willard E. Keyes, Charlotte Rosalys Martin, Walter Clark Nichols, Helen Thayer Hutcheson, Elizabeth Flint Wade, Frances Hubbard Larkin, Cypress Spurge, Emily M. Howard, David Gray, Jr., Irving S. Underhill, Hannah G. Fernald, Jesse Storrs Ferris, Edith Eaton Cutter, Arthur Detmers, Rev. Albert T. Chester, Hon. James Torrington Spencer, Anne Murray Larned, Rose Mills Powers, Sarah Evans Letchworth, Emily Howland Leeming, Marrion Wilcox, Charlotte Becker, Richard Watson Gilder, Aline Glenney, Caroline Mischka Roberts, Thekla Adam, Jane F. Dowling, S. Cecilia Cotter King (Mrs. William A. King), Philip Becker Goetz, Donald Bain, James S. Metcalf, Carlton Sprague, Robert Cameron Rogers, John D. Wells, George K. Staples, Walter M. Zink, Thomas S. Chard, William McIntosh, Arthur W. Austin, Mary L. Hall, Harriet E. Benedict, Mrs. Emily Thatcher Bennett, Antoinette Haven, Matilda Stewart, Charlotte L. Seaver, Katherine E. Conway, Mrs. James F. Gluck and others.

Some of the foregoing writers produced only occasional verses, and they can hardly be said to be entitled to the appellation, "poet." Some of them were not residents of Buffalo, but wrote the poems to be used on some public occasion in Buffalo. Others, while passing through Buffalo, wrote concerning it, or of Lake Erie and the Niagara region, as did Thomas Moore, who in his poem from Buffalo upon Lake Erie to the Honorable W. R. Spencer thus soliloquized:

"As far from thee my lonely course I take,  
No bright remembrance o'er the fancy plays,  
No classic dream, no star of other days,  
Has left that visionary glory here,  
That relic of its light, so soft, so dear,  
Which gilds and hallows even the rudest scene,  
The humblest shed, where genius once has been!  
\* \* \* \* \*

"Even now, as, wandering upon Erie's shore,  
I hear Niagara's distant cataract roar."



## LITERATURE OF BUFFALO

No part of our fair domain has been visited by more writers from this and other countries than the Niagara region, and their poems and other productions occasioned thereby would fill volumes, constituting a unique literature of Niagara. It is not our purpose, however, to undertake to enumerate all who, from the visit of Father Hennepin in 1678 to the present, have written of Niagara, Lake Erie, and the region about Buffalo. The names of those already given will suffice to indicate something of the extent of the interest which the people of this city have taken in poetic composition, or in that which "embodies the product of the imagination and fancy and appeals to these powers in others, as well as to the finer emotions, the sense of ideal beauty and the like."

Many Buffalonians have drunk deep at the Pierian fountain of the Muses, and for nearly a century have poured forth their lyrics and other poetic compositions in continuous succession. Many will be found in the anthology entitled "The Poets and Poetry of Buffalo," by James N. Johnston, and others are listed in the paper entitled "The Authors of Buffalo," by Frank H. Severance, and still others are to be found in miscellaneous publications.

In addition to the poems already mentioned, only a few others can be particularized. One of Buffalo's best known poets in the sixties was Guy H. Salisbury, whose poem entitled "Buffalo" contains the following stanzas:

"By Erie's blue and sparkling sea  
The tangled forest grew,  
And red men o'er the silver waves  
Paddled the light canoe.  
No pale-face then had sought its shore  
With rail, or steam, or venturous oar,  
To wake the echoes there;  
The wild beast ranged the solemn wood  
To find in its dim solitude  
His rude and lonely lair.

"The white men came to make their homes  
Amid the wilderness,  
And back the savage tribes recede  
As on the intruders press.  
The forests sink, the plough's sharp edge  
Soon cleaves the virgin soil,  
And waving harvest-fields repay  
The thoughtful sower's toil.  
The village streets on every side  
Their lengthened lines extend,  
And dwellings rise, whose circling smoke  
From household hearths ascend.

"Fair Commerce comes and spreads the sail,

Her engines vex the tide;  
And broad canals rich products bear  
To Ocean's distant side.  
Art comes and rears the stately pile—  
Temples of the Living God—  
And beauteous homes adorn the spot  
Where savage men abode.

"History her classic store outspreads,  
And Genius wakes the lyre,  
And workers shape their wondrous things  
By forge and furnace fire.  
A teeming city stands to-day  
Where once the hamlet stood,  
And lofty spires their shafts uprear  
Where waved the sylvan wood.

"No hoary seat of ancient lore  
Hath here scholastic bowers,  
But Learning yet hath many shrines  
In this dear home of ours.  
The people's sons, or rich or poor,  
Her priceless boon may share,  
And Wisdom's mines reward but toil  
And earnest delvers there."





## LITERATURE OF BUFFALO

Another short production illustrative of Buffalo poets is that of Charles D. Marshall, entitled "The Poet's Thought:"

"The poet roams through flower-strewn meads  
And plucks a bright bouquet;  
He binds it with a thread of thought;—  
It lives its little day.

"But soon the chilling breath of Time  
Shall strew the leaves around;  
The cold world with its iron heel  
Will crush them in the ground.

"But let this truth his sad heart cheer  
And soothe in hour of need;  
Beneath the calyx of each flower  
Lies hidden precious seed,

"Which borne upon the changing wind,  
Wafted by every air,  
Will find rich soil in some fond heart,  
Take root, and blossom there."

Dr. John C. Lord, "whose fancy," said James O. Putnam, "literally revelled in the imagery of the Hebrew melodists," contributed several poems to the literature of the region. The first of these is entitled "Buffalo," and reads as follows:

"Queen of the lakes, whose tributary seas  
Stretch from the frozen regions of the North  
To Southern climates, where the wanton breeze  
O'er field and forest goes rejoicing forth:

"As Venice, to the Adriatic Sea  
Was wedded, in her brief, but glorious day;  
So broader, purer waters are to thee,  
To whom a thousand streams a dowry pay.

"What tho' the wild winds o'er thy waters sweep,  
While lingering Winter howls along thy shore,  
And solemnly 'deep calleth unto deep,'  
While storm and cataract responsive roar—

"'Tis music fitting for the brave and free,  
Where Enterprise and Commerce vex the waves;  
The soft voluptuous airs of Italy  
Breathe among ruins and are wooed by slaves.

"Thou art the Sovereign City of the Lakes,  
Crowned and acknowledged; may thy fortune be  
Vast as the domain which thy empire takes,  
And Onward as the waters to the sea."

Dr. John C. Lord dedicated an ode to the Union Continentals, entitled "Forward! March," which opened and closed with the following stanza:



## LITERATURE OF BUFFALO

"For altars and for firesides,  
For the Country and for God,  
For the State our fathers founded,  
For the soil on which they trod,  
For loyal brethren trembling  
Beneath a traitor's nod—  
Forward! March!"

One of the best poems of the late Robert Cameron Rogers was that delivered at the dedication of the Pan-American Exposition in May, 1901. Its second stanza reads as follows:

"Enchanted city where the dreaming soul  
Conjures the minarets of far Cathay—  
And half expects along some waterway  
To hear all Venice in a barcarole;  
Mistress of moods, across whose changing face  
Half of old Spain and half of Greece we trace;  
Hither the nations of the West have brought  
Fruit of their labour, flower of their thought;  
Best of their best besides our best finds place:  
The Saxon vigor vies with Latin grace;  
And tithes are paid in product and in art.  
But in all this the past as well has part.  
The imperial cities of the world have shown  
Tributes as beautiful at worthy shrines;  
Something is here that moves on different lines;  
A master-thought that we would claim our own;  
A magic word—a dominant that cries  
Insistent through this fugue of industries."

The following are the concluding stanzas of the lyric poem of Frank H. Severance, entitled "This Greater Buffalo:":

"The New World's grandest marvel, this: to blend  
In one new type the sons of divers strain,  
Begetting here a brotherhood  
Of purer blood  
And stronger brain,  
Of loftier thought and broader view,  
Of clearer vision for the true.

"Cities are built on ashes, and on lives  
Without fruition, save that this survives:  
A field more fallow for the common good,  
A higher level of true brotherhood.  
We Babel-builders with our cry of 'great'  
Should sanctify instead  
This dowry of the dead.  
That city only is of high estate  
Whose sons and daughters in themselves are great.

"Art, Science, Letters,—lo,  
Handmaidens of the Worthier Buffalo.  
Theirs still the ministering part—  
The end and mission of all art—  
To wake to new life, and control  
The latent forces of the soul."



## LITERATURE OF BUFFALO

In 1868, William B. Wright brought out his "Highland Ramblers," and in 1873 "The Brook and Other Poems." The fading year is beautifully portrayed by William B. Wright in the following lines:

"The year moves to its sad decline,  
A dull gray mist enfolds the hills,  
The flowers are dead, the thickets pine,  
In other lands the swallow trills;  
For since they stole his Summer flute  
The moping Pan sits stark and mute:  
The slow hooves of the feeding kine  
Crack the herbage as they pass;  
The apples glimmer in the grass,  
And woods are yellow, woods are brown,  
The vine about the elm is red,  
Crow and hawk fly up and down,  
But for the wood-thrush, he is dead;  
The ox forsakes the chilly shadow,  
Only the cricket haunts the meadow.

"The feast is ending, the guests are going,  
In bands or singly they quit the board;  
The torch is paling, the flutes stop blowing,  
The meat is eaten, the wine is poured."

Bishop Arthur Cleveland Coxe was a learned, vigorous and voluminous writer in prose, as well as a gifted poet. He brought out his "Athwold," his first collection of poems, in 1838. His "Christian Ballads" appeared in 1840, his "Athanasian and Other Poems" in 1845, and his "Pascal, a Collection of Easter Poems," in 1889. His poems were popular in England as well as in America, as may be assumed from such as the following stanza:

"Now pray we for our country  
That England long may be  
The holy and the happy  
And the gloriously free."

The following are from his "Carol" and show something of his power as a poet:

"I know—I know where the green leaves grow,  
When the woods without are bare;  
Where a sweet perfume of the woodland's bloom  
Is afloat on the winter air!  
When tempest strong hath howled along,  
With his war-whoop wild and loud,  
Till the broad ribs broke of the forest oak,  
And his crown of glory bowed;  
I know— I know where the green leaves grow,  
Though the groves without are bare,  
Where the branches nod of the trees of God,  
And the wild vines flourish fair.





## LITERATURE OF BUFFALO

"I know—I know where blossoms blow  
The earliest of the year;  
Where the passion-flower, with a mystic power,  
Its thorny crown doth rear;  
Where crocus breathes and fragrant wreaths  
Like a censer fill the gale;  
Where cow-slips burst to beauty first,  
And the lily of the vale;  
And snow-drops white and pansies bright  
As Joseph's colored vest;  
And laurel-tod from the woods of God,  
Where the wild-bird builds her nest.

"I know—I know where the waters flow  
In a marble font and nook,  
When the frosty sprite in his strange delight  
Hath fettered the brawling brook,  
When the dancing stream, with its broken gleam,  
Is locked in its rocky bed;  
And the sing-song fret of the rivulet  
Is hush as the melted lead;  
Oh, then I know where the waters flow  
As fresh as the spring-time flood,  
When the spongy sod of the fields of God  
And the hedges are all in bud.

"I know—I know no place below,  
Like the home I fear and love;  
Like the stilly spot where the world is not  
But the nest of the Holy Dove.  
For there broods He 'mid every tree  
That grows at the Christmas-tide,  
And there, all year, o'er the font so clear,  
His hovering wings abide!  
And so, I know no place below  
So meet for the bard's true lay,  
As the alleys broad of the Church of God,  
Where Nature is green for aye."

The literature of Buffalo has been enriched by the productions of many other gifted poets, none of whom, however, has sung more sweetly nor more ideally than David Gray, for a long time on the editorial staff of "The Courier." His immortal epic, "The Last of the Kah-Kwahs," is a gem of such rare beauty that it will be treasured as long as the English language continues to be the vehicle for the transmission of sublime thoughts. The Kah-Kwahs were supposed to be the Neutral Nation of Indians who occupied the site of Buffalo previous to its conquest by the Senecas. In the year 1647 it is said that the Neutral Nation was destroyed by the Iroquois, as the result of a relentless war arising from a quarrel which occurred at a place known as Tu-shu-way, the Indian village, located in the place of the linden or bass-wood trees on the Buffalo river. The following stanzas are from that celebrated poem of



## LITERATURE OF BUFFALO

David Gray, which is founded upon the foregoing legendary Indian history:

"The city sleeps; its changing features fade  
In the green depths of many a rustling glade;  
The wind of summer whispers sweet and low  
'Mong trees that waved three hundred years ago.  
The streamlet seeks the path it knew of yore,  
And Erie murmurs to a lonely shore;  
The birds are busy in their leafy towers  
The trampled earth is wild again with flowers;  
And the same River rolls in changeless state,  
Eternal, solemn, deep and strong as fate.  
It is the time when still the forest made  
For its dusk children a protecting shade;  
And by these else untrodden shores they stood,  
Embodied spirits of the solitude!  
When still at dawn, or day's serener close,  
The smoke-wreaths of the Kah-Kwah lodges rose.

"No hoary legend of their past declares  
Through what uncounted years our home was theirs—  
How oft they hailed, new-glittering in the West,  
The moon, a phantom-white canoe, at rest  
In deeps of purple twilight—this alone  
Of all their vanished story has not flown;  
That, through unnumbered summers' long increase,  
The Neutral Nation was the home of peace.  
Far to the north the Huron war-whoop rang,  
And eastward, on the stealthy war-path, sprang  
The wary Iroquois; but like the isle  
That, locked in wild Niagara's fierce embrace,  
Still wears the smile of summer on its face—  
(Love in the clasp of Madness)—so the while  
With peace the Kah-Kwah villages were filled.  
And, as the Lake's dark heart of storm is stilled,  
The fury of its surge constrained to calm  
Beneath the touch of winter's marble palm,  
So, when the braves of warring nations met,  
They changed the hatchet for the calumet,  
And hid with stolid face their mounting ire  
From the bright glimmer of the Kah-Kwah fire.

"Year followed year, and peaceful Time had cast  
A misty autumn sunshine o'er the past,  
And, to the hearts that calmly summered there,  
The forehead of the future shone as fair;  
Save that perchance some wise and wakeful ear  
In the great River's ceaseless song could hear,  
Through the mirk midnight, when the wind was still,  
The murmured presage of approaching ill.

"It came at last—the nation's evil day,  
Whose rayless night should never pass away.  
A calm foreran the tempest, and, a space,  
Fate wore the mask of joy upon his face.  
It was a day of revel, feast and game,  
When from the far-off Iroquois there came  
A hundred plumed and painted warriors, sent  
To meet the Kah-Kwah youth in tournament.  
And legend tells how sped the mimic fight;



## LITERATURE OF BUFFALO

And how the festal fire blazed high at night  
And laugh and shout through all the greenwood rang;  
Till, at the last, a deadly quarrel sprang,  
Whose shadow, as the frowning guests withdrew,  
Deepened, and to a boding war-cloud grew.  
And not for long the sudden storm was stayed;  
It burst in battle, and in many a glade  
Were leaves of green with crimson crost,  
As if by finger of untimely frost.  
Fighting they held the stubborn pathway back,  
The foe relentless on their homeward track;  
Till the thinned remnant of the Kah-Kwah braves  
Chose, where their homes had been, to make their graves.  
And rallied for the last and hopeless fight,  
With the blue ripples of the lake in sight.

"Could wand of magic bring that scene again  
Back, with its terrors, to the battle-plain,  
Into these silent streets the wind would bear  
Its mingled cry of triumph and despair;  
And all the nameless horror of the strife,  
That only ended with a nation's life,  
Would pass before our startled eyes, and seem  
The feverish fancy of an evil dream.  
For in the tumult of that fearful rout  
The watch-light of the Kah-Kwah camp went out.  
And, thenceforth, in the pleasant linden shade,  
Seneca children, only, laughed and played.  
And still the River rolled in changeless state,  
Eternal, solemn, deep and strong as fate.

"A few strange words of a forgotten tongue  
That still by Lake and River's marge have clung,  
Are all that linger, of the Past, to tell,  
With their weird-sounding music, how it fell  
That here the people of that elder day  
Sinned, suffered, loved, hoped, hated, passed away.

\* \* \* \* \*

"So History's dream is told, and fading, fleet  
The shadows of the forest from the street;  
But is it much to ask, if it were sought,  
That it return at times to tinge our thoughts?—  
To tell us, when the winter-fires are lit,  
And in the happy heart of home we sit,  
That other fires were here, ere ours had shone,  
And sank to ashes years and years ago;—  
That where we stand, and, watching, see the West  
Ebb till the stars lie stranded on its breast.  
Or homeward ships, more blest than they of Greece,  
Returning with the prairie's Golden Fleece,  
To other eyes long since perchance was given,  
Through the same sapphire arch, a glimpse of Heaven.  
And haply not in vain the thought shall rise  
To sadden, it may be, our reveries,  
That here have throbbed, with all the bliss of ours,  
Hearts that have mouldered upward into flowers!"

The foregoing are fairly representative of the poets and poetry of Buffalo. In 1904 James N. Johnston, a Buffalo poet, edited a book, entitled "The Poets and Poetry of Buffalo." Since its pub-



## LITERATURE OF BUFFALO

lication other stars have arisen in the literary firmament that are shining with increasing splendor. Among them is Minnie Ferris Hauenstein (Mrs. Alfred G. Hauenstein), whose collection of verse will soon appear as "Sonnets From the Silence." Many of Buffalo's poets, prose writers and authors generally, including editorial writers and publishers, are reviewed in the paper of Frank H. Severance, entitled "Random Notes on the Authors of Buffalo," published in Volume IV of the Buffalo Historical Society's publications. The names of many Buffalo authors also appear from time to time in the papers and periodicals published in Buffalo and elsewhere.

In addition there are several groups of prose writers in Buffalo. These include Judge Samuel Wilkeson, who himself made important history for Buffalo; Orsamus H. Marshall, who was a thorough student of Indian history and well versed in Indian lore; William Ketchum, Rev. Dr. John C. Lord, W. L. G. Smith, Jesse Clement, Crisfield Johnson, General A. W. Bishop, John Harrison Mills, Orton S. Clark, George H. Stowits, Daniel G. Kelly, Ivory Chamberlain, C. W. Boyce, Frank Wilkeson, General James S. Strong, Elbridge Gerry Spaulding, William Dorsheimer, Charles C. Deuther, Bishop John Timon, Eben Carlton Sprague, Henry Tanner, James Fraser Gluck, Rev. Thomas Donohoe, Rev. Sanford Hunt, Rev. Professor Guggenberger, John L. Romer, Dr. Frank H. Severance, George S. Potter, Rev. William B. Wright, Frederick J. Shepard, Samuel M. Welsh, Jr., Lars G. Sellsted, Judge Truman C. White, Rev. Albert T. Chester, J. Stanley Grimes, R. W. Haskins, Albert Brisbane, Oliver G. Steele, Robert Davis, A. W. Wilgus, W. L. G. Smith, Robert Pennel, D. S. Alexander, Henry Wayland Hill, H. Perry Smith, Dr. Julian Park, Josephus Nelson Larned. The principal work of Mr. Larned was his "History for Ready Reference," comprising with its supplement eight volumes. It gave Mr. Larned a national reputation as an historical writer. No Buffalonian has delved deeper into regional history than Dr. Frank H. Severance, secretary of the Buffalo Historical Society, and author of many works bearing on the French period of Niagara history, as well as on other periods of such history. His most masterful work is that entitled "An Old Frontier of France," consisting of two volumes, and ranking with any of Parkman's works on Canadian frontier history. Henry Wayland Hill, president of the Buf-





## LITERATURE OF BUFFALO

falo Historical Society, has done research work in Lake Champlain regional history and in the French colonial period. He compiled the two volumes of the "Champlain Tercentenary Celebration," which gained for him the appreciation of the French nation and the decoration as a Chevalier of the National Legion of Honor. Mr. Hill is also the author of "Waterways and Canal Construction in New York," as well as of various historical papers, encyclopedic articles and miscellaneous pamphlets. Arthur L. Parker's contributions to Indian history and biography include his "Life of General Ely S. Parker" and his "History of Archaeology of the State of New York," recently published by the State of New York. Frederick Houghton's "History of the Buffalo Creek Reservation" is an addition to local records. The writers of comprehensive general histories of Buffalo include Crisfield Johnson (1873), H. Perry Smith (1884), Truman C. White (1897), John Devoy (1896), and Josephus Nelson Larned (1911). That by Mr. Johnson is, in the opinion of Dr. Severance, "unsurpassed in its class of histories." Turner's "Pioneer History of the Holland Purchase" (1849) is a valuable reference work for students of settlement history of this region. William Ketchum began a "History of Buffalo," but found that what he had written of Indian history would almost fill two volumes, so that his work was published in 1864 as the "History of Buffalo and the Senecas," and is generally known as "Buffalo and the Senecas," for it deals with only the first decade of Buffalo village history. Rev. Thomas Donohoe's "The Iroquois and the Jesuits" (1895) is a review of the early records of that religious order in America.

Books of travel have been written by Horace Briggs, Bishop Coxe, F. S. Dellenbaugh, Henry P. Emerson, Mrs. E. A. Forbes, Josiah Letchworth, Charles Linden, James N. Matthews, Oliver G. Steele, Charles Wood and others.

Medical and surgical works of more than pamphlet publication have included those written by Drs. A. L. Benedict, F. E. Campbell, Austin Flint, F. E. Fronczak, Charles C. F. Gay, F. H. Hamilton, Lucien Howe, F. Park Lewis, M. D. Mann, Herman Mynter, Roswell Park, R. V. Pierce, James P. White. Local writers who have dealt with other scientific subjects have included Lewis F. Allen, Albert H. Chester, E. E. Fish, Roswell W. Haskins, D. S. Kellicott, Henry Wayland Hill, Charles Linden, A. R. Grote.



## LITERATURE OF BUFFALO

The published books on Politics, Sociology, Law and Education include those by the following Buffalonians: Albert Brisbane, James O. Putnam, Grover Cleveland, William P. Letchworth, Irving Browne, Mrs. H. E. G. Arey, Rev. S. H. Gurteen, Charles Ferguson, Henry W. Hill, E. C. Mason, E. C. Townsend, Charles P. Norton, W. H. Hotchkiss, W. C. Cornell, Leroy Parker, James F. Gluck, Robert Schweckerath, Charles E. Rhodes, Frederick A. Wood, H. E. Montgomery, Henry P. Emerson, C. N. Millard.

Religious works have been written by very many of the gifted ministers of religion who have held pastorates in Buffalo. Some reached distinction as writers before taking up ministerial charge in Buffalo; some did not come into particular notice in literature until after leaving Buffalo; but among those who are remembered in the city for their literary products as well as pastoral excellence are Bishops Timon, Ryan, and Coxe, Reverends Henry A. Adams, C. C. Albertson, G. H. Ball, Gottfried Berner, J. L. Corning, J. P. Egbert, W. F. Faber, R. S. Green, C. E. Locke, John C. Lord, S. S. Mitchell, J. A. Regester, Montgomery Schuyler, Thomas S. Slicer, Stephen R. Smith, Henry Smith, J. Hyatt Smith, M. L. R. P. Thompson, J. B. Wentworth, William B. Wright, and George Zucher. Other writers on religious subjects include James H. Fisher, E. C. Randall, Mrs. C. H. Woodruff, Mary Martha Sherwood.

In fiction, several Buffalonians have attained distinct national success by their works. In this department of literature the following Buffalonians have produced books of high standard: George Berner, Allen G. Bigelow, J. E. Brady, Bessie Chandler (Mrs. Leroy Parker), Jane G. Cooke, H. L. Everett, Mrs. Gildersleeve-Longstreet, David Gray, Jr., George A. Hibbard, W. T. Hornaday, Elbert Hubbard, James H. W. Howard, Carrie F. Judd, William F. Kip, H. T. Koerner, J. H. Langille, Mrs. E. B. Perkins (Susan Chestnutwood), Mrs. Charles Rohlf's (Anna Katherine Green), Robert Cameron Rogers, W. G. L. Smith, G. A. Stringer, Jane D. Abbott (Mrs. Frank Abbott), Dorothy Tanner (Mrs. Montgomery), D. E. Wade, Ida Worden Wheeler, O. Witherspoon, Marion DeForrest, George A. Woodward, Julia Ditto Young. George A. Hibbard for many years was a frequent contributor to the pages of the "Saturday Evening Post," "Atlantic Monthly," and other leading American magazines. Elbert Hubbard, "the Sage of East Aurora," reached a literary fame which was worldwide; his pen was sharp,



## LITERATURE OF BUFFALO

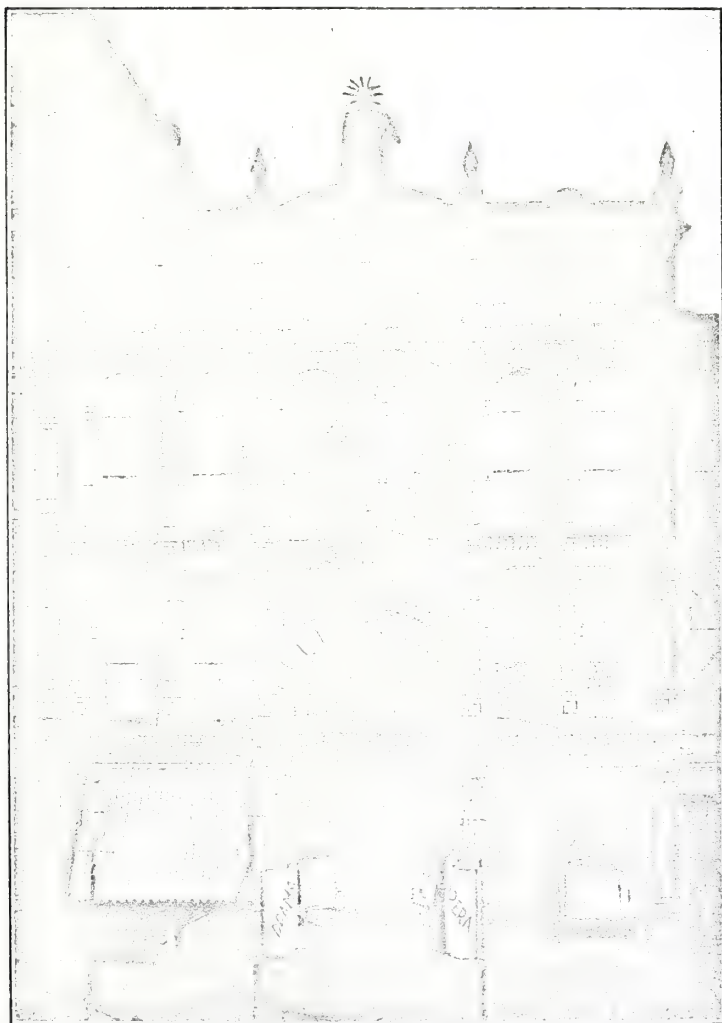
his lines clear, his sentences masterpieces of forceful constructive English. He was at the height of his fame in May, 1915, when, upon a fateful May afternoon, he and a hundred other American citizens of peaceful occupations, and nine or ten times that number of men, women and children of other nationalities, found that the ship on which they were nearing Ireland was rapidly sinking as the result of a well-nigh inconceivable attack upon it—upon the lives of a thousand private citizens who were in no way connected with the armed forces of Britain—by a German submarine boat. Elbert Hubbard, with the thousand, sank beneath the waves with the "Lusitania," but who can maintain that that act by the German militaristic administration was not the cause of the United States' ultimate entry into the war with that power which ignored the fundamental laws of honor and mercy and flouted the rights of neutrals? For such diversion from the subject of this chapter, the writer may be pardoned, prompted as the diversion was by the thought of how great was America's literary loss when Elbert Hubbard met with such a tragic death. His "Eminent Painters" is a masterpiece; his "Message to Garcia" is an inspiration and help to all who set out to accomplish anything.

Among the writers and publications of Buffalonians on miscellaneous subjects and books published in Buffalo, were the following: Frederick Butler's "History of the United States," Rev. Miles P. Squire's contributions to Biblical and Theological Reviews, his book published in 1855, entitled "The Problem Solved, or Sin Not of God," his other book entitled "Reason and the Bible, or the Truth of Revelation," published in 1860, and his "Ten Lectures on European Topics, and Lectures at Beloit College."

After the death of Rev. George Washington Hosmer in 1881, a collection was made of his sermons and miscellaneous writings. In 1886 Rev. John B. Wentworth, D. D., brought out his work entitled "The Logic of Introspection." The sermons of Rev. Montgomery Schuyler were published under the title of "The Church, Its Ministry and Worship." In 1839 J. Stanley Grimes published his "New System of Phrenology." In 1840 Albert Brisbane published his "Social Destiny of Man, or Association and Reorganization of Industry." In 1843 Albert Brisbane published his work entitled "Association, or a Concise Exposition of the Practical Part of Fourier's Social Science." In 1837 appeared Robert Davis' book







THE ACADEMY OF MUSIC. AS RECONSTRUCTED, 1893  
For many years Buffalo's best theatre. Still standing, much altered



## LITERATURE OF BUFFALO

entitled "A Canadian Farmer's Travels in the United States." In 1843 appeared Benjamin Wait's "Letters From Van Dieman's Land, written during five years' imprisonment for political offenses committed in Upper Canada." In 1839 Samuel Wilkeson published "A Concise History of the Commencement, Progress and Present Condition of the American Colonies in Liberia." In 1852 W. L. G. Smith published "Life at the South, or Uncle Tom's Cabin as it is, being Narratives, Scenes and Incidents in the Real Life of the Lowly." William Ketchum brought out his two-volume "History of Buffalo and the Senecas" in 1864. In 1876 Crisfield Johnson completed his "Centennial History of Erie County." Hon. Lewis F. Allen wrote on agriculture, drainage and other subjects. General James C. Strong was the author of "Wah-kee-nah and Her People," a study of North American Indians, customs and traditions. Rev. Thomas Donohoe was the author of "The Iroquois and the Jesuits." General A. W. Bishop was the author of books entitled "Loyalty on the Frontier," "What is the Situation Now, and Why the Solid South."

From time to time there have appeared many military records, including "A Record of Battery I, otherwise known as Wiedrick's Battery," and "The Ship Yard of the Griffin," both by Cyrus K. Remington. "Shakespeare's Draught From Living Water" and "Leisure Moments in Gough Square" were written by George Alfred Stringer. "The Life and Times of the Rt. Rev. John Timon, D. D., the First Roman Catholic Bishop of the Diocese of Buffalo," by Charles G. Deuther, appeared in 1870. George J. Bryan contributed his "Biographies and Journalism" in 1886. "The Story of the Hutchinsons," by Mrs. C. H. Gildersleeve, was a notable contribution to the literature of the musical activities of the pre-war period. Charles E. Morse, John Harrison and others wrote songs that were popular. In 1884 Rev. J. Hazard Hartzell published his collected poems entitled "Wanderings on Parnassus," and there also appeared a volume of verse by Thomas S. Chard, the author of "Across the Sea." From time to time there were published in the "Catholic Union" the poems of Patrick Cronin. In "The Courier" appeared the poems of Joseph O'Connor, and in "The News" formerly appeared the poems of John D. Wells and in "The Times" now appear the poems of John D. Wells. Anna Katherine Green's novel, "The Leavenworth Case," appeared in 1878, "A Strange



## LITERATURE OF BUFFALO

Disappearance" in 1879, "The Sword of Damocles" in 1881, and a volume of her poems in 1882. Mrs. E. B. Perkins' "Malbrook" appeared in 1871, and her "Honor Bright" in 1883. While pastor of St. Mark's M. E. Church, Rev. George E. Ackerman wrote his "Researches in Philosophy" and "Man a Revelation of God." While resident in Buffalo, Bishop John F. Hurst, of the M. E. Church, translated several standard works on church history, and he also contributed several original works. He was a voluminous and scholarly writer, and his contributions to literature in number and scholarship approach those of Bishop Arthur Cleveland Coxe. Not all the works of the two Bishops, however, appeared while they were residents of Buffalo. The contributions of other clergymen, as stated in "The Authors of Buffalo," by Frank H. Severance, include "Historical Sketches and Incidents Illustrative of the Establishment and Progress of Universalism in the State of New York," by the Rev. Stephen R. Smith; "Some Lessons From the Parable of the Sower," by the Rev. J. P. Egbert; "The True Man and Other Practical Sermons," by the Rev. S. S. Mitchell; "Dogma no Andidote for Doubt," by James H. Fisher; "Both Sides, or Jonathan and Absalom," by the Rev. Dr. Rufus S. Green; "Handbook of Charity Organization," by the Rev. S. Humphreys Gourteen; "Complete System of Sunday-school Instruction," by the Rev. Orlando Witherspoon; various writings by the Rev. A. T. Chester, and two works by the Rev. J. H. Langille, one on ornithology, "Our Birds in Their Haunts," the other entitled "Snail-shell Harbor, a Picture of Life on the Northwest Coast of Lake Michigan."

Among the contributors to the literature of science, in addition to those already stated, were Dr. Julius Pohlman on geology and other specialties, Edward P. Van Duzee on entomology, Hon. David F. Day on botany, Hon. George W. Clinton also on botany, fishing and hunting and on animals, Henry W. Hill on "Rainfall and Water Supply" in the "Americana Encyclopedia" (1920 edition) and many others.

\* \* \* \* \*

Even before Buffalo had been incorporated, an effort was made by some of the more cultured settlers to establish a library. Many of the pioneers had had little schooling; some had had no schooling at all, for the day of the compulsory and free school had not yet come. Some would welcome the facilities of a library for their



## LITERATURE OF BUFFALO

educational value, while others would appreciate the means it afforded them of literary diversion at little or no cost, for books were beyond the purchasing ability of most men in those days of poorly-paid labor. A library of seven hundred volumes instituted in 1816 was appreciated. A small company was formed, and that company maintained what was styled "The Buffalo Library" from 1816 to 1832. It seems to have passed away at about the time that Buffalo expanded its civic status to that of a city. Another library and literary society came into existence in 1830; it was known as the Buffalo Lyceum, but its life was short. Both libraries were eventually transferred to another, that of the Young Men's Association.

On February 20, 1836, the local newspapers carried a notice requesting "the young men of Buffalo, friendly to the founding of a Young Men's Association, for a mutual improvement in literature and science," to meet at the court house on Monday, the 22nd day of February, at 7 p. m. The meeting was held, a constitution adopted, based upon that of the Albany Young Men's Association, and a week later organization was completed by the election of the following officers: Seth C. Hawley, president; Dr. Charles Winne, Samuel N. Callender and George Brown, vice-presidents; Frederick P. Stevens and A. G. C. Cochrane, corresponding and recording secretaries; John H. Lee, treasurer; Oliver G. Steele, Henry K. Smith, William H. Lacy, George W. Allen, Charles H. Raymond, Henry R. Williams, George E. Hayes, Halsey R. Wing, Rushmore Poole, and Hunting S. Chamberlain, managers.

Before the end of the first year (1836) the Young Men's Association had a library of 2,700 volumes, including the collections of the old Buffalo Library and the Lyceum; and in its reading room were forty-four weekly, ten monthly and six quarterly publications, "making it the completest of any west of New York City." It was fortunate, probably, that the Association was organized in 1836 and not in the next year; the monetary panic of 1837 would probably have stopped its organization altogether, whereas in 1836 the projectors had comparatively little difficulty in raising a fund of \$6,700 for the purchase of books, and other essentials of a library. And even though so fortunately founded, the Association had great difficulty in surviving the period of depression that followed the disturbance of the nation's finances in 1837. The Young Men's Association "carried a burden of debt for many years, and lived





## LITERATURE OF BUFFALO

pinchingly, but it lived." Its first rooms were on the upper floors of a building three doors below Seneca street, on Main; and, until a regular librarian was appointed, Mr. B. W. Jenks, a portrait painter whose studio adjoined, saw that the property of the Association was not misused. The first regular librarian was Charles H. Raymond; he "persisted in his unrewarded toil" until 1839, when Mr. Phineas Sargent relieved him. In 1841 removal was made to South Division street, near Main, and there a small lecture-room was fitted up. The quarters were small, and in 1848 an unsuccessful attempt was made to establish a building fund. In 1852 larger quarters were leased in the American Block, on the west side of Main street, between Eagle and Court; there the Association had the use of the fairly large and excellent American Hall, on the third floor, with the library placed underneath. Annual courses of lectures by famous men brought much income to the Association, which soon became "distinctly at the front of the intellectual life of the town." Mr. Sargent was succeeded as librarian in 1850 by Lewis Jenkins, who withdrew two years later. Then began the connection of William Ives with the Library, a connection destined to cover more than fifty years. It was not until 1905 that Mr. Ives retired from service; though still in good health, he was then nearly ninety years old, and had served the Library for fifty-three years.

In 1856, encouraged to the effort by Mr. George Palmer, who had provisionally offered the association a building site valued at \$12,000, with \$10,000 additional in money, the library managers sought to raise \$90,000 for building purposes. They were not so fortunate as before the previous monetary panic; that of 1857 was upon them before they could raise the stipulated sum.

In 1861, "near the eve of the outbreak of our dreadful Civil War, the Association celebrated its twenty-fifth anniversary, with notable public exercises, distinguished by one of the finest of the poems of the late David Gray." Notwithstanding the extraordinary demands in men and money of the Union, for the purpose of the war, the Young Men's Association acquired a building fund of \$81,655 during the war period. The acquirement came at the end of an effort prolonged through two years, to unite the Young Men's Association, the Grosvenor Library, the Fine Arts Academy, the Buffalo Historical Society, and the Society of Natural Sciences,





COURT HOUSE, BUILT 1816, TAKEN DOWN 1876. SITE OF BUFFALO PUBLIC LIBRARY

Taken in the '60's from Court House Park, now Lafayette Square



## LITERATURE OF BUFFALO

in the erection of a building for their common use. In the spring of 1864 the Association purchased from Messrs. Albert and George Brisbane the St. James Hotel and St. James Hall, on Main, Eagle, and Washington streets, "under conditions which provided quarters in the hotel building, when reconstructed, for all of the institutions named above, and temporarily for some others as well." The Association five years later established a special fund for large purchases of books, and within two years increased its total from 16,000 to 25,000 volumes. The office of superintendent was created in 1877, and Josephus Nelson Larned was appointed to that office. Reclassifications of the books followed, the Dewey system of cataloging being adopted.

In 1882, long before which the library quarters had become inadequate, the court house site, bounded by Washington, Broadway, Ellicott and Clinton streets, was acquired by some public-spirited gentlemen, "to save it from being sold for commercial uses," it is stated, but apparently with the view of transferring it to the Young Men's Association and affiliated societies of liberal culture. The citizens associated in this action were Sherman S. Rogers, James M. Smith, Sherman S. Jewett, Francis H. Root, Charles Berriek, O. P. Ramsdell, Dexter P. Rumsey, Pascal P. Pratt and George Howard; and they planned to consolidate the Young Men's and Grosvenor libraries, "with the Fine Arts Academy, the Society of Natural Sciences and the Historical Society grouped around them." The two libraries could not be brought together, though the other features of the scheme were consummated. The Young Men's Association raised a building fund of \$117,000, and soon George Esenwein, of Buffalo, was superintending the erection of a building, to the plans of C. L. W. Eidlitz, of New York. Ground was broken on October 8, 1884, and within less than two years, on September 13, 1886, the removal of the library began, though the formal opening of the building, with the Art, the Science, and History collections in place did not occur until February 7, 1887. The Young Men's Association had before that time been authorized to change its name to The Buffalo Library.

Providence seemed to guard the priceless treasures of the Library and other societies, for within six weeks of the formal opening of the new building, the vacated quarters were destroyed by fire. The Iroquois Hotel soon rose, an enterprise of the Buffalo Library, and





## LITERATURE OF BUFFALO

it was favorably leased. Financial embarrassment eventually brought help from the city, later by act of the State Legislature secured through the efforts of Assemblyman Henry W. Hill and others, being authorized to contract with the two libraries for the establishment of free public service. Formerly the Buffalo Library had been able to admit to the privilege of borrowing books for home use only its members, who subscribed three dollars a year. By the contract entered into on February 24, 1897, between the Buffalo Library and the City of Buffalo:

“The Buffalo Library conveyed to the City of Buffalo its books and pamphlets in trust for a period of 99 years, together with the net annual income from the Library property. The city accepted the trust, and bound itself to maintain the Library (by annual appropriation of a sum of not less than four-fifths of three one-hundredths of one per centum of the total assessed valuation of taxable property in the city (appropriating, also, not less than one-fifth of three one-hundredths of one per centum of such assessed valuation to the maintenance of the Grosvenor Library each year). The Library to be known as the Buffalo Public Library, and to be free to the residents of the city for all of its uses; to be open every day, during stipulated hours; to be under the control and management of a board of ten directors, five of them representing the city and five the life members of the Buffalo Library, as previously constituted; these latter having been incorporated with the power of perpetual succession, and having the control and management of the Library real estate.

“On the 9th of March this corporation of life members of the Buffalo Library was organized by the election of Nathaniel W. Norton, president; George L. Williams, vice-president; Joseph P. Dudley, James Frazier Gluck and Charles R. Wilson, managers. These, with the Mayor of Buffalo, the Corporation Counsel, the Superintendent of Education, and two citizens, John D. Bogardus and Matthias Rohr, appointed by the Mayor, formed the first board of directors of the Buffalo Public Library, with Mr. Norton to preside.”

No man strove harder to consummate this improvement in library affairs than Mr. Josephus N. Larned, who for twenty years had been its superintendent; and he anticipated eagerly the reorganization of the Library, with a view to the institution of a better service to the reading public; “but a few weeks of experience convinced him that he could not work in harmony with the presiding officer of the new board of directors, and in April he resigned.” Mr.





## LITERATURE OF BUFFALO

Henry L. Elmendorf was appointed in his place. Mr. Elmendorf died in July, 1906, and his assistant, Walter L. Brown, became chief librarian. He still is at the head of the Buffalo Public Library, which has consistently continued to expand its scope of public usefulness, as will be realized by the following comparisons. When the Buffalo Library became "a free institution" in 1897, it had upon its shelves about 90,000 volumes; at the end of 1919 it possessed more than 400,000 volumes. In 1896, the last year under the old system of permitting books to be borrowed only by those who paid membership fees, the Library had 1,592 paying members; in 1919, 130,000 individual borrowers made use of the books of the Buffalo Public Library. There has been a notable extension in the work, for there are now seven other branch libraries open to the general public, and directed by the staff of the Buffalo Public Library; and in addition an original plan of school libraries.

Merged in the Buffalo Public Library is another historic literary society of Buffalo. The German Young Men's Association was organized on May 10, 1841. Its main purpose is clearly stated in its original name, which was the German-English Literature Society. F. A. Georger was first president, John Hauenstein, vice-president, Carl Neidhardt, secretary; Jacob Beyer, George Beyer, George F. Pfeiffer, William Rudolf and Adam Schlagder founding members. Its full stated purposes were "mutual education in the different branches of German and English literature, science and art, the general spreading of useful knowledge, and the providing of a good library." The first meetings were held weekly, on Monday nights, "in a very plain room in the rear of Dr. Dellenbaugh's drug store, on Main near Court street." The room was used until 1843. On September 11, 1841, the name of the society was changed to the German Young Men's Association, and in some of its social activities it followed the plan of the Young Men's Association. The German Young Men's Association had a library of 750 volumes in 1846, when the first catalogue was printed. For a time after leaving Dr. Dellenbaugh's room the quarters of the German Society were in the Eagle Tavern, but in the winter of 1843-44 rooms in the Kremlin Block were rented. There the library was maintained until 1854.

The first published report of the German Young Men's Association was that issued in January, 1851. It showed a membership of



## LITERATURE OF BUFFALO

120, and a library of 1,090 volumes, 890 of which were printed in German. The German Colony of Buffalo had become the refuge of political exiles from Germany since 1848, and the German Young Men's Association quarters constituted a rendezvous for these democratic Teutons. Kinkel was given a reception in 1851, and Kosuth in 1852. In 1857 the membership was a very large one, but the monetary panic of September of that year had as disastrous an effect upon that society as upon others. In 1861 the German Young Men's Association had only 54 members. During the next two decades it recovered, however, and brought many notable lecturers to Buffalo.

In 1882 the Society engaged in a great undertaking. It agreed to provide a hall suitable for the accommodation of the Twenty-third Saengerfest of the German Saengerbund of North America, appointed to be held in Buffalo in 1883. Ground on Main, Franklin and Edward streets was purchased from the Walden estate, a building fund was raised, and the project carried through with success. The hall was thereafter the headquarters of the Association, but not for long. On March 25, 1885, fire destroyed it, and with the building, all but 384 of the 7,451 volumes which had constituted the library of the German Young Men's Association. Two days later, it was resolved to rebuild, and the cornerstone of the new Music Hall was laid in May, 1886. It was opened in November, 1887. Its cost was \$246,600, an outlay which heavily burdened the Association with debt for some years, though the debt was reduced by more than \$43,000 within a year. In 1891, the fiftieth of the Association's existence, occurred an especially noteworthy feature of its history. Its original president and vice-president, F. A. Georger and Dr. John Hauenstein, were in the same places of honor again. When after 1897 it was demonstrated that such collections of books as that of the German Young Men's Association could be used to greater advantage by the people of Buffalo if transferred to the "free public institution," the Buffalo Public Library, the subject was given due consideration by the directors of the German society, and the transfer duly followed. The Association thereafter directed its efforts to other functions of social service, in the department of higher culture.

In the fifth volume of the "Publications of the Buffalo Historical Society" are some interesting "Notes on the Earlier Years" of that





BUFFALO PUBLIC LIBRARY



## LITERATURE OF BUFFALO

Society. They were compiled by its secretary, Frank H. Severance, L. H. D., editor of its "Publications," which have reached such high standing in historical societies, a standing, by the way, created for it mainly by the excellence of Dr. Severance's own contributions, which have since 1896 been part of these "Publications." Dr. Severance, in the notes referred to, put into record the facts related to him by the Hon. Lewis F. Allen as to "how the Historical Society was started." Mr. Allen in that conversation said:

"I was coming up Court Street one day when I met Orsamus H. Marshall. I knew him well—knew that he was one of the few men in Buffalo who gave any thought to the preservation of the records or relies of our history. Marshall, you know, was a scholar. Put him on anything relating to our Indians, and off he'd go as long as he could follow the trail. He spoke of something that he wanted to get, or that had been destroyed, I don't remember now just what. 'Marshall,' I said, 'we ought to do something about these things. Somebody should take care of them.' It was a raw windy day early in the spring, along in March, 1862. He said: 'Come up to my office and we'll talk it over.'

"The result of that talk was that we got a few others interested, and published a call for another meeting to be held at Mr. Marshall's office. 'The rest of it,' said Mr. Allen, 'is matter of record.' We named a committee to draw up a constitution and by-laws, which were submitted to a meeting of citizens held in the rooms of the old Medical Association on South Division street. Millard Fillmore was made chairman of that meeting, and a little later, at our first election, he was chosen the first president of the Society."

The first meeting at which Mr. Fillmore presided was that held on April 15, 1862. The earlier meeting, that held in Mr. Marshall's office, was under the chairmanship of Mr. Lewis F. Allen, who became the first vice-president of the society.

In 1873, Oliver Gray Steele reviewed the early history of the Buffalo Historical Society in an "entirely adequate sketch" which is preserved in the first volume of the society's publications. Dr. Severance, in volume V, picks out leading facts from that sketch, and adds an interesting memoir of particular outstanding transactions of the Buffalo Historical Society to 1902, in which year the society was installed in its new home in Delaware Park. Mr. Severance found that Mr. Steele's sketch told "of the awakening of interest on the part of many of the older citizens, in matters pertain-





## LITERATURE OF BUFFALO

ing to the history of Buffalo and Western New York; and of the organization of the society, the first election of officers being held on the first Tuesday in May (1862), Hon. Millard Fillmore being chosen president, and Hon. Lewis F. Allen chosen vice-president." Mr. Severance continued:

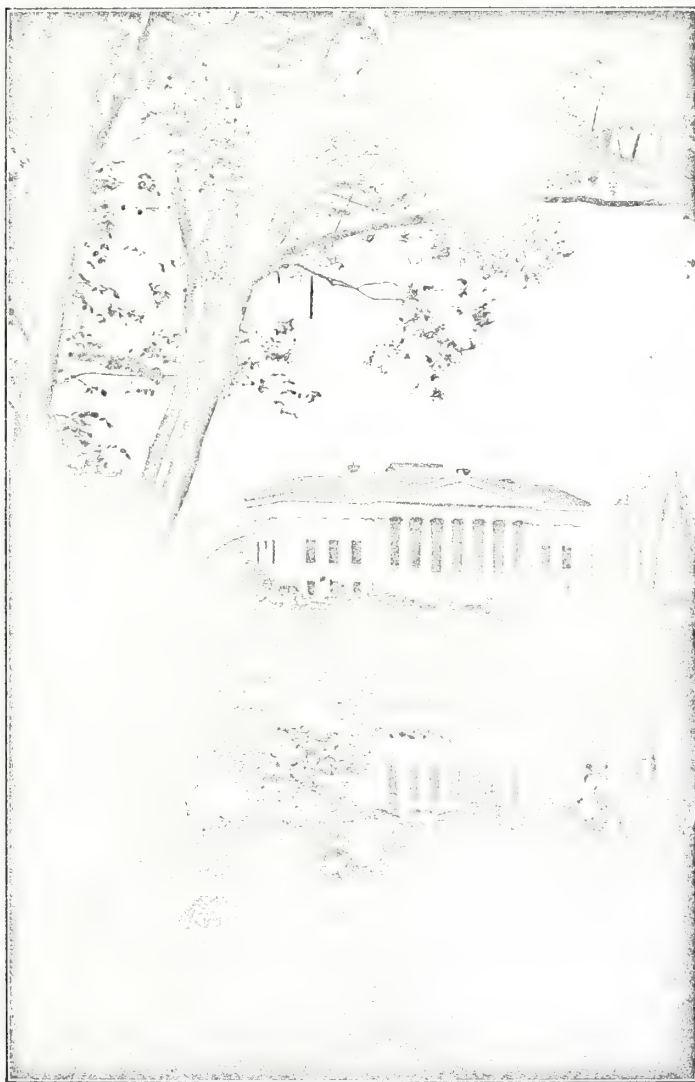
"Oddly enough—when we note his zeal in the formation of the society—Mr. Allen was never its president, though he continued devoted to its welfare throughout his long life (which did not end until May 2, 1890, his 91st year). Mr. Steele has related how at the suggestion of Mr. Fillmore, 50 gentlemen bound themselves to pay \$20 each per year for five years, as a maintenance fund for the society. This plan was later modified by the creation of a life-membership class, the payment therefor being \$50, increased in 1897 to \$100.

"For some time after its organization in 1862, the society had no home. Its record books and first collections—the nucleus of its present museum—were deposited in the office of Hon. William Dorshseimer, No. 7 Court street, and there, too, its early meetings were held. From 1865 until January, 1873, the society occupied rooms, rent free, in the Young Men's Association building, southeast corner of Main and Eagle streets. That building was far from fire-proof; but the new building of the Western Savings Bank, northwest corner of Main and Court streets, constructed in 1871-2, did appear to offer the security sought for its possessions. The annual income of the society at that time was between \$500 and \$600, not enough to pay the salary of the secretary, and it is not strange that there was hesitancy about moving to quarters for which a considerable rent must be paid. The matter was placed in the hands of Orlando Allen, Orsamus H. Marshall and Gibson T. Williams; and this committee reported, December 10, 1872, that the Young Men's Association, in consideration of the surrender of the Historical Society lease, would pay to it \$1,600 in four years, in quarterly instalments. The Historical Society accepted the terms, named \* \* \* a committee to circulate subscription papers \* \* \* ; and in January, 1873, feeling warranted in assuming the expense, moved to its new quarters.

"Here the society's home continued to be until January, 1887, when it took possession of the more ample rooms—though again on the third floor, reached only for many years by wearying stairs—in the new building of the Young Men's Association, now Buffalo Library building; from which it migrated in April, 1902, to take possession, for the first time in its history and just forty years after its organization, of a home of its own. \* \* \*

"A word of appreciation may \* \* \* fittingly be written of





BUFFALO HISTORICAL SOCIETY BUILDING  
From Delaware Park Bridge



## LITERATURE OF BUFFALO

the men who, through many years of cramped resources and the indifference of a large part of the community, kept the society not only alive but progressive. The decade following the Civil War was not a propitious period for such an institution. There were times \* \* \* when very few men kept up the organization and carried on a work in which they would gladly have had the coöperation of very many of their fellow-citizens. In this category of the faithful were Hon. James Sheldon, William Clement Bryant, Capt. E. P. Dorr, Hon. William P. Letchworth, William H. H. Newman, Hon. Elias S. Hawley, Hon. James M. Smith, William Hodge, William Dana Fobes, Emmor Haines, James Tillinghast, William K. Allen, George S. Hazard, Dr. Joseph C. Green, Julius H. Dawes, and others. \* \* \* After the death of Millard Fillmore and others who had shared in the founding of the society, its interests suffered a decline for a period. A more vigorous era was begun under the presidency of William D. Fobes in 1884, who, \* \* \* retired from office 'leaving the society 20 per cent. better than he found it.' \* \* \* It was during Mr. Fobes's presidency that the Fillmore family library \* \* \* passed into the possession of the society. The arrangement which was made in April, 1884, with the Young Men's Association for free occupancy of the third floor of its projected building, was a great financial help. Prior to its removal to what is now the Library building, the society had been paying, since 1873, \$400 a year rent for its quarters in the Western Savings Bank building.

"The board meeting of January 4, 1887, was the first which the society held in the new Young Men's Association building. It was at this meeting that Judge Sheldon, then completing his last term as president, proposed the name of Andrew Langdon for life membership. Mr. Langdon was duly elected, and at the annual meeting held on January 11th was chosen one of the board of councilors (now called board of managers). In 1894, Mr. Langdon was elected president, and he has been reelected to that office—more than once in opposition to his expressed wish—every year since. Mr. Langdon's presidency marks a distinct era in the fortunes of the society. From the first, he took an active interest in its affairs, and worked with untiring zeal to promote its prosperity. Its need of a building of its own was early apparent to him, as indeed it long had been to others; but none other was so constant in the effort to find a way—or if none could be found to make a way—towards the desired consummation. \* \* \* In his efforts he was ably helped by others, who shall be duly named.

"The building idea was an old one, and had many forms even before Mr. Langdon's day. In his address on retiring from the presidency in 1883, William Hodge offered as 'a suggestion:' 'Would it not be pleasing to many to perpetuate the memory of relatives



## LITERATURE OF BUFFALO

and friends \* \* \* by giving some amount towards our building fund, or better still to purchase or erect a suitable building for the Buffalo Historical Society. Such noble deeds,' he added, 'have often been done.' He had long thought, he said, that the old Waldon homestead, at Main, Edward and Franklin streets, was a suitable house for the Historical and other societies of the city. 'The location may be considered by some to be too far up town, but to me it certainly seems not.' How great would have been his wonder could he have been told that the society's first building of its own—and a marble palace at that—would be beyond the far Scajaguada.

"The suggestion bore no fruit; nor was there any tangible building fund until on March 4, 1894, Judge James M. Smith \* \* \* gave to it five bonds of the Crosstown Street Railroad, Nos. 19-23, valued at \$5,000, 'as a nucleus for a building fund.' This was a profit-earning property. To it was added \$3,000 received by bequest from Mrs. C. L. Fobes, on October 6, 1898. These sums, with accrued interest, amounted to \$11,064.39 on May 1, 1899, when the account was closed. Prior to this time the society had begun to direct its efforts in a new channel."

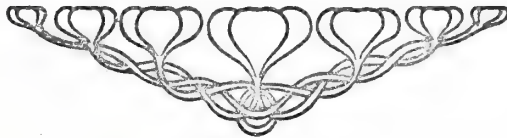
Hon. Henry W. Hill introduced at the 1897 session of the State Legislature, of which he was then a member, representing the Second District of Erie county, two measures which sought power to construct a building for the Historical Society on park lands. Both bills became laws in that year. The first is Chapter 329 and the second is Chapter 310 of the Laws of 1897. Other relative acts were passed, and inspection of park sites followed. The board of managers of the Historical Society favored a site then known as the Concourse, and now occupied by the Albright Art Gallery. The Board of Park Commissioners could not, however, reach a like unanimity of opinion, whereupon Mr. Bronson C. Rumsey offered to give the society a site for its building on land owned by him, adjoining the south side of the park, on the east side of Elmwood avenue. On May 8, 1897, the board of managers met in Delaware Park, and decided to reject the offer, for munificent though it undoubtedly was, the representatives of the Historical Society felt that by adhering to its purpose of seeking a site on park lands the future maintenance of the building would be upon a sounder basis. For a while, however, it seemed that the project would fail altogether, because of the disfavor with which the Park Board viewed the proposal to build on the Concourse. An opportunity to accomplish the aims of the society, despite the opposition of the Park





## LITERATURE OF BUFFALO

Commissioners, was found in 1898. It had been planned to hold a Pan-American Exposition in Buffalo in 1899, but the political situation since the outbreaking of war with Spain had made a postponement of the Exposition advisable. On March 14, 1898, Assemblyman Henry W. Hill introduced a concurrent resolution in the State Assembly which sought not only to secure from the State Government, and through it from the Federal Government, approval of the postponement and promise of substantial aid in the project, but also that the moneys appropriated by the national, state, and city governments might be added to the building fund of the Buffalo Historical Society, and the whole used in the erection of a fireproof building, instead of a temporary exhibition building, with the view to the transference to the Historical Society of the said fire-proof building after it had served the purposes of the Pan-American Exposition. The whole of this plan did not at once develop, but it is clear that such was the plan Mr. Hill and others sought to consummate when the concurrent resolution was moved in the Assembly by him. The plan was carried through, and eventually brought into the possession of the Buffalo Historical Society a magnificent building of Greek Doric architecture and constructed of white Vermont marble, at a cost of \$175,000, only \$45,000 of which the Historical Society was called upon to provide. The State appropriated \$100,000 toward the cost, and the city supplied the other \$30,000. The building is still the home of the Buffalo Historical Society, is known as the Historical Building, and is deservedly classed among the more beautiful of the public buildings of Buffalo. It stands on sloping land on the axis of a semi-circle, in the northwest corner of Delaware Park, adjacent to Elmwood avenue. It houses the valuable museum of the Society, and also its library, which exceeds 40,000 volumes.





# Connecticut College

By REV. BENJAMIN T. MARSHALL, D. D., PRESIDENT OF COLLEGE



THE foundations of Connecticut College were laid, not only in the fine purposes and industry of the incorporators, but also in the faith they held in women, and in their conviction that within the State of Connecticut there should be a modern, progressive college for women that should provide these forms of higher education for women to which in recent years they have aspired in increasing numbers, and for the privileges of which they have now for many years demonstrated their indisputable qualification.

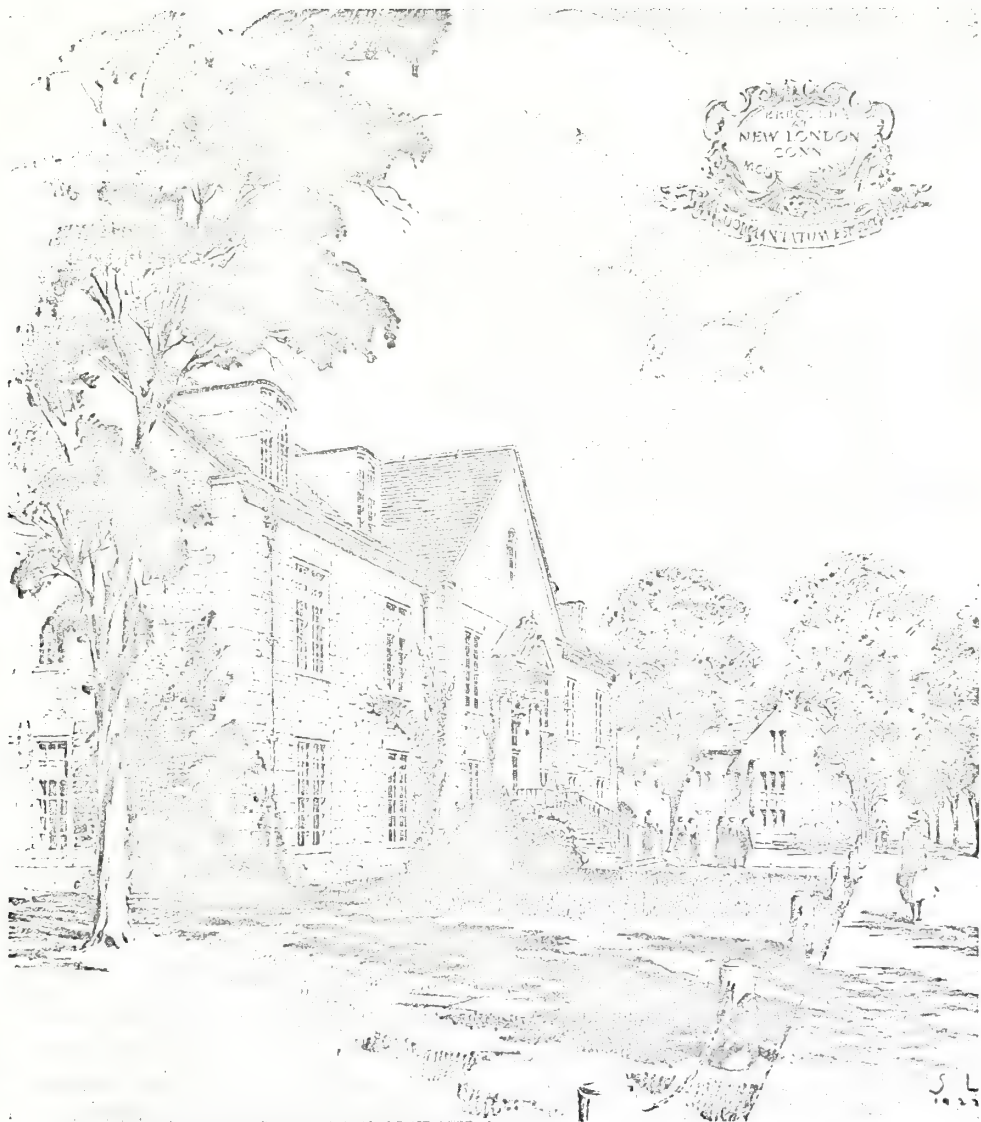
But there is also the glow and ardor of romance in the story of the college, for how else shall we describe the experience of the young institution whose hand was sought by a score or more towns and cities who also promised lavish gifts. Was it not romance, and was it not high gallantry, that moved New London to sue so ardently for the hand of the college and to present so promptly the gifts it promised, in the form of lands and funds?

The college will never forget the splendid enthusiasm of New London, its corporate body, and its citizens, nor their significant and munificent gifts. The coming of the college afforded New London a chance to demonstrate a spirit of unity and of devotion to education which became in a real way the revival of a civic pride and spirit which has characterized the city unmistakably in these recent years.

To serve and honor the city which has served and honored it, will be always a dominant factor in the purpose and life of the college; for it recognizes that by virtue of its character and purpose it should be the purveyor to the city of opportunities for culture through lectures, exhibitions, musical programs and conferences of various kinds, and seek to encourage the people of the city to avail themselves of its ever-widening and increasing privileges.

The relations of city and college each to the other were begun under happiest auspices. May they never cease to be reciprocally





LIBRARY, CONNECTICUT COLLEGE FOR WOMEN



## CONNECTICUT COLLEGE, NEW LONDON

joyous and profitable. While the city goes about its daily business, the "College on the Hill" moves faithfully and eagerly forward in the prosecution of its program, in devotion to its distinctive ideal.

What the college is and what it aims for, how it does its work, and in what spirit and with what results, the following paragraphs aim clearly to state. They are presented as the official statement of the college through its president.

1. The need for more women's colleges. For many years there had been among educators and all persons interested in the higher education of women a recognition that more women's colleges of high grade were greatly needed, since the women's colleges already existing were either filled to capacity or over-crowded.

Connecticut College came into existence to meet, so far as it was able, that well-defined need of more high-grade centrally located colleges for women. It became, in fact, a necessity in this new era for women, which has given them the full rights of suffrage. Within the State the need was accentuated by the fact that Wesleyan had determined to be solely a man's college; and in the mind of Wesleyan Alumna, and in the minds of friends whom she had gathered about her, the idea and purpose to have a woman's college within the State of Connecticut took root, assumed form, and became an established fact.

2. The Specific Need. There was further recognized the need of colleges specifically for women, which should definitely contemplate the tastes, talents, aptitudes, ambitions, potential service and possibilities of women in social, literary, educational, secretarial, business, professional and administrative positions; and should, coupled with the cultural and literary and scientific studies which serve as backgrounds and resources, those subjects and that training in them which give a vocational emphasis, and stimulate and equip the student to become in a sane, balanced and concrete fashion, both socially minded and socially efficient.

Courses coming under this description may be cited as those of home economics, fine arts, music, economics and sociology, secretarial studies and office practice, library science, physical education.

3. The Purpose and Ideal of the College. The effort to meet these needs generally and specifically is expressed in the purpose of Connecticut College, namely:

To offer college work of grade and value second to none; to





## CONNECTICUT COLLEGE, NEW LONDON

offer technical work worthy of college credit; to prepare for professional work in all branches where women are needed.

In short, to maintain, with high standards, and to conduct with highest efficiency, a curriculum prepared to develop each woman's peculiar talents toward her most effective life-work.

4. The Practical Fulfillment of Purpose. The practical operation and demonstration of this purpose and ideal is seen in the inclusion in the curriculum of the familiar college subjects—the ancient and modern languages and literatures, mathematics, chemistry, physics, botany, zoology, history, political science, economics, sociology, philosophy, psychology, education, biblical history, and literature; and, with their specific technical, vocational, artistic, domestic and social values, the following: Music, fine arts (including drawing, painting, design, interior decoration, mechanical drawing and ceramics); home economics (including foods, nutrition, household management, institutional management); library, science, secretarial studies and office practice, physical education (required of all students throughout their course).

It should be noted that there are courses, in their respective departments, for the training of teachers in Latin, English, French, music, physical education, besides the courses in education; courses in chemistry are, some of them, conducted with reference to their applications of that science, and a course in psychological chemistry, in its relation to home economics, is a particularly progressive and timely piece of work; that courses in mathematics, such as the theory of investment and statistics, have a direct practical value; that courses in economics and sociology are presented and prosecuted with sympathy toward and understanding of the instincts, interest and aptitudes and specific adaptability of women to social problems and social work.

The work in fine arts and in music is not merely theoretical, which method would tend to superficiality, but is also technical, coördinated, expressional, creative. Thus action and accomplishment are elevated to their rightful place in granting full credit to studio work; and action (creative work) is seen to be as essential to any worthy sort of appreciation in the realm of art as laboratory work is essential for the correct evaluation and esteem of any science. In this policy certain results are already unmistakably evident. There has come to be: (a) a respect for the use of the hand; (b) a higher grade





NEW LONDON HALL, SCIENCE BUILDING



BRANFORD HOUSE



## CONNECTICUT COLLEGE, NEW LONDON

of work in the studio; (c) greater enjoyment and satisfaction in the work; (d) a realization that education does not mean cessation from all work of the hand.

5. Broad and Balanced Curriculum, Values and Results. Because of the breadth of opportunity in major subjects offered in the preceding list, the regularly accepted academic majors, complemented by the number of majors in technical courses we can demonstrate that:

(a) There is a much larger percentage of students who find courses that lead to direct activity and expression, than in other colleges.

(b) There is an appreciable increase in the educational value of the institution from the very distinct and varied types of mind and of personality that are attracted by a diversity of courses.

(c) There is a more liberal and appreciative academic student, who has learned that arts are not superficial, but fundamental; and a more cultured and better technical student, by reason of required courses in foreign language, English literature, science, history and social science.

The trustees and faculty are united and enthusiastic in the loyal undertaking of this program. They are convinced of its soundness, practicability, and high value. Their confidence and enthusiasm are justified by the superior quality and large number of students who have sought admission, a number which every year has exceeded the capacity of the college.

6. The college has attracted superior students in large numbers from several States. Students now enrolled in the college number approximately 380, the largest number, we believe, ever known in an American College in its seventh year. Students come from twenty-one different States. Several students have transferred from other colleges, to find in Connecticut College more nearly what they wanted and needed, than they could find elsewhere, and several girls have entered Connecticut College attracted by its offerings, who, from their early years, had fully purposed to enter other and older women's colleges. The college has graduated three classes, the class of 1919 with sixty-eight who received degrees, and the class of 1920 with sixty-nine who received degrees, and the class of 1921. We believe that no other college in America can cite such large figures for its first three classes.



## CONNECTICUT COLLEGE, NEW LONDON

7. Complete Student Self-government. No argument attempting to justify the existence and service of the college would be complete that did not stress the value and significance of the system of full student self-government, granted by the faculty to the student body from the first. The system provides for a complete control of all the life and activity of the students, except in strictly academic matters. It is organized as a representative democracy, and functions with reality, efficiency, good judgment, and, we believe, with increasing success.

The counsel, suggestion, and experience of faculty and administration is always available, and is frequently sought, and in all more vital matters is always requested.

In managing their own affairs as a real democracy, students are trained in responsibility, coöperation, initiative, in forming judgments, in making choices, in creating policies, in establishing tradition, and maintaining college morale, and in official duties and committee work learn valuable lessons in tact, appreciation, discrimination and in administration and execution.

8. The Spirit of the College—Loyalty, Enthusiasm, Coöperation, Confidence. The undoubted effect of this organization of the students has been to develop a spirit of true democracy, without religious or social or class prejudices; to stimulate respect for work in all its forms, particularly with reference to students working their way through; there is tolerance and good will and sympathy; the bases of the organization are work, responsibility, liberty, solidarity, and a type of girl is being developed who is entirely free from pedantry and cant; she is open, sincere, unselfish and of sound judgment and initiative, able to deal with people and with situations, yet without conceit or assumption.

Through all the activities of the college, both in its academic and social side, there breathes an intense spirit of loyalty and of enthusiasm. From the beginning the students were made, by the administration and the faculty, to realize how much the morale and spirit of the college were in their keeping, and they have grown in intensity of appreciation and responsibility for the highest character in college life.

The spirit of coöperation is cultivated in the fact that the college does things together. It meets every day for Chapel, every Sunday for Vespers, every Tuesday for Convocation, as a college body, fac-







BLACKSTONE HOUSE



PLANT HOUSE



## CONNECTICUT COLLEGE, NEW LONDON

ulty and students merging; and it undertakes an interest and a support of outside activities in college-wide fashion. When called upon to give, as for instance during the war, to the Students' Friendship War Fund, to the United War Campaign, and more recently in aid of the students and professors of the colleges in Central Europe, it organizes its efforts as an all-college affair, pours its energy, its enthusiasm, its zeal, its gifts, into one common effort, and the result is issued with the seal and endorsement of the entire college upon it.

There is in all the life of the college great confidence in the institution, a splendid satisfaction in its work, great happiness in its fellowship, and a fine sense of challenge in the richness, variety and wholesomeness of its entire comradeship, student and faculty alike.

The spirit of coöperation, understanding, unanimity, which prevails, may be expressed when we say that in the four years of the present administration there has not been in the board of trustees a single divided vote; and in the faculty, on no vital point, anything but practical unanimity.

9. Favorable and appreciative attitude of educators and institutions toward Connecticut College. The attitude and favor and goodwill, confidence and commendation on the part of educators and of presidents of other women's colleges has been very cheering. Without exception, the older colleges have welcomed Connecticut College into the sisterhood, have declared that it was greatly needed; that the kind of work it is doing is essential and is well done, and that its future is bright and challenging. The comment of President MacCracken of Vassar is perhaps as significant as any, when, after speaking of several forward steps in the education of women in America in recent years, he says:

Among these steps the most important is undoubtedly the founding of Connecticut College at New London, and all friends of higher education for women have welcomed its entrance into the field, because it is clear from the general trend of registration that women will in increasing numbers seek the college degree.

Visitors to the campus, representing other colleges, presidents, deans, registrars, official committees of visitation with specific errands, have spoken uniformly of their pleasure in the visit, of the distinct impression of industry, vigor and worth in which the col-



## CONNECTICUT COLLEGE, NEW LONDON

lege work is done, and congratulated the college on its site, on its work, and on its prospects. Organizations, whose representatives have come to give counsel to the students with reference to future occupation, representatives of social organizations seeking superior material for graduate study in schools of social service, have expressed themselves in such language as this:

"In conference, the students ask most intelligent questions."

"Know what they want."

"Have a knowledge of the factors in social and industrial situations more than students of other colleges visited."

The college has freely been granted the counsel of the Russell Sage Foundation, whose aid in planning various lines of community work under the auspices of the sociology department has been offered.

Graduates of the college have gone forth to social work or to advanced study on the basis of the work done here, and have been given practically a year's credit in advance over the graduates of other institutions, whether in graduate study or in active positions on the staff of charity or social organizations.

10. Record of Graduates. Variety in activity and service, and gratifying success. All that precedes, which is an effort to justify the existence of the college, finds its concrete and we believe unanswerable justification in the quality of the product of the college in its graduates and in the nature and quality of the service they are rendering in their present fields.

There are 180 alumnae of the college, graduates in the first three classes, 1919, 1920 and 1921. The director of the college appointment bureau reports that these graduates are largely engaged in the work toward which their major work in college particularly fitted them.

The success and gratifying service of such graduates, from whom we have received definite returns, is due not alone to the careful and able training by a competent faculty, but also to that spirit of enthusiasm, of loyalty and coöperation which has characterized the college since its inception, a passion to do whatever they do worthily, and to count constructively by rendering a specific service to society.

There is a profound confidence in the college on the part of the trustees, faculty, students and friends of the college alike. They



## CONNECTICUT COLLEGE, NEW LONDON

take pride in its genuine though modest accomplishment, and they feel confident of its future and hopeful and zealous of its maintenance and expansion along the lines projected from the beginning and faithfully followed to this moment, so far as years of war and relatively unincreased endowment have permitted.

The preceding paragraphs, we trust, constitute a sufficient and genuine justification of the existence of the college. Our conviction is that the college was opened to meet both a general and a specific need, that it established for itself a splendid purpose and a high ideal, and it set itself vigorously and conscientiously to the practical fulfillment of that purpose. It has offered a broad and balanced curriculum of soundness, practicability, undoubted values and of high promise. It has summoned to itself superior students in large numbers from a wide area. It has cultivated in them a passion to do whatever they do worthily, and to count constructively, whether by helping to brighten a home and elevate the life of a family, or by rendering some more specific service to society at large.

It has already developed a peculiar, significant and exalted spirit, which is recognized as distinctive, strong and exceptional. It has won from the beginning and in increasing measure the welcome, the appreciation, the regard and commendation of its sister colleges, their leaders and all educators who have come to know it; and chiefly, and above all, it has contributed in its graduates a group of women who are undertaking specific tasks toward which the college unmistakably directed them, following their natural bent, ambition and equipment, and they are doing, each in her own place, the world's work in a way that is worthy, noble and commendable, to the credit of the college they love, to the honor of their own lives, and as a rare and distinctive contribution to the life of America.





— 100 —

# The Narragansett Trail

BY THOMAS W. BICKNELL, PROVIDENCE, RHODE ISLAND



THIS article relates to a celebrated New England Indian Trail, I will introduce it by saying that we know little of the tribes of this section of New England prior to the arrival of the *Mayflower*, in 1620.

The only reliable historic story prior to that date, is the account of the Indians on the shores of Narragansett Bay, given by Giovanni de Verrazzano, who, under French patronage, explored the harbors of New York and Narragansett Bay in 1524, and wrote concerning the natives, with whom he had most friendly intercourse. He calls them hospitable; handsome, both men and women; well dressed and ornamented; generous, affectionate and charitable. "As to the religious faith of these tribes, not understanding their language, we could not learn by signs or gestures, anything certain. It seemed to us that they had no religion, nor laws, nor any knowledge of a first cause or mover,—that they worshipped neither the heavens, stars, sun, moon, nor the planets."

In Southern New England,—the location of the Narragansett Trail,—the Mohegans and other small families occupied the Connecticut Valley, and west to New York. The Pequod tribe, with its capital at Pequod, now New London, was a savage, mischief-making people, in Eastern Connecticut, on Long Island Sound. East of the Pawcatuck river, on the Sound, in Southern Rhode Island, were the Niantics, under the sachemship of the Ninigrets.

The Narragansetts, the most powerful, wealthiest, the most independent Indian nation of all New England, dwelt on the western bank of Narragansett Bay, occupying the lands, shores, bays and rivers from Point Judith on the south to Quinsnicket and Woonsocket on the north, including the Pawtucket or Blackstone river section of Rhode Island. The name of the tribe is from the Indian word "Naiaganset," "at the point," referring to the Point now known as Judith, named for Judith Hull, a later owner.

Trumbull is good authority for the meaning of Narragansett.



## THE NARRAGANSETT TRAIL

He says "Narragansett," as applied to country, bay and tribe, means "At the point." Roger Williams, on June 18th, 1682, wrote as follows as to the origin of the name "Narragansett."

"I also profess that being inquisitive of what roots the title or denominative Nahigonset should come, I heard that Nahigonset was so named from a little island between Pittaquomseut and Mish-quomack, (Westerly) on the sea and fresh water side. I went on purpose to see it, and about the place called Sugar Loaf Hill, I saw it and was within a pole of it, but could not learn why it was called Nahigonset."

The present accepted spelling of the name has been anglicized for nearly three centuries,—Narragansett. As to Mr. Williams' orthography, it is seldom that the same Indian word, in his writings, was spelled twice alike, so that he is not an authority in the spelling or meaning of Indian proper names. In the initial deed of the great sachem in 1638, Mr. Williams wrote the name of Canonicus, the great sachem, "Cannaunicusse," and his associate Miantinomi, "Mianantunnomu."

This Narragansett nation included the Niantics, the Potowomuts, the Pawtuxets, and a part of the Nipmucky, while the Wampanoags, with the Massachusetts and some scattering bands in Central New England were in some sense tributary to the government of the Narragansetts, whose chief sachem in 1620 was Canonicus, assisted by his nephew, Miantinomi. Canonicus was the ruler who sent a messenger to Plymouth, with a rattlesnake skin filled with Indian arrows, thereby showing his hostility to the white colonists and a challenge to battle. Governor Bradford's reply was brave and wise, when he returned the skin, filled with bullets. The strategy of Captain Myles Standish is seen in his curt and courteous reply. It was the same Canonicus and Miantinomi who deeded the Island of Aquidneck to William Coddington and his associates in 1638, and at the same time gave to Roger Williams a life estate in the Providence plantations. At this later date, the Narragansetts had been converted to a friendly spirit towards the whites, and a generous attitude towards the Providence settlers.

Godkin estimates the Indian population of New England after the great plague, to have been about forty thousand, of whom the great tribes of the Narragansetts constituted about one-third. This figure, however, is probably much too large.



## THE NARRAGANSETT TRAIL

It will be seen that the Narragansetts occupied the center of the coast line between the Abenakis of the Penobscot and the Mohawks of New York, and that their commercial and tribal relations led them in both directions. Then again, Rhode Island territory had no large rivers, and hence the great trails lay near the shore of their home territory. Their whole life interests lay within fifty miles of salt-waters. The lands they cultivated were near the sea, while their game lands included the hill country in the rear, and their rich and abundant fisheries were close at hand to their village life along the coast of Rhode Island and Massachusetts. It may be safely stated that the Narragansetts had the most interesting and attractive home-land of any of the North American tribes. The sea and ocean, with their wealth, were in front of them and near at hand, while in the rear of their teepees the hills rose in ascending series to nearly thousand-feet heights, and the forests that crowned them were full of game food. It was, indeed, an Indian paradise for the noblest, the strongest, the richest, of the red race. It is a wonder that no Parkman has studied the history and legends of this New England tribe; that no Cooper has woven the loves and hates, the human tragedies, of this throng of lovers, patriots, warriors; that no Whittier has written the bride of Aspanansuck, Wawaloam, and that no Longfellow has immortalized King Tom Ninigret, or portrayed drama of Miantinomi and his Nipmuc bride.

"Still stands the forest primeval, but under the shade of the branches,  
Dwells another race, with other customs and language."

The Narragansetts were great travellers by land and by sea. While they traversed the coast from Narragansett, their capital, to the Hudson on the West, over Long Island Sound, their birch canoes or dugouts could also be seen at the mouths of the Merrimac, the Androscoggin and the Kennebec, even as far east as Mohegan Isle and the Penobscot. They were bold navigators, and defiant warriors when war was in the ascendant.

Their land travels were as extended as their sea voyages, reaching to the Mohawks on the west on Lake Erie, to St. Johns on the east, and to Champlain and Montreal on the north. They were great land voyageurs, along the foot-paths on trails which their revered but long-forgotten ancestors had made and used ages before the generations of Canonicus, Sassacus and Chickataubut. It





## THE NARRAGANSETT TRAIL

is worth remembrance that the lines of our State, interstate and other American routes of travel were laid out by Indian engineers, in the earliest occupation of the territory by the aboriginal people. The skill of woodcraft, the routing, crossing of streams at fordable points, avoidance of hill climbing, avoidance of sands and boggy lands, the use of moraines, the establishment of guides, the study of customs, all these and more made the ancient Indian races our teachers in the art of road structure. The American red-man was the first American road-man—the great American traveller, the pioneer footman of the world. The Narragansett Indian was the superior walker, climber, runner of his age—and why?

The chief seat and centre of the Narragansett nation was on the west shore of Narragansett Bay. Their capital town was Narragansett, near or at Wickford, on the bay. A careful study of the geology of this west shore shows the entrance of many fresh water brooks and rivers flowing from the high lands on the west into inlets and coves along the sandy shore. The shores of the bay at low water expose a large area of sand, the home and breeding places of shellfish, especially the soft-clam, *mya abrenaria*; the hard or round clam, *Venus mercenaria*; periwinkles, *littorina*; mussels, *mytilus edulis*; scallops, *P. irradians*; and oysters, *ostrea virginica*. These shellfish were most abundant in the Indian and Pilgrim periods, and in some parts of the bay are still plentiful. Boiled, stewed, fried or baked, or raw, the Indian found his most valuable food at no cost save the labor of digging from the sand. While the food was rich and sustaining, the Narragansetts turned the clam and other shells to their use in the manufacture of peag, a sort of money consisting of beads made from the ends of shells, rubbed down, polished, and strung into belts on necklaces. Black or purple peag was worth twice as much as white. The peag was so large and so well made that the Narragansett peag or wampum excelled in the coin realm of the natives, and gave the Narragansetts first place as manufacturers, financiers, and merchants. Narragansett (Wickford) was the mint for the making of Indian coin for the Algonquin tribes of New England, but for many years it was the currency of the white settlers in the Eastern colonies.

Peag made trade and travel lively, and as all Indians were naturally on the go, the Narragansett Trail and its cross trails were in daily use by the male members of the various tribes on business or





## THE NARRAGANSETT TRAIL

pleasure trips of longer or shorter extent. It is easy to see how a tribe with such a wealth producing business would easily outstrip all the other neighboring tribes, making all tributary to it in securing what to the Indian were the luxuries of savage life. Wigwams, utensils, tools, implements of warfare, foods, dress, ornaments, festivals, banquets, were common to all the nation, and it is said that among this people all were superior in their condition, and not a pauper was known in their borders. To carry on trade relations with other nations, to minister to tribal needs, to cultivate friendships, to establish and maintain social relations, to administer justice, to hold councils and execute laws,—all these and other functions made the Narragansett Trail a primitive Broadway where business, fashion and folly found daily companionship. If New England had an estimated population of one hundred thousand Algonquin Indians before the plague of 1618, the Narragansett Trail must have been a densely travelled highway for its own people and visiting tribes.

The Indian was the first New England road-builder, at which business he was an expert. At road-making he outrivalled the elephant and the buffalo. The Indian roads or trails were varied in extent and purpose, and their routes were chosen with great skill and knowledge of the laws of locomotion. The first law of a great trail was to follow a straight line. A second was to go around rather than over hills and down valleys. On the long tribal and intertribal trails, rivers were crossed in their upper courses, where they could be forded at high or low waters. Water, sand and rocks were avoided by circuitous detours, as the Indian was careful of his foot-gear and when running barefooted wanted a smooth hard path for speed and comfort. Cleared lands were preferred to woods for long trails.

The long trails were for tribal and inter-tribal uses. These trails extended across the continent from north to south and east to west. Well known and well-worn paths extended from the Penobscot to the Missouri, the Mississippi and the Columbia rivers. Trails are still traceable from Canada and the Great Lakes to the Gulf of Mexico. Sectional trails intersected the long avenues of travel, and served individual, village and tribal necessities. A well-traveled Indian courier was the guide, even to remote parts of our Western Continent. The old trails were as familiar to the Indian trader and



## THE NARRAGANSETT TRAIL

hunter as are the railroad and auto routes to the twentieth century traveller. An Indian news runner could make a hundred miles a day, after long training and anointing the limbs with oil.

The sections of the long inter-tribal trails were known by the names of the provincial tribe in which they were located, as the Penobscot, Wampanoag, the Narragansett, the Pequot, the Mohawk, trails. As the Narragansetts were the chief New England tribe, we may assume that the termini of the Narragansett trail were at Boston, on the northeast, and New York on the southwest. Later, the prominence of the Pequot tribe, with its capital at Pequot (now New London) led to the appropriation of the name Pequot to that portion between Stonington and New York, the name it now holds. The old Indian trail from Stonington, Connecticut, east to Narragansett Pier, north to Providence and northeast to Boston, may now properly be called the Narragansett Trail, as the Wampanoags and Massachusetts Indians were subject tribes of the Narragansetts from a time far beyond the knowledge of the first white settlers of New England.

A trail was a well-beaten path or road, its surface usually a few inches below the level of the ground it traversed. As the Indians travelled single file, the trail never exceeded twenty-four inches in width. There is the remnant of an Indian trail in South Kingstown, from the Chepuxet river, leading towards the Indian fort in the Narragansett swamp, a half mile in length, which was built up about two feet above the surface of the land across which it passed. So far as known to the writer, this is the only existing trace of a real Indian trail in Rhode Island.

When the Pilgrims landed in New England in 1620, they traversed the country along the Indian trails leading out from Plymouth, on foot. With the introduction of neat cattle, the men and women would ride on the backs of heifers, steers, cows and bulls. The poet Longfellow, in "The Courtship of Myles Standish," tells us that after the wedding of John Alden and Priscilla, the groom

"Brought out his snow-white steer, obeying the hand of its master,  
Led by a cord that was tied to an iron ring in its nostrils,  
Covered with crimson cloth, and a cushion placed for a saddle.

\* \* \* \* \*

Gayly, with joyous laugh, Priscilla mounted her palfrey."

William Blackstone, who died in 1675, when too old to walk to Cocomscussuc to preach on the Sabbath, rode on a trained white



## THE NARRAGANSETT TRAIL

bull along the trail from Wawaypoonseag to the Richard Smith trading house, a distance of about sixteen miles, over the old Narragansett trail. After the introduction of horses, the trails were followed on horseback. On Aquidneck, highways and bridges were built at the outset of the settlement, in 1638, but the other towns did not construct roads and introduce carts, oxen and horses, until twenty-five or thirty years later. Prior to that time, all travel and traffic was along the narrow Indian trails, of undated lay-out and use.

The Narragansett Trail began at the Pawcatuck river at Westerly, the stream which separates Rhode Island from Connecticut, and the western bound of the Niantic lands. The Pequots occupied the territory west of the Pawcatuck towards the Connecticut river, including the South Valley of the Thames or Pequot river. Near the passage of this river, the trail divided into three—one trail going south to the shore of the sound at Watch Hill; one going north over the high lands on the east bank of the Pawcatuck towards the Nipmuck lands north of Hope Valley. The other, the main trail through the Niantic country, continued on a direct easterly course, along the sandy bottom of the morain uplands, on the north as far as Matunuck. Side trails ran to Weekapaug, Quonochontaug and the several ponds on the south shore, adjacent to the waters of the Atlantic. The main trail was about two miles from the ocean.

The Indian name for the western section of the Niantic lands was Misquamicut,—“a place for catching salmon,”—and was purchased and settled by a colony of Baptists from Newport, in 1661, forming the towns of Westerly, Hopkinton, Richmond, and a part of Charlestown.

At Matunuck the main trail took a northeasterly direction towards the head of Point Judith Pond, passing through the present village of Wakefield, in South Kingstown; it then turned easterly along the south end of Tower Hill, till it reached the Pettaquamscutt river, when it turned north, following the west bank of that river to its head, near the foot of Hammond Hill. Here, at the Gilbert Stuart house, the trail divided, one of the two trails going east to join a trail at the north end of Boston Neck, above Barber's Heights. This East or main trail continued north, crossing the Annaquatucket river near its mouth, and entered the capital town, Narragansett, now Wickford, within a quarter of a mile of the bay. The western section of the trail, from the Gilbert Stuart house at





## THE NARRAGANSETT TRAIL

the head of Pettaquamscutt river, ran northwest over Hammond Hill, and at the northern base of the hill ran straightway to the north and joined the easterly section at Narragansett-Wickford.

From Narragansett, the main trail ran north in a direct course from a half mile to two miles from salt water, till it reached Hunt's river, at the head of Potowomut peninsula. The ford at this river was near the present bridges south of the Nathanael Greene birthplace. The Great Trail here turned to the northwest, to the south end of Greenwich Cove, where it turned to the north, running in a direct course to Apponaug, passing through Chepiwanoxet and Coweset, both Indian villages.

At Apponaug the trail again divided, one trail running nearly north through Hill's Grove to the Pawtuxet river ford, whence it continued along the line of the present Elmwood avenue to Broad street, Providence. Here it was united with an East trail from Apponaug, which ran to the head of Warwick Cove, thence north by Posnaganset Pond to Pawtuxet. Here, the Pawtuxet was forded at the Falls, and the route continued on the old lines of Broad street to its union with the North trail at the junction of Broad street and Elmwood avenue. The Trail then followed Broad and Weybossett streets, swinging to the south of Weybossett Hill, where the Arcade now stands. The ford across the head of Providence river was between Turk's Head, Providence, and the foot of Steeple street. When the tide was high, the Woonasquatucket was forded, west of the present site of Brown and Sharpe shops, and the Moshassuck was forded at Wapwayset, under the hill at the foot of Olney street.

At Providence the Trail followed the present line of North Main street, along the site of the old Sayles Tavern (Pidge House) to Pawtucket Falls, Pawtucket. Here, were two fords, one below the Falls and the other above the present railroad bridge, at Central Falls.

From Pawtucket river in Massachusetts, the Narragansett Trail passed through Pawtucket, North Attleboro, Wrentham, Walpole, Dedham, Roxbury, into Boston, by the road now known as Washington street, to Boston. This was the old post and stage road from Providence to Boston as laid out and measured by Benjamin Franklin as Colonial Postmaster in 1753. From Providence to New York, the post road of Franklin followed the Narragansett and Pequod Trails. Some of the stone markers set by Franklin are still





## THE NARRAGANSETT TRAIL

standing. One in Pawtucket, Rhode Island, is inscribed "2 M. to C. H.," which interpreted means that by the rotary measurement of Franklin's shay wheel, it was two miles from that stone to the court house at Providence.

The length of the Narragansett Trail from Boston to Providence by the stage route was about forty-two miles. The length of the Trail from Providence to Westerly Bridge, as travelled by the Indians, was nearly sixty miles. The total mileage was not far from one hundred, a day's run for an Indian messenger. Add the Pequot Trail from Westerly to New York, and we have two hundred and seventy-four miles for the two trails from New York to Boston.

I find a record of the year 1697 which gives distances in miles and all the places between New York and Boston "where travelers could find entertainment for man and beast:"

"From New York to Boston it is accounted 274 miles, viz: From the Post Office in New York to Jo. Clapps, in the Bowery, is 2 miles (which generally is the baiting place, where gentlemen take leave of their friends going so long a journey), and where a parting glass or two of generous wine, if well applied, make their dull horses feel one spur in the head is worth two in the heel."

From said Clapp's (his tavern was near the corner of Bayard street), to half-way house, 7 miles: thence to King's Bridge, 9: to old Shute's at East Chester, 6: to New Rochel Meeting-House, 4: to Joseph Norton's, 4; to Denhams, at Rye, 4: to Knap's, at Horse-neck, 7: to Belden's, at Norwalk, 10: to Burr's, at Fairfield, 10: to T. Knowles', at Stratford, 9: to Andrew Sanford's at Milford, 4: to Captain John Mills', at New Haven, 10: to the Widow Frisbie's, at Branford, 10: to John Hudson's, at Guilford, 9: to John Grissets, at Killinsworth, 10: to John Clarke's at Seabrook, (Saybrook) 10: to Mr. Plum's, at New London, 18: to Mr. Sexton's, 15: to Mr. Pemberton's, in the Narragansett country, probably at Westerly, 15: to the Frenchtown, Mr. Havens, 24: to Mr. Turpin's, Providence, 20: to Mr. Woodcock's, North Attleboro, 15: to Mr. Billings' farm, 11: to Mr. White's, 6: to Mr. Fisher's, 6: and from thence to the great towne of Boston, 10, where many good lodgings and accommodations may be had for love and money."

This was the pioneer Indian Trail from Boston to Manhattan, and was the shortest overland route, the best laid and conditioned, and the most travelled overland route for foot or horseback travel.

Mention should here be made of two other Indian trails from Boston, which were tributary to the Narragansett and Pequot Trail.



## THE NARRAGANSETT TRAIL

One, the Nipmuck, ran southwest through the Nipmuc country, by the great fishing lake, Chargogagogmanchaugagogchaubunagunga-maug, thence south down the Quinebaug and Thames Valley, to Pequot or New London, there intersecting the trail to New York. The other, "the Bay Path," ran from Boston west through Central Massachusetts to Springfield; thence southerly by Hartford to Long Island Sound, intersecting the New York Trail at Saybrook, at the mouth of the Connecticut. The subject of New England Trails, Bridal Paths, Roads and Old Taverns, may engage my pen later. Now I must confine myself to the Narragansett Trails.

The Narragansetts were not nomadic. They had beautiful home lands on the west shore of the Bay, and owned and occupied the principal islands in the Bay, which was about ten miles in width from Narragansett to Pocasset, the territory of the Wampanoags, of which Massasoit was chief sachem at the advent of the Plymouth settlers in 1620. Their tillage land, five miles in width from the bay and richly fertilized by bay products of seaweed and fish, bore abundant crops of corn, beans, squashes, pumpkins and tobacco, under the cultivation of the women, the serfs of the tribe. The men found their sports and labors in hunting, fishing and trade with neighboring tribes, while the occupation of making wampum from the abundance of shells occupied much of the time and labor of both sexes. The Narragansetts were also skilled in making soapstone basins, kettles, pipes, etc., from a quarry near Neutakonkanut hill, in Providence. They also made necklaces, girdles and bracelets of beads, with regalia for the sachems and other dignitaries of the tribe, all of which industries point to a strong commercial life on the Bay. Narragansett (Wickford) was the centre of the tribal life of this prosperous people. This was their capital and longest settlement. Sea voyagers set out from the land-locked harbor, and barter of all descriptions was carried on in the midst of multitudes of teepees.

Concerning the villages of the Narragansetts, we have small knowledge. Champlain reported large Indian wigwam villages and fields of corn along the New England coast in 1637. Verazzano writes that a single wigwam was often the home of twenty-five men, women and children. Of the thickly settled centres of population, we may readily assume that, while the whole coast line was well peopled, village centres were established, at Pettaquamscutt, Nam-



## THE NARRAGANSETT TRAIL

cook, Boston Neck, Saunderstown, Barbers Heights, Hamilton, Wickford, Quonset, Allen's Harbor, the Devil's Foot, Aspanansuck, Quidnesset, Potowomut, East Greenwich, Chepiwanoxet, Moshanticut, Coweset, Apponaug, Nausauket, Buttonwoods, Tunckatucket, Pomham, Warwick Neck, Shawomet, Conimicut, Occupassuatuxet, Pawtuxet, Pontiac, Natick, Posneganset, Setuat, Auburn, Elmwood, Moshassuck, Pawtucket, Chepachet, and a large settlement and tribal council chamber under and east of Cawcawnjawatchuck. It is fair to assume the existence of fifty Narragansett villages between Westerly on the south and Womsocket on the north, including those of the Niantics and Nipmucs. Mr. Williams wrote, "a man shall come to many towns, some bigger, some smaller, it may be a dozen in 20 miles travel." It was the custom of the Indians to spend the spring, summer and autumn months on and near the shore and their corn lands, but in the winter they would quickly change their abodes to the thick, warm, wooded valleys, not far distant. This change of residence was made in a single day, all the people joining in the labor of moving their wigwams and other belongings. As the tribal lands were a common possession, there were no ownerships to determine the place of habitation of each family in the forests. As to planting lands, each family took up its accustomed fields, by courtesy. Few land contests ever occurred, as land was plentiful and the women attended to the location of the planting, the labor of breaking up the soil, planting seed, cultivating and harvesting crops, —all except tobacco, which the men took pleasure in cultivating and smoking.

Having located the residence of the Narragansetts and the great Narragansett Trail from the Pawcatuck river to Boston, it is my purpose to tell the story of some of the principal events that occurred on or near the Trail after the arrival of Plymouth settlers in 1620. I hope also to introduce some of the principal Indian actors in scenes transpiring on or near the Trails during the first seventy-five years of colonial history.

Narragansett (Wickford), has already been referred to as the capital of the Narragansett nation. Concerning it, little more can be said, than that it was the chief town and the centre of the business interest of the people. Commerce of a primal sort was carried on from this port; tribal counsels were held in the neighborhood, and governmental authority issued hence for the nation. It was no small





## THE NARRAGANSETT TRAIL

matter to govern a native population of twenty thousand. Brinley says the tribe numbered thirty thousand men; Roger Williams says the tribe could raise five thousand warriors, and Hutchinson, that they were the most numerous of all the tribes between Boston and the Hudson river. As to trade, Hutchinson says "they were considered a commercial people, and not only began a trade with the English for goods for their own consumption, but soon learned to supply other distant nations, at advanced prices, and to receive beaver and other furs in exchange, upon which they made a profit; they were the most curious coiners of wampum peag, and supplied other tribes with pendants, bracelets, tobacco pipes of stone, some blue, some white, earthen vessels and pots, stone axes, tomahawks, mortars, pestles, arrowheads, etc."

Canonicus was the chief sachem of the Narragansetts. He was the son of Tashtassuck, who had but two children, a son and a daughter, whom he joined in marriage because he could find none worthy of them out of his family. Four sons were born of this marriage, of whom Canonicus was the oldest. He was born in 1574 and died in 1648, at Narragansett. The youngest of the four brothers was named Mascus, whose son, Miantinomi, was an associate in the government with his uncle. Canonchet, *alias* Nanno, was the son of Miantinomi, and succeeded to the sachemship at the death of Canonicus.

Miantinomi married Wawaloam, and lived with his queen at Aspanansuck (Exeter Hill), until his execution in Connecticut in 1643, while yet a young man. Had he survived his uncle, he would have been a worthy and able ruler of the Narragansetts. Of these braves, three have monuments to perpetuate their names, Miantinomi in Connecticut, Canonchet at Providence, and Wawaloam in Exeter, Rhode Island.

Canonicus was a really great ruler, and widely known as a wise and sagacious man. His home was at "The Devil's Foot," on the Trail, about two miles north of Wickford. This long, rocky cliff is indented with hoof-like impressions, suggesting the name the ledge still bears. Forests now cover much of the formerly open prairie lands about the sachem's teepee. Here was the Council Chamber of the Narragansetts, and here were decided civil, military and criminal affairs of the whole nation. This great ledge of rocks, still unbroken, stands as the only permanent monument to the Na-





## THE NARRAGANSETT TRAIL

tion of which this locality was the capital. But Indian royalty has passed and left no sign. "The Devil's Foot" issues no secret of the transactions it witnessed in the days of Narragansett supremacy.

Richard Smith was the first white settler among the Indians at Narragansett. Smith, "a Puritan of the moderate school," born 1596, left England in 1637, and was admitted an inhabitant of Newport, R. I., the 20th of the 3d, 1638-9. Mr. Williams writes of him:

"Richard Smith, who, for his conscience toward God, left a fair possession in Gloucestershire and adventured with his relations an estate to New England and was a most acceptable and prime leading man in Taunton, Plymouth Colony; for his conscience sake, (many differences arising), he left Taunton and came to the Nahigonsik country \* \* and put up in the thickest for the Barbarians the first English house amongst them."

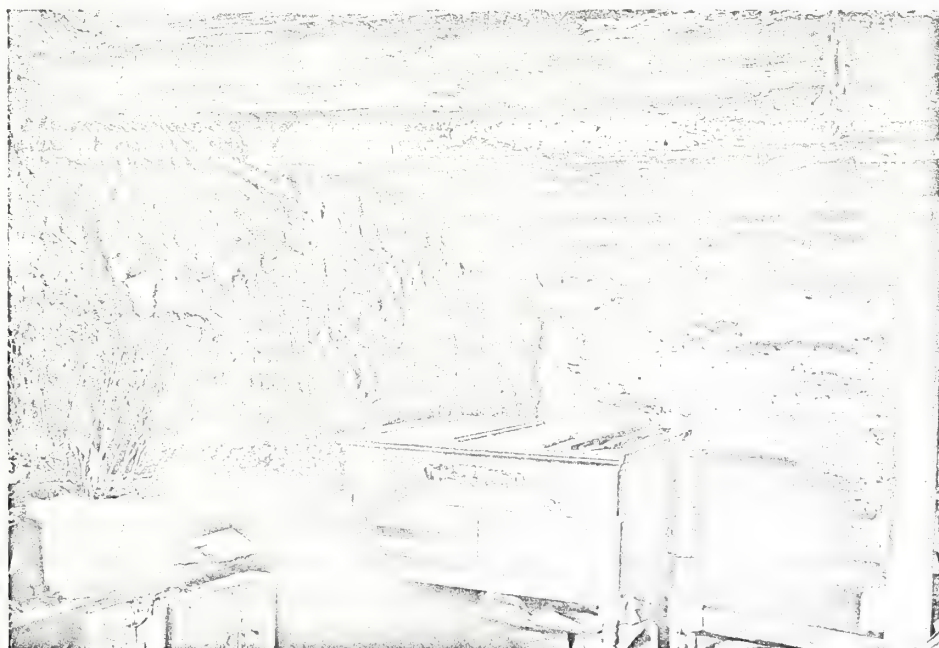
The date of Smith's house-building was probably 1639, although authorities differ. There is no doubt that he built a block-house at Cocumscussuc, north of Wickford, "purchasing a tract of land of the Narragansett sachem, among the thickest of the Indians, (computed at thirty thousand people), erected a house for trade, and gave free entertainment to travellers; it being the great road of the country." (Mass. Hist. Coll. 1, 216). This tract of land extended a mile west from the salt water. Later, Smith and his son Richard made purchases on long leases of Indian lands, south and west of the first purchase. About 1643-5 Richard Smith, Sen., left "Smith's Castle" at Cocumscussuc in care of his son Richard, and with other colonists founded the town of Newtown, on Long Island. Being assailed by savages, the Smith family fled to New Amsterdam (New York), where they made the acquaintance of Gysbert Op Dyck, an emigrant from Germany, in 1638. Later, Mr. Op Dyck married Katherine Smith, daughter of Richard, and soon the Smiths and Op Dycks returned to the "Smith Castle" home at Narragansett. Thereafter the Updikes became one of the leading families of Rhode Island, and of the South County.

In the long contest as to the western bounds of Rhode Island colony, Mr. Smith espoused the cause of Connecticut against Rhode Island and held the office of constable under a commission from Connecticut; and in 1673 his son Richard was commissioned as president of the council for the royal domain for the King's Colony.





FORTY MEN'S GRAVES, 1675, AT COCUMSCUSSUC, NEAR WICKFORD, R. I.



FLOOR TIMBERS AND SOUTH AND WEST CELLAR WALL OF ROGER WILLIAMS' TRADING HOUSE

Built in 1644. Note unhewn timbers of the floor set in the wall. Window in southwest corner



## THE NARRAGANSETT TRAIL

Although the Smiths were of the Puritan stamp, Episcopal services were held at the castle once a month, conducted by Rev. William Blackstone, a minister for the Church of England, riding from his home in Cumberland, on his trained mouse-colored bull, to and from, a distance of forty miles. Mr. Potter states that Mr. Williams often preached at Cocumscussuc.

Richard Smith, senior, died in 1666, having led, as his eulogist says, "A sober, honorable and religious life;" dying "in his own house in much serenity of soul and comfort, he yielded up his spirit to God, the Father of Spirits, in peace." His property at the castle descended mainly to his son Richard.

In 1643 Mr. Williams, fearing the loss of Providence Plantations in the territorial claims of Plymouth, Massachusetts Bay and Connecticut colonies, made a voyage to London to intercede with the Colonial Commissioners, of whom Sir Harry Vane was one, to grant him a patent for the plantations. As the trip was at his own expense, and his absence occupied a good part of a year, always poor, he returned in 1644 with his much coveted parchment, to find himself in very straitened circumstances. It occurred to him that a second trading house was needed at Narragansett, and repairing to his friend Canonieus and making known his wishes, the sachem gave him a tract of land at "Devil's Foot," north of and near the royal teepee, on which to build a dwelling and a store under one roof. A house about sixteen feet square was built on the east side of the Trail, with a cellar the size of the house, with a stone chimney on the north side. Of that house, two sides of the cellar wall are now standing, as built by Mr. Williams. The floor timbers, roughly hewn on the upper side, are still in their original position. At the southwestern corner, the cellar still shows a port hole for light for that store room and possible living room. A trading house was the natural gathering place and business centre for the neighborhood, and at Smith's and Williams' houses could be bought, in barter or with peag, sugar, tobacco, pipes, corn, cloth, house and land utensils, ammunition, traps for hunting, "strong liquors," English-made tools, etc., etc. While the laws were strict as to the sale of intoxicating liquors to the Indians, they were able to obtain it freely. Canonchet was the first sachem to petition the white traders not to sell "strong water" to his tribe, and so far as our records attest was the first prohibitionist in New England.





## THE NARRAGANSETT TRAIL

The present gambrel-roofed house, standing on the site of the Williams trading house and protecting the ancient relics, is more than a century old, and is owned and occupied by Mr. Almon C. Ladue and his family. It stands on the east side of the Narragansett Trail, and about forty rods north of the Devil's Foot. The photograph of the southwest corner of the Ladue house shows the rough floor timbers, resting on the stone cellar wall. The open space for a small window as an outlook from the cellar to the south, appears in the picture.

In 1649, Mr. Williams "had leave to sell a little wine or stronge water to some natives in theare sickness." Prior to that date, trading houses were allowed to sell at wholesale or retail to the natives, under a license system.

It is probable that Mr. Williams and his family lived at Narragansett from 1644 to 1651, for all his correspondence to Governor Winthrop of Pequot, Connecticut, and others, was dated at Narragansett.

The earliest extant deed of Narragansett land, to Richard Smith Sen., is that of Roger Williams, dated, "Newport, the 3rd of ye 7th month soe called 1651." By it, Williams conveys to Smith, for fifty pounds, "my tradeing house at Narragansett, together with two Iron Guns or Murderers there lying as alsoe my fields and fenceing aboute the s'd House as alsoe the use of the litle Island for goates which the old Sachem deceased Lent mee for that use." At this time Smith, Sen., was residing at Portsmouth, Rhode Island.

It is believed that the cellar walls and floor timbers of the Williams Trading House are the only relics, *in situ*, of any one of the old New England houses of that type, and for that reason should be preserved. They also may be treated as a memorial of the only clearly proven relic of the handiwork and residence of Roger Williams. Here he lived for at least seven years, from 1644 to 1651.

The Havens Tavern was the first hostelry on the Rhode Island section of the Narragansett Trail. It was located in North Kingstown, on the east side of the Trail, about one mile north of the Smith Trading House. The house now standing on the cellar of the old Tavern may and probably does contain timbers of the old house, built by Thomas Havens of Newport, who bought the land and erected the first house before 1700. A sign of the later tavern belongs to Col. H. Anthony Dyer, of Providence.





## THE NARRAGANSETT TRAIL

These early public houses were fitted to feed, entertain and lodge the travellers on the post road, and also had a bar-room and public bar, over which were sold to the neighborhood and transients, on foot or by horse, all liquors, now known as "wet goods," such as wine, rum, gin, brandy and cider. Not a householder in the country failed to patronize the Havens bar, from which the chief profits sprang. A blazing wood fire and bountiful dinners were not to be slighted on frosty days and stormy nights, and a mug of cider, a bowl of "toddy," "punch," or "flip," or even a glass of West India rum, added warmth and cheer to the old Rhode Island bar-room, and made the tavern of the grandfathers a place of universal resort in all seasons and weathers. Here it was that general news was retailed to every comer, for the dailies had not appeared. The good men of the neighborhood here met to discuss town politics in March, crop prospects in July, harvesting in November, hog and beef killing in December, and news and gossip of the home folks, small and great, every day in the year.

A very interesting story is told of the Havens Tavern by Mrs. Sarah Kemble Knight, wife of Richard Knight, of Boston, who made the journey from Boston and New York on horseback by way of the usual and best route, the Narragansett Trail, in 1704. Madam Knight passed her late years in Norwich, Connecticut, possessed considerable real estate, and "stood high in the social rank, and was respected both in the church and in mercantile affairs." The following is from Madam Knight's Journal and relates her return trip from Boston, on horseback to New York, in 1704:

"Tuesday, October ye third, \* \* \* about three afternoon went on with my Third Guide who Rode very hard; and having crossed Providence Ferry, we came to a River (Pawtuxet) wch they Generally Ride thro', But I dare not venture; so the Post got a Ladd and Cannoo to carry me to tother side, and hee rid thro' and led my Hors. The Cannoo was very small and shallow, so that when we were in she seem'd redy to take in water, which greatly terrified mee, and caused me to be very circumspect, sitting with my hands fast on each side, my eyes steady, not daring so much as to lodg my tongue a hair's breadth more on one side of my mouth than tother, nor so much as think on Lott's wife, for a long thought would have oversett our wherey: But was soon out of this pain, by feeling the Cannoo on shore, wch I as soon almost saluted with my feet; and Rewarding my sculler, again mounted and made the best



## THE NARRAGANSETT TRAIL

of our way forwards. The Rode here was every even (Warwick) and ye day pleasant, it being now near Sunsett. But the Post told mee we had neer 14 miles to Ride to the next stage, (where we were to lodge.) (Havens Tavern). I askt him of the rest of the Rode, foreseeing wee must travail in the night. Hee told mee there was a bad River we were to Ride thro', wch was so very frce a hors could sometimes hardly stem it; But it was but narrow, and wee should soon be over. I cannot express the concern of mind this relation sett me in; \* \* \* \* wee entered a Thickett of Trees and Shrubbs, and I perceived by the Hors's going, we were on the descent of a Hill, wch as were come nearer the bottom, 'twas totally dark with the Trees that surrounded it. But I knew by the Going of the Hors wee had entered the water, wch my guide told me was the hazzardous River (Hunt's at Potowomut) he had told me off; and hee Riding up close to my side, Bid me not fear—we should be over immediately. \* \* \* \* So as the Post bid me, I gave reins to my Nagg; and sitting as stedy as just before in the Cannoo, in a few minutes got safe to the other side, which hee told mee was Narragansett country.

"Here Wee found great difficulty in Travailing, the way being very narrow, and on each side the trees and bushes gave us very pleasant welcomes wth their Branches and bows, which wee could not avoid, it being so exceeding dark. \* \* \* I on a suden was Rous'd \* \* \* by the Post's sounding his horn, wch assured mee hee was arrived at the stage, where wee were to Lodge. \* \* \* \*

"Being come to Mr. Havens' [Tavern] I was very civilly received and courteously entertained, in clean comfortable House; and the good Woman was very active in helping off my Riding Clothes, and then askt what I would eat. I told her I had some Chocolett, if she would prepare it; wch with the help of some Milk, and a little clean brass kettle, she soon effected to my liking. I then betook me to my Apartment, wch was a little Room, parted from the Kitchen by a single bord partition; where, after I had noted the occurrences of the past day, I went to bed, wch, tho' pretty hard, yet neet and handsome. But I could get no sleep, because of the Clamor of some of the Town tope-ers in next Room, Who were entred into a strong debate concerning ye signification of the name of their Country, (viz) Narraganset. One said it was named so by ye Indians, because there grew a Brier there, of a prodigious Highth and bigness, the like hardly ever known, called by the Indians Narragansett; And quotes an Indian of so barbarous a name for his Author, that I could not Write it. His Antagonist Replied no—It was from a Spring it had its name, wch hee well knew where it was, wch was extreem cold in summer, and as Hott as could be imagined in the Winter, Weh was much resorted too by the natives, and by them called Narragansett, (Hott and Cold,) and that was the originall of



## THE NARRAGANSETT TRAIL

their places name—with a thousand Impertinences not worth notice, weh He uttered with such a Roreing voice and Thundering blows with the fist of wickedness on the Table, that it peirced my very head, I heartily fretted and wish't 'em tongue tyed; \* \* \* \* I set my Candle on a Chest by the bed side, and setting up, fell to my old way of Composing my Resentments, in the following manner:

"I ask thy Aid, O Potent Rum!  
To charm these wrangling Topers Dum!  
Thou hast their Giddy Brains possest—  
The man confounded with the Beast—  
And I, poor I, can get no rest.  
Intoxicate them with thy fumes:  
O still their Tongues till morning comes!"

Wednesday, October 4th. About four in the morning, we set out for Kingston, (for so was the town called.) \* \* \* This Rode was poorly furnished wth accommodations for Travellers, so that we were forced to ride 22 miles by the Post's Account, but neerer 30 by mine, before wee could bait so much as our horses, weh I exceedingly complained of. \* \* \* From hence we proceeded \* \* \* through the Narragansett Country pretty Leisurely; and about one afternoon came to Paukataug River, (Pawcatuck at Westerly, R. I.)"

Elizabeth Spring was a bountiful Indian spring, at the southwest bank of Greenwich Cove, at the head of Potowomut Neck. It still exists, in reduced condition. This spring now bears the name Elizabeth, from Elizabeth Winthrop, wife of Hon. John Winthrop, Jr., Governor of Connecticut, son of Governor John Winthrop of Massachusetts. Governor Winthrop's home was at Pequot (now New London, Connecticut), and Mr. Williams held frequent correspondence with him from his Narragansett trading house. Mrs. John Winthrop, Jr., was accustomed to ride from Pequot to Boston, horseback, along the Narragansett Trail, stopping for news, traffic or social intercourse at the Williams House of Trade and at the Indian Spring for water for herself and her entourage. Mrs. Winthrop died in 1672, and Governor Winthrop, Jr., in 1676. After Elizabeth's death, Roger Williams wrote to the Governor:

"Sir: I constantly think of you and send up one remembrance to Heaven for you, and a groan from myself for myself, when I pass Elizabeth's Spring. Here is the Spring, say I, (with a sigh), but where is Elizabeth? My Charity answers, She is gone to the Eternal Spring and Fountain of Living Waters.

"ROGER WILLIAMS."





## THE NARRAGANSETT TRAIL

A stone at the Spring bears the inscription, penned by Mr. Williams. This spring can be seen, under the bank at Greenwich Cove, at the head of Potowomut Neck, just east of the railroad bridge over the main road. The old Narragansett Trail followed the line of this road from Green's Forge, on Hunt's River, about a half mile to the South.

Garrison-houses were also located on or near main Indian trails. These were usually built of wood, with small windows and small port-holes on all sides, through which hostile Indians could be seen and from which guns could be fired, these houses being built for safety in times of danger, and were large enough to hold and protect a number of families. It is said that sixty or more persons found room and protection in the Bourne garrison, in Swansea, in the opening days of Philip's War, in June, 1675. The Richard Smith house at Cocumscussuc was both a trading house and a garrison, as its size would accommodate many people. It served as the rendezvous for the soldiers before and after the Narragansett Swamp Fights, December, 1675.

The Jireh Bull house was also a Garrison. This house was located west of the Pettaquamscutt river, at the old Tower Hill trail and north of the east and west trail leading across the Pettaquamscutt River, from "Boston Neck" at Middle bridge. It was but a short distance from both trails. Jireh Bull was the oldest child and only son of Gov. Henry Bull, of Newport, born 1638. He bought 500 acres of land at Pettaquamscutt in 1666, and was a resident of Kings Town, and a town officer in 1669.

The Bull garrison house was the rendezvous of the neighboring settlers, when conditions in the Indian country at Narragansett threatened the safety of the whites. In December, 1675, raids of King Philip's warriors alarmed Rhode Island settlers. Providence, Warwick, Greenwich and other settlements were attacked by the Confederate Indians, houses burned and the people scattered. While the Indian warriors were gathering at their stockade fort in the Narragansett Swamp, in December, 1675, a band of savages attacked the Bull garrison, and set the house on fire. Hubbard in his story of Philip's war, says: "Captain Prentice, with his troop, being sent to Pettaquamscutt, returned with the sad news of burning of Jerry Bull's Garrison house and killing ten Englishmen and five women and children, but two escaping in all." This was the first overt act of war on the part of King Philip's warriors on Rhode Island soil.





## THE NARRAGANSETT TRAIL

The "Stone-Greene Castle" in Warwick was built as a House of Refuge in case of danger. This was located north of Warwick Cove, on the Warwick section of the Narragansett Trail.

The Field garrison house, on the "Towne Streete" in Providence, was the only protectorate and house of armed defence in the town, and in it a remnant of the inhabitants took refuge, when Philip burned the town in 1676. The Field garrison stood near the site of the present Providence Savings Banks, on South Main street.

The most noted garrison in the Narragansett Trails was the Woodcock garrison and tavern at North Attleboro. The license reads: "July 5th, 1670, John Woodcock is allowed by the (Plymouth) Court to keep an Ordinary at the ten-mile river (so-called) which is in the way from Rehoboth to the Bay; and likewise enjoined to keep good order that no unruliness nor ribaldry be permitted there."

The Woodcock garrison was torn down in 1806 to make room for Hatch's tavern, built on the site. When torn down, the timbers were perfectly sound, although pierced by many bullets fired by the Indians in Philip's War.

Taverns, ordinaries or inns, as houses of refreshment were called, corresponding somewhat to our hotels, were set up, in the early days, on or near Indian trails and also near Indian villages. They sold "strong water," as all intoxicating liquors were called, to the Indians and whites alike, and refreshed weary and hungry travellers with beds and meals. Until the early years of the eighteenth century, horse-back travel was the usual mode of locomotion, as public highways had not been established and the Indian trail was a safe roadway for horse and rider. In fact the trail was the most expeditious route, as it was not obstructed by fences, gates or bars, as were the early New England roads.

When the cart, wagon and two wheeled chaise were introduced the roadway must needs be widened, and the Indian Trail was usually used as the base for the new order of travel and the new highway. The Narragansett Trail is a noted example of the conversion of a trail to a road for carriages. The present automobile road from Boston to New York follows practically the Narragansett Trail along Washington street from Boston, through Dedham, Walpole, Wrentham, Attleborough, Pawtucket, Providence, Pawtuxet, Warwick, East Greenwich, North Kingstown, Tower Hill, South Kings-



## THE NARRAGANSETT TRAIL

town, Charlestown, Westerly, Stonington, Groton, New London, New Haven to New York. From New Haven to New York, the old path is called the Pequot trail. The changes in the road from the Trail line are due to the shortening of the line or the avoidance of difficult passages over rocks or across streams. An instance occurs on Tower Hill in South Kingstown. The Trail in crossing the hill from north to south led down the east side of Tower Hill by the Jared Bull Garrison, which stood on the level land north of the Middle Bridge road and west of Pettaquamscutt River. Instead of that detour, the road now follows a south and southwest course into the village of Wakefield, through which the Trail passed. With the individual ownership of lands along the Narragansett Trail, we find the creation of obstructions to public travel by the establishment of gates or bar ways on the lines separating the properties of large owners. These barriers existed on some important old trails and roads well into the nineteenth century, when these private ways became public property of towns by gift or purchase of the owners.

The Narragansett Sachems: Canonicus, Teepee at "Devil's Foot:" died 1647. Miantinomi, son of Mascus, brother of Canonicus, Teepee at Aspanansuck; slain, 1643. Pessecus, son of Mascus, slain 1676. Wawaloam, Queen, wife of Miantinomi; Teepee at Aspanansuck,—Exeter Hill. Canonchet, son of Miantinomi, slain, 1676. Quaiapen or Magnus, Queen, wife of Maxamo and sister of Ninigret, Sachem for the Niantics, a tribe subject to the Narragansetts.

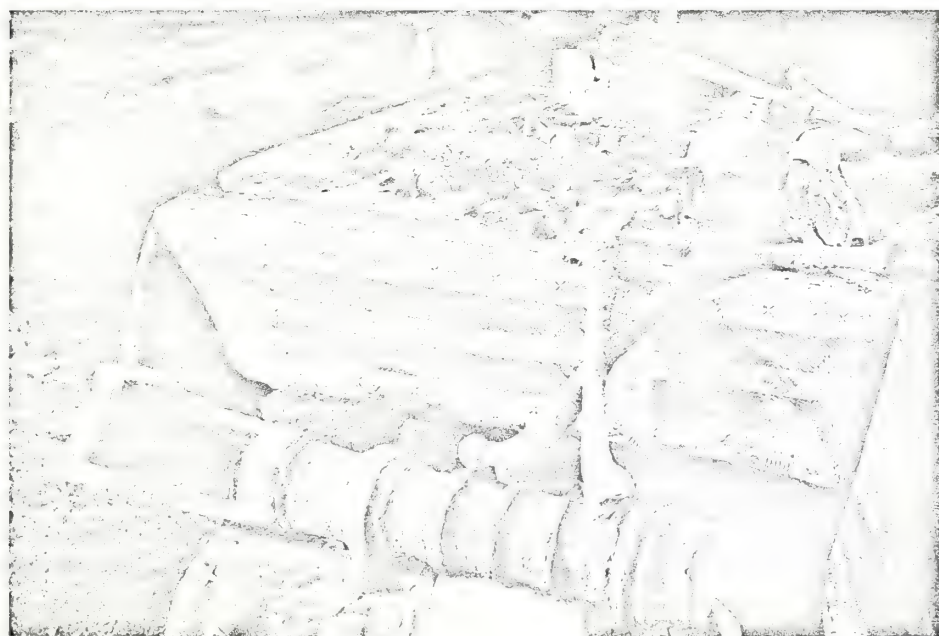
The Niantic Sachems: Ninegret, cotemporary with Canonicus, Teepee near Charlestown Pond: died about 1676. Ninegret's sister Quarapen married Maxanno, the son of Canonicus. Ninegret's daughter became queen after her father's death. At her inauguration, peag and other presents were given and a belt of peag was formed into a crown. Ninegret (2nd), succeeded his sister; he died about 1722. Charles Augustus and George Ninegret, (sons of N. 2nd), succeeded to the crown, the latter dying in 1746. "King Tom" Ninigret, son of George, succeeded his father as chief in 1746. See story of "King Tom's Palace." "Queen Esther," sister of "King Tom" was crowned on a large boulder, north of "King Tom's Palace," about 1770. An eye-witness said, "she was elevated on a large rock, so that the people might see her; the royal council stood around the 'Coronation Rock.' There were present about twenty Indian





CORONATION ROCK, KING TOM FARM, CHARLESTOWN, R. I., ON  
WHICH QUEEN ESTHER WAS CROWNED

Mr. Bicknell, author of this narrative, at left



ARNOLDIA RELICS, CHARLESTOWN, R. I., EXHUMED 1921



## THE NARRAGANSETT TRAIL

soldiers with guns, who marched to the rock. The Indians nearest the royal blood, in the presence of her Counsellors, put the Crown on Esther's head. It was made of cloth, covered with blue and white peag. When she was crowned the soldiers fired a royal salute and huzzaed in the Indian tongue. Then the soldiers escorted the Queen to her house and fired salutes. There were five hundred Indians present, besides others."

Queen Esther left one son, named George Ninegret. He was the last of the Niantic chiefs to wear a crown.

"King Tom's" Palace, built about 1760, has an interesting story. It seems that young "King Tom" desired an English education and went to London to acquire it. While there, he decided to live in a framed house, instead of a tribal cabin, and, by the aid of an architect, planned a two-story dwelling, of American style, and not expensive to build. On his return to his tribe, he built a substantial two-story house, on his tribal lands, near and south of Coronation Rock, in the town of Charlestown, near the great Salt Pond.

In 1761, King Tom married Mary Whitefield of Newport, and lived in the "Palace," until his death before 1770, when the crown and "Palace" descended to his sister, Queen Esther, his successor as chief of the Niantics. During "King Tom's" reign much of the Indian land was sold and a considerable part of the tribe emigrated to New York State.

"King Tom" should be remembered for his petition for a free school in Charlestown for his tribe, closing his letter with the prayer, "that when time with us shall be no more, that when we and the children over whom you have been such benefactors shall leave the sun and stars, we shall rejoice in a superior light."

The "Palace" and a large estate came into the possession of the Kenyon family, by whom the house has been enlarged and modernized and made a delightful South County residence on the Narragansett Trail. By a sad fortune this interesting old Indian house went up in flames in the autumn of 1921. "King Tom's Palace" is no more. Coronation Rock still stands in its firm setting.

The Indian burial ground on the hill, north of Cross's Mills is the ancient burial place of the Niantic Tribe, not the Narragansetts.

Arnoldia is a large estate, between the Narragansett Trail and Charlestown, on Pawaget Pond, and is owned by Mr. Thomas Ly-





## THE NARRAGANSETT TRAIL

man Arnold of New York, a descendant of William Arnold, the first settler at Providence, in 1636. These coast lands are a glacial deposit and were probably the corn lands of the Niantics. Though the tides and seas have destroyed the great Charlestown or Pawawget Pond as a harbor, it was probably three centuries and more ago safe and deep anchorage for large vessels.

In making excavations for a cellar, forty feet square, Mr. Arnold's workmen exhumed "A remarkable find," in October, 1921. About three feet below the surface their picks struck the butt of a breech-loading cannon. When clear of the encrusted soil, it proved to be a gun of the fourteenth century type, one-half of the muzzle end gone—broken or rusted off. The well-preserved trunnions show a mounted field-piece, the weight of the relic being 119 pounds, and four inches bore. The double collar near the broken end probably marked the middle of the gun's length. The gun lay at an angle of 45 degrees from the horizon. Below the cannon, at the depth of about five feet, a skeleton was exhumed, the skull and many of the bones being hard and well preserved. This man was of the European type, not less than forty years of age. The thigh bones were eighteen and one-half inches long and the other bones were of unusual size, thereby indicating a man of more than seven feet in height—possibly seven and one-half feet tall. In this grave was a two-edged sword, over five feet long, with an elaborate wrought-bronze hilt, of the ancient Italian type. The sword indicated its owner, a military officer of rank. Near this grave, three copper vessels were found,—one, 5½-inch diameter, a quart measure,—the second, 6-inch diameter, a two-quart measure,—the third, 10-inch diameter, a four-quart measure. The two smaller vessels are still usable for liquids. Further digging brought to light several Indian skulls, quantities of bones, beads, wampum, the bowl of a silver spoon, blue glass, a piece of cloth, some pottery, the jawbone of a cat, and a part of a child's jaw-bone showing the second teeth.

The photographs reproduced herewith, taken by Mr. John R. Hess, of the "Providence Journal" staff, shows a part of this interesting subterranean "Find." The whole offers a study for the physiologist, the psychologist and the historian. It may be that the smaller skulls were of African slaves, not native Indians.

Near Cross's Mills, in the Niantic Country, there are old earth-works, indicating an early fortification. As the position com-

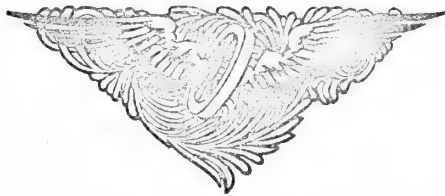


## THE NARRAGANSETT TRAIL

mands Pawawget Pond and its entrance, it must have been thrown up for offensive and defensive military operations by white men and not by Indians. A commission of the State Assembly has erected a monument to show that it was an Indian fortress. But it is too evident to be denied that the earthworks were made for defence by gunmen of the white race. Indians never fought behind earth structures,—their defenses were forests, rocks, etc.,—natural protectors. The red man never trusted a narrow barricade of earth or stone. He fought in the open, and trusted his arrows and tomahawks to do their deadly work.

This fort was Spanish, French or Dutch and implied occupants and assailants. The fort probably had some connection with the Arnoldia antiquities. The story of the early white occupation of the Niantic country awaits later discoveries.

The limits of a magazine article forbid accounts of the Pequot War, Manisses, The Warwick Purchase, Potowomut Purchase, Squamicut Settlement, Major Atherton's Purchases, Boston Neck, Aspanansuck, The Swamp Fight, Queen Quariapen and Her Fort, Frenchtown, The Cowesets, The Warwicks, The Nipmucks, Bishop McSparran, St. Paul's, Post Roads, The Greenes, Settlers on the Trail, Public Highways, Post Roads, etc.





# The Golden Chain of Memory

FAMOUS OLD CAPE MAY, NEW JERSEY

BY CARMITA DE SOLMS JONES, PHILADELPHIA, PENN.



THE OLD enemies of the Deerslayer, the Lenni-Lenapes of the Algonquins, came down from Ottawa, and in their wanderings reached the shore of the Delaware Bay at the point that is now Cape May. Here they rested, for, unlike the refugees from the flood, they had no ark, and before them stretched too wide "a river to cross." The Lenni-Lenapes, or Delawares as they were often called, were hunters, and were attracted to this region by the great variety of game and birds. Wilson, the ornithologist, says: "If birds are good judges of excellence in climate, Cape May must have the finest climate in the United States, for it has the greatest variety of birds." Living at Cape May were the Kechemeches, a subdivision of the tribe who gave to New Jersey the name of Schaakbee, or Scheyichbi, and to the River Delaware that of Whittuck. With noiseless tread they roamed, two hundred years ago, over a spicy carpet of pine needles, through a wilderness of dense forests destined to echo in future years with the hum of the saw mill.

One of the few Indian deeds in existence is or was in the possession of Charles Ludlam, Esq., of Dennisville, New Jersey. It is dated January 1, 1687, and was given to John Dennis for some land near Cape Island, as the town of Cape May was called. The mark of Panktoe, the Indian giver of the deed, resembles a Chinese character. The witnesses were John Carman and Abiah Edwards. New Jersey boasts that none of its soil was ever taken from its original Indian owners or their successors either by force or fraud. The Dutch, Swedes and English acquired the land in turn by purchase.

In 1623 Captain Cornelius Jacobson Mey, in the ship *Blyde Broodschap* (Glad Tidings), was sent to this country, accompanied by two other vessels carrying a party of settlers, by the States



## THE GOLDEN CHAIN OF MEMORY

General of Holland. He explored the coast, where he had been preceded by Hendrick Hudson, and arriving at Cape May, to which he gave his name, found there a lookout which had been left four years previously by Cornelius Hendrichsen, of the ship *Onrest*. Of the names given to various points visited by Captain Mey, only one, that of Cape May, has been retained.

Crossing from Cape Henlopen, called Cape Cornelius by Mey, to Cape May, Pieter Heysen, skipper of the *Walrus*, bought four miles along the bay and four miles inland. The deed, dated June 3, 1631, is preserved among the colonial archives. Here among the marshes, where "the inland waters were found to abound in oysters, clams, crabs and other shell fish," Pieter Heysen settled down to the life of a whaler. Later a plan was organized to colonize the Delaware shores, to raise grain and tobacco, and establish seal and whale fisheries. These proving unsuccessful, the colonists lost heart and returned to Holland, thus ending the Dutch occupation of New Jersey.

English colonists came from New Haven in 1638, to engage in whaling, and some of their descendants are among the present inhabitants of the county. The increase in the importance of this industry in 1691 induced the building of a town as a haven for the whalers who had come from further north. This, the first town in the county, had among its earliest dwellers Christopher Leaming, Thomas Caesar Hoskins, Samuel Hand, Jonathan Osborne, Cornelius Shellinks (Schellinger), Thomas Hewes and John Richardson. That they carried on the pursuit of whaling for many years is shown by the following extracts: The "Boston News-Letter" from March 17 to 24, 1718, says: "Philadelphia, March 13.—We are told that the whale men catch'd six whales at Cape May and twelve at Egg-Harbour." The "Pennsylvania Gazette" of March 13 to 19, 1729-30, says: "On the 5th of this Instant March, a whale came ashore dead about 20 mile to the Eastward of Cape May. She is a Cow, about 50 Foot long, and appears to have been killed by Whalemens; but who they are is yet unknown. Those who think they have a Property in her, are advised to make their Claim in Time."

The Swedes purchased the island for the second time about 1641. According to Campanius, a Swedish minister who lived from 1642 to 1648 on the banks of the Delaware, "Cape May lies in latitude 38° 31'. To the south of it are three sand banks parallel to each





## THE GOLDEN CHAIN OF MEMORY

other, and it is not safe to sail between them. The safest course is to steer between them and Cape May, between Cape May and Cape Henlopen."

Under the pen-name of "Beauchamp Plantagenet," Sir Edward Plowden wrote in 1648 "A Description of New Albion" that contained an account of a visit to Cape May. He gives a copy of a letter from Lieutenant Robert Evelyn, who left England in 1643 to explore the Delaware. Evelyn discovered that he had been preceded during the years between 1609 and 1632 by no less than eight explorers. The Egg Bay spoken of by Evelyn is now Egg Harbor Bay. Dr. Maurice Beesley says: "Master Evelyn must certainly have the credit of being the first white man that explored the interior as far as the seaboard, and his name should be perpetuated as the king of pioneers." Evelyn describes the abundance of fish and fowl, making special mention of a wild turkey that weighed forty-six pounds, and of "deere that bring forth three young at a time." The denizens of the magnificent virgin forests included bison, black bear, wolf, panther, catamount and deer, and among the smaller animals were opossum, raccoon, fox, mink, otter and beaver. For the skins of the latter the red men received a goodly amount of "sewan," the currency in use, from their English neighbors.

The English took final control in 1664 and called the province "New Jersey" as a compliment to one of the owners, Sir George Carteret, who had been Governor of the Isle of Jersey. The date of the first settlement by the English has always been in question. Dr. Maurice Beesley claims that Caleb Carman was appointed a justice of the peace and Jonathan Pine a constable by a Legislature in session in 1685. Other authorities declare the Townsends and Spicers to have come from Long Island in 1680, and to have been the oldest English settlers and land owners. Richard, a son of John Townsend, was the first white child born in the county.

It was the beginning of the eighteenth century when the settlers first devoted their attention to agriculture, and cultivated more than a door-patch. There is a long way between husbandry and piracy, but perhaps it was the domestic aspect that prompted Captain Kidd, the noted pirate, to take advantage of the unsuspecting character of the settlement to bury some of his treasure in the shifting sands. Years and the action of the ocean have so changed the locality that if the particular spot chosen for the hiding place



## THE GOLDEN CHAIN OF MEMORY

was ever known, it is lost now, and the treasure has become a tradition, if it is not actually a myth.

The distinction of obtaining the first license to practice "Chirurgery and Phisiq" in this locality belongs to an Esculapian named Richard Smith, who lived at Cape May, or Egg Harbor, and in 1705 received this coveted honor.

The awakening of a religious spirit in the community was due to the Baptists, who in 1712 built a place of worship. Following close upon them came the Presbyterians in 1714, and in 1716 the Quakers, who were under the care of Salem Meeting, and whose meeting house at Seaville is known as "Old Cedar Meeting House."

The epicureans of today have cause to be thankful for the aspiring palates of their grandfathers. To them are to be credited the care and protection of the beds where grow that delicious oyster so popular in summertime, the Cape May salt, as on March 27, 1719, the first measures were taken to protect the oyster beds.

The spirit of patriotism burned with an ardent flame amongst the men of this district. They played a notable part in the Revolutionary War. Henry Hand was a lieutenant-colonel; John Hand a major; Eli Eldridge a first major; Thomas Leaming an adjutant; and James Willets, Jr., a captain. Many other names memorable in the history of the county appear on the registers of officers and men in the ranks. The Supreme Executive Council of Pennsylvania paid Abraham Bennett on August 1, 1777, seven pounds ten shillings for "riding express from Cape May to this city" (Philadelphia), to report the movements of the British fleet.

In the autumn of 1786 Jesse Hand was elected a delegate to the State Convention. "He created," says Dr. Beesley, "great astonishment with the people when he presented to their wondering eyes the first top-carriage (an old-fashioned chair) that was ever brought into the county. The horse cart was the favorite vehicle in those times, whether for family visiting, or going to meeting purposes, and any innovation upon those usages or those of their ancestors, was looked upon with jealousy and distrust."

Many complaints about that ever fruitful source of complaints, the delivery of the mail, must have been registered, for prior to 1804 there was no regular service, the mails being carried by private individuals. On January 30 of that year the post office was opened with Ellis Hughes as postmaster. The "Daily Aurora" of Philadel-



## THE GOLDEN CHAIN OF MEMORY

phia, published June 30, 1801, contained the following advertisement of the hotel kept by Hughes, "The Atlantic," which later gave way to the "New Atlantic" situated at the foot of Jackson street.

"The public are respectfully informed that the subscriber has prepared himself for entertaining company who use sea bathing, and he is accommodated with extensive houseroom, with fish, oysters, crabs, and good liquor. Care will be taken of gentlemen's horses.

"The situation is beautiful, just at the confluence of the Delaware Bay and the Ocean, and in sight of the Light House, and affords a view of the shipping which enters and leaves the Delaware. Carriages may be driven along the margin of the ocean for miles, and the wheels will scarcely make an impression upon the sand. The slope of the shore is so regular that persons may wade a great distance. It is the most delightful spot citizens may retire to in the hot season.

"A Stage starts from Cooper's Ferry on Thursday in every week, and arrives at Cape Island on Friday; it starts from Cape Island on Friday and Tuesday in each week, and arrives in Philadelphia the following day.

"Gentlemen who travel in their own carriages will observe the following directions: Philadelphia to Woodbury is 9 miles, thence to Glasshouse 10, Malaga Hill 10, Lehman's Mills 12, Port Elizabeth 7, Dennis Creek 12, Cape May 9, the pitch of the Cape 15, is 84; and the last 18 is open to the sea shore. Those who chose water conveyance can find vessels almost any time.

"ELLIS HUGHES."

The Old Atlantic was then the only hotel, and was the stopping place of the prominent and wealthy, among whom was Commodore Decatur, a frequent visitor. A large boarding house called Congress Hall was built in 1816 by Thomas H. Hughes, where Mecray's pharmacy now stands. When destroyed by fire two years later, it had grown to the proportions of two hundred by three hundred feet. It was not, however, until after the War of 1812 that Cape Island made much progress as a summer resort. Heretofore visitors had arrived by carriage or stage, but in 1815 a sloop sailed to and from Philadelphia. The pioneer in steamboat navigation on the Delaware was Captain Wilmon Whilldin, Sr., who was born in 1774, on land bought by his ancestors at the time of the settlement of the county. Captain Whilldin made a study of navigation, and in 1816 built the steamer *Delaware*, and was owner of several steamers on the Dela-





## THE GOLDEN CHAIN OF MEMORY

ware and the Chesapeake. He was for a time a partner of the elder Commodore Vanderbilt. Early in life he went to Philadelphia, where he lived until his death in 1852. His son succeeded him and continued the steamboat business until the Civil War, when the boats were impressed into the Government service. Ephraim Hildreth had a packet running between Philadelphia and Cape May, and in his diary are records of the quick trips made, leaving Philadelphia one day and reaching Cape Island the next. The steamboat *Pennsylvania* was added in July of 1824 to those running between Philadelphia and Cape Island, and a year or so later the line included the *Delaware* also. Until a very few years ago steamboats plied between the two points every summer. They used to touch at New Castle for the Southerners who came on the first railroad run in this country, the Frenchtown & New Castle railroad. Carriages brought the passengers from Baltimore to Frenchtown on the *Susquehanna*, near Havre de Grace, Maryland. Weekly trips were made by the steamboat *Portsmouth* in 1834 between Cape Island, Lewistown and Philadelphia.

Many wrecks occurred off Cape May, and there are accounts of them to be found in the "Boston News-Letter" of September 17-24, 1724; the "New York Gazette" of July 30, 1733, and other periodicals of the time. In February of 1809 the British ship *Guatamoozin*, with a cargo of silks and tea from China to New York, came ashore off Townsend's Inlet. This was probably the most disastrous, save one which happened some years later when the *Perseverance* was wrecked, that ever occurred on this shore.

The ship builders, Jacocks Swain and his sons Henry and Joshua, of Seaville, Cape May county, gained fame for themselves and for the county by the invention of the centerboard, which has brought the crown of victory to America in many international yacht races. The Letters Patent, dated 1811, may still be seen. They are signed by James Madison, President of the United States, James Monroe, Secretary of State, and C. A. Rodney, Attorney General of the United States.

The dawn of education broke in fitful gleams, the duties of the itinerant teachers carrying them north from Cape Island through the sparsely settled region, as far as Gloucester, now Atlantic county. When a school system was devised, the "rule of three" was not taught in "the little red school house" of fond memories, but under





## THE GOLDEN CHAIN OF MEMORY

the most primitive conditions, sometimes with no books at all. These intellectual struggles began about 1765. From 1810 to 1820 Jacob Spicer (3rd) and Constantine and Joseph Foster were intrusted with the difficult task of blazing a trail for the educational institutions of the future. Englebert Sternhuysen, who arrived in this country in 1659, was the first to wield the rod in New Jersey, but the first school house in the State was at Mullica Hill, and was known as Spicer's school-house. It was built of cedar logs, and the windows were closed with oiled paper panes. The master was in all probability the grandfather of Jacob Spicer (3rd).

The white flash from Cape May Light was the first to shed its beams over the Atlantic to guide the passing mariner. The Light House built in 1823 was rebuilt in 1859. Romantic tales that appeal strongly to the imagination have been written about these necessary and so often solitary habitations, but it is to the exact sciences that we must turn to determine the twelve and one-half nautical miles distance from Cape Henlopen, and the eighteen and three-quarters from Five Fathom Bank Light Ship. The latitude is  $38^{\circ} 55' 59''$ , and the longitude  $40^{\circ} 57' 39''$ . The tower, one hundred and forty-five feet in height, pierces the sky like a Cleopatra's needle with the sharp end in the sand. The light, one hundred and fifty-two feet above the sea level, is the needle's eye from which the first class lens throws its light at intervals of thirty seconds over eighteen miles of the sea's mysterious depths.

Among a population numbering 4936 in 1830, there were but two hundred and twenty-eight colored persons, three of whom were slaves. The census shows that the county had many acres under cultivation and that numerous mills were in operation. Grain was shipped, as well as large quantities of cordwood. A writer in 1830 says of Cape May: "Cape May Island is a noted and much frequented watering place, the season at which commences about the first of July and continues until the middle of August or first of September. There are six boarding houses, three of which are very large; the sea bathing is convenient and excellent, the beach affords pleasant drives, and there is excellent fishing in adjacent waters."

Picture to yourself, oh, gentle reader, the days when you were young and lived in the country, the particular day when that hireling of our Government, the census-taker, rang your bell, if you had one. Perhaps you went to the door yourself, or maybe you were curled



## THE GOLDEN CHAIN OF MEMORY

in the hammock dozing in the sun and wondering about the outcome of the barbers' strike and where you would next have your hair cut. Then that persistent hireling unrolled a yard or so of paper and asked you impertinent questions, as, were you male or female, where were you born, were you free, white, and twenty-one? Remember the cut-and-driedness of it all, and then read the report of the census taker of 1840, which delightful product is almost an essay on Cape May:

"The village of Cape Island is a favorite watering-place in the southern part of this township, thirteen miles south of Court House. It began to grow into notice as a watering-place in 1812, at which time there were but a few houses there. It now contains two large hotels, three stories high and 150 feet long, and a third one, lately erected, four stories high and 100 feet long, besides numerous other houses for the entertainment of visitors. The whole number of dwellings is about fifty. In the summer months the Island is thronged with visitors, principally from Philadelphia, with which there is a daily steamboat communication. It is estimated that about 3000 strangers annually visit the place. The village is separated by a small creek from the mainland; but its area is fast wearing away by the encroachments of the sea. Watson, the antiquarian, in a MSS. journal of a trip to Cape Island in 1835, on this point says: 'Since my former visit to Cape Island in 1822, the house in which I stopped (Captain Aaron Bennett's), then nearest the surf, has been actually reached by the invading waters. \* \* \* The distance from Bennett's house to the sea bank was 165 feet. In 1804, as it was then measured and cut upon the house by Commodore Decatur, it was 334 feet. It had been as much as 300 feet further off, as remembered by some old men who told me in 1822.' "

Commodore Decatur began in 1804 to estimate the encroachments of the ocean. His record shows that between that time and 1829 the hungry sea had eaten away two hundred and seventy-five feet of land. Jeremiah Macray once told the Hon. Lewis Townsend Stevens that he remembered fields of corn growing where in 1890 the pavilion of the iron pier had stood.

"A large portion of the inhabitants of the village are Delaware pilots, a hardy and industrious race. About two miles west of the boarding houses is the Cape May Lighthouse," continues the census-taker. Among the seafaring folk these were, of course, those specially skillful in guiding their vessels through the channels and between the sand banks and reefs. These pilots became known to the



## THE GOLDEN CHAIN OF MEMORY

captains of incoming vessels, who were always well pleased when luck enabled them to "pick up" a pilot from Cape May.

The Mansion House, the second large hotel to be built, was erected in 1832 on four acres of ground on Washington street. It was the first lathed and plastered hotel, and was the property of Richard Smith Ludlam, who in 1847 entertained there the famous Kentuckian, Henry Clay. Mr. Clay spent a week at Cape May in the latter part of August, when the summer visitors were nearly all gone, but so great was the enthusiasm created by his visit that boatloads of people came to see him. Horace Greeley, of New York, United States Senator James A. Bayard, of Delaware, and Charles C. Gordon, of Georgia, were among the earliest to greet him. A large dinner was given in his honor at the Mansion House, and Beck's Band was brought from Philadelphia to furnish the music. A welcoming address was made to which "Harry of the West" responded in a speech that fairly startled his hearers. Mr. Clay was fond of sea bathing, going into the water sometimes twice a day. It is said that it was ruinous to his hair, not because of the salt water but because the Delilahs of the day forced him into the role of Sampson. A short distance from the Mansion House was the Columbia House, where the New York delegation was entertained.

The seventh son of a seventh son is supposed to see into the future, but there is nothing in the tradition to mark such a one as a poet. Neither was there in the mind of Theophilus Townsend Price any idea that his verses would live. This seventh child of John Price and Kezia Swain Price, who was born at the Price homestead at Town Bank, Cape May county, when only twenty years old held commune with the Muses and through their aid immortalized himself as "the Bard of Cape May." Acceding to a playful request of some young friends, Theophilus Townsend Price wrote in 1848 an "Ode to Cape May" to be sung to the tune of "Dearest May," a popular song of that day. The Ode has been revised by the Hon. Lewis Townsend Stevens and appears in his interesting and comprehensive "History of Cape May County."

The newspaper history of Cape May dates back to 1855, when the "Ocean Wave" broke upon the editorial sea. It was a small sheet, 12x18 inches, owned by a Colonel Johnson, who during its infancy sold it to Joseph S. Leach, by whom it was published until 1863. By process of elimination it became "The Wave," and passed





## THE GOLDEN CHAIN OF MEMORY

through several hands. At present it is known as "The Star and Wave," having combined with "The Star," and is edited and published by a member of that same Hand family that has for so many years guided its course. In 1857 the following notice appeared in "The Wave:"

"We need a daily mail. That we have no direct mail communication between Cape May and Cape May C. H., our county seat, but once a week, is a fact known to all. A letter written here on Wednesday may go direct to the Court House on Thursday, and an answer be returned on Saturday, by the Bridgton mail; but at any other time in the week our letters must be sent up by the Bayside mail, on Mondays, Wednesdays or Fridays to Tuckahoe, and there stopped till the next down mail to the Court House, thus performing a journey of nearly fifty miles, while distance is only thirteen miles from here to the Court House."

Although many of the summer visitors came by water from Philadelphia and the points along the bay, it was to the accompaniment of cracking whips and blowing horns that others arrived. A stage ran from Bridgton and Tuckahoe, and dust and delays were the causes of the traveller's woes rather than the cinders that poured from the steamboat's funnels. Sighs of relief were no doubt breathed when the last change of horses had been effected, and, on the outskirts of the town, the driver began to toot his horn. Cramped muscles straightened out, for the rough ride was over, the jolting ended. The traveller, already partially revived by the salt air blown across the marshes, shook his "duster," grasped his vari-colored carpet bag, and started out to see the town. The fare, one way between Philadelphia and Cape May, was \$3.50, about what we pay today for a round-trip ticket on a luxurious express train taking but two hours to make the trip between the same two points. In May of 1863 the Board of Freeholders passed a resolution which resulted in the opening by the Cape May & Millville railroad of a line to Cape May. In 1879 this road united with the West Jersey. The Pennsylvania railroad has since secured control. Interest in the welfare of the town inspired Logan M. Bullitt of Philadelphia and James E. Taylor of Cape May to make an arrangement with the Central Railroad of New Jersey, the Atlantic City Railroad Company and the Vineland Railroad Company, whereby a second railroad might be operated in connection with these companies. A regular service was established in 1894, and is known as the South Jersey railroad.





## THE GOLDEN CHAIN OF MEMORY

The city's streets follow their own sweet will, for the reason that they were laid out only when and where needed. They turn right or left, or run straight on, as the necessity of that day dictated. More than a hundred years ago Jackson street, the oldest street in town, was laid out and set the example for its successors by making a sharp turn at its upper end. From being a cow path, Lafayette street became a recognized public way, and for nearly its whole length Washington street runs parallel with it. Among the earliest streets were Delaware avenue, Franklin, Jefferson and Queen.

Life Saving Stations began to occupy the attention of the public in 1848. Congressman William A. Newell of New Jersey secured from Congress an appropriation of \$10,000 to "provide surf boats, rockets, carronades and other necessary appurtenances for the better preservation of life and property from shipwreck." Heretofore whale boats had been used, but their weight and bulk made them unwieldy. The new stations were provided with sleeping quarters for the Coast Guards, and were equipped with all necessary appliances. The Guards now patrol the beach for three miles during the night, exchanging metal checks with those at the next station, Cape May Point, to the south. During the day a lookout is on duty. The Station built in 1871 stood back beyond the dunes, where the beach curved inland. In recent years the sea has made ground there and the curve has to some extent disappeared. A modern house now stands among the cottages that surround the new "Hotel Cape May." During the bathing hours, from ten in the morning until six in the evening, from the fifteenth of June until the fifteenth of September, ten Life Guards are stationed on the beach. There are two stations, one in front of the Stockton Baths and the other at old Congress Hall. Immediately to the south is the colored people's recognized bathing ground, guarded by a huge West Indian whose brown skin has turned black in the summer sun. Recently a guard was stationed north of the pier for the protection of the cottagers. One is much needed at the southern end of the beach, where for a long distance no means of help is available. In the summer of 1919 two young women were drowned whose lives might have been saved had a guard been near. The distance was so great that although an alarm was promptly given, too long a time elapsed before assistance came. Both were dead when they were brought ashore.

The town has had the approval of America's chief magistrates.



## THE GOLDEN CHAIN OF MEMORY

Both James A. Buchanan and General Grant were guests at Congress Hall during their terms of office. Franklin Pierce came in 1855, and in 1883 the government steamer, the *Despatch*, arrived at Cape May bringing President Chester A. Arthur. After being ceremoniously escorted along the beach front, now Beach avenue, the President was welcomed at the Stockton Hotel by the strains of "Hail to the Chief," played by Hassler's orchestra and the Weecacoe Band. The cottage belonging to the Hon. John Wanamaker of Philadelphia, Postmaster General under President Benjamin Harrison, was loaned by Mr. Wanamaker to Mr. McKinley for one summer. Later a cottage was built with money privately subscribed, and presented to the President.

Old Cape May practically began at the summer station, at the foot of Grant street. Here stood net-covered horses drawing busses in every stage of repair or dilapidation, awaiting passengers and the dimes that were the fare "to any part of town." A small street car started its peregrinations beside the boardwalk and wandered along to the other end of town. For several years the cars have not run at all, and today jitneys and the old time busses, the Alpha and Omega of transportation, offer the only means of conveyance to those who do not own automobiles.

In this vicinity a dozen or more commodious cottages had been erected on large plots of ground. They were frame and built in the southern style, with double porches, painted white and vine embowered. Well kept lawns with gardens and ornamental trees surrounded them, enclosed in their turn by hedges of a bush much like the tropical tamarisk. Among the bushes the white of marble statuary gleamed, and the calls of the many birds that have made of these secluded spots a feathered sanctuary, carried one far from the sea that broke at the end of the walk. Hydrangeas, that reach perfection here, meet one's eye at every turn. In this delightful group of seaside homes were those of General William J. Sewell; of the Sellers of Millbourne, and the Knight family.

The first hotel beyond the station is the Windsor, a three-story clapboarded building with a long wing parallel with the sea. A porch runs inside the angle and across the end, while verandas hang from the upper story. Sheltered by the building there used to be a pebbled terrace with an ornate fence and "a fountain in the center." Broad wooden steps led down to the street level and gave the



## THE GOLDEN CHAIN OF MEMORY

hotel an air at once imposing and unique. Now the pebbles have gone, the fountain is dry, and where once the water sparkled "in its gleaming marble rim," green paint has transformed the basin that is filled with soil in which geraniums (not lilies) grow. Grass plots separated by sandy walks replace the pebbles, and the only touch of its vanished beauty is in the groups of lovely hydrangeas that still grow upon the terrace.

The solid wooden fence with its wide flat top, that guarded the ocean side of the boardwalk, has been replaced by modern gas pipe. In the past it was a convenient resting place, available at any moment when fatigue threatened, when one cared to linger, or felt that consuming desiring that comes to the young, to commune, *a deux*, with sea and sky.

Far back from the ocean stands Congress Hall. The large brick buildings were for years neglected. The porch roof hung in scallops between the tall square columns, one of which rested against the wall. Part of the roof lay, a mass of debris, on the floor. Broken window panes looked out like sad blind eyes, and even birds hesitated to build amid such evidences of decay. The hotel register contains many of the names that have made history. Statesmen, artists, travellers and the great of many lands sought hospitality there, left their marks upon those "sands of time," and went again into the unknown. Recently the house has been renovated and is now open to the public. The tragic atmosphere of decay that for so long pervaded the building has been dispelled.

Visitors passing the old Columbia, near the corner of Washington street and Ocean avenue, lingered to hear the colored waiters sing. The crooning musical voices of the negroes in their own weird melodies have a strong appeal. They seem to reach out and set a heart-string quivering with a vague longing for something yet unknown.

In 1876 fire, which has been an active enemy of Cape May, destroyed the then Columbia House and made a place for its successor, the New Columbia. Of all the old hotels the Columbia House showed most plainly the prevalent influence of the South. It might have been a huge plantation home transported from some far off southern scene and set down by the sea.

The New Columbia was a brick structure, moderate in size and of commonplace type. It too, was burned, and the place of the two





## THE GOLDEN CHAIN OF MEMORY

Columbias is filled with small cottages built in a Close, surrounded by grass and hedges and hydrangeas, with a common entrance and exit to the sea. Baltimore Inn is near. Shining in white paint, with shading awnings and flowers in boxes on the porch, it looks inviting. Above the old bath houses are the same names as in years gone by. Maguire's, and further on Shield's. From under one of them a huge rat scampered and ran across the drive. There was that peculiar fetid odor of old wood rotting in salt water.

A second generation of Japanese conduct the "Art Store," but a touch of modernity is given by "Arnold's Hotel" where before the era of prohibition good dinners and "good times" were to be had. Still in the window rests the frame of scarlet lobsters, an enticement still, but inside the gayety is subdued to the level of the refreshment now offered, "near beer."

On Decatur street, a little way back from Arnold's is Zillinger's Café. Beside the house a garden invites the hungry, and between the large leaves of the vine that clings to the latticed roof with its spiral tendrils, are pendant bunches of green and purpling grapes.

The remains of the pier voice the old question: "If I am so soon done for, I wonder what I was begun for?" Cut off abruptly in mid-air a few feet from the entrance, it juts into space. At low tide jagged rusty supports stick up from the sand, but at high tide the water covers them and hides the danger they have become. The pier was built in 1885, at the foot of Decatur street, and was for many years the only amusement place in town. Now it houses a shop where ice cream cones and salt water taffy are sold; a moving picture theatre; a Japanese rolling ball game; and a shop where commonplace embroidered cotton kimonos are shown. At the entrance years ago a giant sword fish hung, its long serrated sword striking terror into young hearts. Beyond was a merry-go-round, and further out a theatre, and then a fishing platform with a lower deck where boats landed. Light opera and musical comedies were given on the pier by stars like Jennie Prince, who shed their histrionic light on Cape May in the summer time.

Across from the pier is the Lafayette, a relic of Cape May's gay old days. Theatrical people frequented it and it was thought a "lively" place. On the next corner are the cottages originally owned by the late William Weightman, of Philadelphia. They were considered the finest and most modern houses at the Cape. Now, paint-





## THE GOLDEN CHAIN OF MEMORY

ed a dull battleship grey and overshadowed by the newer residences, they are unremarkable. On Ocean avenue, near the beach and overlooking the Stockton Baths, is the Colonial, a medium size house of the "middle age;" and "run" in unpretentious fashion. Opposite is Star Villa, a house of the same type.

The Stockton Hotel was the hub of Cape May, but the Stockton Baths were surely the most important spokes. They cover one end of the block between Ocean avenue and Stockton row, and are the last remnant of the Cape May property of the late John C. Bullitt, of Philadelphia, the framer of the Bullitt Bill. Always painted yellow with brown trimmings and red tin roofs, they are today just as they were years ago. In the center is a small house, its porch surmounted by a clock, in which are office and store rooms. The bath houses extend in rows on either side. This was the daily meeting place for all socially inclined. At eleven o'clock on any summer morning the porch was filled with daintily dressed women and men in flannels. In those days girls were mermaids and went into the sea with flowing locks, regardless of the damage Father Neptune might do. The popularity of a girl was measured by the number of men who asked to dry her hair. A very popular one had to "cut" the drying, as her modern sister does her dances.

At the end of the bath houses is a small photograph gallery where the principal business used to be taking tintypes of bathing parties. An examination of those early pictures would be like turning back the pages of a biographical history. The women wore dark blue flannel suits fastened up to their necks, the tape trimmed ruffles almost covering their hands and clinging closely round their ankles at the end of the long full pantalettes. A wide coarse straw hat, tied under the chin in the shape of a poke, completed the costume. What woman could be beautiful in such garb? But in those days sunburn was crime. The men wore loose, flapping, one-piece garments very like the women's, only, of course, without the long wide skirts. Heads bald and well thatched were alike covered with a small skull cap or a straw hat held in place by a string of turkey red. But custom changes, and from being over-dressed they went to the other extreme. Clothes became so abbreviated as to be a matter of concern to the municipal authorities. Now an executive council meets in solemn conclave to decide upon the propriety of stockings or bare legs for bathing girls.



## THE GOLDEN CHAIN OF MEMORY

Dominating the town and its activities stood the Stockton, a large clap-board structure built in the shape of a capital "T" with the top laid towards the street. The ground was owned by the Betz estate, but the hotel was built in 1860 and run for many years by the Pennsylvania railroad. Following the custom, a high roofed porch with great square columns ran round the house. Immediately in front was a gravelled space, with posts connected by festooned chains. Towards the sea stretched a large lawn at the end of which stood a ruined two-story pavilion, where in the palmy days the Marine Band played on summer afternoons. In the Exchange hung a large oil portrait of Commodore Stockton, after whom the hotel was named. It gave the house a dignity perceptibly felt, although perhaps unrecognized. On the right was the ball room, where Simon Hassler played, and back in the huge wing the entire space was given over to the dining rooms.

At night the porches were so crowded it was difficult to find one's way between the chairs. Some time during the day or evening all found their way to the Stockton, if only to walk through. Beside the hotel, in a building connected with it by a porch, was a billiard room with a bowling alley at the back. The kitchen and service rooms were in a separate building close alongside. Various managers played the part of boniface, but perhaps the most noted were the Cakes, and "Plunger Walton," so called because of his operations as a stock speculator. His daughters married David S. Chew, of the Chews of Germantown, and William E. Bates, a descendant of Francis Guernsey Smith. All trace of the hotel has been removed, and grass grows where flying feet once danced. At the upper end of the lot is a small Baptist church, built of white stucco, and a modern cottage. The rest is vacant, emblematic of the emptiness of life of Cape May since its mainspring was removed. Life no longer runs so merrily on through the sunny summer days. Chimes of laughter are not so often heard, even the echoes of those long past peals exist only in memory or imagination.

Here in the golden days had come the wealth and fashion of the South, as well as the elite of Philadelphia and New York. Belles and beaux occupied the armchairs on the porch and posed with languid grace. They brought with them their retinues of colored servants, their richly harnessed horses and luxurious carriages that so well suited those wide skirts and veiled faces. Jewels flashed and



## THE GOLDEN CHAIN OF MEMORY

feathered fans waved as southern beauties coquetted in their inimitable way. Men in stocks and broadcloth made elegant bows and kissed the white hands that the sun had never touched. The stately minuet was danced in that ball room whose passing has spared it the humiliation of witnessing the "shimmy." The ball room brings back memories of the Hasslers, Simon and Mark, who had their orchestras and played respectively at the Stockton and Congress Hall. Every visitor to Cape May will remember them and the dreamy waltzes that they played.

The bathing hour was but a preliminary to the visit to the Stockton, where in the small cafe to the left of the office and beyond the barber shop, were served such drinks as "horse's necks," "brandy floats," and the best claret punches that were ever made.

Back of the Stockton stood the Chalfont, popular as a family hotel, and unchanged today. There was the Page Cottage, too, a "genteel boarding house" much patronized by exclusive Philadelphians. From there Stockton avenue runs north. Marine Villa, another sacrifice to Vulcan, belongs to the past; its place is empty. Close to its site is the new Stockton Villa, which accommodates but few guests, but is to be relied upon to have those guests exactly what they should be.

Old Cape May ends here, and turning from the sea the streets run inland and wander among the cottages that surround the Stockton. There on the corner lived George D. McCreary, of Philadelphia, with "the little McCreary cottage" next door. Diagonally across the street is the large house of the Scott family, who still spend every summer there. Not far away is the cottage where Mrs. Bowen entertained her brother, Archbishop Ryan of Philadelphia, whose droll stories and brilliant conversation were so delightful. On Washington street, removed from the daily crowds brought by the incoming trains, the residence of the late Dr. Phillip Sygn Physic stands alone and secluded. The house is frame and conveys an impression of dignity and generous hospitality that is not lessened by the lack of paint. Fine trees and rare shrubs thrive there and the sun filters through the leaves, dappling the ground with gold. A wide open lawn beside the house is surrounded by a hedge whose impenetrability secures privacy.

On the corner of Washington street and Ocean avenue stood Hand's Market. The Hand family belong to the original settlers,





## THE GOLDEN CHAIN OF MEMORY

and Cape May owes much to their moulding. In the past the name frequently appeared upon the street signs and in the town's business life. Today there are but few members of the family left. The name is still over the jewelry store at the end of the street, down by Congress Hall, where Cape May diamonds may be had. It is over the office of "The Wave and Star." The market is now Meecray's.

Opposite to the market is the Reading railroad station, and a new building on one corner houses a Savings Fund. Beside the station is the rectory of the Catholic Church of Our Lady, Star of the Sea. The original rectory is still in use, a small gray building, its ornate trimmings painted white. The little church of years ago seemed crowded and over-decorated; the tall sharp spires and narrow arches above the altar were of white painted wood, cut and fretted and tortured into intricate designs. The impression created by the new church is of breadth and nobility of treatment, of white purity and sanctity, and a retirement from the heat and glare outside. It is conducive to prayer and meditation. The small columns of the altar and the central part of the communion rail are white marble with brown markings. There are a few stained glass windows whose dominant tone is a cool deep green, but in the whole church there is no jarring note.

The Episcopalians have two churches, St. John's, the village church, and the Church of the Advent, for summer visitors. Here every week an address is made by some notable visiting churchman, as Ethelbert Talbot, Bishop of Central Pennsylvania, and the Rev. Floyd Tompkins, rector of Holy Trinity, Philadelphia. The Presbyterians have a handsome church at Decatur and Hughes streets, where the air is cooled by electric fans and an accousticon is supplied for those who have difficulty in hearing. The Baptists, Methodists and Hebrews have their places of worship too.

The old tower is standing on Perry street, marking the oldest part of town and a monument to its decay. Close to its foot nestles an automobile accessory shop. Built of wood and long unpainted, with advertising signs disfiguring its sides, the tower rears its worn head like an old man's whose hair has paid tribute to the flight of time. The Ocean House, one of the very old hotels and famous in its day, was nearby; it was burned in 1878. It was characterized by a balcony that ran around the third floor, high above the porch. From the roof, which was continuous from its apex to the edge over-





## THE GOLDEN CHAIN OF MEMORY

hanging the balcony, dormer windows sprang, breaking the monotony. Close by was Center House, a simpler type. Its large gabled wings were connected by a recessed central building with a high roofed porch.

In the vicinity was the famous Mount Vernon Hotel, which had taken the then unheard of time of two years to build and which was said to be the largest hotel, at that time, in the world. Its dining room seated three thousand people. Fatality followed in the wake of the fire that consumed it in 1856, the proprietor and four others losing their lives. Early in the following summer the Mansion House and Kersal, an amusement pavilion, followed it, and years ago this once exclusive neighborhood fell into disrepute amongst the white visitors, the remaining hotels and large boarding houses being given over entirely to the use of the colored population. At present the better class of colored visitors go to the Hotel Dale, a hotel run by a famous Philadelphia caterer exclusively for his people.

Back of Congress Hall and round about the corner where is now Meecray's drugstore, the first houses for the summer visitors were built. The Philadelphians who came were wealthy men who were attracted by the fishing and the opportunity to do a little quiet gambling. It is said that the first millionaire in America came here. When the house he occupied was torn down to make room for modern improvements, many coins were found under the floor where they had fallen and been forgotten. In the attic were old pistols and small arms that had been undisturbed for many years. Later years brought the great luxurious hotels of a few decades ago. The atmosphere of the place changed, and the wealthy from all parts of the country came as regularly to this Mecca of fashion as the true Southerner used to go to "The Whites" or Saratoga Springs.

South of the summer station is the site of the United States Hotel. Four stories high, it had a continuous porch on every floor and was surmounted by a cupola from which floated the Stars and Stripes. Fire destroyed it in 1869. Near the hotel was a race track that was in occasional use as late as 1887.

A narrow guage railroad started at the southern end of town and ran to Cape May Point. The train was drawn by an engine with a funnel-shaped stack of the same type as "Old Baldwin," now reposing quietly in the station at Chattanooga. The lessening of its



## THE GOLDEN CHAIN OF MEMORY

patronage and the deterioration of the track and rolling stock resulted in the failure of the company. The engine and cars were sold to junk dealers, and the track torn up and put to other uses. Busses carried the visitor to Schellinger's Landing, where in the shadow of the old pavilion he embarked in a flat-bottomed row boat and wound his way between the mud banks in search of hard shelled crabs; or, on a rainy day in early fall, he went in a sneak box, a bird gun laid across the bow, to hunt for rail or reed birds. From Sewell's Point he sailed about the bay, or, crossing the bar, went seaward in search of wild adventure.

The name Cape Island, as Cape May was originally known, was first used in 1699, when the causeway connecting the island with the mainland was built by George Eaglesfield. Following its history step by step, we turn the pages of the Indian occupation, of the Swedish purchase, the Dutch, the second Swedish, and the final purchase by the English. Perhaps traces of these differing nationalities may still be found, but the most lasting impression was made by the English whaling folk who came during the fishing season and in some instances settled here. Gradually the fishing village became a summer resort and large hotels sprang up beside the lowly cottages. The period of its greatest prosperity was just prior to the Civil War, when to the rich Philadelphians and New Yorkers were added Baltimoreans and travellers from many other southern cities. Sweeping the wealth of the South into the realms of memory, the war deprived Cape May's most luxury loving visitors of the means of travel, thus taking from her one of her greatest sources of revenue and advertisement. For many years these have been missing, and the town has suffered a consequent decline in prosperity. The destructive fires that at intervals have wrought such havoc robbed her of the great hotels that made her famous.

About 1908 a number of capitalists interested in promoting Cape May endeavored to regain for her her past prestige. A large brick hotel, The Hotel Cape May, was built on the upper end of the beach towards Sewell's Point. Many handsome cottages sprang up around it. The Government was induced to make an inland protecting harbor in the bay, with a wide channel to the sea, in which ships might anchor. Much of the marshland was drained and filled. A golf course of nine holes was laid out back of the town, with tennis courts adjoining it. The Corinthian Yacht Club established its



## THE GOLDEN CHAIN OF MEMORY

summer quarters on Cape Island creek, which empties into the harbor. The Cape May Yacht Club was organized, and an attractive club house was built. A Marine Casino furnishes amusement in the form of moving pictures and a merry-go-round. The "Red Mill," as it is picturesquely called, is the nightly gathering place for the devotees of Terpsichore. Opposite the site of the Stockton is Convention Hall, a dance hall on a pier.

The plan laid out for the New Cape May is most attractive, with its wide central avenue and streets sweeping round it in long oval curves bisected by others leading from the sea to the harbor.

During the World War the new Hotel Cape May was General Hospital Number 11, and was filled with wounded men from overseas. Camp Wissahickon was established as a Naval Base, and was located between the hospital and the harbor. Many soldiers were in barracks. An aviation field with a huge hangar that houses a dirigible balloon, still adds to the interest of the section devoted to the different branches of the Service represented here. At intervals the whirr and drone of an aeroplane are heard, and all eyes turn upward and search the sky until the birdman appears, flying in a long straight line and then turning and circling in the wide sweeps of the eagle. The wounded have been taken away and concentrated in a few hospitals scattered throughout the country. Soldiers, sailors and marines have been demobilized and sent home. The Government intends to keep only about one hundred and fifty men on duty at the camp.

Cape May has tasted all the delights of giddy youth, the comforts of middle life, and now, in her old age, she is like a woman struggling to recapture her lost youth. The attempted grafting of Philadelphia conservatism on Southern democracy was unsuccessful. The peculiar condition existed of Northern capital and energy promoting a settlement which Nature herself, whether by placing it south of Mason and Dixon's line, or by some intangible influence, confirmed in its easy-going attitude. Because of its wonderful beach and its central position between the North and South, the tremendous initial impetus carried it on for many years. Since the Civil War its decline, gradual, it is true, has been continuous. The cordial yet restricted social life of the South was overwhelmed by Northern reserve, and the summer visitors being of mixed types and varying social standing, found between them an icy wall as im-

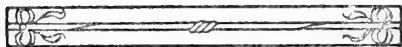


## THE GOLDEN CHAIN OF MEMORY

passable as the shoal water between the ocean and the bay and as dangerous to those who recklessly attempted to cross. They still assemble on the beach, the only common meeting ground, but they do not gather together, for there is hand writing on the wall, plainly visible to those who running, read: "So far mayst thou go, but no further."

Lying where the bay and ocean meet, at the southern extremity of the State, Cape May has enjoyed an unequalled position. Its beach is said to be the finest in the world, smooth and gradual, and free from the sea-cut ledges that mar so much of the Jersey coast. On clear nights the light from Cape Henlopen may be seen across the bay, answering the flash that streams out from Cape May. Land breezes are impossible, for when the wind comes from that direction it blows over more than a mile of water and is freshened and purified.

With better train service and easier access, the resorts north of Cape May have made rapid progress to her detriment. The old residents feel that she has been discriminated against, that when the railroad cut down the train service and the last of the great hotels was torn down, the monument was erected upon her burial place. It remains for some one in whose heart sufficient love for Cape May endures, to write a fitting epitaph. May there be one whose tender recollections will inspire his pen to do full justice, to pay full tribute, to Cape May. She can never be excelled or equalled.







# Early Discoveries and Explorations

BY FRANK R. HOLMES, NEW YORK CITY



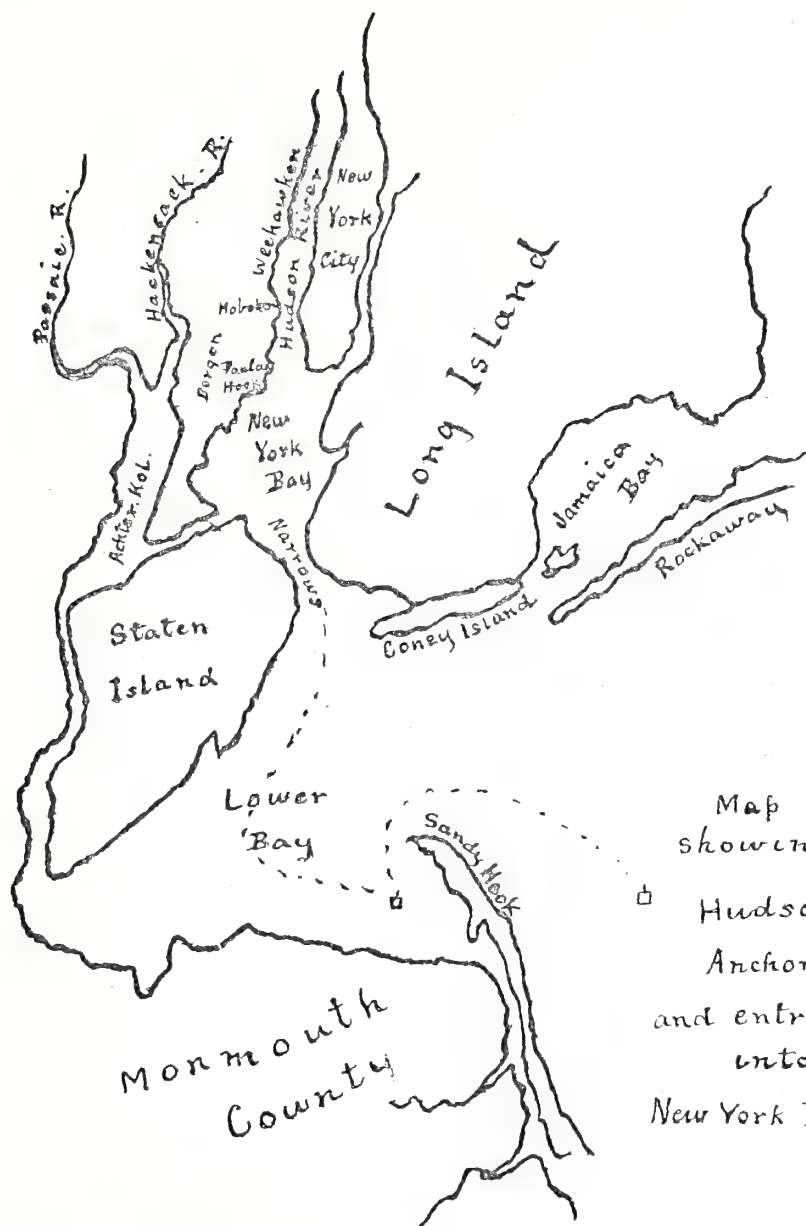
THE discovery of the Western Continent by Columbus placed Spain as the foremost European nation in commercial enterprise. This was followed, 1493, by the edict of Pope Alexander VI, a native of Spain, who with all the lofty pretensions of the Bishop of Rome as sole arbiter of the world, divided the unexplored portions of the globe between Spain and Portugal. This bull of the Pope met with contempt in England and France and stimulated those nations to compete in the explorations and discoveries in the Western World. Portugal's claim was based on a former proclamation by the same authority, specifying a line supposed to be drawn from pole to pole at a distance of one hundred leagues westward of the Azores Islands, previously explored by that nation, and that all the countries east of this imaginary line not in possession of a Christian prince were given to Portugal, all westward of it to Spain. This partition raised dissension, and the line was fixed two hundred and seventy leagues further west.

The first nation to show dissatisfaction with the Pope's bull was England. Henry VII, the reigning monarch, decided to compete for those rich prizes ready to the hand of the venturesome, and he accepted the offer of John Cabot, a Venetian merchant residing at Bristol, England, to fit out several ships for exploration. He issued a patent in the spring of 1496 authorizing Cabot and his three sons "to sail to all parts, countrys and seas of the East, of the West, and of the North," under the banner of England. This was one of those curious commissions so common in those days, when the sovereign allowed private adventurers to use their own money on condition that the Crown should receive one-fifth of the profits of the undertaking. The patent was not, however, as one-sided as it seemed, as the Crown had to pay for the wars which invariably resulted. There is no positive evidence that John Cabot took advantage of this charter, as his death occurred in 1498. In that

---

NOTE.—This narrative is a chapter from "History of Bergen County, New Jersey," now in press. (Lewis Historical Publishing Company, New York and Chicago).





Map  
showing  
Hudson's  
Anchorage.  
and entrance  
into  
New York Bay



## EARLY DISCOVERIES AND EXPLORATIONS

year his son Sebastian received a commission from the king to depart on a voyage of discovery, and two caravels were fitted out for the expedition. Cabot sailed from Bristol, England, in May, 1498, his object being to search for a northwest passage to India, but he was stopped by the ice pack in Davis' Strait. Sailing southwest, he discovered the shores of Labrador and traversed the coast of the continent to the 60th degree of latitude, when again the ice barred his way. He then sailed southward until he discovered a large island which he named New Found Land (Newfoundland); thence he coasted as far as the shores of Maine, and some historians contended even to the coast of Florida, to which he gave the name *Prima Vestal*. On his return to England, Henry VII did not receive him with open arms of welcome, as he failed to bring back gold from America. His report of the abundance of codfish near the coast of Newfoundland caused in the next five or six years the fishermen of England, Brittany and Normandy to gather rich harvests in the waters surrounding this island. Cabot subsequently became Chief Pilot of the Realm at the Spanish Court, and Edward VI made him Great Pilot of England. He died in comparative poverty and obscurity in the city of Bristol, at the age of eighty years.

The next nation to disregard the Pope's donation to Spain was Portugal. An expedition was fitted out in 1500 to explore North America under the navigator Gaspar Cortereal. He first touched the northern shores of Newfoundland, discovered the Gulf of St. Lawrence, and sailed along the coast of the American Continent to the 60th degree of latitude. Landing on the coast he named Labrador, he captured fifty of the natives and carried them to Portugal, where he sold them as slaves. The profits from this source excited the cupidity of Cortereal and Emanuel the Great, Portugal's reigning sovereign; and a second expedition was fitted out, setting sail in 1501 to carry on an active slave trade with Labrador, but the vessel with all on board was lost at sea. Emanuel the Great declared that Cortereal was the first discoverer of the American Continent, and caused a map to be published in 1508 on which the coast of Labrador is called *Terra Corterealis*, or Cortereal's Land.

In the last decade of the fifteenth century and the early part of the sixteenth century, Spain and Portugal were active in fitting out voyages of discovery to the New World. The rumors of the abundance of gold and precious stones in the southern extremity of



## EARLY DISCOVERIES AND EXPLORATIONS

the Western Continent encouraged their navigators to penetrate the southern seas to rob the Incas of South America and the Mexicans of the valuable treasures in their possession. Alonzo de Ojeda, who was with Columbus on his first voyage, sailed from Seville, Spain, in May, 1499, and reaching the northeastern coast of South America discovered mountains on the coast, and sailing along the shores he named the country Venezuela. The Carribbean Sea was crossed and Santo Domingo visited. Ojeda returned to Spain in 1501, and the Spanish monarch divided Central America into two provinces, making Ojeda governor of one, and Diego de Nicuesa of the other. The proclamation of Alexander VI, which justifies the murder and robbery of those that opposed its enforcement, and receiving the sanction of the Church and State, indicated the spirit of most of the Spanish conquerors. The natives delaying in their submission were slaughtered, and those made captives were pressed into slavery. The outraged Indians retaliated, slew the Spanish soldiers, Ojeda was joined by Nicuesa, and a desolating war was commenced on the natives. Ojeda and his forces took to their vessels and were stranded on the southern coast of Cuba, where although they were treated kindly by the pagans they rewarded them with the same fate received by the natives of Santo Domingo. The pious Ojeda told of the wealth of the Cubans, and though a chapel was built and Christianity introduced into the island, it soon became over-run with avaricious adventurers who soon turned a paradise into a pandemonium.

The caravel *Nina*, on the first voyage of Columbus, was commanded by Vincente Yañez Pinzon. In December, 1499, in command of four caravels, he sailed from Palos, Spain. Land was first sighted at Cape Augustine, in what is now Brazil, South America. Pinzon took possession of the country in the name of the ruling house of Castile. Sailing northward he discovered and named the River Amazon.

A squadron consisting of thirteen ships, commanded by Pedro Alvarez Cabral, was sent in 1500 by Emanuel the Great, King of Portugal, from Lisbon to the Indies. The fleet sailed so far westward that land was discovered on the coast of Brazil, on the shores of which they erected a cross and named the country "The Land of the Holy Cross." Cabral took possession of the country in the name of his king. This resulted in a controversy between the crowns of





## EARLY DISCOVERIES AND EXPLORATIONS

Spain and Portugal concerning rights of possession which, however, was settled amicably; Portugal was to possess that portion of the continent from the River Amazon to the River De La Plata.

A native of Florence, Italy, Americus Vespuceius, sailed with Ojeda as geographer. On his return to Spain in 1501, he entered the service of the King of Portugal and sailed in May of that year for the Western Continent, exploring the coast of Brazil. Two years later, as captain of a caravel attached to a squadron, he again sailed for the New World. Off the coast of Brazil he parted company with other vessels of the squadron, and sailing along the coast discovered the Bay of All Saints. He returned to Portugal in 1504, loaded with a cargo of wood from the forests of Brazil. By a falsely dated letter, a friend of Vespuceius in 1506 proposed to the Academy of Cosmography at Strasburg to give the name America to the Western Continent, in compliment to its first discoverer. This was done, fraudulently depriving Columbus and Cabot of the honor of having their names associated with the title of this continent.

Spain still continued her voyages for discovery and ill-gotten gains. The Spanish governor of Cuba, Don Diego Valasquez, encouraged by the discovery of Yucatan and a part of Mexico by Francisco Hernandez Cordova in 1517, sent Hernando Cortez at the head of an expedition to conquer and colonize Mexico. He founded Vera Cruz, and in November, 1519, entered the City of Mexico and compelled Montezuma, the reigning sovereign, to acknowledge himself and subjects vassals of Charles V, of Spain. Velasquez, in fear of the ambition of Cortez, sent another expedition under the command of Pamfilo De Narvaez to supersede Cortez. The latter gave him battle, defeated him, the vanquished troops joining the army of the victor. The Mexicans in the meantime had risen in revolt against the Spanish and drove them from the City of Mexico. Cortez reinforced his army with natives, gave battle, and after a gallant defence of the city of seventy-seven days the Mexicans capitulated and Cortez entered the city in triumph.

The other early Spanish explorers of note were Vasco de Balboa Nunez, who went to Santo Domingo in 1501, afterwards to the Isthmus of Darien, and November 26, 1513, from a bold rocky summit of a mountain beheld a mighty sea. Wading into the water, Nunez took formal possession of the great ocean in the name of his sovereign, naming it the South Sea. This was the Pacific Ocean,



## EARLY DISCOVERIES AND EXPLORATIONS

that laves many a league of the western coast of the United States. The discoverer of Florida, Juan Ponce de Leon, was a distinguished Spanish cavalier. He accompanied Columbus on his second voyage, later was made commander of a portion of Santo Domingo, afterwards governor of Porto Rico. He sailed north from the latter island in March, 1513, in pursuit of a "Fountain of Youth" whose waters were supposed to have the power to restore youth to the aged. He failed to find the fountain, but landed at the present site of St. Augustine in Florida, to which he gave the name of Pasora de Flores, taking possession of the country in the name of the Spanish monarch. In strong contrast to this eminent gentleman was Francisco Pizarro, a low born Spaniard, imprisoned for debt in his native country. He crossed the Atlantic Ocean in 1530, accompanied by his four brothers, bearing a commission from Charles V to conquer Peru. Leaving the Isthmus of Panama the following year, he landed on the shores of a bay on the borders of the Empire of Incas. There was at that time a civil war raging, two brothers contending for power, and one had just made the other a prisoner. Pizarro pretended friendship with the successful Inca, and treacherously made him prisoner. The Inca's army fled in dismay, and the emperor offered for his ransom to fill the room he was in with gold. The precious metals and golden ornaments of the temples when melted down represented more than \$17,000,000, which was laid at the feet of Pizarro. The treacherous Spaniard caused his royal captive to be murdered. Pizarro then founded a new capital (now Lima) near the coast, married a daughter of the slain ruler, and the empire of Incas lay prostrated at the feet of the Spaniards, with Pizarro as ruler. This led to a revolt and the Spanish ruler was attacked in his palace and slain.

A protege of Davila, governor of Darien, was Fernando De Soto. He accompanied Pizarro to Peru as his chief lieutenant, and was prominent in achieving the conquest of that country. After the capture of the Incas' capital, he returned to Spain, having acquired great wealth. He was favorably received by Charles V, but longing to rival Cortez and Pizarro in the brilliancy of his deeds and believing Florida richer in precious metals than Mexico or Peru, he offered to conquer that country at his own expense. To this agreement the king readily agreed, and commissioned him governor of Cuba. He sailed from Spain in April, 1538, and in May of the fol-



## EARLY DISCOVERIES AND EXPLORATIONS

lowing year his expedition to Florida set sail, consisting of nine vessels bearing a thousand followers, cattle, horses, mules and swine, the first of the latter seen on the American Continent. The expedition met with opposition from the natives, who still remembered the cruel treatment they had received from Narvaez. Winter quarters were established east of the Flint river, near Tallahassee, on the borders of Georgia. A northward course was taken the next spring to the headwaters of the Savannah river. The Spaniards practiced the most cruel treachery towards the friendly natives. De Soto was, however, rewarded in kind not long afterwards, when in a terrible battle on the present site of Mobile the expedition was nearly ruined. Turning northward with the remnant of his forces, he reached the upper waters of the Yazoo river late in December, where he wintered in great distress. Moving westward in the spring, De Soto discovered the Mississippi river, crossed this mighty stream, and still went westward in his fruitless search for gold. He spent a year in the country towards the eastern slope of the Rocky Mountains, and returning to the Mississippi in May, 1542, died of a fever on its banks. De Soto was buried in the turbid waters of the river he had discovered; his body was encased in a trough made of a trunk of a live oak, and sunk at midnight in its depths to prevent it being desecrated by the Indians.

Francis I, of France, though engaged in warfare with the Emperor of Spain, fully realized the importance of discoveries and settlements in the New World. In the second decade of the seventeenth century he engaged Giovanni Da Verrazzano, a Florentine, to explore the unknown West. This new aspirant for exploration honors sailed late in 1523 in the ship *Dauphin*, and claimed to have first touched America at the mouth of the Cape Fear river, thence coasting north to the Gulf of St. Lawrence, and entering the harbors of Delaware, New York, Narraganset and Boston. There is, however, something mythical in this statement, which is included in letters written by the explorer to Francis I. Their authenticity is questioned by American historians, who claim they were forged by one of his countrymen anxious to secure for Italy the glory due to Cabot for the discovery of the North American Continent. There seems to have been at this period a Verrazzano who was a noted corsair, who captured in 1522 a treasure ship sent by Cortez to Charles V, loaded with the spoils of Mexico valued at





## EARLY DISCOVERIES AND EXPLORATIONS

\$1,500,000. This, with other depredations, aroused both Spain and Portugal. He was captured in the autumn of 1527, and soon afterwards executed at Puerto del Pico, Spain. Some writers say that Verrazzano the navigator sailed again for America in 1525 and was never heard from afterwards. Whether these were two separate identities or it was one and same person, has not been clearly defined.

France, however, was not to be left in the explorations of the West. Jacques Cartier, a native of that country, sailed from St. Malo, France, in April, 1534, entered the Straits of Belle Isle, and touching the coast of Labrador, formally took possession of the country in the name of his king. He erected a cross on the mainland, upon which he hung the Arms of France, returning to his native country to avoid the autumn storms. In the middle of May of the following year the king provided him with a fleet of three vessels which met at the appointed rendezvous in the Straits of Belle Isle. In July the vessels sailed up the St. Lawrence river to the present site of Quebec, and here, taking his smallest caravel, Cartier ascended the river to the Huron village called Hochebaga, the present site of Montreal.

For the next fifty years, European explorations and colonizations were at a standstill owing to continual warfare between the different nations. During the reign of Queen Elizabeth, Sir Walter Raleigh was dispatched to effect a settlement in Virginia. There were several other unsuccessful attempts, and a permanent settlement was not effected until 1607, when Jamestown, on the right bank of the River of Powhatan, in Virginia, was chosen for the capital of the new colony. Several attempts were made to colonize what is now New England, as many hardy men hitherto engaged in warfare sought new fields of enterprise and adventure in the New World. Others also engaged in mercantile pursuits, as well as artisans and followers of the plough, became interested in the new country. During the last years of the reign of Queen Elizabeth, Bartholomew Gosnold in attempting to find a direct course to Virginia reached the Massachusetts coast and landed on a promontory, naming it Cape Cod. This is the first spot in New England ever trod by an Englishman.

Into this period of exploration a new factor was to appear. On a bright day in September, in the year 1609, the *Half-Moon*, a





## EARLY DISCOVERIES AND EXPLORATIONS

vessel commanded by Henry Hudson, in the employ of the Dutch East India Company, a corporation legally organized by the States General of Holland, sailed into what is now the harbor of New York City. Hudson, proceeding north through the river which now bears his name, thought he had discovered the long sought passage to the Indies, but meeting fresh water at the Highlands, recognized he was mistaken.

Thus we see that at the beginning of the seventeenth century territory in the northern portion of North America was claimed by three different nations. England based her rights of possession on the discoveries of Cabot and the settlement of Gosnold; France on the explorations of Verrazzano and Cartier; and Holland on Hudson's discoveries and purchases made from the Indians. All these claims were based on the ruling of the English Parliament in the sixteenth century, that occupancy conferred title of possession by the laws of nations and nature. This remains a law of nations to the present day.

The rise of the Low Countries in the sixteenth century as a commercial power is rivaled only by the scenes produced by a magician's wand. At the time of the discovery of America, the Netherlands were in possession of the municipal institutions which had been saved from the wreck of the Roman world. The landed aristocracy, the hierarchy, possessed the political franchises, while the power of the people was unknown to the law. Charles V, Emperor of Spain, on account of the urgencies of war, the reformation, also with arrogance of power, often violated the liberties of the State. His successor, Philip II, his only son, to support the constitutions of the Netherlands formed a unity with the church, who thus became the sole guardian of the people. The political influence of the clergy rested on reverence for that order, thereby opening for the ambition of the plebeian the avenue to the highest distinction. The ward soon became stronger than the guardian, and a new political alliance was the consequence. Arbitrary power became arrayed against national liberty, and the contest in the Low Countries became one of the most memorable in the history of the human race. Despotism seized possession of the courts; a commission was established with arbitrary power over life and property; mercenary soldiers overawed the burghers and caused terror amongst the nobility; fugitives fled for an asylum to the pirate ships of the ocean, deserting village,



## EARLY DISCOVERIES AND EXPLORATIONS

city, court and camp that were held by tyranny. The establishment of arbitrary tribunals was followed by arbitrary taxation, and levying of tax caused more commotion than the tribunal of blood. The time was ripe for an insurrection. Merchant, landholder, citizen and peasant, whether Catholic or Protestant, joined issues, and the States of Holland, creating the Prince of Orange their stadtholder, prepared to levy money and troops. Zeeland joined Holland in the demands for liberty, and united to drive Spanish troops from the soil.

The union of the five northern provinces at Utrecht perfected the insurrection by forming the basis of a sovereignty, and the rude structure of a republic was the result of the revolution. The republic of United Netherlands thus constructed was necessarily of a nature commercial; the rendezvous of its martyrs had been the sea, the muster of its patriots was held on shipboard. Two leading members of the confederacy were, from their geographical situation, obliged to seek subsistence only by water. Holland was a peninsula intersected by navigable rivers, crowded by a dense population on a soil saved from the depths of the ocean by embankments and kept dry by pumps driven by windmills. Zeeland was composed of islands, her inhabitants mostly fishermen, her villages built on the margin of the sea. Both provinces were the nursery of sailors, every house a school for mariners. Their commerce connected hemispheres, and into their harbors were gathered the fruits of the whole world. Holland, producing almost no grain, was the best supplied granary of Europe; without a field of flax, she numbered amongst her people an infinite multitude of weavers of linen; destitute of sheep, she became the center of all woolen manufactories; and while she had no forests, she built more ships than all Europe combined. Her enterprising mariners displayed the flag of the republic from Southern Africa to the Arctic circle. Amsterdam was the first commercial city of the world, fleets of merchantmen lay crowded together at her docks. Holland gained the commerce of Spain by its maritime force and secured the wealth of the Indies by traffic.

Years rolled away, and success of English commerce in the west awakened the jealousy of the Dutch. The United Provinces abounded in mariners, also in unemployed capital; America alone offered great inducements to exhaust the energy of her seafaring





COMMUNIPAW—FROM AN OLD PRINT



population and the wealth of her merchants. The States General was urged to incorporate privileged corporations for conquest and commerce, but declined the adventure, though it offered no obstacles to private enterprise. The first efforts of the Dutch merchants to share in the commerce of Asia were accompanied with the desire to search for a northwest passage. Twice they made unsuccessful attempts, but with the establishment of the Dutch East India Company, with unlimited power for conquest, colonization and government, they covered the seas of Asia with fleets of Indiamen.

In the autumn of 1608, Henry Hudson, who had made two voyages for the Muscovy Company of London, England, was called to Amsterdam, and there, after many vacillating negotiations, was placed in command of the *Half-Moon*, with a mixed crew of eighteen or twenty Englishmen and Hollanders. On the fourth day of April, 1609, he left the Texel and set sail again to find the north-western passage. Masses of ice impeded the navigation towards Nova Zembla, and passing beyond Greenland and Newfoundland he proceeded down the coast of Acadia, and probably anchored at the Penobscot river. Following the track of Gosnold, he sighted the promontory of Cape Cod, and, believing he was its first discoverer, gave it the name of New Holland; this was afterwards claimed by the Dutch West India Company as the northeastern boundary of New Netherlands. Still steering a southerly course, Hudson found himself opposite the entrance into the bay of Virginia. He then turned north, discovered the Delaware river, and without going ashore took note of the aspect of the country. It was on the third of September, 1609, that the *Half-Moon* anchored at what is now Sandy Hook, after a week's delay sailed through the Narrows, and ten days were employed exploring the river. The *Half-Moon* proceeded up the river two miles above the present city of Hudson, where, taking small boats, an advance was made to a short distance beyond the present site of Albany. The same summer Champlain, the noted French navigator, was making his way south through the waters of the lake bearing his name, in a vain search for an outlet to the South Sea; the two navigators were only the distance of about twenty leagues apart. The *Half-Moon* weighed anchor for the Texel on October 4, 1609; she was seized by the English government November 7th of that year at Dartmouth, England, and her crew detained. Hudson forwarded to his Dutch employers the account





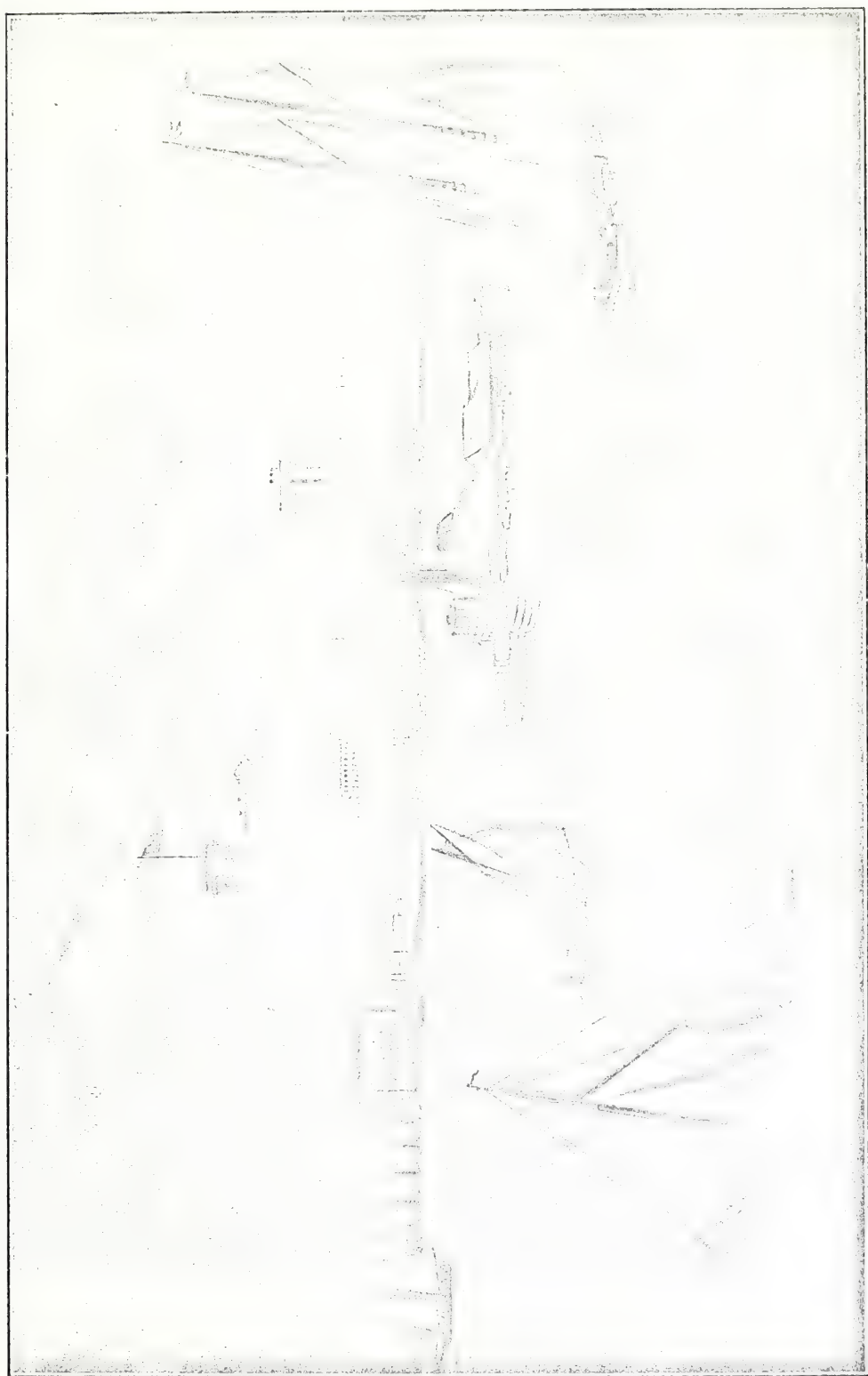
## EARLY DISCOVERIES AND EXPLORATIONS

of his discoveries, but the Dutch East India Company refused to make any further search for the northwestern passage. Though the voyage fell short of Hudson's expectations, it served many purposes important to the world.

The right of possession was claimed by the Dutch East India Company of the lands discovered by their agent. In the year 1611 the merchants of Amsterdam fitted up a ship to traffic with the natives in the discovered country. The undertaking was a success and was renewed. Argall, a commander of the Colony of Virginia, on his return from an expedition against the French at Port Royal, visited the waters of what is now New York bay. Here he found three or four rude huts erected on the Island of Manhattan for a summer shelter for the few Dutch mariners and for traders whom private enterprises had stationed there. The Dutch continued their profitable traffic, even remaining on Manhattan during the winter. The first rude fort was erected on the southern extremity of the island in 1614. Hudson's discovery formed a wedge between the English colony at Jamestown, Virginia, and the later settlement of the Pilgrim Fathers at Plymouth, Massachusetts, which for a half of a century was to be an eyesore to the covetous English government. At this early day the government of the United Netherlands made no claim to the territory. The tardy progress of civilization was due to several reasons; prominent among these was that the independence of Holland brought with it no elective franchise for the people; the municipal officers were either named by the stadtholder or were self-elected, on the principle of close corporations. The municipal officers elected delegates to the provincial states, and these in turn elected representatives to the States General.

This soon caused a division of parties which extended to every question of domestic politics, theology, and international intercourse. The followers of the stadtholder asserted sovereignty for the States General, while the party headed by Johan Van Olden Barneveldt, Grand Pensionary of Holland, and his friend and co-patriot, Hugo Grotius (or De Groot), claimed sovereignty exclusively for the provincial assemblies. The stadtholder favored colonization of America; the aristocratic party, fearing the increase of executive power, opposed it, believing it would lead to new collisions. The Gomarists, the party of the people, denied personal merit as a quality, attributing every virtue and capacity to the benevolence of





THE HUDSON RIVER; CASTLE POINT AND THE ELYSIAN FIELDS, NEAR HOBOKEN  
From an Old Engraving



## EARLY DISCOVERIES AND EXPLORATIONS

God; the creed of the Arminians or Remonstrants ascribed power and merit to man, and was commended by the aristocratic party. Thus the Calvinists, popular enthusiasm, and the stadtholder, were arrayed against the provincial states and municipal authorities. The colonization of the Dutch possessions in New Netherland therefore depended on the issue of the struggle. The imprisonment for life of Grotius and the execution of Barneveldt was to hasten the permanent settlement of Manhattan. A short time after these first acts of violence and triumph over the intestine commotions, the scheme of the Dutch West India Company was incorporated by the States General. While the Dutch planted colonies only under the auspices of chartered companies, the States General would never undertake the defense of foreign possessions. The Dutch West India Company, therefore, became the sovereign of the Dutch possessions in America. The company was incorporated for twenty-four years, with a pledge of a renewal of its charter, and was invested with the exclusive privilege in traffic and planting colonies on the coast of Africa from the Tropic of Cancer to the Cape of Good Hope; also on the coast of America from the Straits of Magellan to the utmost north. The States General gave the company a half million guilders as an encouragement, and subscribed for a half million guilders of its stock, the stock subscription book open to men of all nations. The chartered company through its franchises held the power to act with independence; the States General did not guarantee its possession of any specific territory, and in case of war were to be known only as allies and patrons. The company might conquer provinces, but at its own risk. England in its patents made the conversion of the natives a prominent feature; the Dutch were only intent on promoting trade; the English charters gave protection to the political rights of the colonists against the proprietors; the Dutch, having no popular liberty at home, bestowed no thought on colonial representation; the company subject to the approval of the States General had absolute power over its possessions. Branches of the company were established in the five principal cities of Netherlands, and the charge of New Netherland was given to the branch at Amsterdam. The government of the Dutch West India Company was intrusted to a board of nineteen directors, eighteen of whom were from the branches, and one was named by the States General. The main object of the incorporation of the company was



## EARLY DISCOVERIES AND EXPLORATIONS

not the colonization of the territory on the Hudson; New Netherland was not even described in the charter, nor by any special act of the States General at that time. The company was to prosecute its own plans and provide for its own protection. Yet there were jealous efforts taken by the company for colonization, and the country from the southern shore of Delaware bay to New Holland or Cape Cod became known as New Netherland. Around the new block house on Manhattan Island in 1624 the cottages of New Amsterdam began to cluster, and the country began to assume the form of a colony. These rude beginnings of New Amsterdam were to cast an influence over the surrounding territory, to invade the outlying contiguous surroundings, and effect settlements on its soil.

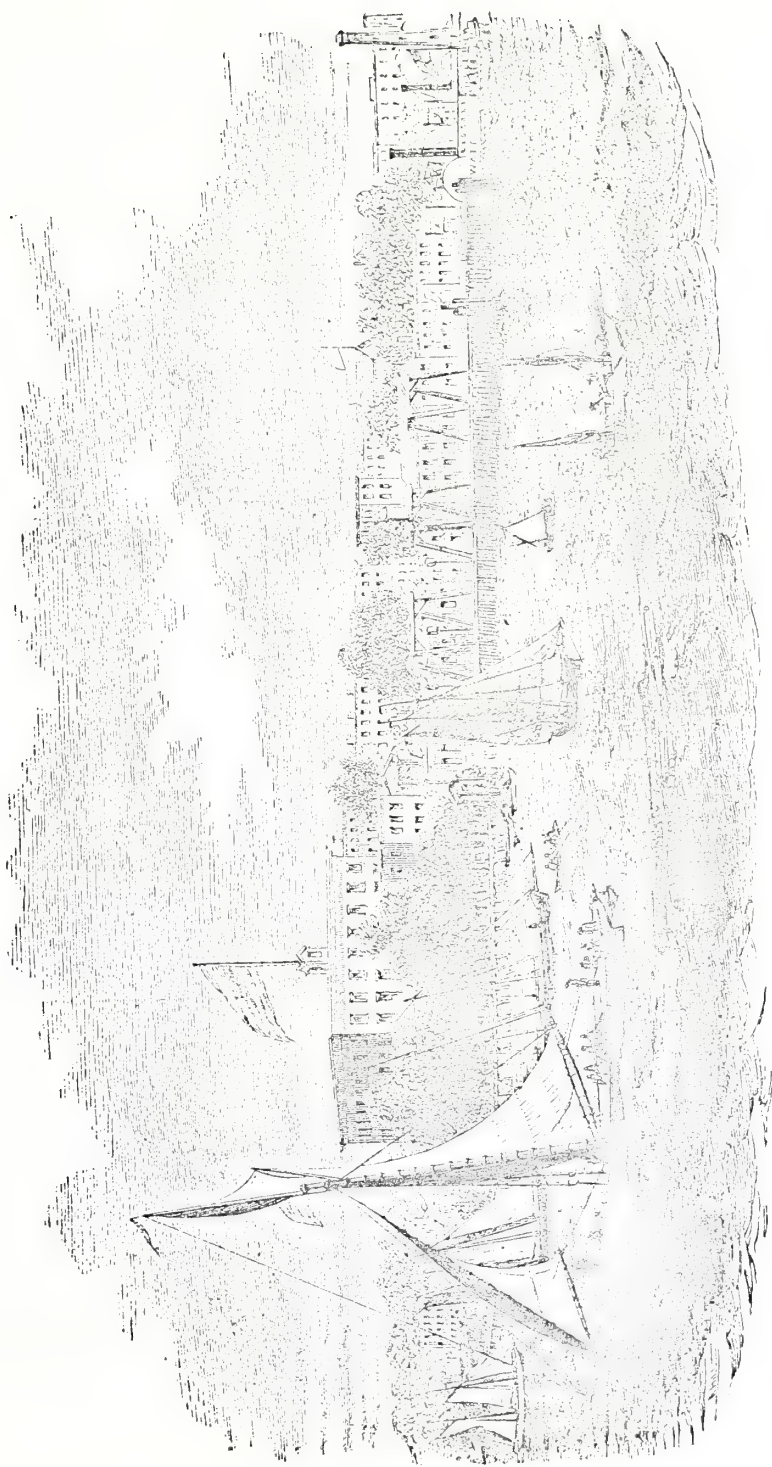
It was in 1629 or 1630 that the council of the Dutch West India Company adopted plans for a more extensive colonization of New Netherland. They granted to certain individuals extensive seigniories or tracts of land, with feudal rights over the lives and persons of their subjects. These tracts were granted with the provision that a settlement was to be effected within a specified time, besides other conditions. Under these provisions Kiliaen Van Rensselaer, a pearl merchant of Amsterdam, secured a tract of land miles in extent, comprising the present counties of Albany, Rensselaer and part of Columbia. Our wealthy patroons obtained large grants for similar seigniories in other portions of New Netherland.

The first Indian deed to territory along the west side of New York bay and Hudson river is dated July 12, 1630. It was for a purchase made by the Director-General and Council of New Netherland for Michael Pauw, Burgomaster of Amsterdam and Lord of Achtienvoven near Utrecht, Holland. The burgomaster also in the same year obtained a deed for Staten Island. The purchase on the Jersey shore of the Hudson was named Pavonia. The colony established by Pauw was not a success, and his interests were purchased by the directors of the Dutch West India Company, and it became known as the West India Company's Farms.

David Pieterse de Vries, who had made two unsuccessful attempts to establish Dutch settlements on the shores of Delaware, turned his attention in 1640 to New Netherland. He purchased in that year of the Indians a tract of about five hundred acres at Tappan, on the Achter Kull shore of the Hudson, and gave it the name of "Vriesendael." Located along the river side, sheltered by high







VIEW OF HOBOKEN—1856



## EARLY DISCOVERIES AND EXPLORATIONS

hills, a stream wended its way through the center, supplying mill sites. It had all the charms of nature, and with the erection of buildings became an ideal home where the energetic owner lived for several years. Settlements were also made at Communipaw, Hoboken, Ahasimus, Paulius Hoeck; and throughout the territory were individual settlements, many of which were, however, destroyed in the Indian War of 1644.

The policy of the Dutch government was to encourage the settlement of colonies or manors similar to lordships and seigniories of the Old World by men of large fortunes, to be known as patroons, to whom peculiar privileges of trade and government were accorded. These tracts were sixteen miles in extent along the seashore or banks of some navigable river, or eight miles when both banks were occupied, with an indefinite extent inland, the company, however, reserving the island of Manhattan and the fur trade with the Indians. These patroons were within four years from the granting of the tract to settle them with fifty persons upwards of fifteen years of age, and upon all trade carried on by them were to pay five per cent. to the company. They were also to extinguish the Indian titles to the land; their tenants were not to acquire a free tenure to the lands, and were prohibited from making any woolen, linen or cotton cloth or to weave any other material under a penalty of banishment. This restriction was to keep them dependent on the mother country for the most necessary manufactured goods, which was in spirit with the colonial system adopted by all the nations of Europe. This scheme of colonization met with favor, and several members of the Dutch West India Company elected and purchased the most desirable tracts both on the North and South rivers, as well as the whole neck opposite New Amsterdam as far as the Kills, together with Staten Island.

The colonization of New Jersey was deferred by the ravages of the Indians, which was a check to making any permanent settlement. Treaties, however, were consummated with them, and the territory repurchased by Governor Stuyvesant, with the intention of erecting a fortified town. There had, however, been no village located prior to 1660, but in the month of August of that year the right to establish a village in Achter Kull was granted to several inhabitants. It was named Bergen, from a small village in Holland, eighteen miles north of Antwerp. The village, located on a hill now called Jersey



## EARLY DISCOVERIES AND EXPLORATIONS

City Heights, grew rapidly, and in May, 1661, there was not a vacant lot inside of the fortifications. This was the first permanent settlement on the soil of New Jersey. At the time of the dismemberment of New Netherland by the English in East Jersey, outside of the settlement at Bergen, savages roamed at will, undisturbed by the white man. In Smith's "History of New Jersey," he says that a score of years later, on the side of Overpeck creek adjacent to Hackensack river, the rich valleys were settled by the Dutch; and near Snakehill was a fine plantation owned by Pinhorn and Eickbe. There were other settlements on Hackensack river, and on a creek near it Sarah Kiersted had a tract given her by an old Indian sachem for services interpreting between the Indians and Dutch; on this tract several families were settled; two or three miles above this point John Berrie had a large plantation, and nearby was his son-in-law Smith and a person by name of Baker, from Barbadoes. Opposite to Berrie, on the west side of the creek, were other plantations, but none more northerly. There was a considerable settlement in Bergen Point, then called Constable Hook. Other small plantations were improved along Bergen Neck to the east between the point, and a little village of twenty families. Further along lived sixteen or eighteen families, and opposite New York about forty families were seated; southward from this a few families were settled together at a place called the Duke's Farm, and further up the country was a place called Hobuck, where there was a mill. Along the river side on the north were lands settled by William Lawrence, Samuel Edsal, and Captain Beinfield. The plantations on both sides of the Neck, also those at Hackensack, were under the jurisdiction of Berrentown, which contained upwards of seventy families.

The emigrants from Holland were of various lineage, for that country had long been the gathering place of the unfortunate. Refugees from persecution flocked to her boundaries from England and Continental Europe. She housed from the heart of Bohemia those who were swayed by the voice of Hus, the Separatists from England, the Huguenots from France, the Protestants from the Reformation, the Walloons from Belgium—all came to her hospitable soil, and from there emigrated to the New Eldorado in the Western Continent.

The Dutch settlers were reluctant to make acquaintances with strangers, lest they should be imposed upon, but when a friend-



## EARLY DISCOVERIES AND EXPLORATIONS

ship was formed it proved lasting. They were clanish in their relations to each other. When one of the community was wrongly involved or in trouble, especially in litigation, they were as one man.

At the time of the subjection of New Netherland by the English the Dutch colonists were satisfied, a very few embarked for Holland, it seemed rather that English liberties were to add to the security of their property. The capitulation of the Dutch and Swedes early in October, 1664, placed the Atlantic seacoast of the thirteen original colonies in possession of England. The country had become a geographical unity.







## Marquette's Monsters

BY JACOB P. DUNN, SECRETARY OF INDIANA HISTORICAL SOCIETY,  
INDIANAPOLIS, INDIANA



WITHOUT ANY imputation of either superstition or timidity to Father Marquette, it is safe to say that when he made his celebrated first voyage down the Mississippi he was prepared to see things that might arouse his "special wonder." The Menominees had tried to dissuade him from the venture, assuring him that he would encounter "Nations who never show mercy to Strangers, but Break Their heads without any cause;" and further: "They also said that the great River was very dangerous, when one does not know the difficult Places; that it was full of horrible monsters, which devoured men and Canoes Together; that there was even a demon, who was heard from a great distance, who barred the way, and swallowed up all who ventured to approach him."

Marquette tells us: "I thanked them for the good advice that they gave me, but told them that I could not follow it, because the salvation of souls was at stake, for which I would be delighted to give my life; that I scoffed at the alleged demon; that we would easily defend ourselves against those marine monsters; and, moreover, that We would be on our guard to avoid the other dangers with which they threatened us." Nevertheless he was on the lookout, for he says: "On another occasion, we saw on The water a monster with the head of a tiger, a sharp nose Like That of a wildcat, with whiskers and straight, Erect ears; The head was gray and The Neck quite black; but We saw no more creatures of this sort."

This was quite natural from any standpoint. He was encountering new and strange forms of animal life every day, and had scientific basis for even greater wonders, for Champlain had not only included "the dragon" in the fauna of the country, but had given an authentic picture of it. True, this was a rather amiable looking dragon, but dragons are dragons. Moreover, the world had not outgrown belief in the supernatural in earthly affairs. Marquette



## MARQUETTE'S MONSTERS

was contemporary with Cotton Mather; and he wrote nearly a century before Sir William Blackstone defended the British laws against witchcraft. The Bible gave assurance that Satan and his imps could take terrifying forms, and while the righteous had ample spiritual protection against these evil ones, it was merely an application of "safety first" to be ready with exorcism if they appeared.

When Marquette reached the vicinity of Alton, Illinois, he recorded:

"While Skirting some rocks, which by Their height and Length inspired awe, We saw upon one of them two painted monsters which at first made Us afraid, and upon Which the boldest savages dare not Long rest their eyes. They are as large As a calf; they have Horns on their heads Like those of deer, a horrible look, red eyes, a beard Like a tiger's, a face somewhat like a man's, a body Covered with scales, and so Long A tail that it winds all around the Body, passing above the head and going back between the legs, ending in a Fish's tail. Green, red, and black are the three Colors composing the Picture. Moreover, these 2 monsters are so well painted that we cannot believe that any savage is their author; for good painters in france would find it difficult to paint so well,—and, besides, they are so high up on the rock that it is difficult to reach that place Conveniently to paint them. Here is approximately The shape of these monsters, As we have faithfully Copied it. [A sketch accompanied this narrative.—Editor.]

"While conversing about these monsters, sailing quietly in clear and calm Water, we heard the noise of a rapid, into which we were about to run. I have seen nothing more dreadful. An accumulation of large and entire trees, branches, and floating islands, was issuing from the mouth of The river pekistanoui (Missouri) with such impetuosity that we could not without great danger risk passing through it. So great was the agitation that the water was very muddy, and could not become clear."

This description put subsequent travelers on the *qui vive*, but none of them was so much impressed as Marquette. Father Hennepin, who passed the place in the spring of 1680, says he had been told by the Illinois that at this point "there were some Tritons and other Sea Monsters painted which the boldest men durst not look upon, there being some Inchantment in their face." But, he adds: "I thought this was a story; but when we came near the place they had mentioned we saw instead of these monsters a Horse and some other Beasts painted upon the rock with Red Colors by the Savages. The Illinois had told us likewise that the rock on which these dreadful



## MARQUETTE'S MONSTERS

monsters stood was so steep that no man could climb up to it, but had we not been afraid of the savages more than of the Monsters we had certainly got up to them."

On September 2, 1687, Father Douay and Henri Joutel reached the rock on their way home from the fatal expedition of LaSalle. Father Douay wrote: "It is said that they (Marquette's party) saw painted monsters that the boldest would have difficulty to look at, and that there was something supernatural about them. The frightful monster is a horse painted on a rock with *matachia* (obsolete word, supposed to be of Indian origin, signifying colors, and used specifically for strings of colored beads; cf. Old French *matacher*, "to tattoo," and *matachin*, a masked jester dancer), and some other wild beasts made by the Indians. It is said that they cannot be reached, and yet I touched them without difficulty."

Joutel was even more scornful, saying: "The 2nd we arrived at the place where the figure is of the pretended monster spoken of by Father Marquet. That monster consists of two scurvy figures drawn in red, on the flat side of a rock, about ten or twelve feet high, which wants very much of the extraordinary height that relation mentions. However, our Indians paid homage by offering sacrifice to that stone; though we endeavored to give them to understand that the said rock had no manner of virtue, and that we worshipped something above it, pointing up to heaven; but it was to no purpose, and they made signs to us that they should die if they did not perform that duty."

Both Hennepin and Douay speak of the Indians offering sacrifices, and say they had a legend that a number of Miamis, pursued by Michigamia enemies, were drowned at this place, and that thereafter the Indians made these sacrifices to appease the Manito. After the American occupation, this legend was improved on by having the Miamis devoured by the monsters; and a new and more romantic legend was concocted in which the monster was slain. In this period, however, was recorded the significant fact that passing Indians used to fire their guns at the picture and shout at it.

In recent years there has been a somewhat amusing revival of interest in the subject on a quasi scientific basis, which grows out of the researches of William McAdams. He was a farmer who resided in the vicinity, and became interested in antiquities, and read a paper on this pictograph at the Ann Arbor meeting of the Ameri-



## MARQUETTE'S MONSTERS

can Academy of Sciences, in 1885. The paper was not printed in the Proceedings, it being announced that it would appear in the "American Antiquarian"; however, it did not appear in "The Antiquarian," and in 1887 McAdams published a book on the subject, with a voluminous title beginning, "Records of Ancient Races in the Mississippi Valley." It is rather interesting, but so indefinite that it is almost impossible to verify his authorities.

McAdams gives the later legend of the destruction of the monster, which he calls "the Piasa Bird," and states that he got it from a magazine article by Professor John Russell. It avers that the Manito came to death through the wiles of Ouatogo, "the great chief of the Illini," (strange that he is not mentioned by any of the early French chroniclers), who exposed himself as a lure to the Piasa, which was killed by poisoned arrows from his concealed warriors. In his "Early Settlement of the Mississippi Valley," published in 1890, F. A. Rozier gives the same legend, stating that he got it from "Sketches of St. Louis," by Rev. W. H. Hill, and that Hill had it from Father DeSmet, who said he had it from a Potawatomi chief in 1838. McAdam says he wrote to Russell about the legend, and that Russell replied that there was a "somewhat similar tradition among the Indians," and that his own story was "somewhat illustrated."

The one thing certain is, that no legend of a Manito being killed by poisoned arrows and having sacrifices made to it to appease its wrath after it was extinct, ever came from an Indian. McAdam identifies the monster with "the Thunder Bird," and has been followed in this by several later writers. One of the latest presentations of the subject, with its accumulations of the last century—"Piasa," "Thunder Bird," "Ouatogo," and all—was in "Art and Archaeology" for September, 1922, and this was noticed at length in the "Literary Digest" of October 7th.

The recent discussion indicates a woful ignorance of Indian mythology, and any intelligent inquiry into it requires first the identification of the words. Notwithstanding the statement of McAdams that "Piasa" is "Indian, and signifies, in the Illini, 'The bird which devours men,'" there is no such word in the Illinois or Peoria language; and, if there were, it would not have that meaning. It has been corrupted in American usage, and is now in its second stage of metamorphosis. In the Executive Journal of Indiana





## MARQUETTE'S MONSTERS

Territory is an entry: "January 1st, 1807. A Liscence was granted to Eli Langford to keep a ferry on the east side of the Mississippi in St. Clair County above the mouth of the Missouri and two miles from Pyesaw Rock." (Ind. Hist. Soc. Pubs., Vol. 3, p. 138).

In his "Sketches of Louisiana," published in 1812, Amos Stoddard says that this pictograph, "known to the moderns by the name of Piesa, still remains in a good state of preservation." McAdam says the word is given "Piasau" in Patterson's "Life of Blackhawk," as the name of Blackhawk's father. In reality the name is there given "Pyesa." It is not uncommon as a proper name, its earliest recorded use in that way, to my knowledge, is as the name of a Kaskaskia friend of LaSalle, (Mason's "Chapters from Illinois History," p. 118), when the French chronicler made it "Paessa." The proper Indian form is Pa-i-sa (pronounced pah-ēē-sah), and the change from that to the early American form is quite slight, as anyone may see by pronouncing the two.

If you should ask a Miami or Ojibwa Indian what a Paisa is, he would probably answer that it is a dwarf; but patience and perseverance would probably elicit the information that it is a little man, with supernatural powers, corresponding exactly with the elves and gnomes of the old world. These Paisas (the Indian plural is Pa-i-sa-ki) although somewhat mischievous, are not unfriendly to men unless annoyed in some way. On the contrary, two of them come to guide the spirit of a dead Indian to the happy hunting grounds. Father Le Mercier gives an interesting account of the Indians getting flints on the shore of Lake Champlain, which they believe to be furnished by these "little men." As the point could easily be identified, some enterprising geologist might find in this submerged flint workshop a clue to the age of man in America. (Jesuit Relations, Vol. 51, pp. 182-3).

But the Paisaki have nothing to do with the monster, unless perhaps the Indians thought they had put up the picture as a warning of a dangerous place in the river. If you should give its description to a Miami Indian, just as given by Marquette, he would tell you it was Len-ni-pin-ja, while an Ojibwa would tell you it was Mi-ci-bi-si (Michybichy), which is the same thing under another name, to wit, the Manito of the Waters. Micibisi is the ordinary word for a panther, but in this usage it means the Spirit Panther (literally the big cat); and Lennipinja is literally the Man Panther, or as one of the French chroniclers makes it, *l'Homme Tyger*.



## MARQUETTE'S MONSTERS

Primarily it rules the waters, living usually in deep and dangerous-looking places, especially where the water boils up, which is supposed to be due to the waving of its tail. If one were to look up the references to it in the index to the Jesuit Relations, he would find evidence of the missionaries being grieved by the persistence of the Indians in offering tobacco to it (all intelligent manitos appreciate tobacco), whenever they wanted good fishing, or thought they were in danger on the water. But it has another important function. It corresponds to the Fire Dragon of old world myths; and when the old Miamis see a meteor crossing the sky, they say it is Lennipinja going from one water to another.

This was a general belief and this Manito furnishes to one of the Shawnee clans the name of "Manetuwi Msi-nessi, of which it is said: "The Msi-nessi, when the epithet miraculous (manetuwi) is added to it, means a 'celestial tiger', i. e. a meteor or shooting star. The Manetuwi Msi-nessi lives in water only, and is visible not as an animal, but as a shooting star." (Report of Bureau of Ethnology, 1892-3, p. 682). The celebrated Shawnee chief Tecumtha belonged to this clan, which is the cause of the variant translations of his name. The word *Tecumtha*, of itself, means "he goes across," or "crosses over;" but, in connection with the clan name, it means "the Spirit Panther going across," or, in other words, a meteor.

The recorded custom of the Indians firing guns at the pictograph, and shouting at it, was the product of ancient experience. In the course of its aviation this Manito occasionally came into the vicinity of the moon or sun, and undertook to devour them, thereby producing eclipses. LePotherie recounts being attracted by the Indians beating drums, shouting, and shooting arrows at the moon, during an eclipse, and receiving this explanation from a chief: "Our old men have taught us that when the moon is sick it is necessary to assist her by discharging arrows and making a great deal of noise, in order to cause terror in the spirits who are trying to cause her death; then she regains her strength, and returns to her former condition. If men did not aid her she would die, and we would no longer see clearly at night; and thus we could no longer separate the twelve months of the year." (Blair's "Indian Tribes," Vol. 2, p. 121).

A striking application of this astronomical theory was made by Father Lafitau, who was deeply versed in ancient lore, and published



## MARQUETTE'S MONSTERS

a book entitled "Moeurs des Sauvages Ameriquains," devoted to a comparison of their views with ancient ideas of the old world. He found in this Indian explanation of eclipses a counterpart of the vision of the dragon and the man-child, in the twelfth chapter of the Book of Revelation. He had this illustrated in a cut in which the upper part showed the Indians frightening away the dragon, who was preparing to devour the moon; and the lower part depicting John's vision. It is noteworthy that the early missionaries went to some lengths to bring Bible teachings in touch with savage traditions—a practice which has been found very advantageous in modern missionary work.

The uniform success of this remedy fixed the common faith that spirits may be driven away by noise and carnal weapons; and to this day Indians who are troubled by spooks, resort to it. If it is a terrifying noise, they shoot at the noise; but in a case of that kind the Miami custom is to rub the gun barrel with a plant which they call "black root,"—I think it is *Rudbeckia hirta*, but am not certain. The object of firing at the pictograph was to scare away the Manito, which was somewhere in the neighborhood. This was not inconsistent with the offering of tobacco, for the Indian has two forms of defense against supernaturals, sacrifice and terrorism; and, if the case is serious, he takes no chances, but uses both precautions.

The later Indians add little of detail concerning this Manito. George Finley (Piankeshaw) informed me that one of its horns is white and the other blue. Gabriel Godfroy (Miami) said that it stayed in the water to avoid setting the world on fire; but Finley said the reason for submerging was to escape danger from Teing-wia, "The Thunder," who is its enemy. Thunder is personified as a sort of American Thor; but lightning is regarded as the manifestation of his blows. Consequently the Miamis never speak of anything being struck by lightning, but always as "struck by Thunder." They have legends both of the water Manito's dangerous character, and of its friendship to some individuals, for no Manito is either wholly beneficent or hopelessly evil. The Manitos are beings of supernatural powers, but with very human qualities.

It is doubtful if any accurate reproduction of the Marquette pictograph is in existence, although there are some purporting to be, which are of widely divergent appearance. Parkman searched for the copy made by Marquette, and reported it lost. McAdams



## MARQUETTE'S MONSTERS

presented two copies, one marked: "Made by Wm. Dennis, April 3d, 1825." This has been elaborated into the conventional form now in use (Journal of Illinois State Hist. Soc., Vol. 7, p. 82), and corresponds more closely with the description given by Marquette and by the Indians than any other. The other is from a German publication, "Das Illustrierte Mississippithal"; and he says it was "taken on the spot by artists from Germany" and "published about the year 1839." This work, however, is listed by Sabin (under title Lewis, H.), as a translation of an English edition printed at Philadelphia in 1858. It seems to correspond more closely with Joutel's idea. Lewis is called in the title of the book "a landscape painter of St. Louis."

Later artists have attempted to improve the monster by wrapping his tail around his body two or three times, and some criminals have even represented Marquette as saying of the tail: "It twice makes a turn of the body." The exact words of Marquette are: "It makes a complete circuit of the body, passing over the head and returning between the legs, ending in the tail of a fish;"—" *Le queue si Longue qu'elle fait tout le tour du Corps passant par dessus la teste et retournant entre les jambes elle se termine en queue de Poisson.*" Rozier, who claims to have seen the pictograph in 1837, gives a picture of the rock which is quite impossible; but it is in harmony with Marquette's statement as to inaccessibility. Rozier also states that the figure was "on the bluffs about twenty feet below the top of the cliff, and about sixty feet above its base."

The chief objections to the conventional form are that it is too finished and too Oriental in type for Indian pictography. But that is not very material, as there is no more possibility of having an accurate portrait of an Indian Manito than of having one of Venus, or the angel Gabriel. The pictograph on the rock was some Indian artist's ideal of the Manito of tribal tradition, and, by the usages of art, other artists are not only at liberty to present their ideals, but are under spiritual compulsion to express their own souls in the work. The Manito may have a reserved right to complain that the portrait does not do him justice, but it may be doubted that this right extends to persons who never saw him.





# Pierson and Allied Families

BY CLYDE F. RYAN, LOS ANGELES, CALIFORNIA



THE name Pierson is derived through the French "Pierre" and farther back from the Danish "Peterson." In England it was used early in the fifteenth century in Yorkshire, and throughout its history its spelling has been varied, Pierson, Pearson, Person, Peirson, and even Parsons.

The coat-of-arms of the family is as follows:

*Arms*—Sable, three suns in pale or, between two pallets ermine.

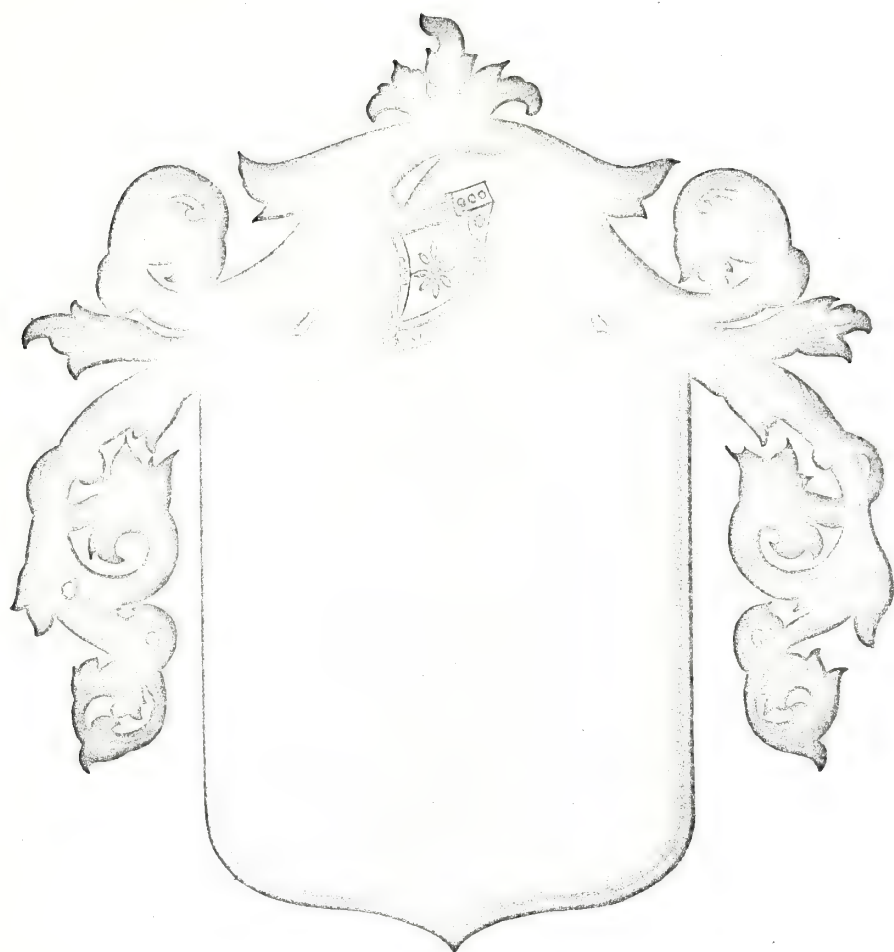
The founder of the line of interest here was Henry Pierson, who came from England, eventually becoming a leading settler of Southampton, Long Island, probably coming to that place from Lynn, Massachusetts, as did Rev. Abraham Pierson, who was in all likelihood his brother. Rev. Abraham Pierson removed to Newark, New Jersey, but Henry Pierson remained in Southampton and was clerk of Suffolk county from 1669 to 1680, his death occurring in 1680 or 1681. He married and had issue: John; Daniel; Joseph; Henry, of whom further; Benjamin, died in 1731, removed to Elizabeth, New Jersey; Theodore, born in 1659, died May 7, 1726; Sarah, born January 20, 1660.

Henry (2) Pierson, son of Henry (1) Pierson, was born in 1652, and died November 15, 1701. He was one of the early settlers of Bridgehampton, Long Island, member of the Assembly from Suffolk county, 1691 to 1695, and from 1698 to 1701, and was called "Colonel." He married Susannah Howell, who died in 1716. Issue: 1. John, born in November, 1685, died January 15, 1704. 2. David, married Esther —, who died in 1711, aged twenty-seven years. 3. Theophilus. 4. Abraham. 5. Josiah.

Three brothers, David, William and Sylvanus Pierson, came from Bridgehampton, Long Island, and settled in Westfield township, New Jersey. A David Pierson served in the Revolution, also William and Sylvanus. David Pierson, grandfather of Oliver Mooney Pierson, was first a tailor, and with his brothers bought large tracts of land in Westfield township. Issue: 1. Susannah, married, in 1797, James Wade. 2. John, who served in the War of 1812 as a captain. 3. Theophilus, of whom further.

Theophilus Pierson, son of David Pierson, was born in Westfield, New Jersey, August 9, 1791, and there his early life was





Pierson





*Oliver M Pierson*

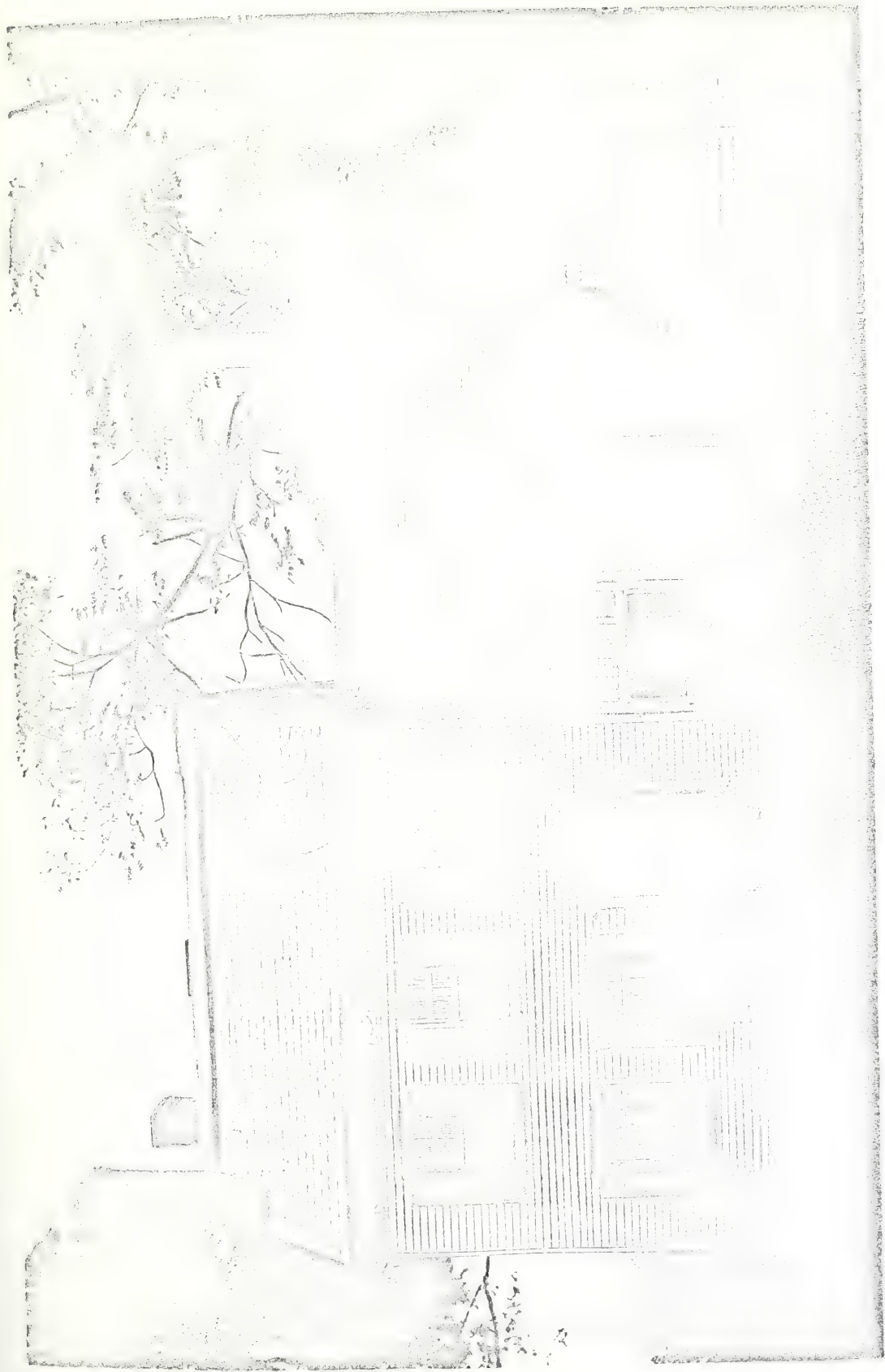




*Sarah Pierson*

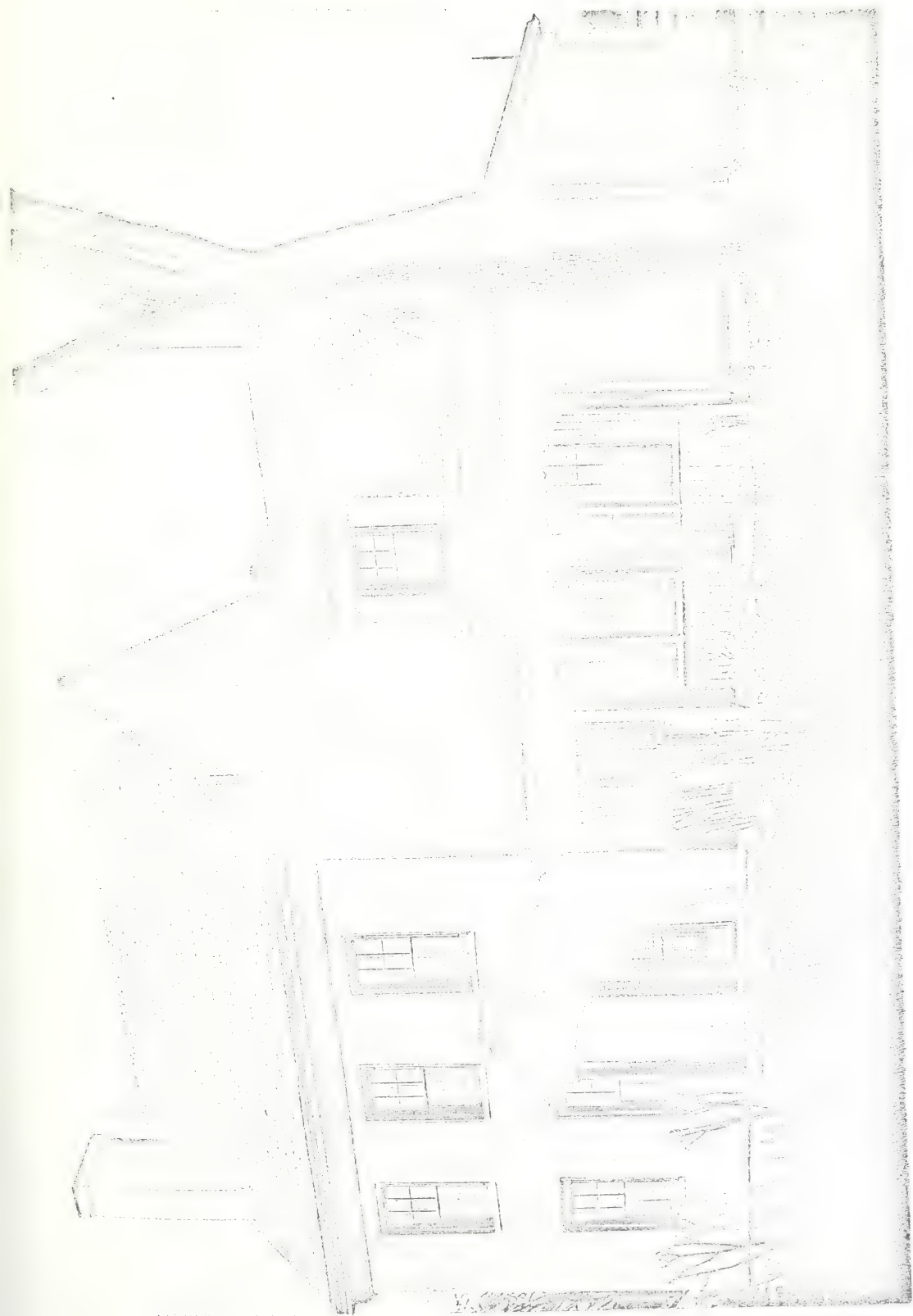






PIERSON HOMESTEAD





PIERSON HOMESTEAD





Hettie M. Pierson.



## PIERSON AND ALLIED FAMILIES

passed. He decided upon the acquisition of a trade, and on moving to New York City became a mason, later spending some time in Savannah, Georgia. On coming to Westfield he bought a large farm, his property extending from what is now Central avenue to West Broad street, the house having been built in 1801. He later bought a tract of land that extended to the Hettfield place, but after working both farms for some years he sold them and lived at his Broad street house for one year, working at his trade of mason. Later he was obliged to resume ownership of the old place.

He married (first) Nancy Mooney, of Cranford, New Jersey, who died April 1, 1821; (second) Fanny Clark, of Westfield, New Jersey, who died April 23, 1841; (third) Abigail Connet. Issue by first wife: Oliver Mooney, of whom further. Issue by second wife: Hetty C., Jonas, Edwin H., Eliza, John, Homer C., George H., Theophilus S.

Oliver Mooney Pierson, son of Theophilus and Nancy (Mooney) Pierson, was born in New York City, December 20, 1820, but the family removed to Westfield, New Jersey, when he was but three months old, on account of the health of the mother, who subsequently died there. Oliver M. Pierson inherited a part of the home farm, including the residence. He later bought the remainder of the property, and a number of years afterward sold that part which faced Central avenue, and upon which many beautiful houses have since been erected. Throughout his lifetime he was broadly interested in development activities in various parts of the community. A Republican by political affiliation, Mr. Pierson was for many years treasurer of the town committee, and also of the Board of Health. He was prominent in all movements tending to promote the public welfare, and was a member of the Presbyterian church. His death which occurred April 24, 1903, removed from Westfield a citizen deeply loyal to the civic as well as the individual responsibilities which devolve upon every man, and his memory is warmly cherished.

Mr. Pierson married Sarah Cory, of Westfield, daughter of William and Charity (Baker) Cory (see Cory line). Issue: 1. David T., now (1922) in the coal and lumber business in Madison, New Jersey. 2. Mary C., died December 23, 1910. 3. George Oliver, deceased. 4. Edward, died in infancy. 5. William, died in infancy. 6. Hettie M., lives in the old house, which she has remodeled and made into a charming, modern residence.

(The Cory-Corrie Line)

The family of Cory has English and Scotch branches, the latter inclining toward the spelling "Corrie," and having two of their principal residences at Kelwood and Newby, Scotland. The coat-of-arms is as follows:





## PIERSON AND ALLIED FAMILIES

*Arms*—Gules, a saltire, and in chief a rose argent.

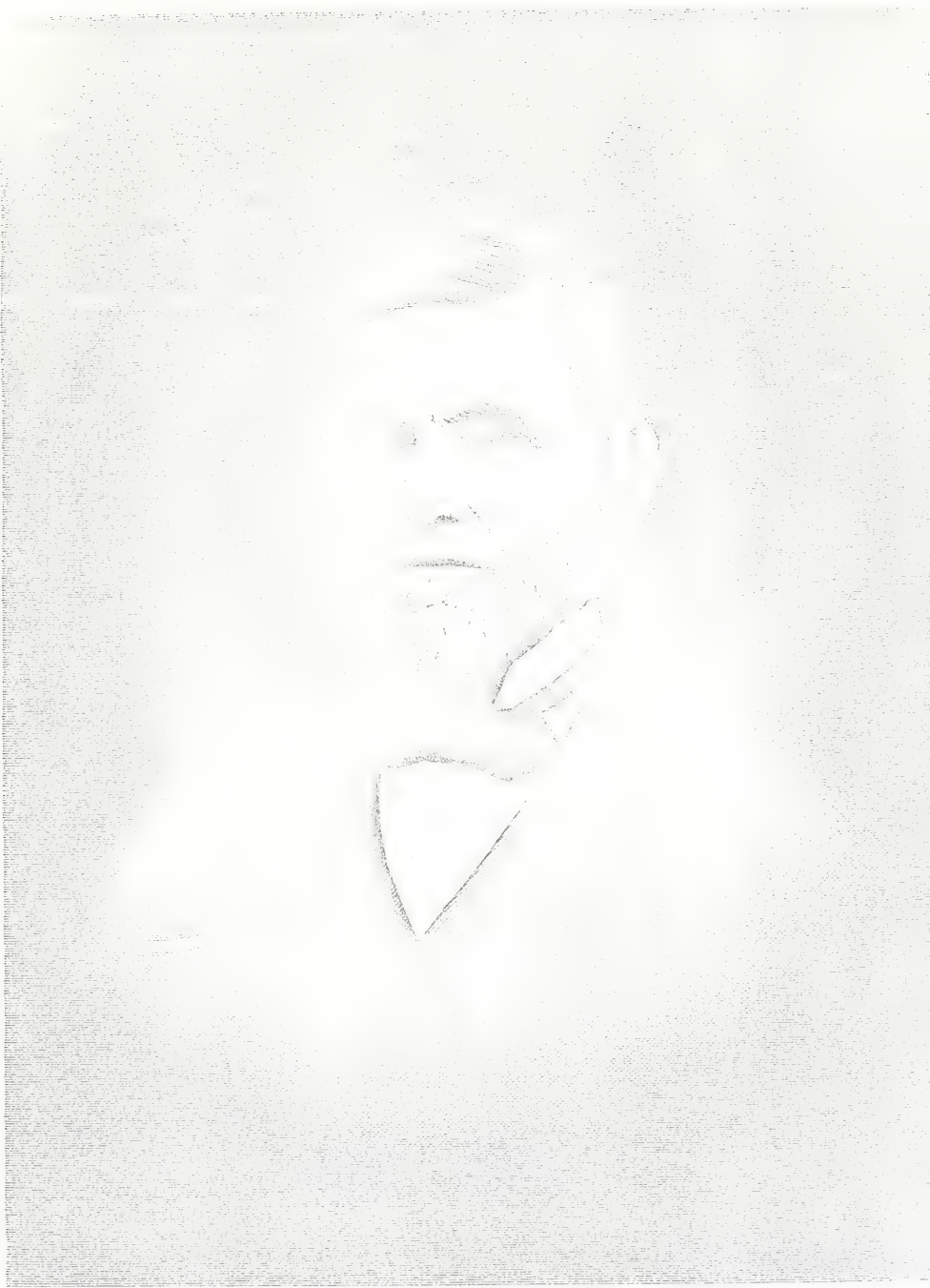
(I) From Scotch ancestry was descended Joseph Cory, who resided upon land at Westfield, New Jersey, that descended to his grandson. He was an elder of the Westfield Presbyterian Church, and was a man of considerable influence in his community. He married Margaret Darby, of Scotch Plains, New Jersey, the Darby family founded in that place by Deacon William Darby, born in 1692, died February 26, 1775. Issue: 1. A son, unnamed, born January 7, 1779. 2. Jonathan, born February 8, 1780. 3. Levi, born March 1, 1782. 4. William, of whom further. 5. Martha, born July 30, 1786. 6. Joseph, born December 24, 1788. 7. Sarah, born August 9, 1791. 8. Jonath Levi, born August 29, 1793. 9. Abigail, born December 3, 1795. 10. A son, unnamed, born October 22, 1797.

(II) William Cory, son of Joseph and Margaret (Darby) Cory, was born at the farm in Westfield township, Union county, New Jersey, February 16, 1784, and there died in 1866, aged eighty-two years. In his youth he learned the carpenter's trade, but later he returned to the farm and there engaged in its cultivation until the years grew heavy and he turned the management over to his son, Levi. He married Charity Baker, daughter of Jonathan I. Baker, of Westfield. (See Baker line). Issue: 1. Keziah Baker, born August 14, 1810, died July 23, 1837. 2. Margaret D., born February 12, 1812, died October 8, 1899; married Ephraim Clark. 3. Mary Picton, born November 3, 1813, died February 18, 1836. 4. Jonathan Baker, born November 26, 1815, died September 19, 1826. 5. Levi, born July 2, 1819; married, February 12, 1851, Harriet B. Clark, of Rahway. He became the owner of the home farm in 1867, and gave his after life to its cultivation. He was a Republican in politics, served as a member of the township committee of Westfield, was an elder of the Presbyterian church, and a man of high character. He died January 3, 1895. 6. Abigail, born September 24, 1821, died January 15, 1891; married George W. Pierson. 7. Joseph, born May 31, 1824, died October 24, 1825. 8. Sarah, born May 25, 1827, at the home farm, now Mountainside avenue, where she grew to womanhood, going hence as the bride of Oliver M. Pierson. She occupied the old home until her passing, January 14, 1910, the same house now occupied by her only living daughter, Hettie M. Pierson.

### (The Baker Line)

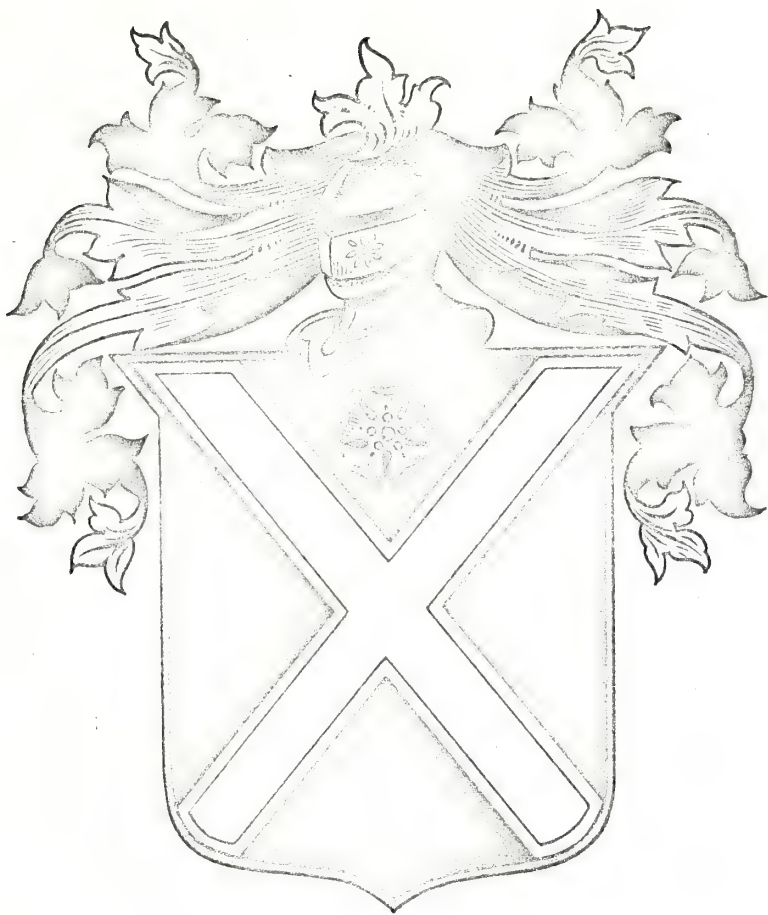
The name Baker is of occupational origin, and because of the large number of early immigrants named Baker and the similarity of their children's baptismal names, no family is more difficult to trace. But little has been discovered about the relationship of the immigrants. Before 1650 Alexander Baker settled at Gloucester,





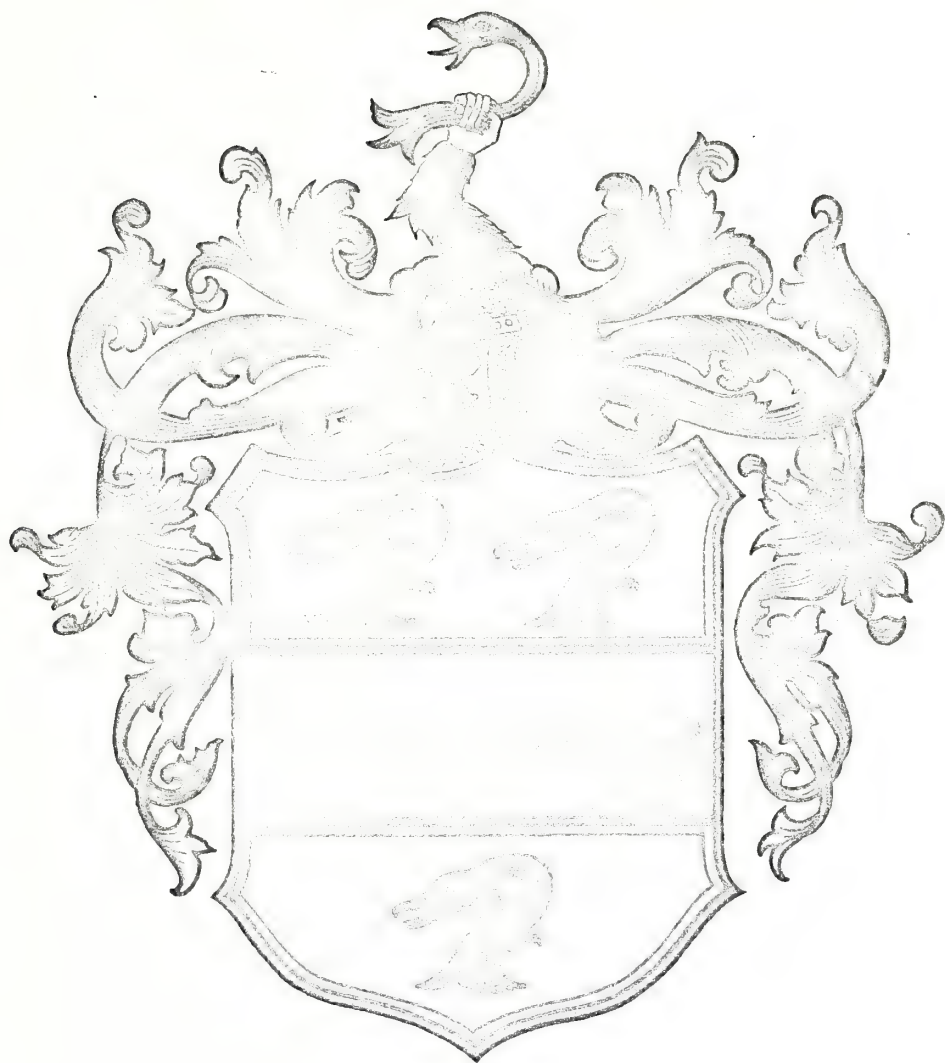
*L. Cory*





Cory  
(Corrie)





Baker





## PIERSON AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Massachusetts; Edward Baker, at Lynn; Francis Baker, at Boston; John Baker, at Charleston; Launcelet Baker, at Boston; Nathaniel Baker, at Watertown; Rev. Nicholas Baker, at Hingham; Richard Baker, at Dorchester; Robert Baker, at Salem; Thomas Baker, at Roxbury; Walter Baker, at Salem; William Baker, at Plymouth; William Baker, at Charlestown; and Thomas, of whom further.

The Baker arms are as follows:

*Arms*—Azure, on a fess, between three swans' heads erased or and ducally gorged gules, as many cinquefoils of the last.

*Crest*—An arm embowed, habited with green leaves, in the hand proper a swan's head erased or.

(I) Thomas Baker came from England to America in 1639, and settled in East Hampton, Long Island. He married, June 20, 1643, Alice Dayton, born in 1621, died February 8, 1708, daughter of Ralph Dayton, one of the founders of East Hampton. Issue: 1. Hannah, born June 26, 1650. 2. Thomas, born July 26, 1654. 3. Nathaniel, of whom further. 4. Abigail.

(II) Nathaniel Baker, son of Thomas and Alice (Dayton) Baker, was born in East Hampton, Long Island, December 22, 1655, and died February 27, 1739. He married Catherine Schellinger. Issue: 1. Jonathan, born February 12, 1679. 2. Joanna, born July 7, 1681. 3. Abigail, born March 15, 1682. 4. Henry, born April 16, 1686. 5. Daniel, of whom further. 6. Hannah, born January 26, 1694.

(III) Daniel Baker, son of Nathaniel and Catherine (Schellinger) Baker, was born in East Hampton, Long Island, August 21, 1692. He married Abigail Osborn. Issue: 1. Daniel, married (first) Mary Osborn, (second) Mary Conkling. 2. Abraham. 3. Nathaniel, removed to New Jersey. 4. Henry, of whom further. 5. Elizabeth, married Jeremiah Stratton. 6. Catharine. 7. Abigail.

(IV) Henry Baker, son of Daniel and Abigail (Osborn) Baker, was early of Westfield township, Union county, New Jersey, coming with his brother, Nathaniel, from East Hampton, Long Island. He married Phoebe Jedges, of Long Island. Issue: 1. Daniel, born June 3, 1753, served in the Revolution. 2. Jonathan I., of whom further. 3. William, married Jemima Woodruff. 4. Henry. 5. Jeremiah, born June 28, 1770; married Mary King. 6. Phoebe, married Ziba Ludlow.

(V) Jonathan I. Baker, son of Henry Baker, was born about 1755. He married Keziah Clark, daughter of Jesse Clark, and his daughter, Charity, married William Cory. (See Cory line).

(The Darby Line)

The name of Scotch Plains is derived from the nationality of its original founders. In 1684 a number of Scotch emigrants settled



## PIERSON AND ALLIED FAMILIES

there. The population increased, and about 1689 came the family of William Darby. The coat-of-arms of the family is as follows:

*Arms*—Per chevron battelly or and azure, three eagles displayed counterchanged.

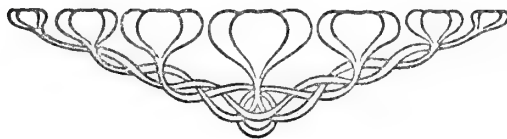
*Crest*—Out of a tower argent two wings, the dexter or, sinister azure.

(I) William Darby was of a group of English settlers from Elizabethtown and vicinity. William Darby married Elizabeth — and lived for a number of years at Elizabeth, New Jersey, prior to removing to Scotch Plains. In 1687 he bought forty-four acres of land at Elizabeth from Agatha White, widow, and in 1701 he sold this land to John Blanchard. He was not a resident of Elizabeth then, and presumably he was of Scotch Plains. Among his children was William.

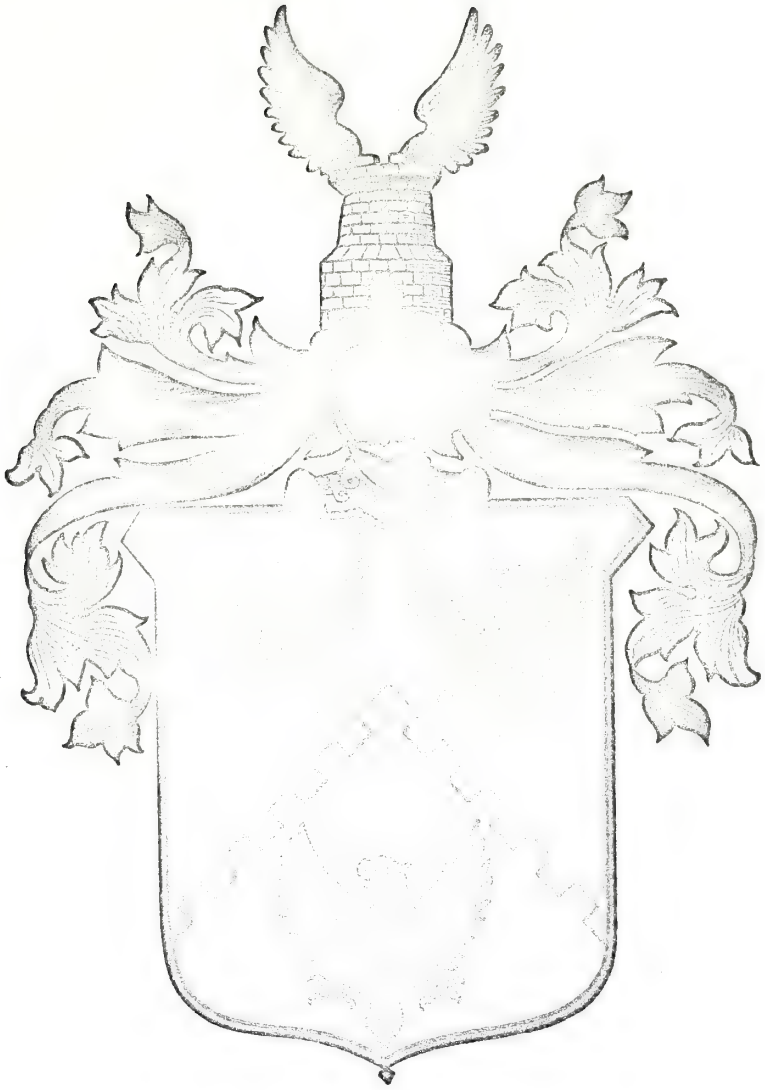
(II) Deacon William (2) Darby, son of William (1) and Elizabeth Darby, was born in 1693, and died at Scotch Plains, New Jersey, February 26, 1775. He was a member of the Baptist church of Scotch Plains in 1747, the date of its organization. He married Mary —, born in 1699, died April 13, 1761. Among their children was John, of whom further.

(III) John Darby, son of Deacon William (2) and Mary Darby, was born about 1725. He married (second), after 1777, Margaret Stanberry, widow of Recompence Stanberry, of Scotch Plains. She was born in 1729, died January 18, 1812, and is buried in Scotch Plains Cemetery. Issue of John Darby: 1. John, born about 1758; married Anna Stanberry. 2. Margaret, of whom further.

(IV) Margaret Darby, daughter of John Darby by his first wife, married Joseph Cory (see Cory line).







Darby





COLONEL BROOME







Sir William Johnson, Indian Superintendent for all British North America. Born in Ireland, in 1715, and came to America in 1738. Major-General in British Army and made a Baronet for his services at Lake George.



# AMERICANA

APRIL, 1923

## Sir William Johnson

HIS CHARACTER AND PUBLIC SERVICES

BY CHARLES A. INGRAHAM, CAMBRIDGE, NEW YORK



TO THOSE who, prominent in public affairs, are trusting to the future for the perpetuation of their fame, the manner in which posterity has neglected the memory of Sir William Johnson is not encouraging. Though in his day the most distinguished and influential man in the Colony of New York and with a renown extending throughout America, and though his public services were during a period of many years of the greatest importance, vitally and permanently benefiting the country, he and his work do not occupy the prominence and space in American history which is their due.

There are, however, valid reasons for such seeming neglect, first among which is the fact that Sir William was a servant of the English Crown in the government of the Colony of New York. In common with other able men who served under British rule in the American Colonies, his appeal to historians has been less than those patriots, who, in the closing years of his life, were beginning the great struggle for independence. Another historical fact which militates against Johnson's popularity in American annals is that his son, Sir John Johnson, was a malignant tory in the Revolution, who led the Iroquois Confederacy, with the exception of the Oneidas and Tuscaroras, against the Colonists in many a fearful massacre. Though it is claimed by some historical students that Sir William, had he lived, would have been with the people in the war, the fact is that his family, who were better acquainted with his ideas and sentiments, fought for the British. Johnson, however, was a truly great man, a unique character, and in his day popular; had he and his kin,



## SIR WILLIAM JOHNSON

with their charges the Iroquois, stood with the Colonists in the Revolution, his name would be a shining light in American history.

Unlike most of the distinguished men of our history, concerning whose characters the people have a clear conception, the individuality of Sir William Johnson was very diversified, and is to be understood only after considerable study and meditation. For instance, the personal and intellectual characteristics of General Grant are easily comprehended;—he was a quiet, plain, persevering man, with a genius for conducting military operations on a large scale, but lacking in ability for handling practical affairs; but Sir William was a many-sided person, of brilliant parts, devoting himself with untiring energy to a variety of enterprises, and always successfully. His career in the Mohawk Valley, beginning in the year 1738 at the age of twenty-three years, exemplified the life of a swashbuckler, agriculturist, trader, major-general, superintendent of the Six Indian Nations and other northern tribes. He fostered religion and education in his primitive frontier territory, erected churches, encouraged missionaries and school teachers to labor among the settlers and Indians; founded the village of Johnstown, and built its court house and other buildings, erected two fine, baronial mansions, both of which are still standing, and died in the harness on the 11th of July, 1774, from the over-exertion of addressing for the space of two hours a delegation of six hundred Iroquois Indians. An idea of his multiplied activities may be derived from his manuscript letters and other documents, (many of which have been lost), which may be seen in the New York State Library; they number 6,550 and are contained in twenty-six cumbrous volumes.

William Johnson was born in County Meath, Ireland, in the year 1715. His father, Christopher Johnson, was a scion of a long and honorable line, while his mother, Anne Warren, was a sister of Sir Peter Warren, in later years distinguished as an admiral in the British navy. Having been made commandant of a British war-ship, Captain Peter Warren later established his home in New York City, where he erected a fine mansion at No. 1, Broadway, which in its day was a beautiful and magnificent dwelling. In after years it was the residence of Nathaniel Prime, and still later was employed as the Washington Hotel. In the Revolution, while the city was in the possession of the British, it was the headquarters of Sir William Howe and other commanders; here Major André dwelt in the family of



## SIR WILLIAM JOHNSON

Sir Henry Clinton when he made his fatal journey to West Point to arrange with the traitor Arnold for the surrender of that fortress. Captain Warren married a daughter of Stephen De Lancey, a wealthy merchant of New York, whose son, James De Lancey, became very distinguished in the judicial and political annals of the colony.

These remarks are introduced to elucidate the beginning of the career of Sir William Johnson in America, and to show the advantages which he gained from the assistance of influential relatives. Having been employed by his uncle, Captain Warren, to serve as agent for the tract of fourteen thousand acres of land which he had purchased in the Mohawk Valley, young Johnson reached New York in December, 1737, and spent the winter with his aunt, the wife of Captain Warren. Here he met and formed a warm friendship with her brother, James De Lancey, who with other prominent persons with whom he became acquainted at this time, served to advance his interests in later years.

He took up his residence on his uncle's tract in the summer of 1738, making his home about one-half mile east of Amsterdam, and on the south side of the Mohawk river. Thus, Sir William Johnson, a mere boy in years and experience, begins in rough, primitive and dangerous obscurity his notable career. It was a plunge from the cultured social plane in which he had passed the winter, to the coarse life in log houses of the frontier, where his neighbors, far apart, were German settlers and Mohawk Indians. But, as has been remarked, there was a rough element in the nature of the young land agent, and he adapted himself to his surroundings with seeming relish. Though he had enjoyed considerable education and had studied with a view to the practice of law, he was content to remain during upwards of the forty remaining years of his life in the valley of his adoption, leaving it rarely and for brief periods, always deeply immersed in the affairs of his estate and of the Indians. He was popular with the whites and Indians from the day of his arrival. He associated with the utmost freedom and spirit of friendship with all, entered with zest into their social entertainments and athletic meets, but in the meantime being diligent in business and by prudent and energetic methods acquiring wealth. His housekeeper, whom he employed soon after his coming to the valley, was an immigrant Dutch girl named Catharine Weisenburg, who, after having borne



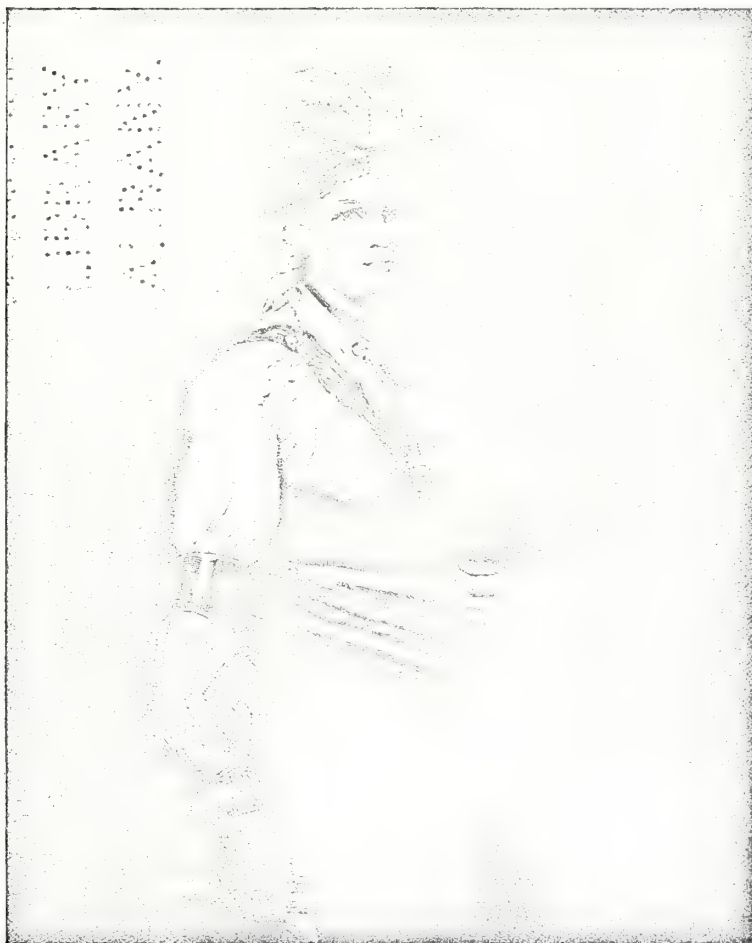


## SIR WILLIAM JOHNSON

him three children, one of whom was the notorious Sir John Johnson, of Tory fame, became his wife. And here begins a wretched story, continued to his death, of the blot on Sir William's escutcheon,—his unsavory relations with women. The most conspicuous of his many paramours was Molly Brant, a sister of the Mohawk sachem, Joseph Brant, who was living with him at the time of his death and by whom he had eight half-breed children. She was evidently a comely woman, and intelligent for one of her race and condition, and believed herself the wife of Sir William, after the fashion of her tribe, which redeems her memory; but no gloss of romance or appeal to the loose social morals of that day will ever justify his domestic relations. His biographers state that his coming to America was a result of a love entanglement, and a pathetic word-picture has been drawn depicting the grief of the betrothed Irish girl on the eve of his departure for America; but in the light of the young man's subsequent career, smirched with misconduct, one cannot but feel that she was to be congratulated.

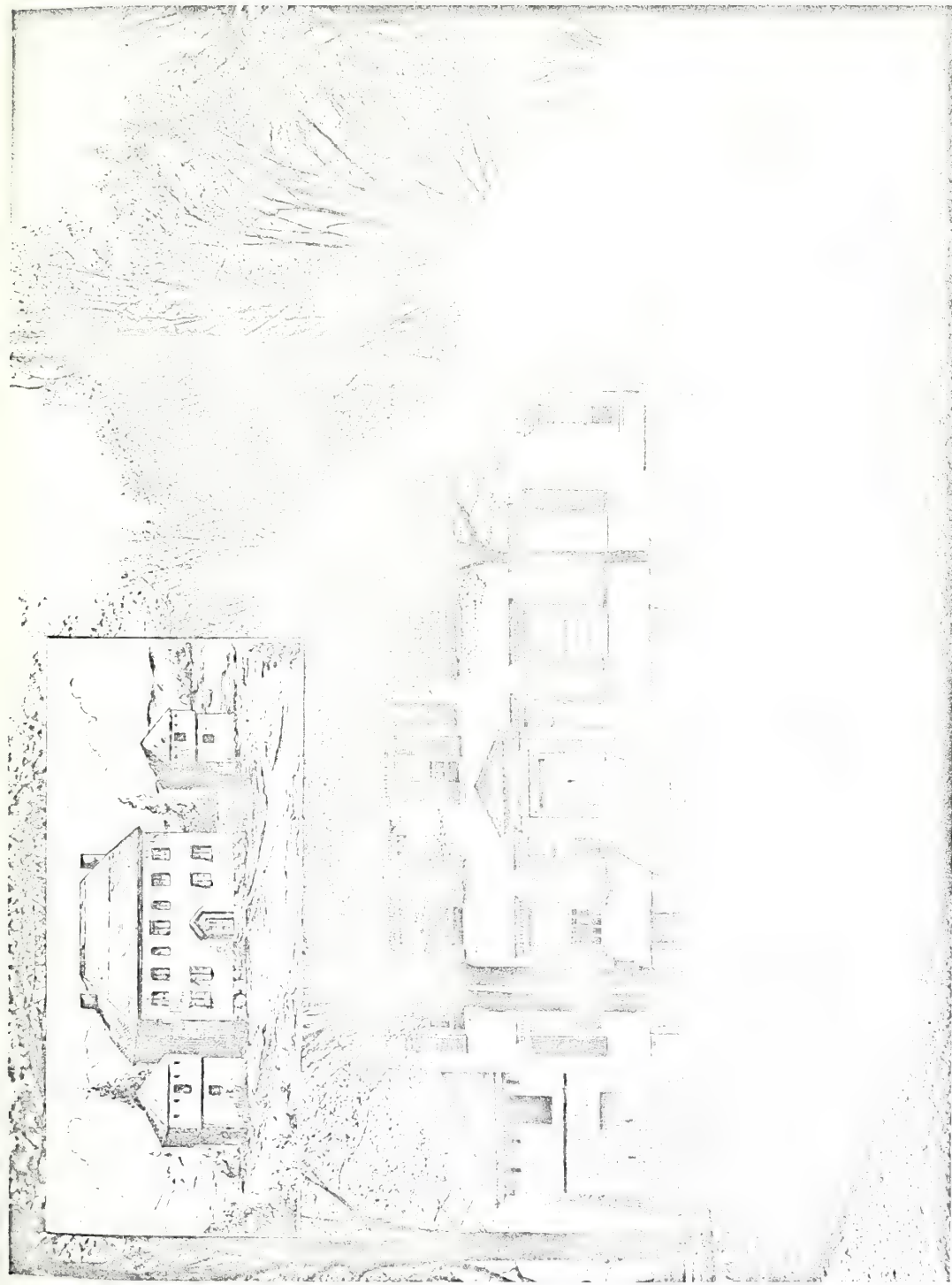
Sir William remained about five years at the place of his original settlement, superintending the affairs of his uncle's estate and carrying on a profitable trade with the settlers and Indians, the leading village of the Mohawks being but a few miles away. A considerable settlement had grown up around his trading establishment, when, having thriven in business and purchased lands on the north side of the river and a few miles west, he moved to this location. Here he had erected in 1742 a fine stone mansion, and employed the large creek which flows just east of it for the running of a flouring mill. Johnson's rise from now on was rapid and substantial; besides his large trading and milling interests, he embarked boldly in the fur and wheat business, steadily accumulating money and coming more and more into public notice. In 1745, at the age of only about thirty, his furs were selling in London and his flour in the West Indies, while public recognition of his honor and ability was shown by his appointment as justice of the peace for Albany county. All this success had come to him through business acumen, energetic application, strict integrity in all his dealings and unbounded popularity. Large of frame and muscular, genial and approachable by all, acquainted with the Indian dialects so that he was able to converse with them in their own language, affiliated with them in a so-called marriage,—all this insured the admiration and good-will of the





JOSEPH BRANT  
(Thayendanegea), War Chief of the Iroquois, brother of Molly Brant





Sir William Johnson Hall, built by Sir William Johnson, erected 1761-62, only Baronial Mansion in United States. Later the only Court House and only brick building between Albany and the Pacific Coast. Now the property of the State of New York. Insert, Original Tryon County Court House and County Clerk's Office



## SIR WILLIAM JOHNSON

dwellers in the Mohawk valley. His residence here and his activities, however, exposed him to danger, for the French, jealous of the control which he had acquired of the Six Nations and indignant concerning the profitable trade with them which he was largely diverting to himself, threatened him with assassination, a peril which, throughout a large part of his career, was ever to be reckoned with.

What is known as the Old French War was now on. Saratoga (now Schuylerville) had been destroyed in the previous fall, and Johnson as a precautionary measure had dispatched a company of Mohawks to Crown Point to learn of the intentions of the French; they reported that a raid was to be expected against Schenectady, which news was immediately sent to the governor, Sir George Clinton. He was also informed that Sir William, himself, with his property, including eleven thousand bushels of wheat, was in danger, and that a guard was needed for protection. The governor in response sent a detachment of thirty men to guard the home and property of Sir William, with whom he became, through official correspondence and the recommendation of Chief Justice James De Lancey, on terms of friendship and intimacy. At this time, in 1746, Governor Clinton was very desirous of enlisting the Six Nations in the cause of the English against the French, but was having no success in his proposition for a council, the French having encouraged the Indians to remain neutral in the strife. The Governor, knowing the power over the savages which Johnson exercised, now appointed him manager of the Indian department in the hope that he would be able to induce the Six Nations to take up arms against the French. There was thus given into the control of Sir William the work which had been carried on by the Board of Indian Commissioners, composed largely of Albany traders, and who had employed their offices for their personal financial benefit.

Johnson now redoubled his efforts to ingratiate himself into the good favor of the Indians with a view of inducing them to join arms with the English in the war; arraying himself in their primitive garb, he went in and out among them, addressing them in their own language, conforming to their customs, arranging athletic events for their entertainment and encouraging them to take part in war dances for the purpose of stimulating their fighting propensities. This policy had its desired effect, for the savages, pleased to have so prominent a man come familiarly among them with tokens of gen-



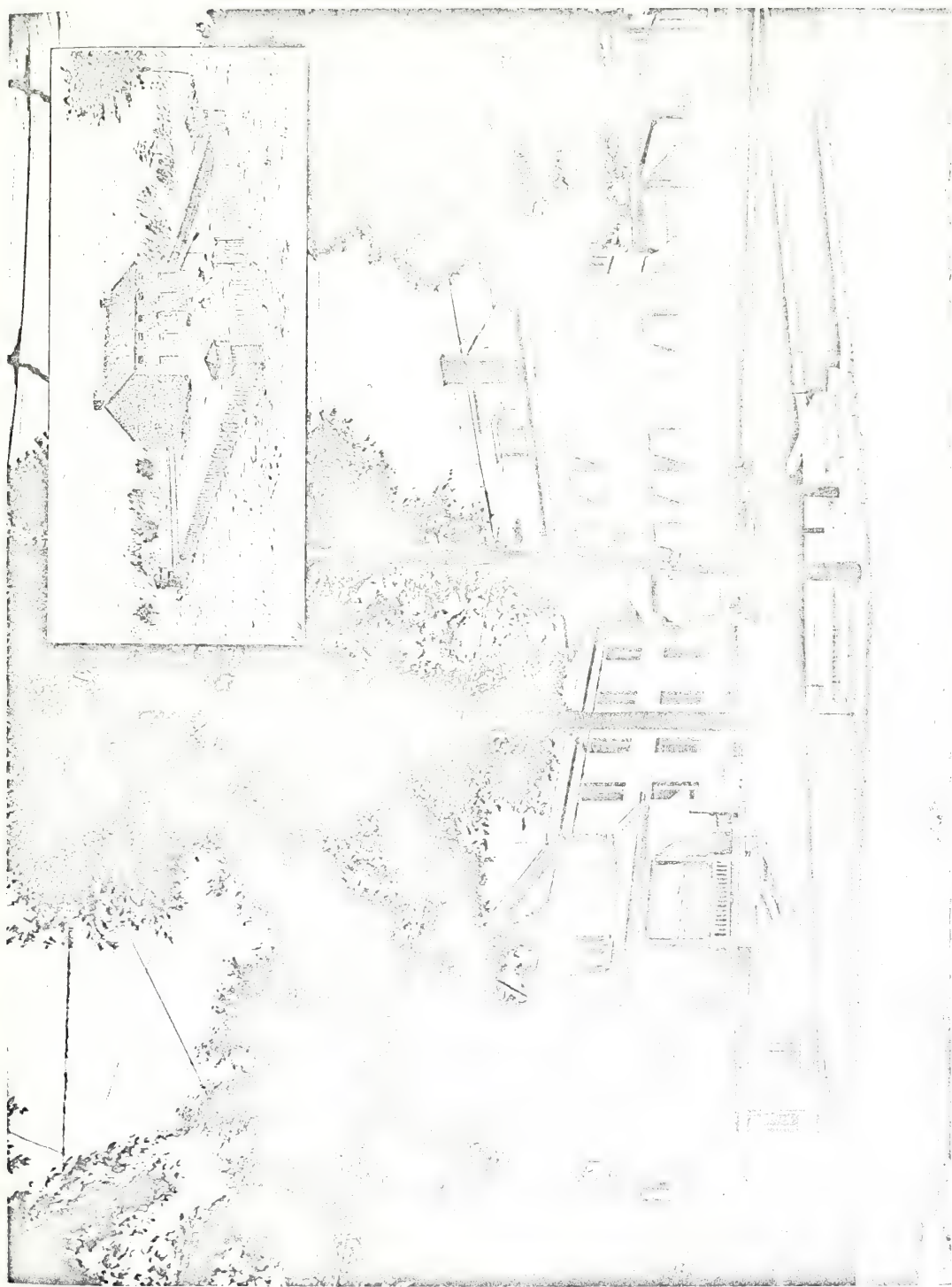


## SIR WILLIAM JOHNSON

crous friendship, listened favorably to his proposition, while the Mohawks adopted him into their tribe, elevating him to be their chief and leader. His Indian name thus derived was, War-rah-i-ya-gey, or "he who has charge of affairs." Johnson's success in this diplomatic attempt was the more remarkable in that the Six Nations at this time were themselves divided into two factions, each party being composed of three tribes. Though Johnson had so far succeeded as to prevail upon them to send delegations to the council to be held in Albany by Governor Clinton with the view of entering into an alliance with the colonial government, such was the ill-feeling between the two Indian parties that they marched towards Albany, one following the north and the other the south side of the Mohawk river. The two divisions, on August 8th, 1746, entered the city with Sir William, arrayed in all the picturesque panoply of a Mohawk sachem, riding at the head of his tribe. In the councils which followed, the Six Nations covenanted to assist the English, and having solemnly enacted the war dance returned to their several territories and took up the hatchet. In this historic event was exhibited Johnson's extraordinary ability in handling morose, jealous and divided Indian tribes, a capacity amounting to genius and which has never perhaps been equaled. In the Old French War, however, the Colony of New York took no very active part, and though Johnson had been commissioned colonel, and later advanced to the command of the colonial troops on the frontier, his activities consisted chiefly in equipping and sending out against the French small parties of militia and Indians, a wild and bloody business, concerning which the least said the better for the reputation of the Colony. These atrocities, which were practiced by both the French and English, came to an end in 1748 with the treaty of Aix la Chapelle.

Though an era of peace had dawned on the distracted country, the activity of Colonel Johnson was unremitting, an arduous manner of life, however, which he enjoyed, and deprived of which he was miserable. He had his immense private interests to direct; the complex, ever-shifting affairs of the Iroquois to superintend,—to attend their councils, appease their quarrels and mitigate their ferocity; and, above all, to prevent the never-ending attempts of the French to seduce the Indians from their alliance with the English. It was, indeed, an arduous task, and required all of his diplomacy and the exercise of all the peculiar gifts of conciliation which he possessed, to





Fulton County Jail (Cannon and Cannon Balls in front), built 1772 by Sir William Johnson; during the Revolution known as Ft. Johnston (insert)



## SIR WILLIAM JOHNSON

maintain the fealty of the Six Nations. Besides all this, he was under contract to furnish supplies to the garrison at Oswego, and had the direction of other important public interests which had been intrusted to him. In the year 1750 he received the appointment by the Crown to the distinguished place of a member in the Colonial Council of New York. But it will be in the capacity of Superintendent of Indian Affairs that Sir William will be longest and most favorably remembered. He trusted these children of the forest and they reposed faith in his word, which he never violated. He never took advantage of their ignorance and credulity, and refused to deal with them when they were intoxicated. He recognized the evil influence among them of strong drink, and strove to keep it from them. It is impressive to realize the confidence he had in their fidelity to their word when once given; this is evidenced by his ever striving to have them assemble in conclave and solemnly commit themselves through their traditional and strange ceremonials to a certain course or policy. All this is creditable to the Six Nations, who were the most politically advanced of the Indians of North America, who occupied the most strategic territory, and who extended their conquests to the most distant fields.

Following the close in 1748 of the Old French War to 1755, when the strife in America between England and France was renewed, an era of comparative peace prevailed in the Colonies, though hostilities were never in the interval wholly remitted; the embers of war were smoldering, ready to burst into flame when the incipient hurricane of dissension should become sufficiently strong. The activities of the French in the Ohio Valley left no doubt in the mind of the British government that they intended to hold that fertile territory and the vast lands in the west, and in the northwest to the lakes. Commissioners from seven northern colonies were therefore delegated to meet representatives of the Six Nations at Albany, in order to devise means of driving back the enemy. The convention convened on June 19th, 1754, and was notable as being the germ of the Constitution and Government of the United States, in that a scheme for the union of the Colonies was proposed here by Benjamin Franklin and unanimously adopted, though the plan was denied by the British government, and was rejected by the Assemblies of the Colonies themselves.

The influence of Johnson in securing the attendance of delegates





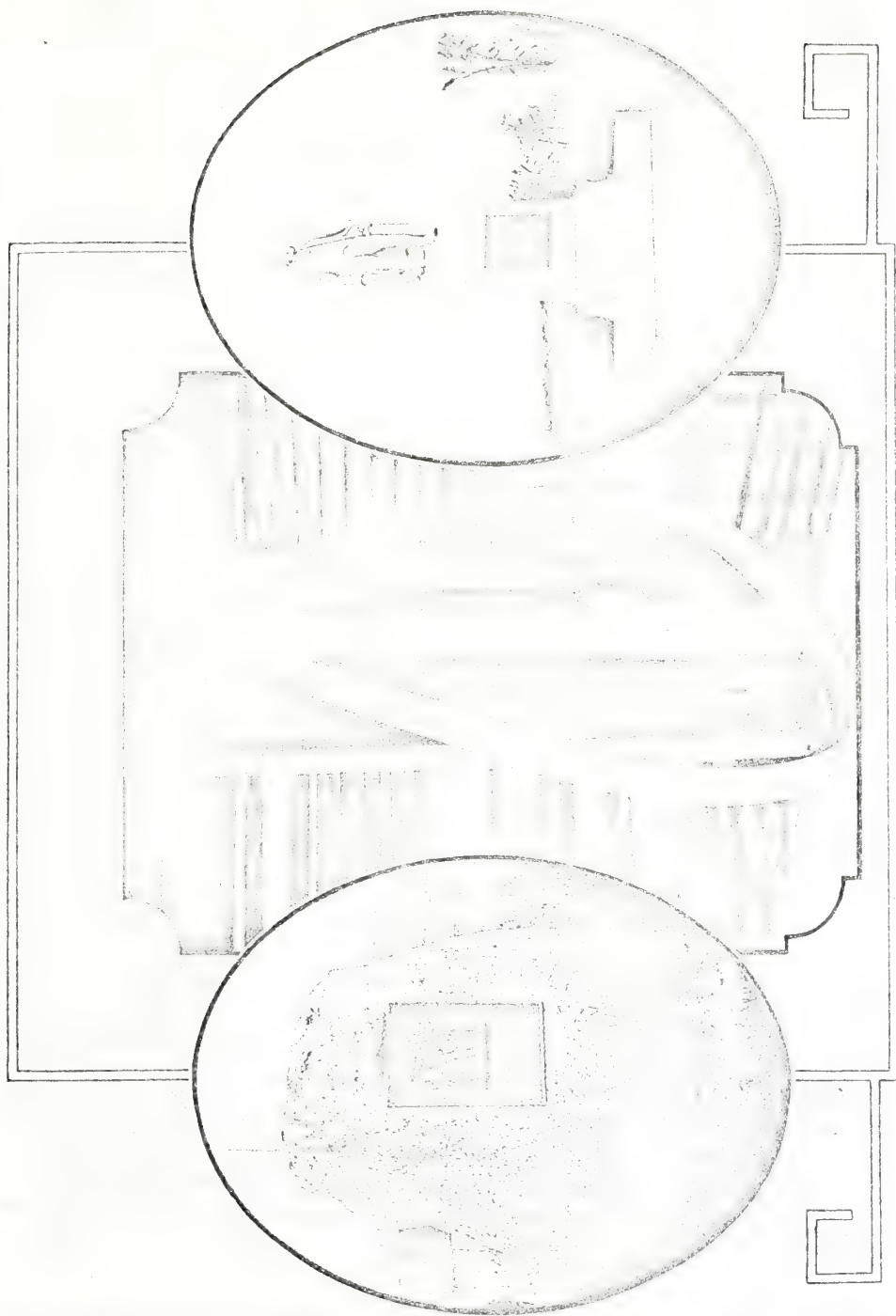
## SIR WILLIAM JOHNSON

from the Six Nations to this Congress was indispensable, and had it not been for his power of control over the Indians they might have fallen in with the flattering overtures of the French. Colonel Johnson, however, was no longer the beloved superintendent of these proud and warlike tribes, he having resigned about four years previous on account of the Colonial Assembly refusing to liquidate his just claims for services and private moneys advanced for the public defense. The affairs of the Indians in the meantime had been managed in a manner very unsatisfactory to the Six Nations and they were now in an ugly mood, requiring all the persuasive talent of Colonel Johnson to induce them to renew their fealty to the English. It was at this critical juncture in the convention that old King Hendrik, chief of the Mohawk tribe and devoted friend of Colonel Johnson, delivered what is said to have been the greatest and most eloquent address ever uttered by an American Indian. Under his burden of more than eighty years he stood up and with his majestic presence flung burning expressions of reproach into the brilliant audience before him, accusing them of the neglect which the Indians had suffered during the past few years. It was, indeed, a dramatic event, with this venerable sachem, with the chiefs of the other Iroquois tribes sitting around him and all arrayed in picturesque apparel, and with the governor and commissioners respectfully listening to this unlettered but truly great orator. But Colonel Johnson held the heartstrings of this old Indian worthy, and through him the Six Nations were regained for the English. However, Johnson was soon to be restored to his previous position of Superintendent of Indian Affairs, for in April of the following year he was reappointed to this place by General Braddock, commander-in-chief of the British forces in the colonies, who also commissioned him major-general to command the movement against Crown Point.

Throughout what is known as the "last French War," General Johnson played a distinguished part, discovering a talent for campaigning and military strategy. His first battle was at Lake George, on September 8, 1755, when he defeated the French and Indians under Baron Dieskau. In this battle, King Hendrik, chief of the Mohawks, was killed, he having been ordered by Johnson against his better counsel to advance beyond the lines, where he fell into an ambush. An episode of the war which is not prominently noticed by historians reflects credit upon General Johnson and proves his enter-







At left, Monument erected by Johnstown Chapter, D. A. R., marking site of Battle of Johnstown, fought Aug. 27, 1781, after peace was declared; in center, old iron triangle hung in bellry of Tryon County Court House of Johnstown in 1772;



prise and courage. While engaged in a council with the Indians at his home on the Mohawk, he learned of the movement of Montcalm toward Fort Edward, and dismissing the meeting and collecting a force of militia and Indians, marched immediately for the support of General Webb, commanding at that place. Finding that Colonel Monroe was besieged by Montcalm in Fort William Henry on Lake George, and frantically calling for aid, General Johnson implored the privilege of leading a body of troops for his relief, a march of but fourteen miles. After gaining a reluctant consent and having proceeded a short distance, he was called back and Monroe was thus left with no alternative but surrender, which involved a fearful massacre of many of his men by the savages in the army of the French. This occurred on August 9, 1757.

General Johnson served with Abererombie in his unfortunate campaign against Fort Ticonderoga in 1758, and was second in command under General Prideaux in the following year, when, during the siege of Fort Niagara, Prideaux having been killed, Johnson assumed command and brilliantly defeated the French army marching to the relief of the garrison and received the surrender of the stronghold. After serving conspicuously throughout the war, he had a part under General Amherst, in compelling the capitulation of Montreal and Canada on the 8th of September, 1760.

From now on, the career of Sir William was one of comparative peace, though the burden of the superintendency of the Indian Affairs hung heavily upon him, while the development of the village of Johnstown and the management of his great estate occupied much of his time. He was now a very wealthy man, having accumulated much from his mercantile pursuits and having derived vast gifts of lands from the Indians and the British government. He received as a reward for his victory over Dieskau at Lake George the sum of five thousand pounds, and the title of baronet.

In the Revolution, with the exception of the Oneidas and Tuscaroras, the Iroquois espoused the cause of Great Britain, pillaging the settlers along the frontier and massacring the defenseless people. The hostility of the Indians was due to the influence of Sir John Johnson, who, with but little of his father's tact and ability, had been invested with his office of Superintendent of Indian Affairs. In the summer of 1779, so great had become the atrocities of the savages, that the government directed General John Sullivan to annihilate



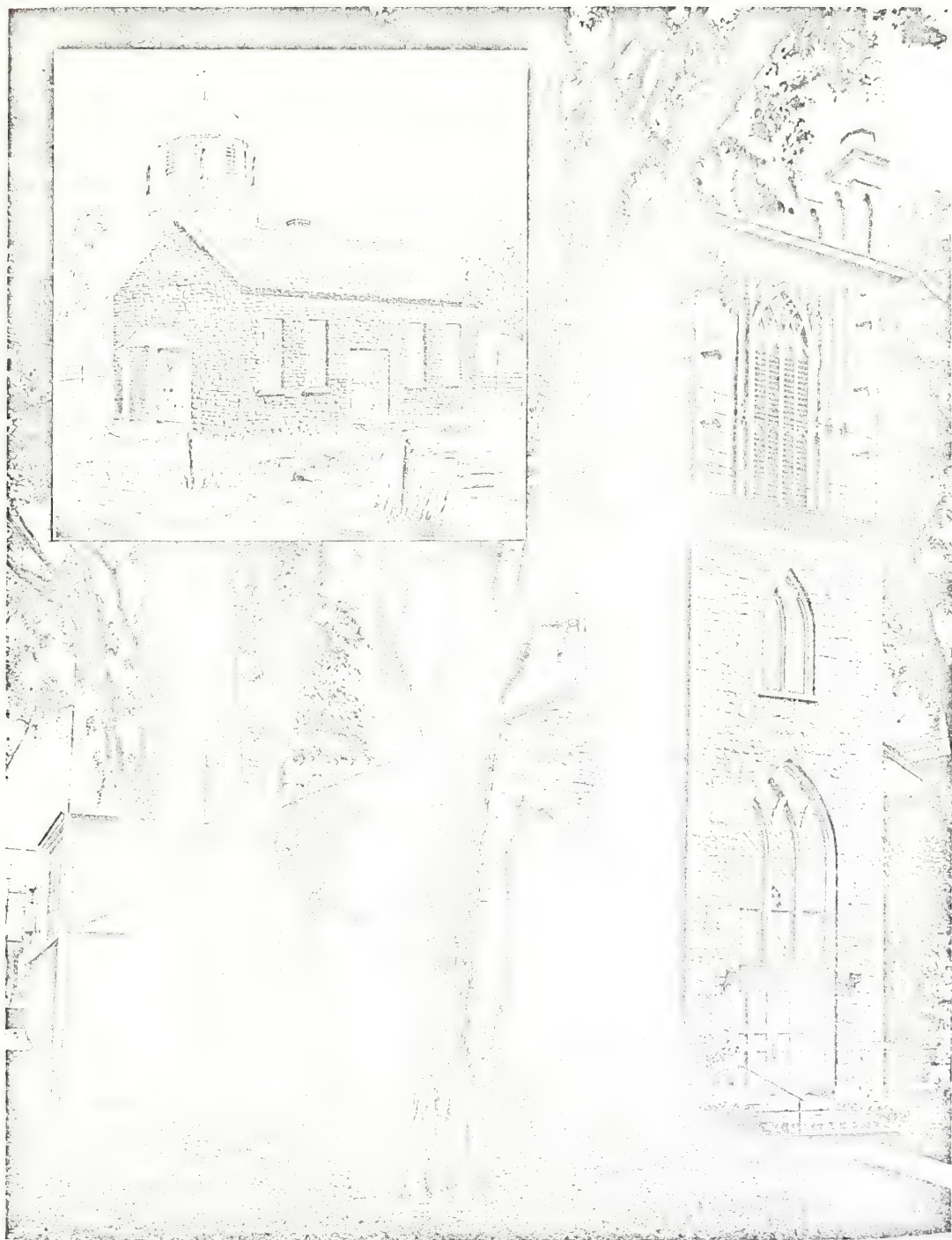
## SIR WILLIAM JOHNSON

all the Iroquois tribes who had taken up arms against the colonists. This movement, famous in history as "Sullivan's Expedition," was composed of three divisions operating primarily in separate territories, and their merciless retaliation from the Mohawk to Lake Erie proved the death-blow of the proud Iroquois Confederacy. After the war they feared to return to their ancient hunting grounds, and with broken spirits fled into the forests of the west or the woods of Canada. Thither went Sir John Johnson, with the brand of traitor upon his name and the blood of innocent men, women and children upon his reputation, hated and despised by a nation of free people, and his father's great landed estate was confiscated.

But let us in closing turn from this dark and bloody picture to Sir William, who it is hard to believe would have ever involved the Indians in such an unhappy and ruinous situation, for he was a kindly soul, and though living always midst strife was of a conciliatory disposition. Today, out of gratitude for his important public services, the two mansions which he erected still have hospitable doors; for these buildings have been purchased and set apart forever as memorials of Sir William Johnson. Within their walls, unchanged but little from the days of his prosperity and fame, may be seen the collected souvenirs of the aboriginal and early colonial days, and we may almost fancy the presence of the genial and forceful proprietor, who, as described by Mrs. Julia Grant in her "Memoirs of an American Lady," was "five feet eleven and a half inches tall, neck massive, broad chest and large limbs, great physical strength, the head large and shapely, countenance open and beaming with good nature, eyes grayish black, hair brown with tinge of auburn. Conversation: recollections of dealings with Indians, or classic authors or literature of the day. Lives like an English gentleman. Indian chiefs at table among many castes. Indians speak English and dress like them. Fifty or sixty servants, besides negroes. His habits most methodical."

This is an excellent pen-picture by one who knew him and painted his portrait. There was a rough element in his character, and he loved the stirring, primitive life and was wretched when not engaged in it. He possessed, however, enough education and culture to maintain himself much above his contemporaries in the Mohawk Valley and to make himself available for the British government in the management of the Indians. While he was honest and upright in





St. John's Episcopal Church on site of original church built by Sir William Johnson in 1770.  
destroyed by fire in 1836, as shown in the insert





## SIR WILLIAM JOHNSON

all his business transactions and ever true to his word with the Indians, he was utterly indifferent to certain domestic moralities herein referred to, and lived throughout his career an unblushing voluptuary. He loved and labored for riches, was fond of great mansions and aristocratic display. He was not cherished in the best sense of the word; he lacked that indefinable something called magnetism; his character did not appeal to the hearts of the people. Yet he was a great man, a man of destiny, peculiarly adapted for the important work he so ably performed, and his name will ever be epochal in the colonial history of America.

EDITOR'S NOTE—The foregoing admirable narrative by Dr. Ingraham is most timely, following so closely after the Memorial Celebration at Johnstown, New York, September 8-9, 1922, in commemoration of the one hundred and fiftieth anniversary of the "setting up" of Tryon county. For the accompanying excellent illustrations we are under obligations to the courtesy of the Committee in Charge of the Celebration, as represented by Mr. Edward Wells, chairman of the general committee, and Mr. J. Clarence Hennelly, chairman of the publicity committee.

In the course of the celebration, historical scenes were enacted in costume, beginning with the scenes at Fort Johnstown; commemorative services at the Cross in the Colonial Cemetery and at the grave of Sir William Johnson; and addresses were delivered by Governor Nathan L. Miller; Hon. Edmund F. Machold, Speaker of the New York State Assembly; Hon. James Sullivan, State Historian; and Mrs. Corinne Roosevelt Morrison, sister of the late Theodore Roosevelt, and mother of State Senator Theodore Douglas Robinson.





# William Bingham, Founder of City of Binghamton

BY WILLIAM F. SEWARD, LIBRARIAN OF BINGHAMTON  
(NEW YORK) PUBLIC LIBRARY.



THE greater part of the City of Binghamton stands on land once owned by William Bingham. On June 27, 1786, the State granted a patent for a tract of land comprising 30,600 acres, to Robert Lettis Hooper, James Wilson and William Bingham. Lying on both sides of the Susquehanna river, this tract included parts at least of the present towns of Union, Vestal, Binghamton, Conklin and Kirkwood.

In less than four years the proprietors decided to partition these lands among themselves. A certain deed of indenture executed on February 11, 1790, between Robert Lettis Hooper, of the State of New Jersey, and Elizabeth his wife, and James Wilson, granted and conveyed to William Bingham in fee simple a tract comprising 13,747 acres. Wilson retained for himself 7,100 acres, while to Hooper, or perhaps jointly to him and Wilson, fell the remaining 9,773 acres.


The Bingham tract, occupying the eastern end of the entire purchase, included, as already stated, nearly all the land whereon the city now stands. Some time or at different times within ten years after the division referred to, Mr. Bingham must have added to his land holdings in this region some 1,293 acres, for in the midsummer of 1800 they amounted to 15,040 acres "and three roods, or thereabouts."

South of the Bingham tract was one of the Sidney tracts, patented to Robert Morris, December 13, 1787, and which included land now within the confines of portions of the Fifth and Sixth wards. The north part of the city, east of the Chenango river, covers a small

---

EDITOR'S NOTE.—This narrative is a chapter from a work now in press, "Binghamton and Broome County: A History," Lewis Historical Publishing Co., New York and Chicago. Binghamton is the county seat of Broome County, New York. It takes its name from Colonel John Broome, who was Lieutenant-Governor of the State of New York at the time of the institution of Broome County, March 28, 1806. His portrait, which appears as the frontispiece of this number of "Americana," is also reproduced from Mr. Seward's History.





WILLIAM BINGHAM



## WILLIAM BINGHAM, FOUNDER OF CITY OF BINGHAMTON

portion of the commonly called Clinton and Melcher tract, which was patented to James Clinton and Isaac Melcher, March 19, 1780.

Then there was the so-called Boston Purchase, otherwise known as the Boston Ten Towns. As every student of our early history knows, many disputes arose over land grants, patents, titles, and ownership, and the charters by the Crown led to conflicting claims between Massachusetts and New York as to boundary lines. Finally, by way of compromising those differences, it was determined by the commissioners, who met at Hartford, Conn., December 16, 1786, that New York State should retain sovereignty and jurisdiction over its own territory, while to Massachusetts "was ceded the right of pre-emption of the soil (that is, the right of first purchase from the Indians) of substantially all the territory west of a line drawn due north from the 82nd milestone on the Pennsylvania north line, and extending north through Seneca lake to Sodus bay, in Lake Ontario. New York also ceded to Massachusetts the pre-emption right to 230,400 acres of land lying between Owego creek and the Chenango river."

It was this vast tract last named that eleven residents of Berkshire county, Massachusetts, bought in 1787 at a cost of twelve and one-half cents per acre, and subject to whatever title might be furnished by the Indians. To this association the original grantees afterward admitted forty-nine other members, some of them influential Boston men, so that it numbe. . . sixty in all.

Judge Avery, in some of his well-considered sketches of local annals, asserts that the first meeting for a treaty with the Indians was held on the west bank of the Chenango river, about three miles above the present city, but nothing definite seems to have been accomplished on that occasion. At a subsequent meeting, held at Ochenang (the Indian village situated just east of the confluence of the Chenango with the Susquehanna and on land that became a part of the city tract) the Indians were induced to sign away their domain, after which, toward nightfall, they sampled so freely the New England rum placed at their disposal that the usual orgies ensued, or, in modern phase, "a good time was had by all," at least by the redskins. They had been shrewd enough, however, to reserve the right to hunt and fish on the ceded tract for a term of seven years, also a half-mile square of land for their own use at the mouth of Castle creek. It is related on good authority that they occupied the





## WILLIAM BINGHAM, FOUNDER OF CITY OF BINGHAMTON

tract during the full term of their reserved privileges, and that no small number of those Indians remained in this region for many years afterward.

Only a small part of the city lies within the Boston Purchase, whose southern boundary, according to our local historian, the late William S. Lawyer, extended due east and west between the mouth of the Owego creek and a point about a mile above the mouth of the Chenango. The line in fact began about 500 feet north of the north line of Prospect street, and thence ran across the northeast corner of Spring Forest cemetery, onward through land now covered by Johnson City, then after crossing and recrossing the Susquehanna river, it ended at the mouth of Owego creek.

A certain area within the Bingham tract was set off for a town site and called "Bingham's Patent." A map of it, as resurveyed in 1811 by Michael R. Tharp, is here republished.\* On this part of Mr. Bingham's holdings Joshua Whitney, acting under full instructions as a legally accredited agent, began in August, 1800, to lay out a section of Court and South Water streets. By reason of favors he had received from his friend and benefactor, the great landowner, he was the more eager to carry out the vision and desire of William Bingham, namely, to found a prosperous community in which trade, industries and the arts would flourish, though probably neither the principal nor his agent ever dreamed that it would grow into the teeming metropolis of the Southern Tier.

For the first time is here reproduced in *fac-simile* a form of agreement given on July 4th, 1800, by William Bingham to Joshua Whitney to act as his land agent in the proposed new settlement—soon to be known as Chenango Point, but a few years later to be called Binghamton, in honor of William Bingham—and to dispose of or lease the outlying properties that belonged to his employer. Whitney's compensation for his services was a commission of four per cent. on sales of lots and lands belonging to William Bingham, or, less than four years afterward, to his estate.

In the same document we find mentioned a deed in fee simple from Bingham to Whitney of land for a Town Square, "marked in the Plat of the said Town No. 45, and containing five acres, two roods and thirty-nine perches." This is the plot now known as Court House Square.

---

\*This map and the *fac-simile* mentioned farther down on this page, appear in Mr. Seward's History, and are not reproduced here.







## WILLIAM BINGHAM, FOUNDER OF CITY OF BINGHAMTON

On the same day, July 4, 1800—as another document shows—in consideration of the sum of \$1,075—or at the reduced rate of five dollars an acre—William Bingham and his wife deeded 215 acres of farm land, within the Bingham patent, to Joshua Whitney, the advantageous location of which for conversion into town lots is clearly indicated in the accompanying *fac-simile* agreement. In two cash payments, the first one amounting to three hundred-odd dollars, “Josh” Whitney, as he was then familiarly called, became the owner of what was to prove some valuable real estate.

Judging by what the Boston Purchase cost per acre, it appears likely that Bingham and his associates acquired their tract at an extremely low figure—probably under twenty cents an acre, though exact information on that point is not accessible—at least to the present writer. In the autumn of 1800 Joshua Whitney sold lots on the Bingham patent at prices apparently ranging from ten to fifteen dollars an acre, according to location.

By 1815, the most desirable lots in the village were selling at the rate of twenty dollars or more an acre. Records of a still later time, in the office of the City Engineer, show that 37 lots north of the Susquehanna sold for \$59,285.99, and 21 lots south of the river sold for \$30,067.10.

With the passing years and the steady growth of Binghamton, all lots within the city limits have increased enormously in price, and the estimated value of land and improvements on the Bingham patent to-day is \$200,000,000.

William Bingham was a native of Philadelphia, where his family had lived for several generations. His grandfather, James Bingham, for many years a blacksmith, died in 1714, leaving considerable landed property, and was buried at Christ Church, on December 22 of that year. Little, if anything, appears to be known regarding the antecedents of the progenitor of this family, James Bingham the blacksmith. A careful search through the massive tomes of the Pennsylvania Historical Society at Philadelphia has revealed nothing to the point, so that it is extremely doubtful whether any one can trace this branch of the Binghams any farther back. It is quite safe however, to infer that they were from English stock.

James, a son of the blacksmith, added to the possessions of the family by marrying a daughter of William Budd, of Burlington,



## WILLIAM BINGHAM, FOUNDER OF CITY OF BINGHAMTON

N. J. William, another son, added still more by marrying, in 1745, Mary, daughter of Mayor John Stamper. A certain Mr. Black, who evidently was a warm admirer of Molly Stamper, as she was called before her marriage, wrote in amusingly extravagant praise of her charms, when as Mrs. Bingham she figured on the early lists of the Philadelphia Dancing Assembly. "I cannot say that she was a Regular Beauty," he drolly explains, "but she was such that few could find any fault with what Dame Nature had done for her. . . . When I view'd her I thought all the statues I ever beheld were so much inferior to her in beauty that she was more capable of converting a man into a statue, than of being imitated by the greatest master of that art, and I surely had as much delight in surveying her as the organs of sight are capable of conveying to the soul."

Her son—our William Bingham—was born in Philadelphia, April 8, 1752. He was graduated at the College of Philadelphia in 1768; and three years later was appointed consul under the British Government to Martinique. He remained at St. Pierre during most of the American Revolution, also acting there as agent for the Continental Congress. Living in that place then was a young girl who was afterward to be celebrated as Josephine, the first wife of Napoleon Bonaparte.

There are long-settled Irish Bingham in Philadelphia—one of them, Henry H. Bingham, having been a prominent public man there some years ago; but William Bingham did not belong to the Irish branch. The fact that he represented Great Britain in the West Indies has without question lent color to the false assumption of some of his biographers that he was an Englishman by birth.

Soon after his return from the tropics, William Bingham married the beautiful Anne Willing, then in her seventeenth year, on October 26, 1780. As a daughter of Thomas W. Willing, the partner of Robert Morris and a wealthy merchant, she brought to her husband a family prestige that was second to none in the Quaker City. But in addition to this, she helped to establish the standard of feminine fashion and elegance in that flourishing town. William Bingham, a sagacious man, a natural money-maker, had amassed great affluence while in the West Indies, and it may as well be said in this place that he also inherited money from his father and later managed a large amount of property belonging to his wife.

The records show that William Bingham was the warrantee of





## WILLIAM BINGHAM, FOUNDER OF CITY OF BINGHAMTON

125 tracts of land in Pennsylvania on the Last Purchase from the Indians, which was made October 23, 1784. These warrants each called for 1,000 acres, but the surveys returned upon them in almost every instance were for 1,100 acres, and allowance of six per cent, so the acreage in the aggregate amounted to 140,000 in round figures. Of these tracts, 75 were patented to William Bingham and the balance were patented to Alexander Baring, *et al.* It is believed these lands were situated in what are now Potter, Tioga and McKean counties in the Keystone State.

In 1784 the personable young couple made a trip to Europe, and being close friends of our American Ministers, were accorded special distinction at various courts. John Adams, Franklin, and Jefferson were among our diplomatists abroad at that period and through their good offices and those of General Lafayette, the Bingham gained the *entree* to the best society in France and England.

Mrs. Bingham is frequently mentioned in the letters from Mrs. John Adams and others as highly esteemed for her winsome social qualities. "She is coming quite into fashion here," John Adams' daughter wrote of her from London, "and is very much admired. The hairdresser who dresses us on court days inquired of mamma whether she knew the lady so much talked of here from America, Mrs. Bingham. He had heard of her from a lady who had seen her at Lord Duncan's."

As may well be believed, the court circle of London society was not any too favorably disposed toward Americans at that time. Even so, the impression created by the verve and character of Mrs. Bingham insured for her the most gracious sort of a reception; nor was the husband, a noble and handsome type of manhood, who had served England in the West Indies and taken no aggressive part against her in the Revolution, less welcome. Not that his real sympathies were with England in that desperate struggle; nothing in his career attests that he was other than an American patriot of the highest order.

William Bingham had not been in diplomacy for his health, though he had not acquired his fortune as the Napoleonic Prince of Benevento (Talleyrand) got his. He saw many legitimate chances to augment his riches and he availed himself of them. While in England he probably used no little tact; certainly he did not proclaim from the housetops that had he been in Pennsylvania at the



## WILLIAM BINGHAM, FOUNDER OF CITY OF BINGHAMTON

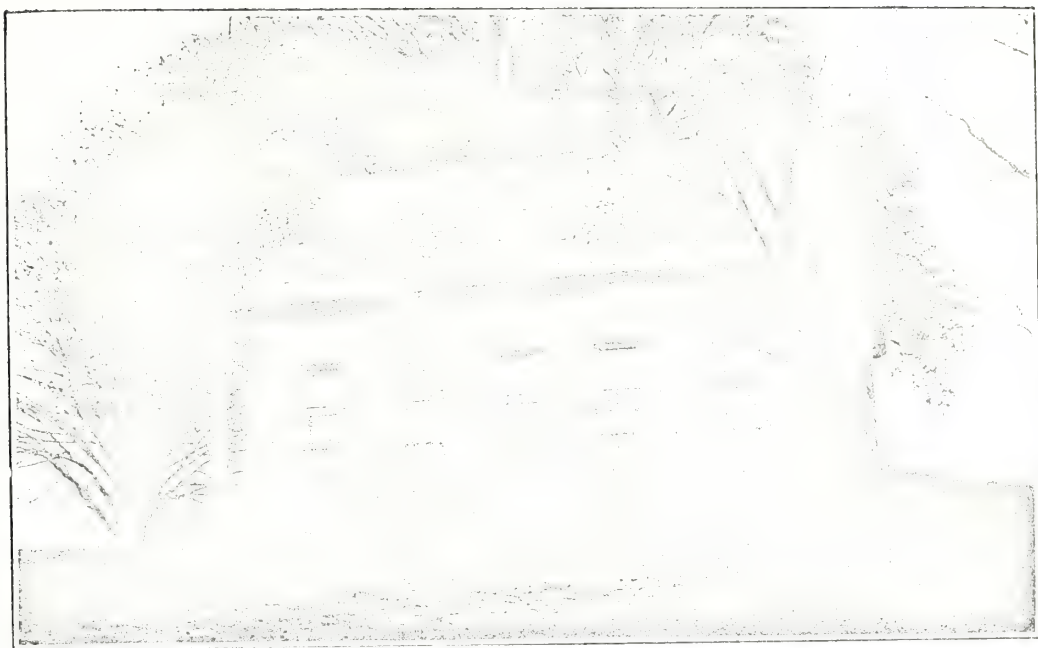
outbreak of the war he would have joined the Continental army and fought tooth and nail against the redcoats. But it is not obvious that there was much for his conscience to reckon with because he had not resigned his double billet and rushed home to become a trooper; for many loyal colonists would not enter into lethal conflict if they could help it; many good men in those parlous times wavered between royalist and American sentiment. And even if the Britishers did not find in Mr. and Mrs. William Bingham partisans, what tory of tories in the English metropolis could have had any pronounced prejudice against so attractive and aristocratic a couple, especially since Mrs. Bingham was one of the first Americans to seek a presentation at the Court of George III, after our separation from the mother country?

Apropos of Mrs. Bingham it has been written: "Her striking beauty of face and form, her easy deportment that had all the pride and grace of high breeding, the intelligence of her countenance, and the entire affability of her attitude, disarmed every feeling of unfriendliness and converted everyone into admiration." Thus Mrs. John Adams.

Their pleasant sojourn in England was cut short by the election of Mr. Bingham (in 1786) as a member of the Congress of the Confederation, in which he served for two years. In the meantime he built in Philadelphia what was then considered a superb dwelling upon a lot of three acres on the west side of Third street, between Walnut and Spruce streets, and furnished it with much elegance. From England he had brought over not only the plan of the house, but nearly all the furniture and decorations. The house was modeled after that of the Duke of Manchester but on a larger scale. Standing back about forty feet from the street, it was approached through two iron gates by a semi-circular drive. It was very wide, and three stories high. A low wall with balusters extended in front, and the grounds were laid out with skill and taste. The whole of Third and Fourth streets from Spruce to Willing's Alley was occupied by the houses and property of Mrs. Bingham's relatives. Her father's residence seems to have been a large double, venerable-looking house, surrounded by trees, among them some fine specimens of the sycamore or buttonwood.

The Bingham mansion finally became a well-kept and popular hotel and for many years was known as "Head's Mansion House."





Above, House of Captain Joseph Leonard, near Binghamton, built in 1787. Below, House of Sergeant Hinds, Binghamton, built in 1817



## WILLIAM BINGHAM, FOUNDER OF CITY OF BINGHAMTON

An early morning fire, toward the latter part of the '40's, ruined the roof and damaged the interior. It was pulled down, and a Mr. Bouvies, mahogany dealer, erected on the lot several brownstone-front residences in 1850. Besides this luxurious town-house, Mr. Bingham owned a country-seat west of the Schuylkill and north of the Lancaster road. As captain of the Dragoons, in the latter part of May, 1789, he escorted Mrs. Washington from Chester to Philadelphia, when on her journey to New York to join her husband, who had taken the oath of office as President of the United States on the preceding 30th day of April.

The next year Mr. Bingham was elected a member of the General Assembly of Pennsylvania and chosen Speaker. It was early in this year that several tracts of land in this region, that is, in the Susquehanna Valley, came into William Bingham's exclusive possession, as related in the beginning of this chapter.

It will be noted that the land patent originally held in what became Broome county by Messrs. Bingham, Hooper and Wilson, was a mere bagatelle compared to Mr. Bingham's domains in Pennsylvania and his still more immense holdings in Maine. One of his purchases in that province was about half of Mount Desert, which comprises 60,000 acres. The island was afterward divided and the eastern part, including the site of Bar Harbor, now one of the most fashionable summer resorts in the country, was set off to William Bingham. The trustees of his estate still own land on Mount Desert and in other parts of Maine, which has not as yet been sold.

In short, Mr. Bingham apparently owned nearly one-ninth of the total area of Maine. For many years the descendants of French pioneers in the province sought to gain possession of certain tracts. Once more they appeared upon the scene, in the persons of Monsieur and Madame de Gregoire, the latter a granddaughter of Cadillac; and in 1785 they laid claim to the lands of their ancestor before the General Court of Massachusetts. The property had been included in the estate of Governor Bernard, and though confiscated during the Revolution, had been restored to his son. Nevertheless, such was then the amicable feeling toward France, that the General Court, "to cultivate mutual confidence and union between the subjects of His most Christian Majesty and the citizens of this State," listened to the appeal, naturalized Monsieur and Madame Gregoire and quit-claimed to them all but lots of one hundred acres each for actual set-





## WILLIAM BINGHAM, FOUNDER OF CITY OF BINGHAMTON

tlers. It is doubtful if they had the sturdy endurance essential to success on such soil in such a climate, for within ten years they sold most of the land to William Bingham; but they continued to live for the rest of their lives at Hull's Cove, which they made their home.

We learn from Mrs. Clara Barnes Martin, author of a volume entitled "Mount Desert," that "this gentleman (William Bingham) had previously acquired considerable possessions in this part of the Province of Maine. One of the earliest grants in what is now Hancock county was of six townships on the condition of their being settled within a specified time by Protestants, a curious little reminder that the earliest settlers had been good Roman Catholics. In 1786, the General Court put into a lottery fifty townships between Penobscot Bay and Passamaquoddy. According to Mrs. Martin, 165,280 acres were drawn at an average price of fifty-two cents per acre. The greater portion of what was left was bought by Mr. Bingham. Of the land purchased from the Gregoires, a piece bordering the Schooner Head road was in 1883 still in possession of his heirs.

In 1794, Mr. Bingham published a "Letter from an American on the Subject of the Restraining Proclamation," but other relics of his literary performances are very few, and the same may be said of his oratorical efforts. Yet he must have spoken often in public and, judging by his education and ability in other directions, he must have spoken well. Elected United States Senator in 1793, Mr. Bingham held that office for the full term of six years, and served in 1797 as President of the Senate *pro tempore*. The Bingham family were intimate with nearly all the leaders of the new American Republic, including the Washingtons, and it was they who persuaded Washington to sit to Gilbert Stuart.

There is a strange lack of agreement among art writers as to the order in which Stuart's three portraits of Washington from life were painted. A special investigation of the subject enables us to present here a version which is believed to be authentic in every detail. We know that Stuart returned to his native land in 1793, with the avowed purpose of painting Washington, for whom his admiration was intense. He arrived in Philadelphia in 1794, while Congress was in session, to present a letter from John Jay. The nation was in a tumult over various matters and Washington was not disposed to comply with Stuart's request for a sitting. He had al-



## WILLIAM BINGHAM, FOUNDER OF CITY OF BINGHAMTON

ready sat to Peale and other painters, and to Jean Antoine Houdon, the greatest portrait sculptor of the eighteenth century, whose majestic statue of Washington is the most priceless possession in the State Capitol of Virginia. Besides being weighed down with many cares, Washington disliked to pose for the brush or the chisel. Finally, however, he yielded to the repeated entreaties of the Bingham, who were not only interested in the welfare of the painter, but believed that a much better portrait of Washington than any extant might be produced by Gilbert Stuart.

No one disputes that Stuart's first attempt at a portrait of his idol was a failure. "The artist rubbed it out," says Charles H. Coffin. "The anecdotes with which he had beguiled other men into revealing their inner selves were of no avail to unmask the impressive calm of Washington." But having discovered that upon experiences of the late war Washington would expand, the artist began a second portrait; and at these sittings was produced the familiar head from which Stuart, with one exception, painted all his other portraits of Washington, and which has long been regarded as the standard likeness.

The critic already quoted tells us that "it came nearest to Stuart's conception of his subject, and he delayed to finish it, that he might not have to part with it. After his death it was sold by his widow, and presented to the Athenaeum, Boston." It now, however, hangs in the Museum of Fine Arts there, while the famous replica which the artist painted from this original study is owned by the Metropolitan Museum of Art. Everywhere in the civilized world may be seen chromo and lithographic copies of it—and should we not be duly grateful to Mr. and Mrs. William Bingham for their zealous aid in making possible the existence of this favorite and, say experts, most life-like portrait ever painted of Washington?

As to the third sitting in 1796—the true story of that is also worth telling. It appears that the Marquis of Lansdowne—a very warm friend of the Willing family, including Mrs. Bingham—had ordered a full-length portrait of Washington; that at Mr. Bingham's solicitation, Stuart allowed him to pay for it, and that the portrait was sent to England as a present to his lordship. This so-called Lansdowne portrait is a full-length with left hand on the sword-belt and the other extended—"a pose," remarks Mr. Coffin, "which suggested to the flippancy of certain minds—for Washing-



## WILLIAM BINGHAM, FOUNDER OF CITY OF BINGHAMTON

ton at that time was a focus point of ridicule and rancor as well as of devotion—a resemblance to the handle and spout of a teapot, and procured it the nickname of the teapot portrait.”

As already stated, Stuart made from life only three portraits of Washington, and one of them was destroyed, the numerous others he executed being either replicas of these or imaginary portraits, such as “Washington on Dorchester Heights,” etc.

Within a short time after the Lansdowne portrait was sent to England, Heath, the celebrated English engraver, reproduced it in pure line. When Stuart, who had neglected to copyright the portrait, saw a copy of the engraving in a shop window and learned of its immense sale, he was very much exasperated. He had a quarrel with Mr. Bingham about it and refused to finish a portrait of the latter that he had begun. He had already painted the head of Mrs. Bingham, which is owned by George Harrison Fisher of Philadelphia. The Lansdowne portrait of Washington was sent over and exhibited in the Great Britain department of the art collection in Memorial Hall in 1876; also a portrait of Mr. Bingham by an English artist. Washington presented to Mrs. Bingham a small portrait of himself painted by the Marchioness de Brehan.

The principal Centennial buildings in Philadelphia, by the way, were erected on what was called the Lansdowne estate, now embodied in Fairmont Park, and just where still stands Horticultural Hall, formerly stood one of the grandest and most historic mansions in the land. It was in crumbling ruins when razed to the ground by the commissioners, who made no effort to restore it to its former appearance because of its glorious associations. Only the name—given in compliment to the Marquis of Lansdowne—remains to mark the estate once so royally adorned and the home of so much hospitality and festivity. Originally owned by Rev. William Smith, Provost of the College of Philadelphia, it was sold in 1773 to John Penn, part Proprietary of Pennsylvania and Governor, who increased the estate by other tracts to about 200 acres. Here a stone mansion of imposing proportions, mainly in the Italian style, was erected by Penn.

The main building was flanked by two recessed wings, from each end of which projected a large bay window; in front was a two-storied portico, each story supported by Ionic columns, surmounted with a pediment. A long avenue of trees formed a charming approach to the manor-house. The undulating grounds were laid out by





## WILLIAM BINGHAM, FOUNDER OF CITY OF BINGHAMTON

an expert landscape gardener, fine old trees and romantic ravines being among its features. Landsdowne Glen remains today in somewhat of its pristine wildness. Governor Penn died in 1793, and his widow, formerly Ann Allen, deeded the property to the husband of her niece, James Greenleaf. A leading merchant, closely identified with Robert Morris in heavy real estate speculations, James Greenleaf was supposed to be a man of great wealth, but he failed when Morris collapsed in business, and the estate was sold at mortgage foreclosure by the sheriff, April 11, 1797, to William Bingham for \$50,100. Madame Bonaparte, *nee* Elizabeth Patterson, who married Napoleon's youngest brother, Jerome, but was not allowed to live with him for long, must have had this magnificent abode in mind when she wrote from Paris to her father in 1823: "It is to be hoped that in future there will be no more palaces constructed, as there appears to be a fatality attending their owners, beginning with Robert Morris and ending with Lem Taylor. I do not recollect a single instance, except that of Bingham, of any one who built one in America not dying a bankrupt."

Under the Bingham *régime* this palace—not built but improved upon by the Senator—was devoted to scenes of lavish hospitality and cultured diversion. Its wealthy and fashionable owners had among their guests the highest worthies in the land—such men as Washington, Adams, Jefferson, and other distinguished American and foreign statesmen. The Bingham family were listed in all the swagger gayeties of the hour, their balls and sumptuous entertainments being scarcely equaled by those at the home of Mrs. Adams and Lady Liston.

With such women as Mrs. William Bingham, Miss Sallie McKean and Mrs. Samuel Blodget among the native beauties, and Mrs. Ralph Izard, Mrs. Elbridge Gerry, and Mrs. John Jay, who had once been mistaken by the audience in a French theatre for the beautiful queen Marie Antoinette, among the sojourners, there was perhaps little exaggeration in the Duc de la Rochefoucauld's gallant observation that "in the numerous assemblies of Philadelphia it is impossible to meet with what is called a plain woman." In a word, Mrs. William Bingham shared with Mrs. John Jay the distinction of being the most beautiful and charming woman in America. "Honors seem to have been easy between these two highborn dames, as both were beloved, admired, and feted at home and abroad."





## WILLIAM BINGHAM, FOUNDER OF CITY OF BINGHAMTON

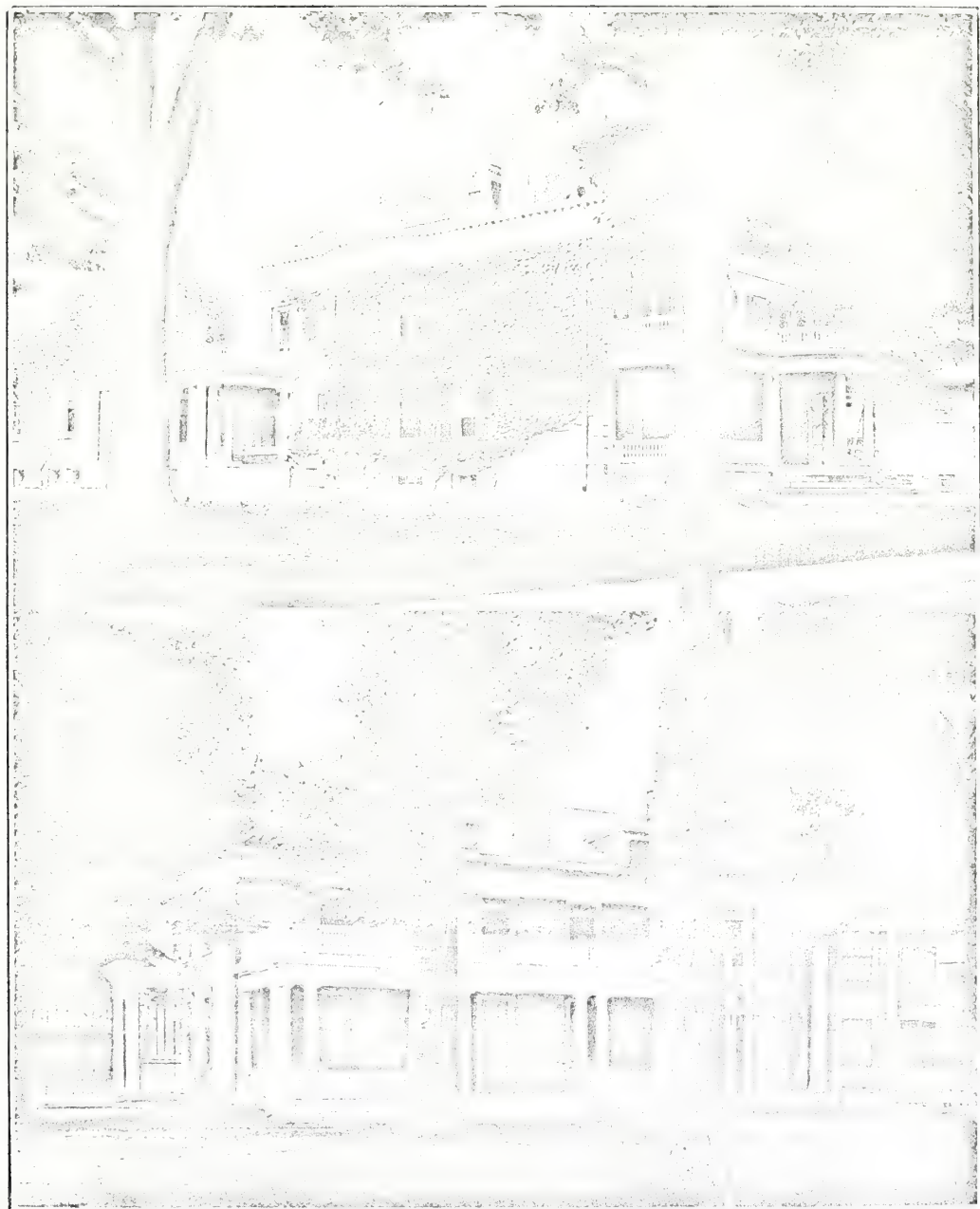
Mr. Bingham was offered and could have had any foreign embassy within the patronage of the President, but he preferred to remain at home among his Whig friends. Moreover, as a financier in the best sense of the term, a director of the famous Bank of North America, he realized that he must keep a close eye on the diverse undertakings in which his capital was involved.

At least one great grief came into the lives of the Bingham. They had three children—Anne Louisa, Maria Matilda, and William. Anne Louisa married the Hon. Alexander Baring, August 23, 1798, and everybody called it a good match. But Maria Matilda—a pretty girl of 16, and much more romantic than wise—eloped, April 11, 1799, with Comte de Tilly, a man of good birth and ignoble character. Before the piquant gossip over this affair had abated, the indignant parents of the bride are said to have bought off the shady nobleman and got a divorce for Maria. Her second husband was Henry Baring, the brother of Alexander, who had married her sister.

Poor Maria again misbehaved, and at last Henry Baring divorced her. Thirdly, she married a Marquis de Blaisell of the Austrian embassy at Paris, where she lived the rest of her life. The lady can not be said to have done credit to her family. Nor could any more be said for the third child and only son of the Senator, who was born in 1800. Twenty-two years later he married, at Montreal, a Miss Vandreiul. I have seen it stated somewhere that the lady was a “baroness in her own right”—a statement not so fully verified as it might be, though had she been the daughter of a hundred earls, she apparently was not one to be desired. This William Bingham was very inferior morally and intellectually to his father, and his wife was much talked about. He died in Paris in 1855. One finds no mention of children of this union.

It has been hinted that Mrs. Bingham, wife of the Senator, never recovered from the shock of her daughter's escapade. At all events, she was not destined for a long life. Returning one night from a party in a sleigh, she took a severe cold, which settled on her lungs, and she was taken to Bermuda, but died there, May 11, 1801, at the early age of thirty-seven. Much broken in health and spirits by his bereavement, Mr. Bingham went to Europe shortly afterward, and died at Bath, England, January 30, 1804, in his fifty-second year. Among the five executors named in his will were his two





Above, American Legion Club House, Binghamton. Below, Binghamton Club, Binghamton.



## WILLIAM BINGHAM, FOUNDER OF CITY OF BINGHAMTON

sens-in-law—Alexander Baring and Henry Baring, the others being Thomas Mayne Willing, Robert Gilmer and Charles Willing Hare.

The Lansdowne mansion was more or less occupied by the Barings, and at various times by Joseph Bonaparte, the elder brother of Napoleon, and ex-King of Spain. Then for a number of years it remained vacant, and was finally burned by fireworks in the hands of small boys. The ruins stood for a long time, until the property was bought by a number of public-spirited gentlemen, ceded to the city, and incorporated with the Park.

From the marriage of William Bingham's elder daughter a number of lords and ladies and other titled personages date their lineage. Alexander Baring was the son of the great banker, Sir Francis Baring. From a partner he became on the death of his father, in 1810, the head of the banking house of Baring Brothers, and was a member of Parliament from 1812 to 1835, when he was raised to the peerage under the title of Baron Ashburton.

The northeastern boundary question had long been in controversy, and difficult matters pertaining to it had embarrassed the relations of the two countries—England and the United States—for sixty years. The unsettled conditions of that question led Sir Robert Peel to send Lord Ashburton to the United States to negotiate a treaty which was finally concluded August 9, 1842, and known as the Ashburton-Webster treaty. The opposition in England, led by Lord Palmerston, assailed it as the "Ashburton Capitulation," while in the United States Daniel Webster, then Secretary of State, was charged with having allowed himself to be hoodwinked. Since then, though, on both sides of the water, this treaty has been accepted by the foremost public men as a fair and honorable adjustment of a very perplexing difference between the two nations.

Yet one wonders whether Lord Ashburton, when he came over here to negotiate the treaty that bears his name jointly with that of Webster, had not some personal interest on his side of the matter—his wife and children being heirs of William Bingham and to his lands in Maine.

On motion of Mr. Hume in the House of Commons, and of Lord Brougham in the House of Lords, the extraordinary compliment of a vote of thanks for a diplomatic achievement was paid to Lord Ashburton. He was naturally pleased with this, but declined the earldom that was offered to him. It is not a hard thing to account for



## WILLIAM BINGHAM, FOUNDER OF CITY OF BINGHAMTON

the success of Lord Ashburton as a diplomatist. To high character and intelligence were united affable and sufficiently democratic manners, and a disposition as kind as it was lively. Another prime advantage to him was his friendly personal relations with Daniel Webster, one of whose grandsons was named after him.

Lord Ashburton was a D. C. L. of Oxford, a trustee of the British Museum, and a privy councillor. At one time Talleyrand confided to him the custody of his memoirs, and presented him with a bust of Napoleon carved by Canova. He was at the country seat of his daughter Harriet, the widow of the Marquis of Bath, when he died, in 1848. His wife, *nee* Anne Louisa Bingham, a notably refined woman, died about six months after him. His eldest son, William Bingham Baring, the second Lord Ashburton, who for seventeen years was a member of Parliament and held various official positions, died March 23, 1864. As bankers, it will be recalled, the Barings for nearly a century represented the financial interests of this country.

Of other titled and blue-blooded persons allied to the Bingham children and to their children by marriage, several readable chapters might be written. Much information about them may be found in Burke's Peerage. Senator Bingham's remote descendants—they are all now English or French—have profited enormously by his land purchases, and it is interesting to know that seventy or eighty years after his death they began to get large sums from Pennsylvania oil lands as well as from land on Mount Desert.

The second Baron Ashburton, the eldest of seven children, married, for his first wife, Harriet Mary, eldest daughter of George John, sixth Earl of Sandwich. Lady Harriet Ashburton, a woman of remarkable brunette loveliness, was Carlyle's friend and will be remembered by all readers of Thomas Carlyle. This friendship caused much bitter jealousy on the part of Janet Welsh Carlyle and a good deal of mischievous tattle. Says Froude: "It was not that Lady Ashburton had ever been devoted to Carlyle. Quite evidently the feeling ran the other way. Carlyle had sat at the feet of the fine lady, adoring and worshipping, had made himself the plaything of her caprices, had made Lady Ashburton the object of the same idolatrous homage which he had once paid to his wife. There are in existence, or there were, masses of extravagant letters of Carlyle





## WILLIAM BINGHAM, FOUNDER OF CITY OF BINGHAMTON

to the great lady, as ecstatic as Don Quixote's to Dulcinea." She died in 1857, and then her husband married Lady Louisa Mackensie, who continued to show Carlyle the same kindness as her predecessor had done, for he was a frequent visitor in the household.

The second Baron Ashburton was succeeded by his brother Francis, who had married Hortense Eugenie Claire, daughter of Hugues Bernard Maret, Duke of Bassano, one of the most trusted and most trustworthy Ministers of Napoleon I. Their oldest son, Alexander Hugh, became the fourth Lord Ashburton on the death of his father in 1868. This fourth Baron married Leonora Carolina, second daughter of Edward St. Vincent, ninth Lord Digby. His lordship (the fourth Lord Ashburton) died July 18, 1889, and was succeeded by his eldest son, Francis Denzil Edward Baring, the present peer. He was formerly a lieutenant in the Hampshire Imperial Yeomanry. His first wife, who died in 1904, was Hon. Mabel Edith Hood, eldest daughter of the fourth Viscount Hood, and the mother of his five children, Alexander Francis St. Vincent being the eldest. In 1905 this fifth Lord Ashburton met Miss Donnelly—known on the stage as Frances Belmont—who was born in Dublin and grew up in a Boston tenement. They were married in February, 1906, in the chapel of the British Embassy in Paris, and soon afterward started on a leisurely honeymoon trip around the world. One of the sisters in the original cast of "Floradora" at the Casino Theatre, New York, the new Lady Ashburton has found a welcome place in high circles of English society, as though she had been born in it.

That "certain condescension in foreigners," of which the poet Lowell wrote so wittily, has often been exemplified in the hunting of the American heiress by some impoverished nobleman of Europe. But the fifth Lord Ashburton is not that kind of a lord—being the owner of 30,000 acres in Hampshire, England, a domain of almost fabulous value. Therefore he has not been tempted to marry for money.

In the attempt here made briefly to mention scions of the British peerage that have descended from Alexander Baring and his wife, Anne Louisa Bingham, the names of other progeny—and data as to their births, marriages, and deaths—have been benevolently omitted. The three sons and two daughters of Henry Baring and Maria Matilda, and their children, are mentioned in Burke. These children



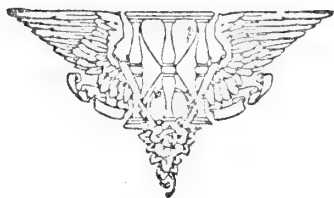
## WILLIAM BINGHAM, FOUNDER OF CITY OF BINGHAMTON

are among the living heirs who receive an income from the estate of William Bingham.

Let us not forget that William Bingham once owned the land—including the angled area formed by the confluence of the Chenango with the Susquehanna—whereon most of the city of Binghamton now stands; that the name of the city is borrowed from his own. Nor should we forget that William Bingham did actually donate the land for the site of a court house and other public buildings, and that his representative carried out most of his wishes very soon after Chenango Point became the county seat of Broome.

We must give William Bingham credit for having been a good deal of a man. In shaping the material of biographical research one is often conscious that less than half enough is recorded of the splendid spirit of men like the one here so inadequately sketched. Of such intimate disclosures as to William Bingham, we have too few. Yet proofs of his generosity, as to the squatters on his land, for instance, are to be found in our own local chronicles. And in the larger community where he lived, we may be sure that many blessings from the lips of the poor were evoked by his modest deeds of charity,

"His little, nameless, unremembered acts  
Of kindness and of love."







TOMB OF 2111 UNKNOWN DEAD  
Of the Union Army in War for the Union



CONFEDERATE SOLDIERS' MEMORIAL



DIED IN WRECK OF THE "MAINE"  
Sunk in Harbor of Havana. Monument, with original mast



MAUSOLEUM OF ADMIRAL DEWEY



# The Story of Arlington National Cemetery

BY CARSON C. HATHAWAY, WASHINGTON, D. C.



THOSE who love human interest, a military cemetery is not merely a burial ground. It is a place to stir the imagination and to arouse living memories of the past. Amid such surroundings, Lincoln gave to the world his Gettysburg Address, America's greatest contribution to literature. Even the peaceful silence of a country churchyard could inspire the most sublime poem in the English language, "Gray's Elegy." If we would know the real spirit of our country, we need not turn to the halls of legislation. Among the millions in the throbbing centers of commerce we would search for it in vain. We shall find it rather in Arlington National Cemetery, the last home of our most heroic dead.

The Arlington estate is situated in northeastern Virginia, across the Potomac river from Washington, D. C. It has one of the most romantic histories of any plot of ground in America. In 1669, Governor William Berkeley presented the estate to Robert Howsen, who soon sold it to John Alexander for six hogsheads of tobacco. It remained in his family until Christmas Day, 1778, when it was sold by Gerard Alexander to John Parke Custis. During the century that followed it was associated with two of the most famous names in American history. John Parke Custis was the son of Martha Custis, who, after the death of her first husband, married George Washington. The first Custis proprietor died in 1781, of a fever, near Yorktown, Virginia. His two children were adopted by George Washington, and went to live at Mount Vernon; they stayed there for many years, until the death of Martha Washington. The son, George Washington Park Custis, then removed to his father's estate on the banks of the Potomac and built there a beautiful colonial mansion. It contained seventeen rooms, and its majestic Doric pillars were visible for many miles. The building was begun in 1804 but was not completed until after the War of 1812.

The estate had previously been called Abingdon, but its name was now changed to Arlington. It is said that the first Custis who





## THE STORY OF ARLINGTON NATIONAL CEMETERY

was born in Virginia erected a mansion in Northampton county and called it Arlington in honor of Henry, Earl of Arlington, to whom Charles II had given extensive grants of land in Virginia. The new estate on the Potomac was christened after the other Custis estate in Northampton county.

Washington himself never lived in Arlington, but George Washington Parke Custis brought to his new mansion many household furnishings from Mount Vernon, as well as personal reminders of the Revolution's greatest general. One particularly famous relic, now in the National Museum in Washington, was the sleeping tent in which Cornwallis was received as a prisoner. This was often set up in the grounds at Arlington, and people were glad to pay a small fee to sit for a few moments in the tent. The money was turned over to charitable purposes, and it is said that three churches were built from the funds thus acquired. George Washington Parke Custis died on October 10, 1857. His grave and that of his wife may still be seen a little distance from the mansion.

He willed the estate to his only child, Mary Ann Randolph Lee, for her lifetime, and directed that after her death it should go to George Washington Custis Lee, his eldest grandson. Many years before the death of George Washington Parke Custis, his daughter had married Robert E. Lee. The wedding took place in the Arlington mansion on June 30, 1831. Lee at the time was a soldier in the army of the United States. His home was at Alexandria, Virginia, only a few miles from Arlington. It is interesting to remember that this historic city was named after the Alexander family who in pre-Revolutionary days owned the Arlington estate. After the wedding, Lee took up his residence at Arlington and lived here for over a quarter of a century, although his profession as a soldier took him on frequent journeys, his most important work coming during the Mexican War. He was residing at Arlington when he received orders to go and suppress the raid of John Brown at Harper's Ferry.

From the veranda of the beautiful mansion he could see the dome of the National Capitol rising majestically to the East. Perhaps to his mind there came dreams of the day, when, like other military leaders of the past, he would assume a place of renown in that home of the nation's statesmen. It was not to be. The Civil War broke in all its fury. The command of the Northern Army was offered to Lee. He was torn between loyalty to the Union and loy-



## THE STORY OF ARLINGTON NATIONAL CEMETERY

alty to his native State. Finally the call of the South conquered. He turned his back on all possibilities of Northern fame, hurriedly left Arlington, and took command of the Southern armies. The estate was seized by Northern troops. Fortifications were thrown up to assist in the defense of the city of Washington. The old mansion was turned into a hospital, and here many men from both the North and the South died. On January 11, 1864, the Federal government sold the property for unpaid taxes of \$92.07. The estate was sold at auction, and was bid in by the United States government for \$26,800.

On May 13, 1864, President Lincoln and General Meigs visited the estate and were told that a number of soldiers had died there and were awaiting burial. They gave orders that the men be buried on the grounds, and this was the beginning of Arlington National Cemetery. An order of the Secretary of War, dated June 15, 1864, officially set aside a portion of the grounds for burial purposes. The first soldier laid to rest in this historic spot was said to be a North Carolina soldier in the Confederate army by the name of Reinhardt, whose body was later removed to soil farther South. By June 30, 1865, the estate contained 5,003 bodies, and others were being buried daily.

Some time after the war was over, Mrs. Lee having died, her son, George Washington Custis Lee, brought suit against the United States for the recovery of the property. It was a very embarrassing situation. According to the law in the case, he had a clear title to the estate, and highest courts so decreed; but in the meantime the place had been made sacred by the burial of thousands of soldiers. It was finally agreed that the United States government should pay him \$150,000 in settlement of all claims against the property. On March 25, 1884, the final payment of \$25,000 was made, and the whole estate became the undisputed property of the United States.

The original estate is now divided into three parts. Four hundred and eight acres are inclosed as the National Military Cemetery. To the west is Fort Myer, where thousands of soldiers were trained for the World War. This is a permanent military fort of the United States. To the east, approaching the Potomac river, is the experimental farm of the Department of Agriculture, which can easily be added to the burial grounds should the occasion arise. The original estate consisted of about 1,100 acres.



## THE STORY OF ARLINGTON NATIONAL CEMETERY

Near the center of the grounds there has been erected a beautiful amphitheatre costing \$825,000, with a seating capacity of five thousand. It is the only memorial of its kind in the United States, dedicated to the soldiers and sailors of all the wars in which America has taken part. It is built entirely of white marble, and is open to the sky. On each Memorial Day, services will be held here to honor the heroic dead. Arlington's first Memorial Day was celebrated on May 30, 1868, General Logan, commander-in-chief of the Grand Army of the Republic, having issued orders that all graves were to be decorated on that date. James A. Garfield, then an eloquent member of Congress, delivered the address of the day. Since that time the spirit of Memorial Day has been highly commended by many of our national leaders. In 1880 General Ulysses S. Grant wrote feelingly of the necessity for properly decorating the graves of our soldiers and sailors on each Memorial Day. His letter on that occasion, addressed personally to the present editor of this magazine, is reproduced in this connection. Remembering him as the utterer of that touching prayer, "Let Us Have Peace," we may well believe that had he lived to the World War day, he would have included its soldiers in his benediction.

Of the more than thirty-three thousand persons now buried in Arlington, nearly five thousand are numbered among the unknown dead. The graves of the known dead are marked by marble slabs rounded at the top, while the unknown dead bear slabs with flat tops. Near the Mansion stands a large monument bearing this inscription:

Beneath this stone repose the bones of 2,111 Unknown  
Soldiers gathered after the war from the fields of  
Bull Run and the route to the Rappahannock. Their  
remains could not be identified, but their names and  
deaths are recorded in the archives of their country.

Within the cemetery there are now three hundred and seventy-eight Confederate graves. Near the western wall there stands a beautiful monument erected by the Daughters of the Confederacy. It has been called the most striking allegorical monument in the world, and bears the words :

To our Dead Heroes. Not for fame or reward,  
not for place or rank, not lured by ambition or goaded  
by necessity, but in simple obedience to duty as they  
understood it, these men suffered all, sacrificed all,  
dared all and died.



Madame S<sup>te</sup>.

May 8<sup>th</sup> 1890

Mr. G. Healey,  
No. 11, N. Y. Ave.

Dear Sir:

Dear May

When here from an absence  
of over a week I found your  
letter of the 29<sup>th</sup> of April.

Looking for something from  
you to be read on the  
occasion of the dedication of  
the Union Station ground in the

The dedication of the Union Station ground in the

Union. At the risk of their  
time, and particularly their  
labor sacrificed their time.

It is fitting that their memory  
should be kept from in  
the memory of their living  
descendants, and in the memory  
of their descendants as long  
as time lasts. Nothing can  
endure to this end more  
effectually than the beautiful  
poetry of the Union Station ground in the





## THE STORY OF ARLINGTON NATIONAL CEMETERY

The monument was designed by Moses J. Ezekiel, a Confederate soldier who later became a famous sculptor. It is interesting to note that at the foot of his masterpiece, the monument in Arlington, the sculptor himself now lies buried with his comrades.

Here and there throughout the Civil War section may be seen monuments to some of the most famous heroes of that conflict, including Admiral Porter, who commanded the fleet on the Mississippi river; General Joseph Wheeler, who served in the Confederate cavalry, and later was a United States soldier in the Spanish-American War; General Rosecrans; and General Philip Sheridan, who made the immortal ride from Winchester.

A short distance from the Confederate monument may be seen the ruins of Fort McPherson, one of a chain of forts which were hastily thrown up as a defense of Washington during the Civil War. It is one of the last reminders in the vicinity of the Capital of the danger from Southern invasion during the War of the States. It was never actually used in battle, and now consists merely of a series of grass covered mounds.

Second in importance to the Civil War area is the Spanish War section, and here the chief point of interest is the monument to the heroes of the battleship *Maine*. It calls to mind that tragic night on February 15, 1898, when a fearful explosion in Havana Harbor snuffed out the lives of over two hundred and fifty sailors of that famous ship. The first victims were buried in Arlington on December 28, 1899, and on March 23, 1912, after the remains of the battleship had been raised from Havana Harbor, sixty-four others, who could not be identified, were buried in the *Maine* plot. On the first occasion, President McKinley delivered the memorial address, and in 1912 it was given by President Taft. The *Maine* monument is an imposing structure of great historic interest, for it is surmounted by the original mast of the *Maine*, while at one side rests an anchor of the ill-fated battle-ship.

In the Spanish War section are the graves of Admiral Sampson and his adversary in the famous verbal conflict which followed the war, Admiral Schley. Here are also buried "Fighting Bob" Evans, who led the battleship fleet around the world; General Lawton, the hero of the fighting during the Philippine insurrection; and here is also a monument to Roosevelt's Rough Riders. On a hilltop far to



## THE STORY OF ARLINGTON NATIONAL CEMETERY

the east is the mausoleum of the famous admiral of the Spanish-American War. On it there appears the simple inscription,

GEORGE DEWEY, ADMIRAL OF THE NAVY.

Finally, there is the World War section. Here are buried over five thousand American soldiers, most of them veterans from the fields of France. Near the memorial amphitheatre is a spot destined to become one of the most sacred shrines in the United States, the tomb of America's Unknown Soldier. There is an atmosphere of romance and mystery in the strange story of the soldier who received the greatest honors of any American who died during the world conflict.

One day in the month of October, 1921, four coffins were brought into Chalons, France, and deposited in the city hall. They had been taken from four military cemeteries at Belleau Wood, Bony, Thiancourt and Romagne, and each contained the body of an unknown American soldier. Corporal Edward Younger had been selected to make the final choice of the one who was to receive the name of *THE* Unknown Soldier. He entered the room, looked at all of the coffins for a few moments, and then placed a bunch of white roses on the top of one. The other three were then borne quietly away to be buried in Romagne cemetery, where most of the American dead in France now lie. The coffin on which the white roses rested was marked with the inscription, "An Unknown American Soldier Who Gave His Life in the Great War." It then began its triumphal march toward Arlington. When it arrived at Washington it was taken reverently to the Capitol, where before it filed nearly one hundred thousand American citizens. The next day it was borne down Pennsylvania avenue, followed by the greatest funeral procession of notables the country had ever seen. The President of the United States, former Presidents Taft and Wilson, the Supreme Court of the United States, the members of Congress, and the veterans who had been awarded the Congressional Medal of Honor, our highest military decoration, all paid silent tribute to the Unknown Hero. When the procession reached Arlington the address was delivered by the President of the United States. There were then placed upon the casket the highest military decorations of the allied nations. The Victoria Cross, a decoration never before given to any save a British subject, was bestowed by Admiral Beatty of the British

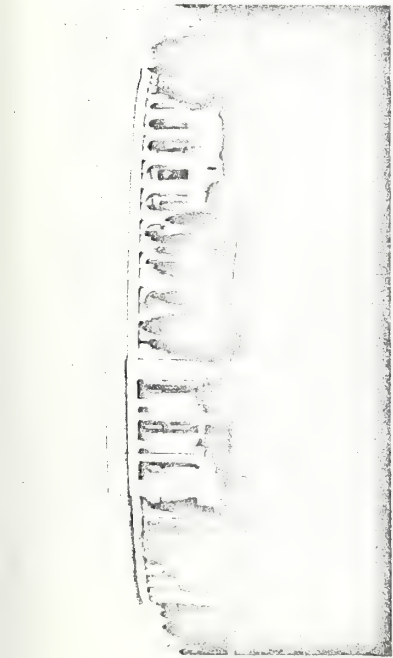




TOMB OF UNKNOWN SOLDIER OF WORLD WAR



GRAVE OF LOUIS HENRY MAXFIELD  
Commander of ZR-2, in World War



ARLINGTON MEMORIAL AMPHITHEATRE

Erected at a cost of nearly a million dollars, as a memorial to the Soldiers and Sailors of all the Wars in which America has taken part. Within its walls on November 11, 1921, the funeral services for America's Unknown Soldier were held



MONUMENT TO ARCHIBALD BUTT  
Aide to President Taft, lost in the sinking of Steamship "Titanic" in the Atlantic Ocean



## THE STORY OF ARLINGTON NATIONAL CEMETERY

Navy. Marshal Foch, the great French general, bestowed the Croix de Guerre and the French military cross. At last the body of the Unknown Soldier was laid to rest.

There are also in Arlington the graves of many military and naval heroes who fought against no foreign foe, but who are honored for some signal achievement in civic endeavors. In one beautiful spot in front of the Lee mansion is the grave of Pierre Charles L'Enfant, engineer, artist and soldier, who, under the guidance of George Washington and Thomas Jefferson, designed the plan for the city of Washington. The setting is a wonderfully appropriate place for his grave. Standing close by his monument, one can see just across the Potomac the new Lincoln Memorial. A little farther in the distance are the White House and the Washington Monument, while on the hills to the east stand the Library of Congress and the Capitol of the United States. If L'Enfant could see the view from his grave, he would know that dreams come true.

Far in the eastern portion of Arlington rises a sturdy shaft over the grave of Lieutenant Thomas E. Selfridge, a martyr to the science of aviation. On September 17, 1908, a flight was planned to test one of the new Wright airplanes. The experiment was conducted at Fort Myer, a part of the Arlington estate. In the plane were Selfridge and Orville Wright. All went well for a short time, but suddenly the plane collapsed and dashed to the earth like a wounded bird. Selfridge was killed, but in his death he helped to bring nearer to realization the hope of Professor Langley, the "father of the airplane," that "the great overhead highway shall at last be opened for the use of mankind." He lies buried only a few hundred yards from the spot where the fatal accident occurred.

A short distance down the slope from his grave is that of Louis Henry Maxfield, commander in the United States Navy, who was killed near Hull, England, in the explosion of the Z R 2, the largest airship ever constructed. On a trial flight which was being made preparatory to sailing in the huge craft to America, the bag exploded and hurled the occupants of the ship to their death. A little to the north on an inconspicuous hillside is a marble globe marking the grave of Robert E. Peary, discoverer of the North Pole. He finally achieved the goal of many a hardy explorer before him, and gave to America the honor of one of the greatest feats of exploration. Close at hand is the grave of Dr. Walter Reed, surgeon and





## THE STORY OF ARLINGTON NATIONAL CEMETERY

major in the United States Army. For many years the South had been ravaged by yellow fever, and Dr. Reed was sent down into Cuba to discover the cause of the disease. He found that it was caused by the bite of a variety of mosquito, and as a result of his research the disease was conquered. His work marked one of the most important milestones in bacteriological science. His monument bears the words, "He gave to man control over that dreadful scourge, yellow fever."

The Engineer, the Aviator, the Explorer and the Physician were all splendid representatives of the United States. Their work was not to destroy, but to assist mankind.

One important step remains in the development of this wonderful estate. At present it is almost isolated from Washington, and must be reached by a roundabout trip over a Potomac bridge nearly a mile and a half away. On Armistice Day, 1921, when the Unknown Soldier was buried, the roadway to the cemetery was blocked by a surging throng of humanity. Passage in either direction became impossible. The President of the United States, hurrying to Arlington to deliver the memorial address, was delayed for nearly an hour waiting for the passage to be cleared. To prevent the repetition of such an incident and to link up the Capital City with the sacred home of the dead, a new memorial bridge is to be constructed which will lead from the Lincoln Memorial to the cemetery at Arlington.

Arlington is one of the most impressive spots in America, and it is destined to become even more beautiful as time goes on. As a national cemetery it has been in existence for little more than half a century. In the years to come it will guard the graves not of the present thirty-three thousand of the nation's defenders, but of hundreds of thousands. All of the four million soldiers, sailors and marines of the Great War have the privilege of being buried within its walls.

The spirit of Arlington is best revealed in the inscriptions on the tombs of the dead. One of these bears the dying words of a lieutenant in the United States Navy: "Do not bother any more with me, doctor, look after the others." Another may be said to express the message of Arlington to the world:

"Go on fighting; that is what you are here for."

---

NOTE—The monument views with this narrative are from photos taken by the author of the article.



# Bust of William Pitt

PRESENTED TO THE CITY OF PITTSBURGH



ON Thursday, September 14th, 1922, the City of Pittsburgh was the scene of a most interesting ceremony which had direct relation to its practical founding and naming a hundred and sixty-four years ago. This was the presentation to the City by Sir Charles Wakefield, former Lord Mayor of London, of a fine bronze bust of William Pitt, Earl of Chatham, the great English statesman who was primarily responsible for the taking of the City of Pittsburgh from the French on November 25, 1758, and in whose honor the place was named on that day by General John Forbes.

Sir Charles Wakefield was induced to make his generous gift through the efforts of the Sulgrave Institute, an organization named after the home of the ancestors of George Washington and composed of Englishmen and Americans desirous of promoting good feeling between their respective countries. He therefore decided to present to this country two busts of great Englishmen noted for their sympathy with America, Edmund Burke and William Pitt. The first of these was presented to Washington, D. C., after his visit to Pittsburgh.

Upon notification of his intention as to Pittsburgh, the matter was taken up by the Chamber of Commerce, which enlisted the interest of Mayor William A. Magee, who appointed a committee of arrangements headed by William H. Stevenson, President of the Historical Society of Western Pennsylvania and of the Pennsylvania Historical Commission. The other members of the executive committee were: Wm. M. Furey, Robert Garland, L. H. Burnett, Mrs. E. V. Babcock, W. M. Jacoby, Gen. Albert J. Logan, H. C. McEldowney, George S. Oliver, A. C. Terry, E. N. Jones, secretary to the Mayor, James Francis Burke, Charles W. Danziger, Wm. H. French and Harry C. Graham.

The 164th anniversary of the battle of Grant's Hill fought between the British and Colonial forces and the French and Indians



## BUST OF WILLIAM PITT

was chosen as the date for the ceremony, the scene being the Pittsburgh City-County building situated on the hill. The battle was fought for the possession of Fort Duquesne, but resulted in the defeat of the British and Colonials. Nearly a month later, however, on October 12th, 1758, they were successful in the battle of Loyalhanna, as a result of which Fort Duquesne was abandoned by the French and taken possession of by the British and Colonials on November 25th following.

Sir Charles Wakefield and his party reached Pittsburgh on the morning of September 13th. He was given a luncheon at the Chamber of Commerce, where he spoke pertinently and forcefully, as did his companion, Sir Arthur A. Haworth, of Manchester, at a meeting in the auditorium presided over by William H. Stevenson, where he was introduced by President William M. Furey, of the Chamber. In the afternoon the party was taken for an automobile ride through the city, visiting the residence of ex-Mayor E. V. Babcock in Valencia, and in the evening attended a dinner at the William Penn Hotel. In his remarks before the Chamber of Commerce, Sir Charles Wakefield said in part: "We must increase the output of comradeship of both employer and employee." He expressed the thanks of the visiting delegation for the cordial welcome, told how he had spoken to the combined forces of British and the United States on the battle line in Belgium during the World War, and spoke with deep feeling of hearing how the American soldiers responded with "Fight the Good Fight." "I should like to see those good old times come again in one respect," he said. "I mean the unity of the trenches, the comradeship. I wish we might see the world's spiritual forces united as were our military forces in those great days."

In the party with Sir Charles Wakefield were Lady Wakefield, Miss Freda Wakefield, Sir Arthur A. Haworth, president of the Merchants' Exchange of Manchester, and Lady Haworth, Lieutenant Governor McCallum Grant, of Nova Scotia, and Mrs. Grant, Hon. D. B. Edwards, Deputy High Commissioner of Australia, H. S. Perris, a director of Sulgrave Institution, Harold Spender, writer, Captain M. L. DeVoto, John A. Stewart of New York, chairman of the American Branch of the Sulgrave Institution, W. L. Humphrey, secretary of the Institute, and Miss Ethel Armes, secretary of the American Branch of the Sulgrave Institution.





## BUST OF WILLIAM PITT

At the dinner in the evening at the William Penn Hotel, Chairman Stevenson presented James Francis Burke as the toastmaster. Speeches were made by Lieutenant Governor Grant, on "Our Next Door Neighbor;" by John A. Stewart, on "The Sulgrave Institution in Its Relation to the English Speaking Race;" by Hon. D. B. Edwards, on "Hands Across the Sea;" and by Sir Charles Wakefield, Mayor W. A. Magee, Harold Spender and H. S. Perris. Dr. Hugh M. Kerr delivered the invocation. Andrew B. Humphrey proposed a toast to President Harding, Mayor Magee proposed a toast to King George IV, and Mrs. Perris proposed a toast to Mrs. Harding.

The next day, September 14th, at noon, the bust of Pitt was presented at a meeting held in front of the City-County building, presided over by William H. Stevenson, who introduced the various speakers. Addresses were made by William C. Sproul, Governor of Pennsylvania, Sir Charles Wakefield, and Mayor William A. Magee. Dr. William J. Holland delivered the invocation.

Sir Charles Wakefield, in presenting the bust, which was wrapped with British and American colors, told briefly the story of Pitt's life, and paid glowing tribute to the American and British Sulgrave Institution through which the bust was presented. In part he said:

It is my great privilege to offer this bust of William Pitt, Earl of Chatham, prime minister of England and champion of American rights, to the City of Pittsburgh, as a token of friendship from the British to the American people.

They will, I am sure, prize this fine bust of William Pitt, as much as we in London value that magnificent statue of Abraham Lincoln, which stands in the very shadow of our House of Parliament. The controversies in which Chatham played his heroic part are dead; the healing hand of time has smoothed out all the roughness and bitterness of that great struggle for liberty. English historians and the English people have long since condemned the mistaken policy of George III and his subservient ministers, which alienated the affection of the American colonies.

The triumph of the cause of liberty in America was a trumpet call to its lovers everywhere, and in winning freedom for themselves, your ancestors helped to win it for us also. They were Englishmen and appealed to English principles of liberty and justice in their uprising. And this appeal has been allowed, and their victory acclaimed by Englishmen throughout the world for many generations past.

In honoring the great figure of Pitt today our thoughts are, in





## BUST OF WILLIAM PITT

a small measure, and by way of gratitude and admiration for him, in the past; but in a greater measure they are turned to the present and the future.

There are now no hereditary misunderstandings, or lingering jealousies or antagonism, between the British and the American people.

Our mission to America and, to your splendid city of Pittsburgh, is to bring a message of comradeship and fraternity, an assurance of good will and of our desire for every kind of cooperation between our two great nations.

Our ceremony today reminds us that we have great memories in common. We too, have more recent memories of our common sacrifices to secure the victory of democracy in arms against the oppressor.

When we look, therefore, at this statue, let us remember how easy is our journey along the road which Pitt so well pointed out, and resolve that we will do all in our power to maintain the priceless boon of Anglo-American comradeship.

Governor Sproul in his speech lauded Pennsylvania for its keystone part in every great American crisis, and said that of all the vast tonnage of munitions which went forward in the World War, Pennsylvania contributed eighty per cent. and Allegheny county sixty per cent. He declared that the State of Pennsylvania and the city of Pittsburgh are honored in two monuments that are everlasting—the name given the former in honor of its founder, William Penn, and the latter the name of William Pitt. Had the advice of the latter been heeded, said the Governor, many struggles in the State and Allegheny county might have been avoided in after years. Such gatherings as that of the day, he said, serve to better relations between nations, creating a clearer understanding and knowledge, each for and of the other, and by that bringing a boon to all mankind. The relationship between the United States and Canada, the speaker said, with a frontier of several thousands of miles unguarded and unfortified, is the sort of relationship which should prevail among all nations. The Governor spoke in glowing words of the part Canada had taken in the World War, and with a touch of pathos mentioned the large proportion of the population which enlisted in the service and who made the supreme sacrifice on the field of battle.

Mayor William A. Magee said in part:



## BUST OF WILLIAM PITT

The gift which we are receiving today is one which the people of Pittsburgh will appreciate to the full. It symbolizes the relationship of our community to one of the outstanding figures of the history of modern times. We are proud of our name.

The possession of the strategic, military and economic point at the headwaters of the Ohio River was the cause of the great Seven Year's war, the only war previous to the last war that was waged on a nation-wide scale. The decision of arms at this place hastened the growth of democratic ideals by perhaps generations if not centuries.

Our great patron saint, the outstanding figure of his time, was foremost in support of popular government. The American nation was his child. We are proud in being known to the world by his name. We are, in physical embodiment, his commemoration. This statue will remain in this building, the seat of our municipal government, a silent witness, constantly reminding those who follow after us not only of the glorious days which were the fruit of his deep wisdom and boundless energy, but of much more still, the enduring effect upon the lives of untold millions of people determined by the events that transpired here more than one hundred and sixty years ago.

In introducing the speakers, Chairman Stephenson made the following remarks:

The tie that binds the English speaking people together is the history of their achievements in the civilization of the world.

Our gathering here today is signalized by an appropriateness of time as well as of location and above all of purpose. That purpose is to forge another link in the strong and unbroken chain of friendship that has for more than a century united the English speaking peoples,—Britons and Americans,—common descendants of the Anglo-Saxon race and equal heirs to its great constitutional principles and traditions. For near here and within sight of the windows of the graceful tower which rises to my right over the temple of justice, is the point where Fort Duquesne stood and where Fort Pitt arose, the final possession of which decided the destiny of the vast territory lying between the Alleghenies and the Rockies and made sure the creation of this great nation.

Upon the exact spot where we are now standing, just 164 years ago today one of the notable conflicts waged for the possession of the Forks of the Ohio was fought. Here on the 14th of September, 1758, Major James Grant, a British officer with about 600 Highlanders and about 200 Pennsylvanians and Virginians, fought a losing battle with the French Canadians and Indians.

British and American blood was shed in a common cause. This battle was the culmination of French success and power in a strug-



## BUST OF WILLIAM PITT

gle which finally resulted in the raising of the British flag over Fort Pitt, which thus assured the domination of the Anglo-Saxon race in North America from the Atlantic to the Pacific and from the Arctic to the Gulf of Mexico.

Added to the appropriateness of the time and location of this great gathering is that its special object is the reception of a lifelike and artistic bust of the great English statesman, a true and courageous friend of America, William Pitt, Earl of Chatham, whose name this great city of ours appropriately bears. It is he who thundered in the English Parliament, "We may bind the Colonists' trade, confine their manufacturers and exercise every power whatever except taking their money out of their pockets without their consent." He also said, "Adopt more gentle methods in dealing with America for the day is not far distant when America may vie with this Kingdom not only in arms but in arts." On May 30th, 1777, he said, "You may ravage, you cannot conquer. It is impossible, you cannot conquer the Americans, and from that day, one hundred and forty-five years ago to this day, the Star Spangled Banner has never been lowered to a foreign enemy.

The donor of this bust of the Peerless statesman, William Pitt, is a distinguished Englishman who has the honor of being the chief executive of the great English metropolis, London.

But this bust of the foremost English advocate of freedom and constitutional rights will not stand here alone as an evidence that we remember and revere the memory of William Pitt. It can be truly said, "If you seek his monument look around." George Bancroft, the historian, wrote, "Pittsburgh is the most enduring monument of William Pitt. As long as the Monongahela and Allegheny shall flow to form the Ohio, as long as the English tongue shall be the language of freedom in the boundless valley which their waters traverse, his name shall stand inscribed on the Gateway of the West."

Our honored guest, Sir Charles Wakefield, with Lady Wakefield and friends, has journeyed across the Atlantic to present under the auspices of the Sulgrave Institution his gift to the city of Pittsburgh, this bust of the great friend of America, so that his features may be constantly before us, and also to inspire us with the high and lofty purpose of fostering a fraternal spirit and good feeling between the English speaking people of America and Great Britain.

This great audience is a credit to the memory of William Pitt and an expression of gratitude to the distinguished Englishman for this beautiful lifelike bust of William Pitt, which will now be unveiled by the donor's daughter, Miss Freda Wakefield.

The bust was then unveiled by Miss Freda Wakefield, daughter of the donor. Following the ceremony there was a luncheon at the William Penn Hotel, then the party was taken to the Block House,



## BUST OF WILLIAM PITT

where they were met by a reception committee of the Daughters of the American Revolution. From there, the visitors proceeded to the Carnegie Institute, where they were received by the president, Samuel H. Church, Mrs. Church, and officials of the Institute. In the evening, there was a dinner at the Pittsburgh Golf Club presided over by Samuel H. Church, after which the visitors departed for Washington, D. C.

EDITOR'S NOTE—The foregoing is reproduced from "The Western Pennsylvania Historical Magazine," Pittsburgh, wherein it appeared as a contribution presented by the chairman of the publication committee of that periodical. In July of 1922 was presented in the July number of "Americana," an excellent article, "I have Called the Place Pittsburgh," (the words of John Forbes when in 1758 he stood upon the spot whereon was to rise a great city), being a condensation from "A History of Pittsburgh and Its Environs," from the pen of Mr. George T. Fleming, and published that year by the American Historical Society, Inc., the publishers also of "Americana." Our reproduction from the "Western Pennsylvania Historical Magazine" would seem to be altogether appropriate as a sequel to the narrative referred to.







# The Beginnings of Education

CONNECTICUT THE FIRST STATE TO INSTITUTE COMMON SCHOOLS

By HENRY A. TIRRELL, PRINCIPAL OF FREE ACADEMY, NORWICH



EDUCATION is the process by which an individual comes into possession of some part of human progress and thus fits himself to take part in the life of his own generation. This process, in a normal person, is taking place most of the time from birth to death. We are all creatures of the past; in physical appearance, in traits of body and mind, in desires, and in powers, we are the "heirs of all the ages" of human evolution. As there is abundant evidence that man has improved from his original condition, we may fairly say that the inheritance of each generation from the preceding one has steadily increased in value as human experience has covered new fields of action. Each generation progresses, first by acquiring the gains of former generations, then by new experiences of its own.

Somewhat after the beginning of written language the accumulation of records of the past became so great that specially trained men were needed to preserve and interpret these records. And so great has been the increase in the amount and complexity of human progress, that great institutions have arisen to secure for humanity the perpetual possession of its most valuable gains. These gains may be grouped under two heads: first, gains in aims; secondly, gains in powers. Under these two topics may be grouped, I believe, all the progress of every epoch of history as well as that of every individual in any epoch. Let us then briefly subdivide human aims and human powers.

In so far as man's aims are affected by a belief in the supernatural, we group them under the name of Religion. In so far as his aims affect his dealings with his fellow men we may group them under the head of Morality. The moral code has on the one side the sanction of the institution of Religion, and on the other side the support of the institution of Government.



## THE BEGINNINGS OF EDUCATION

Human powers may be subdivided into knowledge, or power in understanding; efficiency, or power in action; emotion, or power to feel and appreciate. It is evident then that the great institutions of mankind exist for the purpose of educating man in these aims and powers. The progress of humanity is the aggregate gain of individuals in spiritual inspiration, in moral desires, in respect for law, in power to enjoy what is best, in sympathy for others, in the virtues and habits that promote efficiency, in the understanding necessary to direct one's efforts intelligently.

The School is that institution which exists primarily for the distribution of knowledge. Now the mass of human knowledge has become so great that no one can hope to put into practice more than a very small part of it. It is necessary therefore that the individual choose a time when he will begin to put his attention on the details of his life work rather than on the broader understanding of human progress. This point of time marks the division between his liberal culture and his technical training.

When shall technical training begin? No one knows. The answer will vary with the individual's powers and opportunities. It is fair to say that liberal culture should be prolonged until its further continuance would interfere with the technical efficiency of the individual. But even technical information will be of little use to an individual unless he has the personal virtues that make him efficient. Strength of will, tact, good habits, and many other qualities, are to be ranked even higher than understanding. In modern times, therefore, the school has become in miniature a world of itself, in which the right minded pupil may learn lessons of morality, lessons of personal power, as well as lessons in understanding and appreciation.

Besides the four great institutions, there are other tremendous forces at work moulding the lives of individuals and communities;—Literature, Painting, Music, the Press, and too many other forces to mention, have today a greater influence than ever before in the history of the world. A full definition of education, then, in its broadest sense, would be something like this:—Education is the process whereby the individual, through the Home, the Church, the State, the School, and through all the remainder of his environment, learns his own noblest capabilities, learns to obey moral law, gains power to do, and understanding to direct that power. In treating those facts which it is most advisable that a man entering into life should accurately know, Ruskin says:



## THE BEGINNINGS OF EDUCATION

I believe that he ought to know three things: First, Where he is; secondly, Where he is going; thirdly, What he had best do, under those circumstances.

First: Where he is.—That is to say, what sort of a world he has got into; how large it is; what kind of creatures live in it, and how; what it is made of, and what may be made of it.

Secondly: Where he is going.—That is to say, what chances or reports there are of any other world besides this; what seems to be the nature of that other world.

Thirdly: What he had best do under the circumstances.—That is to say, what kind of faculties he possesses; what are the present state and wants of mankind; what is his place in society; and what are the readiest means in his power of attaining happiness and diffusing it. The man who knows these things, and who has had his will so subdued in the learning them, that he is ready to do what he knows he ought, I shall call educated; and the man who knows them not, uneducated—though he could talk all the tongues of Babel.

The men who settled Connecticut believed that every one should be able to read the word of God. Every church therefore had its teacher as well as its preacher. In advance of any Colonial legislation relating to common schools, almost every settlement had its teacher for part of the year at the most. The first laws did little more than guarantee the practice common in most towns. The settlers realized that the system of government dimly outlined in the "Mayflower Compact" of 1619, expanded in the Fundamental Orders of 1639, which to us of today stands forth as the "first written constitution known to history" and the foundation for republican form of government, made universal education essential to self-preservation.

The first law relating to common schools in Connecticut was enacted by the town of New Haven in 1641, and provided for a free school to be supported out of "the Common Stock." The next law was passed in Hartford in 1643, providing a free school for the poor children, with tuition charge for those able to pay. In 1646 a compilation of laws of the colony shows that every township of fifty families should maintain a school, and any town of one hundred families a grammar school. After the union of New Haven and Connecticut under the charter of 1662, many acts were passed relating to common schools. In 1700, every town of seventy families was required to keep constantly a schoolmaster able to teach reading and writing. Towns of smaller size had to keep a school half the year.





## THE BEGINNINGS OF EDUCATION

A grammar school was required in every shire town. The rate for school expenses was fixed at a minimum of forty shillings for every 1,000 in the county lists, and, if insufficient, was to be further secured by joint levy on inhabitants and parents of children. School committees, as distinct from other town officers, are first mentioned in 1708.

Parishes were recognized as school districts, though under general control of the towns. The close connection between churches and schools was possible because the population was homogeneous. But gradually came about a system of the separation of the church and school. By 1798, schools were managed by themselves as school societies or districts. The gradual return to town management by the consolidation of school districts followed the change of school laws in 1856. The types of schools of course changed as school laws became better adjusted to the needs of growing communities. In the various communities grew up private schools alongside the common elementary school. As types of such schools may be mentioned those described by Miss Caulkins in her "History of Norwich":

The schools in Norwich were neither intermitted or neglected during the Revolutionary War. An institution of higher grade than elementary was sustained in the town-plot through all the distractions of the country. It called in many boarders from abroad, and at one period, with Mr. Goodrich for its principal, acquired considerable popularity. This school is endorsed by its committee Andrew Huntington and Dudley Woodbridge, in 1783, as furnishing instruction to "young gentlemen and ladies, lads and misses, in every branch of literature, viz., reading, writing, arithmetic, the learned languages, logic, geography, mathematics," &c. Charles White, teacher.

The exhibitions of the school were commonly enlivened with scenic representations and interludes of music. A taste for such entertainments was prevalent. The young people, even after their emancipation from schools, would sometimes take part in theatrical representations. We learned from the town newspaper that in February, 1792, a select company of young ladies and gentlemen performed the tragedy of "Gustavus" and "The Mistakes of a Night" at the court-house.

The school-ma'am of former times, with her swarming hives of pupils, was an institution of which no sample remains at the present day. She was a life-long incumbent, never going out of one round of performance: always teaching little girls and boys to sit





## THE BEGINNINGS OF EDUCATION

up straight and treat their elders with respect; to conquer the spelling-book, repeat the catechism, never throw stones, never tell a lie; the boys to write copies, and the girls to work samplers. If they sought higher education than this, they passed out of her domain into finishing schools. Almost every neighborhood had its school-ma'am, and the memory is still fresh of Miss Sally Smith at the Landing, and Miss Molly Grover of the Town-plot.

Dancing-schools were peculiarly nomadic in their character; the instructor (generally a Frenchman) circulating through a wide district and giving lessons for a few weeks at particular points. Reels, jigs and contra-dances were most in vogue: the hornpipe and rigadon were attempted by only a select few; cotillions were growing in favor; the minuet much admired. In October, 1787, Griffith's dancing-school was opened at the house of Mrs. Billings in the town-plot. He taught five different minuets, one of them a duo, and another a cotillion-minuet. His lessons were given in the morning, with a scholars' ball once a fortnight. Ten years later, J. C. Devereux was a popular teacher of the dance. He had large classes for several seasons at the court house, and at Kinney's hotel in Chelsea.

In 1799, a school for young ladies was opened in the house of Major Whiting upon the Little Plain, by Mrs. Brooks, who devoted herself especially to feminine accomplishments, such as tambour, embroidery, painting in water-colors, instrumental music, and the French language. She had at first a large number of pupils from this and the neighboring towns, but the attendance soon declined, and the school was relinquished. In general the young ladies at such schools only remained long enough to practice a few tunes on the guitar, to tambour a muslin shawl and apron, or embroider a scripture scene, and this gave the finishing stroke to their education.

It was common then, as it is now, for parents with liberal means to send both their sons and daughters from home to obtain greater educational advantages. Young ladies from Norwich often went to Boston to finish their education, and now and then one was placed under the guardian care and instruction of the Moravian sisterhood in their seminary at Bethlehem, Pennsylvania. In 1782 an academical association was formed in the western part of the town-plot, consisting of forty-one subscribers and one hundred shares of rights. The old meeting-house of the Separatists was purchased and repaired for the use of this institution. The first principal was Samuel Austin, and the range of studies included Latin and Greek, navigation and the mathematics. Two popular school-books then just issued were introduced by Mr. Austin into this school—Webster's "Grammatical Institutes," and "Geography Made Easy," by Jedidiah Morse. Mr. Morse was himself subsequently a teacher in this institution, which was continued with varying degrees of prosperity



## THE BEGINNINGS OF EDUCATION

for thirty years or more. Alexander Macdonald, author of a school-book called "The Youth's Assistant," was one of its teachers. He died May 4, 1792, aged forty. Newcomb Kinney was at one time the principal, and had for his usher John Russ of Hartford, afterward member of Congress from 1819 to 1823. In 1800, Sebastian C. Cabot was the chief instructor. This school was kept in operation about thirty years. After it ceased, the lower part of the building was occupied by the public school, and the upper part, being suitably prepared, was in use for nearly twenty years as a Methodist chapel.

Dr. Daniel Lathrop, who died in 1782, left a legacy of £500 to the town for the support of a free grammar school, upon certain conditions, one of which was that the school should be kept during eleven months of each year. A school upon this foundation was opened in 1787, and continued for about fifty years. The brick school-house upon the green was built for its accommodation. Its first teacher was Ebenezer Punderson. But the most noted of its preceptors and the one who longest held his place was Mr. William Baldwin, an excellent instructor, faithful and apt to teach, but a rigid disciplinarian, and consequently more respected than beloved by his pupils, until after-life led them to reverse the decisions of earlier days. The young have seldom judgment and generosity sufficient to make them love those who control them for their good.

In 1843 the Lathrop donation was relinquished, with the consent of the legislature, to the heirs-at-law of Thomas Coit, a nephew of Dr. Lathrop, to whom by the provision of the testator's will it was in such case to revert. The investment had depreciated in value, and the restrictions with which the legacy was incumbered made it, in the advanced state of educational institutions, more of a hindrance than a help. The school had been for many years a great advantage to the town, but having accomplished its mission, it quietly ceased to be.

Evening schools of short duration, devoted to some special study, were not uncommon. The object was usually of a practical nature, and the students above childhood. The evening school of Consider Sterry, in 1798, covered, according to his program, the following range of instruction: "Bookkeeping in the Italian. American and English methods, mathematics, surveying and plotting of lands; price 1s. 6d. per week. Navigation and the method of finding longitude by lunar observations and latitude by the sun's altitude, one dollar for the complete knowledge."

Few men are gifted by nature with such an aptitude for scientific research as Consider Sterry. His attainments were all self-acquired under great disadvantages. Besides a work of lunar observations, he and his brother prepared an arithmetic for schools, and in company with Nathan Daboll, another self-taught scientific genius, he arranged and edited a system of practical navigation, entitled "The Seaman's Universal Daily Assistant," a work of nearly three



## THE BEGINNINGS OF EDUCATION

hundred pages. He also published several small treatises, wrote political articles for the papers, and took a profound interest in free-masonry.

In June, 1800, a school was inaugurated at the brick house on the Little Plain, with Mr. William Woodbridge for the principal. The assembly room was fitted up with desks and benches for an academical hall; both sexes were admitted, and the whole was under the supervision of a board of four citizens—Joseph Howland, Samuel Woodbridge, Thomas Fanning, Thomas Lathrop. But the situation was too remote from the centers of population, and after a trial of two or three years this school was relinquished for want of patronage.

A select school for young persons of both sexes was long sustained in the town-plot, but with varying tides of prosperity and decline. After a void of two or three years, it was revived in 1803 by Pelatiah Perit, who had just then graduated from Yale College, and was only eighteen years of age. Lydia Huntley, afterwards Mrs. Sigourney, was one of his pupils.

Among other teachers of the town-plot, who were subsequently honorable and noted in their several callings, the following are well remembered: Daniel Haskell, president of the Vermont University; Henry Strong, LL.D., eminent in the law; John Hyde, judge of county court, judge of probate, etc.; Dr. Peter Allen, a physician in Ohio; Rev. Joshua L. Williams, of Middletown; J. Bates Murdock, afterwards an officer of the Second War with Great Britain; Phineas L. Tracy, who from 1827 to 1833 was Member of Congress from Genesee county, New York.

A proprietary school was established at the Landing in 1797, by twenty-seven heads of families. The school-house was built on the slope of the hill above Church street, and the school was assembled and organized by the Rev. Walter King. David L. Dodge was the first regular teacher. In 1802, the Rev. Thomas Williams was the preceptor. He was noted for his assiduous attention to the health and morals as well as the studies of his pupils. He drilled them thoroughly in the "Assembly's Catechism," and used with his younger classes a favorite manual called "The Catechism of Nature." Other teachers of this school were Mr. Scarborough, Ebenezer Witter, John Lord (president of Dartmouth College), George Hill, and others. But no one retained the office for so long a term as Dyar T. Hinckley, of Windham, a man of earnest zeal in his profession, who was master of desk and bench in Norwich for twenty years or more, yet never removed his family or obtained a regular home in the place. He was a schoolmaster of the old New England type, devoted to his profession as an ulterior pursuit, and expending his best energies in the performance of its duties.

Schools at that period consisted uniformly of two sessions a





## THE BEGINNINGS OF EDUCATION

day, of three hours each, with a half-holiday on Saturday. Mr. Hinckley, in addition to this, had sometimes an evening or morning school, or both, of two hours each, for pupils not belonging to the day-school. The morning hours were devoted to young ladies, and from an advertisement of May, 1816, giving notice of a new term, we ascertain the precise time when the class assembled: "Hours from 5 o'clock to 7 A. M." Let no one hastily assume that this early summons would be neglected. Living witnesses remain to testify that it drew a goodly number of young aspirants who came out, fresh and vigorous, at sunrise or a little later, to pursue their studies.

Another institution that made its mark upon society was the Chelsea Grammar School, organized in 1806, but not incorporated till 1821, when it was empowered to hold real estate to the value of \$20,000. The school-house was on the side-hill opposite the Little Park, in Union street. This institution continued in operation, with some vacant intervals, about forty years, securing for its patrons the benefits of an academical education for their children without sending them home. Many prominent citizens of Norwich here received their first introduction to the classics, the sons in numerous instances taking possession of seats once occupied by their fathers.

No complete list of the preceptors has been obtained; but among the remembered names are several that have since been distinguished in literary and professional pursuits—Dr. Jonathan Knight, of New Haven; Charles Griswold, of Lyme; Jonathan Barnes, Wyllis Warner, Roswell C. Smith, Rev. Horace Bushnell, D. D., and Rev. William Adams, D. D. These men were all young at the time. The preceptors of most schools, here and elsewhere, at that period, were college graduates, accepting the office for a year, or at most for two or three years, between taking their degree and entering upon some other profession. But teachers to whom the vocation is but a stepping-stone to something beyond on which the mind is fixed, however faithful and earnest in their present duties, can never raise an institution to any permanent standard of excellence. It is well therefore that these temporary undertakings should give way to public schools more thoroughly systematized and conducted by persons who make teaching a profession.

In Chelsea, beginning about 1825, a series of expedients for enlarging the bounds of knowledge afford pleasing evidence of the gradual expansion of intellect and enterprise. A lyceum, a circulating library, a reading club, a society for mutual improvement, and a mechanics' association, were successively started, and though most of them were of brief duration, they were cheering tokens of an advance in the right path.

The Norwich Female Academy was incorporated in 1828. This institution was greatly indebted for its origin to the persevering exertion of Mr. Thomas Robinson, who was the principal agent of the





## THE BEGINNINGS OF EDUCATION

corporation. The brick hall erected for its accommodation stood on the hill facing the river, higher than any other building then on the declivity. Neither court-house nor jail had gained a foothold on the height, which was well forested, and toward the north surmounted by a prospect station, overtopping the woods, and known as Rockwell's Tower. The academy had the rugged hill for its background, but on other sides the view was varied and extensive; and when at recess the fair young pupils spread in joyous freedom over the height, often returning with wild flowers and oak-leaf garlands from the neighboring groves, neither poetry nor romance could exaggerate the interest of the scene.

The most prosperous year of this academy was 1833, when the number of pupils amounted to nearly ninety, many of them boarders from other places. But the exposed situation of the building, and the rough, steep ascent by which only it could be reached, were adverse to the prosperity of a female academy, and it soon became extinct—disbanded by wintry blasts and icy foot-paths.

In her "History of New London," Miss Caulkins thus covers the early history of public education in New London:

The town school located on this spot was the free grammar-school, which had for its main support the Bartlet and other public revenues, and had been originally established further up the hill, on Hempstead street, but had descended from thence about 1750. It was now removed a few rods to the north, and placed in the highway fronting the Erving lot (Church street in that part not having been opened), with no wall or inclosure around it, these not being deemed at that time necessary. The dwelling houses in this part of the town were few, and the neighboring hills and fields were the playground of the boys. In the rear was the Hallam lot, extending from Broad street to the old meeting-house square, with but one building upon it, and that in its north-east corner. A little more distant, in the rear of the courthouse, was the Coit "hollow-lot," shaded by large trees, and enriched with a rivulet of pure water (where Cottage street now runs). Still further back was a vacant upland lot (known as Fosdick's or Melally's lot), containing here and there a choice apple-tree, well known to schoolboys; this is now the second burial ground.

We have heard aged people revert to these scenes, the days when they were pupils of the free grammar-school, under the sway of "Master Owen"; when a house of worship had not given name and beauty to Zion's Hill, and only a cellar and a garden, tokens of former residence of one of the early settlers of the town, were to be seen on the spot where the Trott mansion now stands. (This is supposed to have been the place where stood the house on Charles Hill,



## THE BEGINNINGS OF EDUCATION

fortified in the time of the Indian war. The present house was built by Samuel Fosdick, at the head of Niantic river, but taken apart, brought into town, and erected in 1786. It has been occupied by J. P. Trott, its present owner, more than half a century.) Later than this (about 1796) General Huntington broke ground upon the hillside and erected his house (now Hurlbut's), in the style called cottage ornée. Beyond this, on the present Coit property, was a gushing spring, where the eager schoolboy slaked his thirst and cooled his heated brow; and not a quarter of a century has elapsed since the space now occupied by the Williams mansion and grounds was an open, irregular hillside over whose rugged surface troops of children, as they issued from the school-room, were seen to scatter in their various sports, like flocks of sheep spreading over the hills.

In the year 1795, the old school-house, a low, red building of one room, with a garret above, entered by a flight of stairs and a trap door, where refractory pupils were committed for punishment; and with desks and benches, which, though made of solid oak, were desperately marred by ink and knife; was abandoned, and the school removed to a larger building of brick, erected for its accommodation in the highway, south of the court house, where it fulfilled another period of its history, of nearly forty years. Here the chair of instruction, or more properly the throne (for the government was despotic), was occupied after 1800 by Dr. Dow, the number of whose subjects usually amounted to about 150, though sometimes rising to 200.

In 1833, a new and much superior edifice was erected for the grammar school on a lot south of the Second Congregational Church, chiefly through the exertion and liberality of Joseph Hurlbut, to whom a vote of thanks was rendered by the town, October 9th, 1833. In this building the Bartlet or grammar school is still continued under the care of the town, but the fund is inadequate to its support and the pupils are taxed to supply the deficiency.

The most noted teachers of this school since 1750, those whose office covered the longest term of years, were John Owen (the remains of "Master Owen," were laid in the second burial ground, but no memorial stone marks the spot. If a sufficient number of his old pupils are yet upon the stage of life to undertake the charge, it would be a creditable enterprise for them to unite and raise some simple but fitting monument to his memory. He was for many years both town and city clerk)—and Ulysses Dow; both were peculiar characters, and each remained in office nearly forty years. The former died in 1801, aged sixty-five; the latter in 1844, aged seventy-eight.

The Union School was an establishment incorporated by the General Assembly in October, 1774. The petition for the act was signed by twelve proprietors, who state that they had "built a com-



## THE BEGINNINGS OF EDUCATION

modious school house, and for several years past hired and supported a school-master." The original proprietors were Richard Law, Jeremiah Miller, Duncan Stewart, Silas Church, Thomas Allen, John Richards, Robinson Mumford, Joseph Cristophers, Marvin Wait, Nathaniel Shaw, Jr., Roger Gibson, Thomas Mumford.

This school was intended to furnish facilities for a thorough English education and the classical preparation necessary for entering college. The school-house stood on State street, and by the subsequent opening of Union street was made a corner lot. This was a noted school in its early days, yielding a larger income than ordinary schools, and the station of preceptor was regarded as a post of honor. It has been heretofore stated that Nathan Hale held that office in 1775, and that he left the school to enter the army. He was the first preceptor after the act of incorporation. A few only of his successors can be named. Seth Williston, a graduate of Dartmouth College and since known as a divine of considerable eminence, was in charge for two years. Jacob B. Gurley, from the same seminary, succeeded Williston in May, 1794, and was the principal for three years. (Mr. Gurley is a native of Mansfield, Connecticut, but since 1794 a resident of New London, where he began to practice as an attorney in 1797.) Ebenezer Learned, a native of the town, and a graduate of Yale College, filled the chair of instruction in 1799. Knight, of the Medical College of New Haven, Olmstead of Yale, Mitchell of the University of North Carolina, and many other names of note, are among the teachers after 1800.

The school house was taken down and the land sold after 1830, and in 1833 a reorganization took place, a new charter was obtained and a brick school house flourished for a few years, but could not be long sustained. The Bartlet and common schools gathered in the great mass of pupils; the number wishing to pursue a more extensive system of education was small, and the Union School, an old and venerated establishment, was discontinued. In 1851 the building was sold to the Bethel Society, by whom it has been converted into a commodious house of worship.

No provision seems to have been made for the education of females in anything but needle-work, reading, writing, and the first principles of arithmetic, until the year 1799. A female academy was then built by a company of proprietors, in Green street, and incorporated by the legislature. It continued in operation, with some intervals of recess, about thirty years. The property was then sold and the company dissolved in 1834. A new female academy was built the same year on Broad street, and the system of instruction commenced by Rev. Dr. Daniel Huntington. This institution has hitherto met with fair encouragement. Since 1841 it has been in charge of H. P. Farnsworth, principal. The pupils are arranged in two departments, and for a few years past the average number has been about eighty.





## THE BEGINNINGS OF EDUCATION

Private schools of similar nature were found in other towns of the county. Higher education was sought by many leading men. Miss Caulkins gives a list of eighty-six names of men native to New London who had received a college education up to the year 1850. A similar list for Norwich may be found in the "Norwich Jubilee Volume," and includes over 130 names.

Speaking in broad terms, the progress since 1856 might be grouped under the following heads: Better trained teachers, better text books, better school buildings and equipment, better supervision, better teaching methods, compulsory attendance laws, graded schools, evening schools, continuation schools, trade schools, high schools, medical inspection, better financial support of schools, education of the deaf, care of the defective and the orphaned and destitute, restriction of child labor, and many forms of welfare work closely connected with education.

Connecticut was the first State in the Union to set apart and establish a fund for the support of common schools. This was done after the sale of the "Western Reserve" lands in 1795 for \$1,200,000. By the Constitution of 1818, Article 8, Par. 2, this fund is forever set apart for public schools:

§ 2. The fund, called the "School Fund," shall remain a perpetual fund, the interest of which shall be inviolably appropriated to the support and encouragement of the public or common schools throughout the state, and for the equal benefit of all the people thereof. The value and amount of said fund shall, as soon as practicable, be ascertained in such manner as the General Assembly may prescribe, published and recorded in the Comptroller's office; and no law shall ever be made authorizing said fund to be diverted to any other use than the encouragement and support of public or common schools, among the several school societies, as justice and equity shall require.

By the Charter of 1662, given by Charles II., Connecticut was bounded on the north by the Massachusetts line, and on the south by the "sea" (Long Island sound), and extended from Narragansett bay to the "South sea" (Pacific ocean). The parts of this territory covered by the grants already made to New York and New Jersey were never claimed by Connecticut; and the part covered by Pennsylvania was given up to the claims of that State; the remaining portion was held by Connecticut till after the Revolutionary War,





## THE BEGINNINGS OF EDUCATION

when it was all ceded to the United States, except about 3,300,000 acres in what is now the northwestern part of Ohio. The territory was known as the "Western Reserve," or the "Lands west of Pennsylvania." In May, 1795, an act was passed appropriating the interest on the moneys which should be received on the sale of these lands to the support of schools, "to be paid over to the said societies in their capacity of school societies according to the lists of polls and ratable estate of such societies respectively." The societies here referred to were formerly known as parishes or societies, and later as ecclesiastical societies. This act recognizes them in a distinct capacity and denominates them school societies.

The "lands west of Pennsylvania" were sold August, 1795, for \$1,200,000, by a committee appointed for that purpose, and their report was accepted by the legislature in October of the same year. The first apportionment of the income of the school fund was made in 1779.

We have spoken of the importance placed on education by the early settlers. The settlers also felt a responsibility for the welfare of the Indians. Many of these aborigines were suffering from drunkenness and ignorance, and it was not easy to get them to take an interest in a higher life. The pastors in New London and Norwich did their best. We submit a curious document, signed by the Mohegan Chief, Uncas.

When King Charles the First sent his red-faced well-beloved cousin "a Bible to show him the way to heaven, and a sword to defend him from his enemies," Uncas valued the latter gift much more than he did the former. But I am happy to bring forward one new fact to show that he was not at all times indifferent to the other present. It has often been stated that Uncas uniformly opposed the introduction of Christianity among the people of his tribe. Within a few days past an original document has come to light which bears important testimony on this interesting question. It is nothing less than a bond in which, under his own signature, the sachem promises to attend the ministrations of the Rev. Mr. Fitch, whensoever and wheresoever he may choose to appoint. This paper is so remarkable that we give it in full. If we cannot call it the sachem's creed or confession of faith, it is at least his covenant:



## THE BEGINNINGS OF EDUCATION

Be it known to all men and in special to the Authority of The Colony of Conecticott That I Uncas sachim of the Munheags, now resident in Pamechaug doe by these presents firmly engage and binde my selfe, that I will from time to time and at all times hereafter, in a constant way and manner attend up Mr. James Fitch Minister of Norwich, at all such seasons as he shall appoint for preaching and to praying with the Indians either at my now residence, or wheresoever els he shall appoint for that holy service, and further I doe faithfully promis to Command all my people to attend the same, in a constant way and solemn manner at all such times as shall be sett by the sayd Mr. James Fitch minister, alsoe I promis that I will not by any wayes or means what soe ever, either privatly or openly use any plots or contrivances by words or actions to affright or discourage any of my people or others, from attending the Good work aforesayd, upon penalty of suffering the most greivous punishment that can be inflicted upon me, and Lastly I promis to encourage all my people by all Good wayes and means I can, in the due observance of such directions and instructions, as shall be presented to them by the sayd Mr. James Fitch aforesayd, and to the truth hereof this seaventh day of June in the year one thousand six hundred seventy and three I have hereunto set my hand or mark.

Witnessed by us

John Talcott

Tho: Stanton, Ser.

Samuell Mason.

mark

The \* of Uncass

Let us look with charity, my friends, upon this promise, remembering that every man, red face and pale face alike, is accepted "according to that which he hath, and not according to that which he hath not."

Of interest in education on the part of New London county citizens, the following is a proof, quoted from an address by Dr. Gilman. Yale College is even more indebted to Norwich. Before it was chartered by the State, Major James Fitch (another son of Reverend James) gave to the new collegiate school a farm of 637 acres of land, and offered the glass and nails for a house. The following is his proposal:

Majr. Fitch's Generosity Proposed 1701.—In that it hath pleased y Lord our God as a token for God To us and children after us to put it into the hearts of his faithful ministers: to take soe great paines, and be at soe considerable charge for setting up a colegeat schoole amongst us and now for farther promoating, of this God pleasing worke I humbly, freely and heartily offer, on demand to provid glass for a house and if people doe not come up to offer what



## THE BEGINNINGS OF EDUCATION

is reasonable and needfull that I will than provid nails of all sorts: to be used in building a houses and hall: 21y I give a farme, 637 Acers of land and when I come home I will send ye draft and laying out to Mr. Danl. Taylor that he may make such a Deed proper in such a case the farme of value at 150£ I will alsoe take some pains to put it in a way of yearely profit 30 £ charge I hope will bring 20 £ p yeare in a little time.

Newhaven October 16 1701

JAMES FITCH.

It was this noble gift which insured at that time the establishment of the now venerable institution—Yale College. Not many years after, Dr. Daniel Lathrop, beside a large donation to the public school of his native place, gave £500 to the college without limitations; and within the memory of most of those now present, Dr. Alfred E. Perkins, impressed with the thought that “a true university in these days is a collection of books,” gave a fund of \$10,000 to the college library in New Haven, thus perpetuating his name in grateful remembrance, and exerting an influence which will increase till the college and the country are no more. Three citizens of Norwich, “to the manner born,” have thus given to Yale College the largest donations which, at each successive time, its treasury had received from any individual, and their example has been followed by many others, giving in proportion to their means.

The most remarkable of the attempts to civilize the Indians is doubtless that of Rev. Eleazer Wheelock of Lebanon. The remarkable results of this effort with Samson Occum is shown in the following account of the origin of Dartmouth College, taken from Hurd’s “History of New London County, Connecticut”:

In 1735, Eleazer Wheelock, a clergyman of fine talents, of earnest character, and of devoted piety, was settled over the Second Congregational Church, in the north part of the town of Lebanon. Like many other ministers of the day and afterwards, he had several young men in his family, whom he taught the higher branches of English and in the classics.

In December, 1743, a young Mohegan Indian, about twenty years of age, Samson Occum, whose name has since become more famous than that of any other of the tribe, unless perhaps the first Uncas, applied to Mr. Wheelock for admission among his scholars. Occum was born in 1723, at Mohegan, and grew up in the pagan faith and the rude and savage customs of his tribe. During the great religious awakening of 1739-40 he had become convinced of the truth of Christianity, and deeply alarmed for his own lost condi-





## THE BEGINNINGS OF EDUCATION

tion. For six months he groaned in the gloom of his darkness, but then light broke into his soul, and he was seized with an irresistible impulse to carry this great light to his benighted race, and to become a teacher to his lost brethren, and with his heart swelling with this impulse he now stood before Wheelock, asking to be instructed for this great work.

It was not in the heart of Wheelock to resist this appeal, and he at once admitted him to his school and family with open arms, and in the spirit of his mission. Occom had already learned the letters of the alphabet, and could spell out a few words, and such was his zeal and devotion to study that in four years he was fitted to enter college; but his health had been so impaired by intense application, and lacking also the means, he never entered. Leaving school, he returned to his tribe, preaching and teaching salvation through Christ alone, with power and effect, supporting himself meantime, like the rest of his tribe, by hunting and fishing, and the rude Indian arts of making baskets and other Indian utensils, and occasionally teaching small Indian schools, but during all this time still pursuing his own studies in theology and Bible literature.

In this mission he visited other tribes. In 1748 he went over to Long Island and spent several years there among the Montauk, the Shenecock, and other tribes, preaching and teaching with great success. At one time a great revival occurred under his labors there, during which many Indians were converted. August 29, 1759, he was ordained by the Suffolk Presbytery of Long Island, and was ever after regarded as a regular member of that ecclesiastical body.

The case of Occom and its instructive results attracted wide attention from the first start, and Mr. Wheelock determined to open his school to other Indian youths who desired to engage in and be fitted for the same work and in a short time it became exclusively an "Indian School" for missionary purposes, so that by 1762 he had more than twenty Indian students, preparing for the conversion of their countrymen.

This new movement attracted the earnest attention of the leading clergymen and Christian philanthropists throughout all New England and the Northern colonies. To all who looked with anxiety for the conversion and civilization of the aborigines of this part of North America, this school was long considered the brightest and most promising ground of hope. Notes of encouragement came pouring in from various sources throughout all the New England colonies, from ministers' councils, from churches, and from eminent leaders and philanthropists, with money contributions, cheering on the movement, and all aiming to increase the numbers in training, and to give to the school a wider sweep in its influence. Probably no school in this or any other land or age ever awakened so widespread and intense an interest or seemed freighted with such a





## THE BEGINNINGS OF EDUCATION

precious and hopeful mission as did then this little parochial school, kept in the obscure parsonage of a country minister.

In 1765 a general conference of the friends of the school was held, at which it was determined to send Samson Occom to England to show to our English brethren there what Christianity had done for him, and what it could do for the natives of North America, and that Rev. Nathaniel Whitaker, of Norwich, should go with him, to enlist co-operation in the cause and to solicit contributions in its aid. Occom was then forty-three years old, well educated, and spoke English clearly and fluently. His features and complexion bore every mark of his race, but he was easy and natural in social manners, frank and cordial, but modest in conversation, and his deportment in the pulpit was such as to command deep attention and respect. He could preach extemporaneously and well, but usually wrote his sermons. Such, then, was this son of the forest, and such his sublime mission to the English mother-land—to convert the natives of a pagan continent to Christianity and civilization through the ministry of pagan converts of their own race.

His appearance in England produced an extraordinary sensation, and he preached with great applause in London and other principal cities of Great Britain and Scotland to crowded audiences. From the 16th of February, 1766, to the 22nd of July, 1767, he delivered between three and four hundred sermons, many of them in the presence of the king and the royal family and the great nobles of the land. Large contributions were taken up after each of these discourses; the king himself gave £200, and in the whole enterprise £700 sterling were collected in England and about £300 in Scotland.

This success resulted in transferring Wheelock's Indian School to New Hampshire, which it was thought would be a better place for an Indian seminary, as being more retired and less exposed to disturbing influences than the more thickly settled colony of Connecticut. It was then incorporated as Dartmouth College (taking its name from the pious and noble Earl of Dartmouth, whom Occom's mission in England had warmly enlisted in the cause), for the special object and purpose of educating and training Indian youths for the ministry and missionary work of their race; but after the death of Eleazer Wheelock, its founder and president, and especially after the death of his son, John Wheelock, who succeeded him as president, its original and distinctive character as an Indian seminary gradually changed until it became, as it still remains, assimilated in character and purpose with the other colleges of the country; and so the glowing dream, the fervid zeal, and the sanguine hopes and expectations of its great-souled founders faded away.

In 1771, a Mohegan Indian, named Moses Paul, was tried at New London and condemned to death for the murder, in a drunken brawl, of Moses Clark. A large assembly of English and Indians



## THE BEGINNINGS OF EDUCATION

collected to witness the execution. At the request of the prisoner, Samson Oocom was appointed by the authorities to preach a funeral sermon in the presence of the poor wretch, as was the custom of the time, just before he was launched into eternity. Upon his own coffin, in front of the pulpit, sat the doomed man. Next around him were seated his brethren of the Mohegan tribe, the audience filling the rest of the church, a great crowd surrounding it, and a military company acting as guard.

The sermon is still preserved in the library of the Connecticut Historical Society at Hartford (Pamphlet No. 225); the text from Romans vi. 23: "For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord." It is not eloquent, it is not grand oratory, but it is something higher than eloquence, and in its sad and solemn moaning over the degraded and lost condition of his race, in their pagan darkness, their wickedness, the awful consequences of drunkenness, their besetting sin, it has all the moving power and pathos of a Hebrew wail.

The first part of the discourse dwells at length upon the peculiar meaning and significance of the term "death," as used in the text, its endless character, and was addressed to the audience at large, and rising with the vastness of the idea, he exclaimed, "Eternity! O Eternity! Who can measure it? Who can count the years thereof? Arithmetic fails, the thoughts of men and angels are drowned in it. How shall we describe eternity? To what shall we compare it? Were a fly to carry off one particle of this globe to such a distance that it would take ten thousand years to go and return for another, and so continue till he had carried off, particle by particle, once in ten thousand years, the whole of this globe and placed it in that distant space, just as it is now here, after all this, eternity would remain the same unexhausted duration! And this eternal death must be the certain portion of all impenitent sinners, be they who they may, Negroes, Indians, English, or what nation soever; honorable or ignoble, great or small, rich or poor, bond or free, all who died in their sins must go to hell together, 'for the wages of sin is death.' "

He next addressed the doomed prisoner upon his coffin, pointed out to him the enormity of his crime, and how by drunkenness, and by despising the warnings and counsels of Christian teachers, he had been led to it; explained to him the way of salvation, urging him with pathos and earnest energy at once to accept it, and like the dying thief upon the cross beside the crucified Saviour, to throw himself upon the mercy of that same Saviour, and so, even at the eleventh hour, escape eternal death.

He then turned to the Mohegans present: "My poor kindred!" he exclaimed, "you see the woeful consequences of sin by seeing this, our poor, miserable countryman, now before us, who is to die for his



## THE BEGINNINGS OF EDUCATION

sins and his great crime, and it was especially the sin of drunkenness that brought this destruction and untimely death upon him. There is a dreadful woe denounced from the Almighty against drunkards; and it is this sin, this abominable, this beastly sin of drunkenness that has stript us of every desirable comfort in this life. By this sin we have no name or credit in the world; for this sin we are despised, and it is right and just, for we despise ourselves. By this sin we have no comfortable houses, nor anything comfortable in our houses, neither food, nor raiment, nor decent utensils; we go about with ragged and dirty clothing and almost naked, most of the time half starved, and obliged to pick up and eat such foods as we can find; and our poor children suffering every day, often crying for food, and we have nothing for them, and in the cold winter shivering and crying, pinched with cold. All this comes from the love of strong drink. And this is not all the misery and evil we bring upon ourselves by this sin, for when we are intoxicated with strong drink we drown our rational powers, by which we are distinguished from the brute creation; we unman ourselves, and sink not only to a level with the beasts of the field, but seven degrees beneath them; yea, we bring ourselves to a level with the devils; and I don't know but we make ourselves worse than the devils, for I never heard of a drunken devil."

He closed his discourse with a fervid exhortation to his Mohegan brethren to break off from their sins, and especially from their besetting sin of drunkenness, by a gospel repentance; to "take warning by the doleful sight now before us," and from the dreadful judgments that have befallen poor drunkards. "You that have been careless all your day now awake to righteousness and be concerned for your never-dying souls." Fight against all sin, and especially against your besetting sin, "and above all things believe in the Lord Jesus Christ, and you shall have eternal life, and when you come to die your souls will be received into heaven, there to be with the Lord Jesus and all the saints in glory, which God in His infinite mercy grant, through Jesus Christ, our Lord. Amen."

In 1786 he gathered a few Mohegans and several other Indians from other tribes in Connecticut, Rhode Island, and Long Island, and went with them to Oneida county, New York, and there formed the nucleus of the clan afterwards known as the Brothertown tribe among the Six Nations. He continued as their minister, acting also as a missionary among the Six Nations, until his death, which occurred in July, 1792, more than three hundred Indians following him mournfully and tearfully to the grave.

Another young Mohegan, Joseph Johnson, educated in Wheelock's school, became also a preacher of great power and influence. He was sent early as a missionary to the Six Nations of New York,





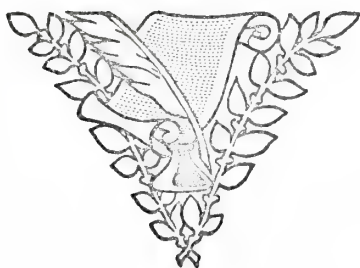
## THE BEGINNINGS OF EDUCATION

and afterwards co-operated with Occom in the establishment there of the Brothertown clan. At the breaking out of the war of the Revolution the Six Nations, a powerful and warlike Indian confederacy, were at first much inclined to favor the English side and to become the allies of the British forces of Canada, and to this end were strongly tempted by the insidious wiles of British emissaries, backed by the glittering display and lavish use of British gold.

Against this danger both Johnson and Occom exerted the whole weight of their great moral powers and their wide influence, the former especially appealing for help, in averting this impending danger, to Governor Trumbull and other friends here, and to the Assembly. His zeal and patriotic efforts attracted the attention of Gen. Washington, and while at Cambridge, directing the siege of Boston, he wrote him a letter with his own hand, dated Feb. 20, 1776, thanking him for his patriotic and important services, and in closing he says, "Tell the Indians that we do not ask them to take up the hatchet for us unless they choose it, we only desire that they will not fight against us. We want that the chain of friendship should always remain bright between our friends, the Six Nations, and us. We recommend you to them, and hope by spreading the truths of the gospel among them it will always keep the chain bright."

---

EDITOR'S NOTE—The latter pages of the foregoing narrative are of special interest as relating to the beginnings of Yale and Dartmouth Colleges.







## Misunderstood Mythology

BY JACOB P. DUNN, SECRETARY OF INDIANA HISTORICAL SOCIETY,  
INDIANAPOLIS, INDIANA

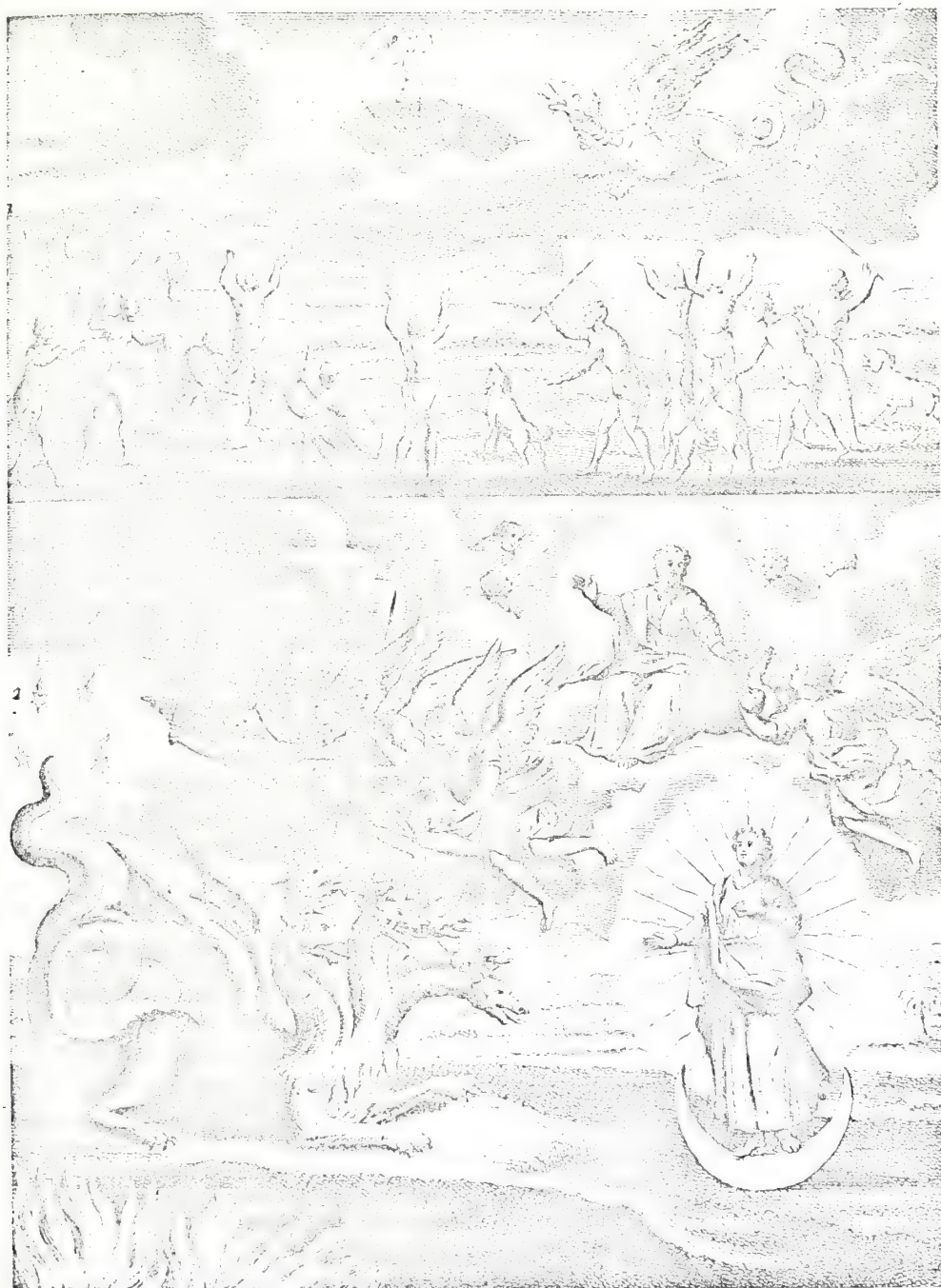


IN THE last number of "Americana" (Jan., 1923), in my article on "Marquette's Monsters," I presented the explanation of the noted pictographs on what has become known as "Piasa Rock." The average reader has probably been somewhat surprised that such extraordinary delusions should have existed as have prevailed concerning these pictographs; and it may be of historical value to give some explanation of the rise of such delusions. This will perhaps be made more lucid by reproducing with this article contemporary illustrations showing the conceptions that such Europeans as Champlain and Father Lafitau derived from descriptions by the Indians of their Manito of the Waters; and also the modern art conception derived from the same source.

In one sense it is strange that, after more than four centuries of contact with the Indians, the American public should know so little concerning them. In another sense it is quite natural, because the prevalent ideas are derived chiefly from poetry and works of fiction. Longfellow's "Hiawatha" and Cooper's novels are more responsible for American opinions of the Indians and their customs and beliefs than all of the scientific works on the subject that have ever been published.

To illustrate by a "fundamental" concept, Longfellow's Gitche Manito is the chief basis for the almost universal American belief that the Indians of themselves had arrived at a conception of a supreme and beneficent being before the whites came in contact with them, and which they called The Great Spirit, which is what Gitche Manito means literally in the Ojibwa language. It is true that the Ojibwas now use this term for "God," but they got that concept from the missionaries, and the original Gitche Manito was The Great Serpent, who was neither supreme nor beneficent, but merely





Above, Indians frightening off Eclipse of the Moon. Below, Dragon and Man-Child (Revelations, Chap. XII). From Lantau's "Moeurs des Sauvages Ameriquarius," Paris, 1724. Falling Stars and Flames of Hell at left indicate origin of Bible Dragon



## MISUNDERSTOOD MYTHOLOGY

the most powerful of the manitos, and therefore the most to be feared.

But the use of this term was not continued by all of the Algonkin tribes. The Miamis were described by the early missionaries as the "most docile" of the western tribes, and they were the first to accept Christianity. At the outset, they used Ki-ci-ma-net-o-wa (which is their form of the Ojibwa term) for "God;" but when the missionaries learned that this manito corresponded more nearly to the devil than to God, they abandoned its use so completely that I have never found a Miami who had heard the word, though they all understood it at once as meaning The Great Spirit. They use Ka-ci-hi-wi-a, or "The Creator," for "God."

When Count Volney visited the United States, he obtained in 1797 a Miami vocabulary in which he gives for "God" the alternative "Kitchi Manetoua, or Kajehelangoua." The latter word—Ka-ci-hi-lan-gwa—means He Who Made Us All; but it refers not to the Great Serpent, but to The Great Hare, who was the Algonkin demiurge, and is known to various tribes as Michaboo, Nanaboush, Manabozho, Onisakedjak, etc. It is no more surprising that such a confusion should be made by a casual observer than that there should be general misconceptions; but it is somewhat surprising that in two authoritative works Michaboo is confused with Micibisi, the Water Manito, (Jesuit Relations, Vol. 30; p. 328; Brinton's "Myths of the New World," p. 197), for they were both prominent figures, and were traditional enemies.

In fact, the Algonkin creation myth begins with their quarrel, which caused the water manitos to cover the earth with a deluge, from which Michaboo and the spirit animals took refuge on a raft (Jesuit Relations, Vol. 5, p. 155; Vol. 6, p. 157); although the recorded legends of some of the tribes begin with this group on the raft, and no explanation of their being there. Michaboo told them that if he could get some earth from under the water, he could make an island on which they could live. The beaver first dove to get it, but came up after a long stay, insensible from exhaustion, and unsuccessful. Then the otter tried it with no better success. Then the muskrat went down, and came up insensible, twenty-four hours later, but in one of his paws they found a grain of sand from which Michaboo made an island, and they went ashore. This island he enlarged from time to time; and when an animal died, or a dead fish was washed





## MISUNDERSTOOD MYTHOLOGY

up on the beach, he made a man of the carcase; and this was the reason given for the names of their various clans.

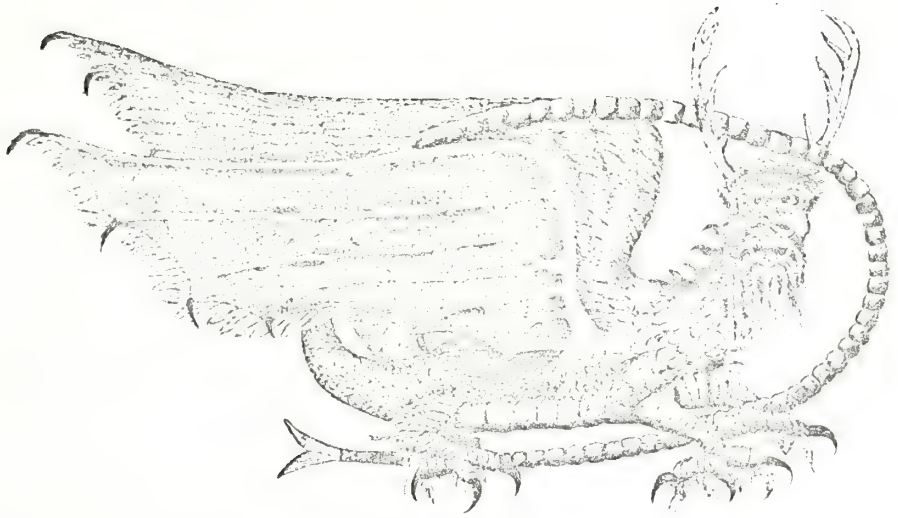
In none of the New World concepts of supernaturals is there any approach to the God of the New Testament, or of the Hebrews, or of Plato. The manitos were all beings with supernatural powers, but with human characters, like the gods and goddesses of the Old World mythologies. But in four centuries there have been very material changes in the theology of both whites and Indians. To the early missionaries the manitos were simply "devils,"—not theoretical devils, but actual ones. The early missionaries to the Peorias introduced bodily into their translation of the story of Genesis an account of the rebellion of the angels under the lead of Lucifer, and their expulsion from heaven; and informed the Indians that these fallen angels were their manitos. The fall of the angels is unquestionably good Bible doctrine, and was plainly taught by Christ and His disciples; but it is not usually given any practical application in modern religious teaching.

In those earlier days, the chief function of the American "melting-pot" was the adjustment of Old World and New World ideas; and naturally the Indian's ideas changed most. He had no written nor printed language, no Scriptures, no fixed creeds. His religion was handed down by the medicine men, and the old men who instructed the youth orally. These did not hesitate to adopt a new idea if it seemed to be an improvement on previous ones. In consequence, even the non-Christian Indians have made very material changes in their mythology. I ran across a striking illustration of this in a Wis-sa-ka-teak-wa (all the "a" sounds as in "father," and the accents on the second and fourth syllables) story.

But first, it may be well to explain that Wissakatcakwa is a sort of incarnation of Michaboo, and that the stories about him constitute a large part of present-day Algonkin folk-lore. In these, however, the hero has little of the original character of Michaboo, but, while he occasionally exercises supernatural powers, and converses freely with birds and animals, he is usually represented as a rather silly fellow who attempts impossible things. As Brinton aptly puts it: "This is a low, modern and corrupt version of the character of Michaboo, bearing no more resemblance to his real and ancient one than the language and acts of our Saviour and the Apostles in the







THE PIASA BIRD



Above, Conventional "Piasa Bird," following Marquette's description. Below, the Dragon as included in "Fauna of Canada," by Champlain



## MISUNDERSTOOD MYTHOLOGY

coarse Mystery Plays of the Middle Ages do to those revealed by the Evangelists."

In this particular story, Wissakateakwa meets a Frenchman, Ma-ti-ko-ca. This word, meaning literally "big ship," is a monument to LaSalle's voyage up the lakes in the *Griffon*; and, in all probability the ingenious LaSalle selected that name for his craft as the French counterpart of the Water Manito. The two started down the river in a canoe, but, owing to injudicious singing of the Frenchman when near the Manito's resort, were sucked into its lurking place, and behold, instead of the traditional Micibisi, it is a seven-headed monster—Swa-tats-win-da-pi-kang ma-net-o-wa. However, the monster finally goes to sleep, and Wissakateakwa blows it up with a keg of gunpowder that is conveniently at hand; after which the two adventurers and other unfortunate captives make their escape.

This seven-headed monster is not an Indian concept. There is no indication of more than one head in Marquette's description or the pictures of Champlain and Lafitau. It was obviously derived from the Bible dragon. For a terrifying monster, seven heads are plainly better than one, and the Indian story tellers altered their mythology accordingly. On the other hand, it was equally natural for Champlain to assume that the Water Manito was an actual animal. Nicolas Perrot did the same when, in his description of Indian divinities, he said: "Those which are on the earth consist of all evil and harmful creatures, particularly the serpents, panthers, and other animals or birds similar to griffons." Griffons and dragons were not wholly out of date in France.

But of all causes for misconceptions of Indian mythology, the most potent is our lack of knowledge of their languages. Anyone may assure himself of our extraordinary ignorance in this field by undertaking to learn the meaning of the Indian place names, which are so common in this country, and trying to reconcile the conflicting opinions concerning them. Max Muller expressed surprise that Americans had not given more attention to the record and study of Indian languages, and so have others. The obvious reason is that there is no practical or pecuniary profit in it. There has been an occasional Trumbull, Brinton or Shea who did valuable work, apparently from the love of knowledge, but their efforts were never adequately appreciated by the public. Schoolcraft came nearest secur-



## MISUNDERSTOOD MYTHOLOGY

ing popular appreciation; but he did it by making language a minor consideration, and devoting his attention to descriptive writing.

In our Indian schools the use of Indian languages is discouraged, because the practical object is to teach the pupils English, and thereby help fit them for the struggles of life; so that even among the Indians the knowledge of their native tongue is dying out. Our governmental efforts for the preservation of Indian languages have been curiously perverted, and today the ranking ethnologists of the country are groping in the dark, under the influence of the canons of German philology, which have no more application to Indian languages than the rules of English grammar have to the Zulu or Chinese languages.

In the main, the real study of Indian languages in this country has been by missionaries; but here again the practical end of benefiting the Indians has caused most of their printed works to be published in Indian without translation and therefore as unintelligible to the average American student as if they were in cuneiform inscriptions. There are, however, scattered over this country and Europe, a number of manuscript Indian dictionaries and grammars which are the products of years of patient labor, and which would give an entirely new aspect to this field for research if they were put in print. These manuscripts have never been printed on account of the lack of money by those who did the work; and today, if any American wishes to erect a monument more imperishable than granite, he could not do it more surely than by endowing a society for the Preservation of Indian Languages, to take up this work. The crying need is not for essays and discussions, but for the presentation of the material in form available for the use of students. The opportunity for doing this work is decreasing every year. Let me cite an illustration.

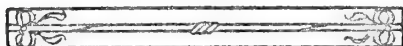
In the John Carter Brown Library, at Providence, Rhode Island, is preserved a manuscript French-Peoria dictionary, made by priests in the Illinois country two centuries ago or more. It is a veritable mine of information. John Gilmary Shea, the great Catholic historian, was very much impressed with its value, and attempted to print it in his Cramoisy texts but had to abandon it after printing twenty-four pages, on account of lack of financial support. The Peoria language is not now spoken, but it had only slight dialect difference from the Miami, and when allowance for



this difference is made in speaking, the Miamis understand the text, which becomes in fact their own language.

A few words, however, have gone out of use—both French and Indian words—and the translators have occasionally resorted to expressions that are not easily grasped by the modern Indians, especially in their effort to convey ideas that are abstract, or that have developed a religious sense. Having no conception of God similar to ours, the Indians had no word to express “worship,” or “holiness,” and the like, in the sense in which we use them. The concept of “angel” was entirely out of Indian range of thought, and so the missionaries naturalized it in the word an-ge-la, plural an-ge-la-ki, which met all the requirements of Miami grammar. For some ten years past I have given spare hours to a translation of this document into English-Miami, completing about one-third of it. In that time I have found four Miamis who were competent for the translation work. Three of them are now dead.

When one considers the vast expenditure of labor and money that have been made in recovering the languages of Egypt and Assyria, this neglect of dying American languages becomes the more appalling, for an Indian language, if once lost, is lost forever, as they have no written language. It is true that their pictographs are usually language; but these are wholly ideographic, and have no relation to the spoken languages. To a speculative mind there is ground for wonder what future generations will think of us if we allow these languages to be lost.







# Palisades Interstate Park, New Jersey

BY FRANK R. HOLMES, NEW YORK CITY



THE natural scenic beauties of a country are amongst its most valuable possessions. For centuries the river Rhine has been exploited by the brush of the painter and the pen of the poet, and extolled by tourists representing every nation of the world. What the Rhine is to Continental Europe, the Hudson is to the American Republic; this naturally creates a sentiment amongst her citizens to preserve the natural beauties of the river shores. Commercialism had commenced to despoil its western shore where the noted cliffs known as "The Palisades" reared their uncrowned heads towards the azure of the skies, when the State of New Jersey, by an act of the Legislature known as Chapter 415, laws of 1895, created a board of commissioners to confer with a similar representation from the State of New York, the primary object being the acquisition of the Palisades of the Hudson river by the United States.

Governor John W. Griggs appointed as the New Jersey Commissioners, Messrs. Henry D. Whiton, Edward P. Murray, and C. B. Thurston. The first report of the Commissioners was made December 5, 1895, in which it was suggested that the States of New York and New Jersey should assent to the acquisition of the United States of certain lands fronting on the Hudson river, within which the cliffs known as the Palisades were situated. These lands were to be exempted from all State taxation and assessments. These suggestions were approved by the Legislatures of the two States and became known as the Laws of New York, chapter 15, 1896, and Laws of New Jersey, chapter 23, 1896.

The Hon. William J. Sewell, then United States Senator from New Jersey, introduced a bill in the Senate, and the Hon. Ben L. Fairchild in the House of Representatives, which was referred to the Committee on Military Affairs, and through its recommendation a bill was passed to establish a military park upon the Palisades of the Hudson. The tract as far as its boundaries in the State of



## PALISADES INTERSTATE PARK, NEW JERSEY

New Jersey were described as follows: "Beginning in the township of Ridgefield in the county of Bergen, New Jersey, at high water line on the west shore of the Hudson River at a point where the south line of the lands of Dupont and Company intersects, thence in a southwesterly direction to the Fort Lee and Hackensack road, thence northerly along the westerly line of said road to its junction with Hudson Terrace, thence northerly into the township of Englewood to Palisade avenue, thence westerly to the point of the junction of Palisade avenue with the westerly side of Sylvan avenue and of the Boulevard into the townships of Palisades and Harrington and to the boundary line between the States of New York and New Jersey." These boundaries by subsequent purchases and donations have been enlarged in the State of New Jersey. The sum of \$50,000 was appropriated for the purchase of necessary lands and for what other disbursements that were necessary.

The Commission was incorporated by an act of the Legislature in 1900, being chapter 87 of that year, under the title of the Palisades Interstate Park Commission, and was to consist of ten members, five from each State, to be appointed by the governors. New Jersey appropriated \$5,000 and New York \$10,000 towards the expenses of the Commission. Upon investigation, the Commissioners found there was no correct survey of the territory, nor an accurate list of property owners, and action was taken to make a complete survey, also to obtain an authentic list of the owners of the real estate. One of the first efforts of the Commission was the attempt to stop the blasting of rock on the Palisades, which they found could not be accomplished by legal methods, therefore the moneys appropriated by the Legislature of the States were utilized in securing lands where blasting was going on. After months of negotiations, arrangements were entered into, securing the lands used for blasting, for \$132,500; also, the owners of the lands between the base of the cliffs and the Hudson river agreed to accept five hundred dollars an acre for their holdings. The Commissioners further agreed to endeavor to establish an Interstate Park running from Fort Lee Ferry to some point in New York State below Piermont creek, to embrace all the land from the top of the steep edge of the cliffs down to the water's edge, and to construct a boulevard at the base of the cliffs as speedily as possible. The appropriation of ten thousand dollars by the Legislature of New York was used in obtain-



## PALISADES INTERSTATE PARK, NEW JERSEY

ing options on these lands, the balance of the amount for the purchasing of the blasting lands being guaranteed by private individuals of New York City. The New Jersey appropriation was expended in the survey and research of titles and maps of the properties purchased. The estimates of the engineers showed the total acreage acquired was from Fort Lee to Huyler's Landing, 367 acres; from Huyler's Landing to New Jersey State Line, 332 acres; and from the State Line to the northern limits, 417 acres. The shore front represented upwards of 73,900 feet, extending from the Old Fort Lee Dock in Bergen county, New Jersey, into Rockland county, New York. The Legislature of New York in 1901 appropriated \$400,000 without restrictions for the use of the Commission.

The personnel of the Commission since its incorporation in 1904 was: Edwin A. Stevens of Hoboken, New Jersey, president; D. McNeeley Stauffer of Yonkers, New York vice-president; J. DuPratt White of Nyack, New York, secretary; Abram De Ronda of Englewood, New Jersey, treasurer; Nathan F. Bassett of New Rochelle, New York; Abram S. Hewitt, of Ringwood, New Jersey; Franklin W. Hopkins, of Alpine, New Jersey; William L. Linn, of Hackensack, New Jersey; George W. Perkins, of New York City; and Ralph Trautmann, of New York City. The death of Mr. Hewitt caused a vacancy which was filled by Governor Murphy of New Jersey by the appointment of William B. Dana of Englewood Cliffs, New Jersey. On the death of Mr. Trautmann, November 12, 1904, William H. Porter, of New York City, was appointed to fill the vacancy.

The entire jurisdiction of the Commission in 1905 extended along a river frontage of 13.86 miles, of which 11.02 miles were in New Jersey and 2.84 miles in New York. The Legislature of New Jersey in 1901 appropriated \$50,000 for the purchases of lands, all of which with an exception of \$6,391.60 had been expended in 1906. The formal dedication of the Park took place September 27, 1909, at the old Cornwallis Headquarters in the Park at Alpine Landing, New Jersey. The Empire State was represented by Governor Charles Evans Hughes, and New Jersey by Governor J. Franklin Fort.

In the history of the preservation of the scenic beauty of the west shore of the Hudson river, two years will always stand out prominent, 1900, when the Interstate Park Commission was incor-





## PALISADES INTERSTATE PARK, NEW JERSEY

porated by the States of New York and New Jersey; and 1910, the year when important gifts of lands and moneys amounting to \$284,000 were received and the jurisdiction of the Commission was extended to Newburgh, New York, with power to acquire the Highlands. The gift of ten thousand acres by Edward H. Harriman of lands situated in Rockland and Orange counties, supplemented with a trust fund of a million dollars, formed a basis for the subscription of \$1,650,000 from private citizens of New York City, the list being headed with the names of John D. Rockefeller and J. Pierpont Morgan with \$500,000 each, thus creating a fund to enable the Commission to extend its domains and beautify it with landscape architecture.

To fill a vacancy, Richard V. Lindabury, of Newark, New Jersey, was appointed as successor to William B. Dana. In 1913, Edward L. Partridge, of New York City, succeeded D. McNeely Stauffer as vice-president; Frederick C. Sutro, of Basking Ridge, New Jersey, succeeded Abram De Ronda as treasurer; and Charles Whiting Baker, of Montclair, New Jersey, was appointed to replace William A. Linn as a commissioner. The retirement of Edwin A. Stevens as president caused the choice of Richard V. Lindabury to fill that office. To fill other vacancies in the Commission, Mornay Williams, of Englewood, New Jersey, John J. Voorhees, of Jersey City, New Jersey, and W. Averill Harriman, of New York City, were appointed.

The construction of the Henry Hudson Boulevard was commenced in 1912. The State Legislature of New Jersey in 1910 appropriated \$500,000 towards its construction, payable in yearly instalments of \$100,000, and in 1914 \$200,000 of this amount had been paid. The popularity of the Palisades Interstate Park was firmly established in 1917. The New Jersey Legislature of that year appropriated \$25,000 towards the completion of the Henry Hudson Drive, and there was still a final instalment of \$100,000 to be paid on the appropriation of \$500,000 passed by the Legislature of 1910. Greenbrook Park, located in the borough of Tenafly, was purchased, consisting of 133 acres of land on the summit of the Palisades. This purchase, with the donation of an adjoining tract of land of thirty-two acres, gave a cliff frontage of 5100 feet. The following year the Commission completed negotiations with P. Sanford Ross for eight acres below the cliffs, in the borough of Fort Lee, thereby com-





## PALISADES INTERSTATE PARK, NEW JERSEY

pleting without a break real estate holdings in New Jersey between the top of the cliffs and the river shore from the most southerly point in its jurisdiction to the New York State line.

The Englewood-Alpine section of the Henry Hudson Drive from its beginning at the Englewood approach and its terminus at the Boulevard on the top of the cliffs at Alpine, five miles and one-half in length, with a spur to the Alpine Dock, a half mile in length, was completed and open to traffic October 29, 1921. Simple ceremonies marked the opening of the Drive, at termination of which the ribbon stretched across its entrance was cut by Mrs. George W. Perkins, and it was opened for public use. The cost of the Drive was \$628,747.19, which was defrayed out of the New Jersey State appropriations, it having been planned and constructed by the Commission's own organization.

The surface of the driveway is sixteen feet in width, with four feet gutters on each side, and is constructed of telford macadam bituminous bound. Dry masonry retaining walls hold the back slopes, the parapet wall consisting of boulders weighing from one to three tons each. A bridge spanning Greenbrook Falls, a chasm down the face of the cliffs hundreds of feet in depth, is of reinforced concrete with a spandel arch sixty feet in the clear at an elevation of one hundred and eighty feet above the Hudson river. The Drive follows as near as possible the natural topography between the foot of the Palisades Cliffs and the shore front of the Hudson river, the grade in only a few places exceeding six per cent. At places it dips almost to the water's edge, and at other places it rises to elevations of from three hundred to four hundred feet. The views are unsurpassed. Now appear short vistas through the foliage on the water front, and again the whole panorama of the Hudson will be unfolded from some commanding height. The Drive is in no sense an automobile speedway; it is more in the nature of a trail affording to those that travel it, everchanging scenes of wonderful beauty.

The Storm King Highway, which was opened to the public in 1922, was hewn out of the side of a mountain of rock. In surveying for this road, the engineers stood on Crows Nest Mountain and shot paint over onto the side of Storm King Mountain to obtain the correct elevation. When the road was constructed it was necessary



## PALISADES INTERSTATE PARK, NEW JERSEY

to place nets below the roadbed in order to prevent blasted rocks from falling on the railroad track below.

To approach this highway from Manhattan, the traveler passes along the east shore of the Hudson river to Garrisons, where the river is crossed by ferry to West Point. About a mile or more from this point is the commencement of the new Storm King Mountain road, built around the side of the mountain. Proceeding in a northerly direction, Newburgh is reached, where a detour is taken west to Middletown, and thence in a curving southerly direction the New Jersey State line is reached, passing in transit Ramsey, Hohokus, Arcola, Hackensack, Leonia, to Fort Lee, where the One Hundred and Thirtieth Street ferry is taken for New York City.

The Commissioners of the Palisades Interstate Park announced in 1922 that there would be no closed season during the winter months. The Bear Mountain Inn was to remain open for the entire year; a toboggan slide was to be erected, and Highland Lake flooded to obtain good skating; the cabins in the woods were to be heated and rented to week-end parties.

The present officers of the Commission are Richard V. Lindabury, of Newark, New Jersey, president; Edward L. Partridge, of New York, New York, vice-president; W. Averell Harriman, of New York, New York, secretary; Frederick C. Sutro, of Basking Ridge, New Jersey. They with Charles Whiting Baker, of Montclair, New Jersey, John J. Voorhees, of Jersey City, New Jersey, Myran W. Robinson, of Hackensack, N. J., J. DuPratt White, of Nyack, New York, William H. Potter, of New York, New York, and Otis H. Cutter, of Suffern, New York, constitute the Board of Commissioners.





# Sayles Family

By MRS. HEROLD R. FINLEY, ST. LOUIS, MO.

*Arms*—Argent, on a fess cotised engrailed azure between three wolves' heads erased sable, as many griffins' heads erased or.

*Crest*—In front of a wolf's head couped sable, gorged with a collar gemel or, three escallops gold.

*Motto*—Who most has served is greatest. (This motto is given only in English).

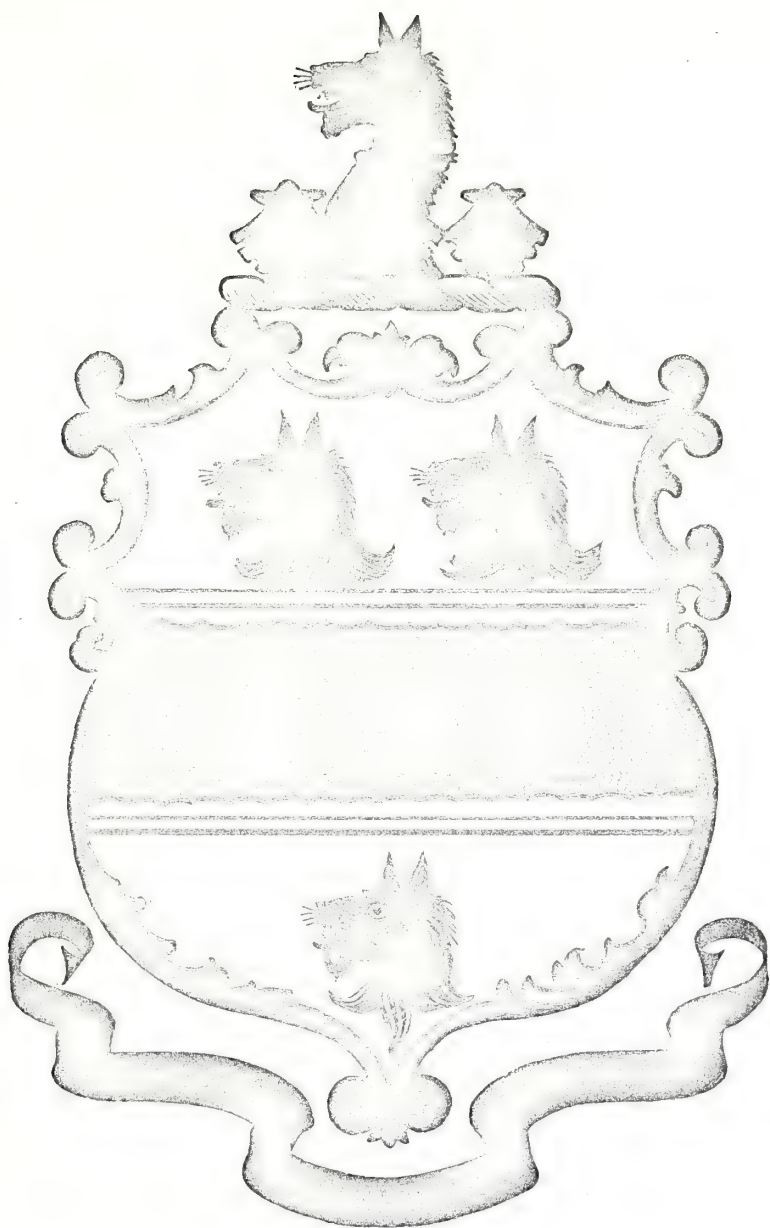


NO MORE distinguished name than that of Sayles occurs in the history of the State of Rhode Island, in the annals of its business, financial and industrial development in the last century. From the first days of Rhode Island's existence as a Colony the name has carried a prestige and influence in large affairs which subsequent generations have not allowed to wane. In the career of the late Frank Arthur Sayles, prematurely cut off at the height of its gigantic achievement and usefulness, we have an example of inspired strength welding together structures of men and minds for great industrial advancement, combined with the resourcefulness and inventive genius of the New England intellect, such as occurs but few times in a century. Frank A. Sayles took undisputed place as one of the greatest Captains of Industry of the twentieth century, and his reputation was world-wide.

The Sayles family in Rhode Island dates from the year 1651, when the first mention of the name of the progenitor, John Sayles, appears on the records of the Colony. That he had been here for at least a short period prior to that date is evident from the fact that about 1650 he married Mary Williams, daughter of Roger Williams. They were the progenitors of a family which has figured largely in the affairs of Colony and State from the very beginning. Although not numerous, their descendants have been divided into several clearly defined branches, according to the localities in which they have resided.

The surname is of ancient English origin, and considerable interest attaches to its derivation. It is local in source, and signifies literally "at the hurdles," *sayles* being the old English word for hurdles, or the upright stakes of a hurdle. Charles Wareing Bardsley, M. A., in his "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames," in tracing the origin of the name, says: "The only instances I can find, ancient or modern, are in County York. The name has remained there at least five hundred years." From this fact we cannot go far

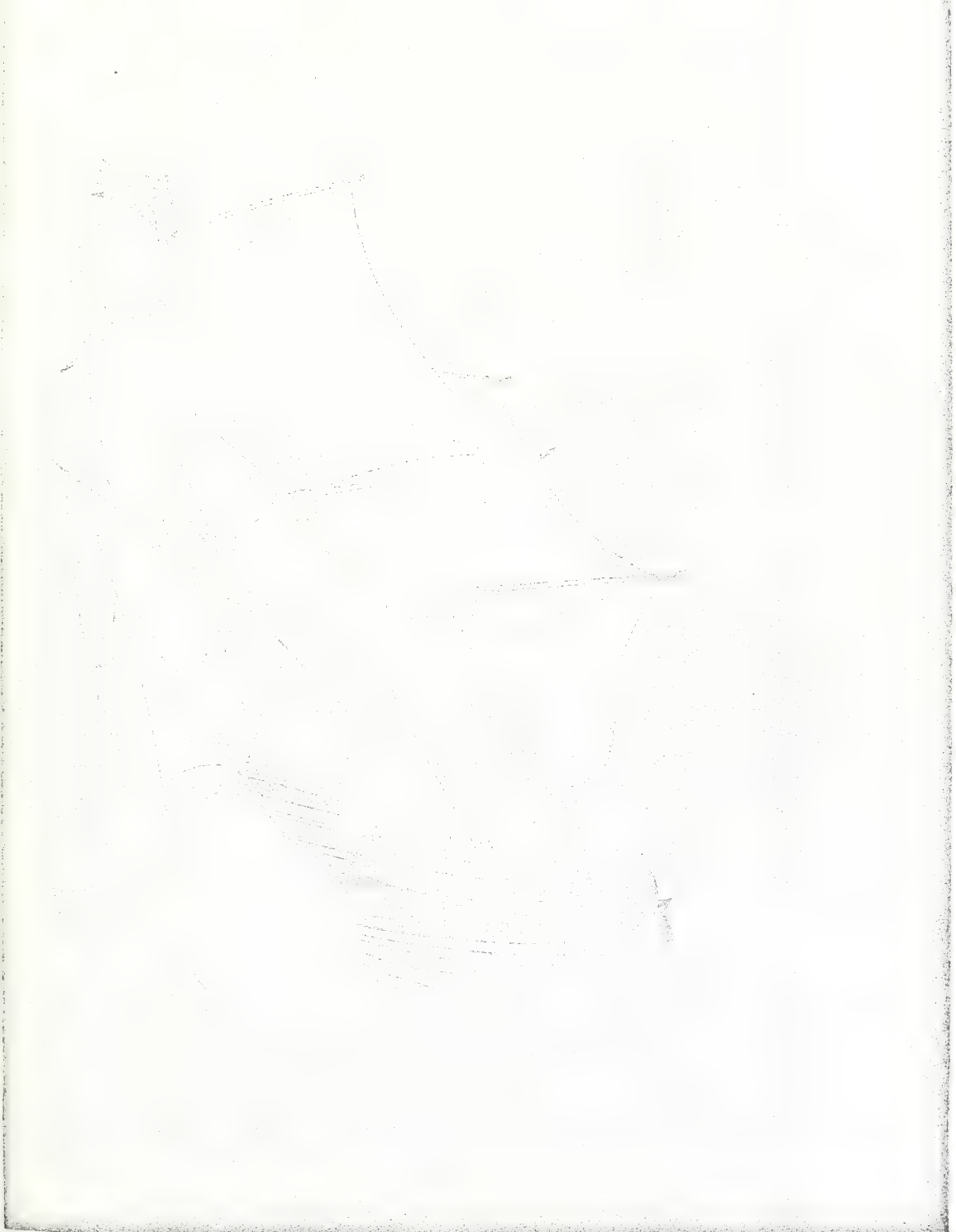




SAYLES







## THE MAYFLOWER



## SAYLES FAMILY

astray if we claim Yorkshire as the home of the early Sayles ancestors.

*I. John Sayles*, immigrant ancestor and founder, was born in 1633, and is first recorded in Providence Plantations, January 27, 1651, when he purchased a house and lot of John Throckmorton. On May 12, 1652, he bought land of Ralph Earle, near West River. In the following year, 1653, already risen to a position of prominence in Colonial affairs, he was chosen assistant to the governor. In 1655 he was admitted a freeman, and in 1653, 1655, 1657, 1659, was commissioner. From 1655 to 1657 he served the town of Providence as clerk; member of the General Council, 1658; warden, 1648; treasurer, 1653, 1657, 1659, 1661, 1662. On May 26, 1660, he sold William Hawkins a piece of property which indicates how vast were his holdings in the early Colony. On that date he conveyed all rights in land lying between Pawtucket and Pawtuxet rivers, "beginning at the end of seven miles upon a west line from the hill called Foxes' Hill (the town of Providence having the same for a boundary), and so to go up the streams of those rivers unto the end of twenty miles from the said Foxes' Hill." On February 19, 1665, he had lot twenty-four in a division of lands. On May 31, 1666, he took the oath of allegiance. He served on the grand jury in 1669-71, and in 1669-70-71-74-76-77-78, was a deputy to the Rhode Island General Assembly. On May 4, 1670, he and three others were appointed to audit the Colony's account. On June 24, 1670, he sold to Stephen Arnold a thirteenth of the island, called the vineyard, at Pawtuxet, "which my father-in-law Mr. Roger Williams gave me." In 1670-71 he was a member of the Town Council. On August 21, 1671, he and Thomas Roberts were appointed to prize and transport the horse belonging to the town of Rhode Island, and to deliver it to Joseph Torrey in payment for debts due from the town. On May 24, 1675, he drew lot eighteen in the division of lands. His last appearance on the public records is on July 1, 1679, when he was taxed 1s. 3d.

John Sayles married, about 1650, Mary Williams, daughter of Roger Williams, who was born at Plymouth, Massachusetts, in August, 1633.

*II. John (2) Sayles*, son of John (1) and Mary (Williams) Sayles, was born in Providence, Rhode Island, August 17, 1654. He was admitted a freeman, May 3, 1681, and in 1688 served on the grand jury. On January 23, 1694, he had laid out to him thirty-five acres, "which land he had of his grandfather Mr. Roger Williams." In 1694 he was chosen to the office of deputy to the General Assembly, and again in 1706. On August 14, 1710, he was licensed to keep an inn and sell liquor. John Sayles died on August 2, 1727. His will, dated September 14, 1726, and proved August 21, 1727, be-



## SAYLES FAMILY

queathes to his sons: Thomas, Richard and John, and his daughter Mary. The gravestones of John Sayles, his wife Elizabeth, and son Daniel are still to be seen in the old graveyard west of the railroad track, nearly opposite the foot of Earl street.

John (2) Sayles married Elizabeth Olney, born January 31, 1666, daughter of Thomas Olney. She died November 2, 1699.

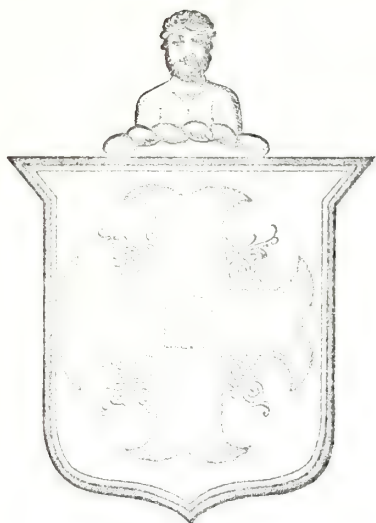
*III. Captain Richard Sayles*, son of John (2) and Elizabeth (Olney) Sayles, was born in Providence, Rhode Island, October 24, 1695, and died in Smithfield after May, 1775. In 1731 he was town clerk of Providence. There is a record of his delivering the two children of his wife by a former marriage to their grandfather, Maturin Ballou, September 25, 1742. He removed, in 1731-32, to Smithfield, a stronghold of the Rhode Island Friends, and some of his children joined the Society of Friends. His brothers also settled in Smithfield, and became very prominent citizens. Richard Sayles held the rank of ensign in the Second Providence Company, Second Regiment of Militia of the Main Land, 1722, 1723, 1724, 1725. He was a lieutenant in the same company in 1725 and 1726, and captain in 1729. In 1731, 1733, he was captain of the Smithfield company. He was deputy for Providence to the General Assembly of Rhode Island in 1730, and deputy for Smithfield in 1738. On February 21, 1750, Richard Sayles deeded a house lot of two and three-quarter acres to his son Richard, and on July 5, 1757, deeded land to his sons, Jonathan and Gideon, including the homestead.

Captain Richard Sayles married (first), November 24, 1720, Mercy Phillips, daughter of Richard and Sarah (Mowry) Phillips. He married (second), May 14, 1738, Alice Arnold, of Smithfield, widow of David Arnold, and daughter of Maturin and Sarah Ballou. He married (third), January 10, 1742, Susannah Inman, widow of John Inman, and daughter of James and Susanna (Whitman) Ballou.

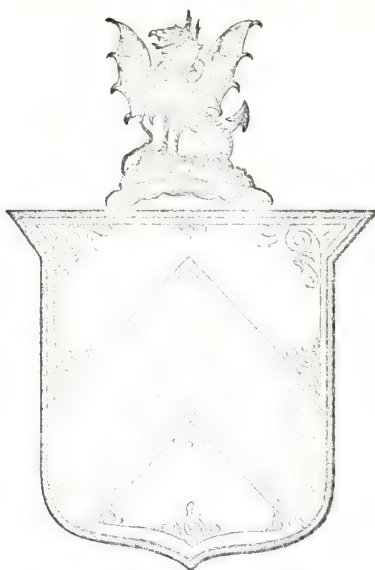
*IV. Captain Israel Sayles*, son of Captain Richard and Mercy (Phillips) Sayles, was born March 17, 1726, and died April 22, 1801. He was a farmer, and an unusually skilled mechanic. For many years he was president of the Town Council of Glocester. He held the rank of lieutenant in the First Company of Glocester, Providence County Regiment, in 1754, and was captain of the same in 1754, 1755, and 1756. In 1757 he was enlisting officer for Glocester. Israel Sayles served in the Revolutionary War as a member of Captain Hopkins' company, Colonel Lippitt's regiment, and according to report, under General Sullivan.

Captain Israel Sayles married Mercy Whipple, daughter of Daniel and Mary (Smith) Whipple.

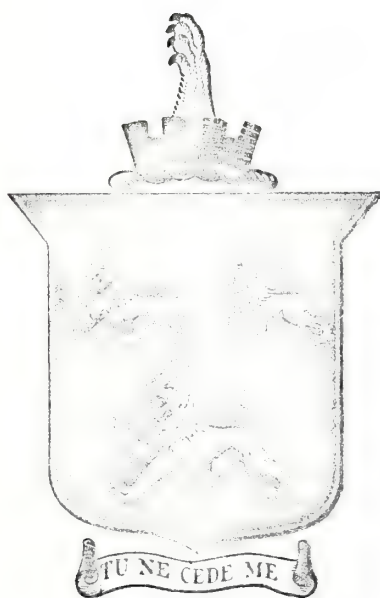




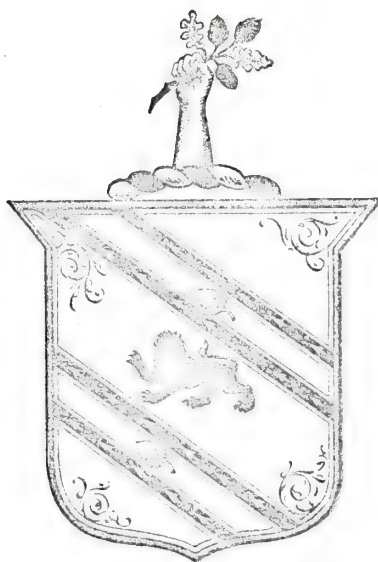
Mullins



Inman



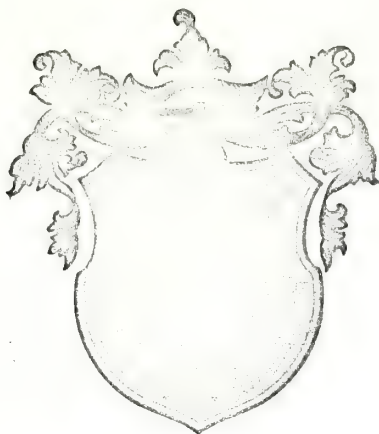
Steere



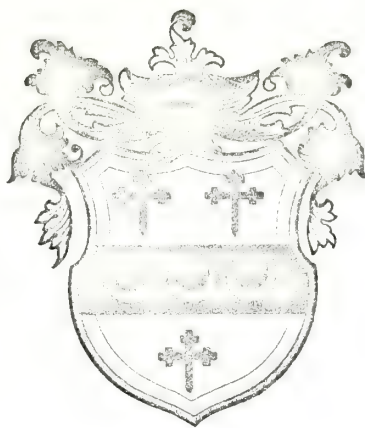
Rhodes



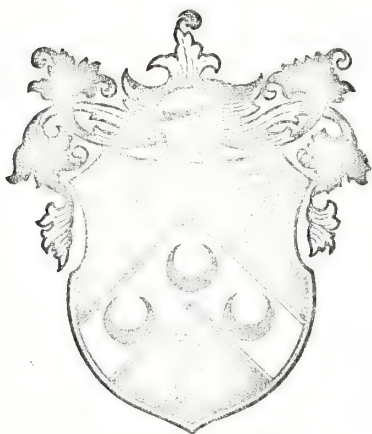




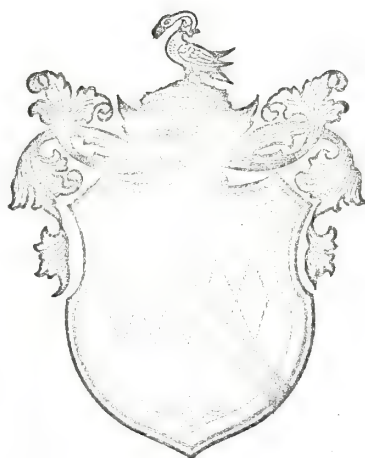
Williams



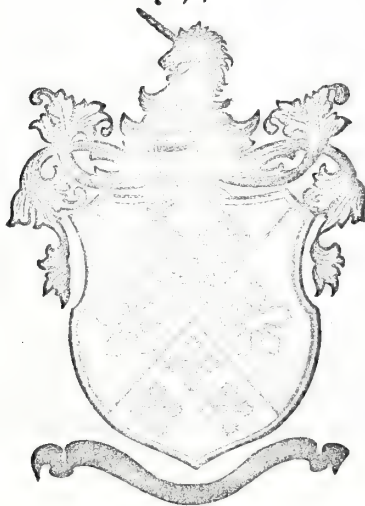
Olney



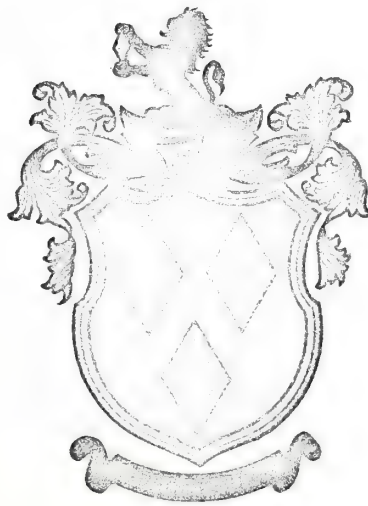
Whipple



Angell



Winsor



Freeman



## SAYLES FAMILY

V. *Ahab Sayles*, son of Captain Israel and Mercy (Whipple) Sayles, was born October 17, 1760, and died April 17, 1849. His homestead lands were between Pascoag and Chepachet, on the line which in 1806 was made the boundary line between Burrillville and Glocester. The family mansion was then situated in Burrillville instead of in Glocester as formerly.

Ahab Sayles married, in January, 1786, Lillis Steere, daughter of Samuel and Martha (Colwell) Steere, and member of an old Rhode Island family. She was born August 17, 1766, and died March 9, 1854.

VI. *Clark Sayles*, son of Ahab and Lillis (Steere) Sayles, was born in Glocester, Rhode Island, May 18, 1797. He was educated in the local schools, and as a youth was an omnivorous reader. At the age of eighteen years he entered the employ of Mr. Elias Carter, a master-builder of Thompson, Connecticut. He later went to Georgia, where he was employed in building the Burke county court house. Returning, he assisted in building the Congregational church edifice at Milford, Massachusetts. Finally establishing himself independently, he erected a residence for his brother, Nicholas Sayles. He again went to Georgia, where for a time he constructed dwellings for planters, and completed a large hotel at Waynesborough. On his return from the South he built the meeting house in Greenville, Smithfield, Rhode Island. In the spring of 1822 he removed to Pawtucket, and settled as a master-builder. Among the contracts which he was awarded during the ensuing period were houses for David Wilkinson, the adding of the middle section of the First Baptist Church edifice, the building of the First Congregational Church edifice in Pawtucket, which he also planned, a church in North Scituate, and one in Attleboro, Massachusetts.

In addition to this work, Mr. Clark Sayles engaged in the coal and lumber business, and was the first man to introduce coal into Pawtucket in vessels. Mr. Sayles associated himself in business with Mr. Daniel Greene, and in the financial panic of 1829 the firm of Clark Sayles & Company assumed to a great disadvantage, as the issue proved, the business interests of Mr. Greene, who had failed. Mr. Sayles was chosen director of the New England Pacific Bank, and was one of the two of its thirteen directors who did not fail. Chosen president of the bank as successor to Dr. Asa Messer, Mr. Sayles stood at the head of the institution for seventeen years, and, "by most skillful financiering," brought the bank through all its difficulties. In 1837, closing most of his large business interests in Pawtucket, he again went South and engaged in the wholesale lumber trade for the firm of which he was head, and also as agent of another company, operating steam saw mills, one on an island at the mouth of the Altamaha river, and one on the Savannah river, oppo-



## SAYLES FAMILY

site the city of Savannah. He was occupied in this way for about twenty years, but finally returned to Pawtucket. He did not again enter business for himself, but assisted his sons, William Francis and Frederic Clark Sayles, in purchasing materials and in the construction of the buildings added to their extensive Moshassuck Bleachery, in Lincoln, Rhode Island. He was also general superintendent in the erection of the beautiful Memorial Chapel in Saylesville, near the Bleachery.

In 1832 Mr. Sales became a member of the Congregational church, and was prominent in the stand against slavery, and for temperance, educational and moral reform. In politics he was an Old-Line Whig, and was finally identified with the Republican party. Contemporary record tells us that "Mr. Sayles was a strong, energetic, independent, incorruptible man." He stands out preëminently as one of the strong, admirable, constructive figures of business life in Rhode Island in the latter half of the nineteenth century.

Clark Sayles married, December 25, 1822, Mary Ann Olney, born June 21, 1803, daughter of Paris and Mercy (Winsor) Olney, and a descendant of Thomas Olney, founder of the family in America, who was one of the thirteen original proprietors of Providence Plantations. Thomas Olney came from Hertford, England, in the ship "Planter," and settled first in Salem, Massachusetts; he was one of the founders of Providence, with Roger Williams. From him the line descends through Epenetus Olney, who married Mary Whipple; Epenetus Olney, Jr., who married Mary Williams; James Olney, married Hannah Winsor; Emor Olney, married Amey Hopkins; Paris Olney, married Mercy Winsor. Clark and Mary Ann (Olney) Sayles were the parents of five children, three of whom died young. The sons, William Francis, mentioned below, and the late Hon. Frederic Clark Sayles, both rose to commanding positions in the industrial and business life of Rhode Island.

*VII. William Francis Sayles*, son of Clark and Mary Ann (Olney) Sayles, was born in Pawtucket, Rhode Island, September 21, 1824. He received his early education in the Fruit Hill Classical Institute, under Mr. Amos Perry; the Seekonk Classical School, under Mr. Stanton Belden; and for two years was a student in Phillips Academy, Andover, Massachusetts.

In 1842 Mr. William Francis Sayles began his business life as bookkeeper for the firm of Shaw & Earle in Providence. He was afterwards salesman, and eventually was placed in charge of the financial affairs of the concern. In December, 1847, he bought at public auction the Moshassuck Bleachery, which is situated about two miles west of Pawtucket. For some time the plant had been used as a print works. Mr. Sayles began immediately to erect additional buildings and converted the plant into a bleachery for shirt-





Wm F. Sayles







ALBANY, N. Y. 1884.

THE ALBANY BOOK CO.

*Mary Wilkinson (Fessenden) Sayles*



## SAYLES FAMILY

ings and sheetings, having a capacity of two and a half tons daily. By 1854, despite the fact that he had entered the business without experience and with small capital, he had increased the capacity of the works to about four tons a day. About three-fourths of all the finer cotton goods came to his bleachery. The water of the Moshas-suck river, for which the bleachery is named, is well adapted for the purposes of the plant, but the additional advantage of a fountain of water from a hundred springs, enclosed in a wall some three hundred feet in circumference, has been added. In June, 1854, the entire plant was destroyed by fire, but Mr. Sayles immediately set himself to work to rehabilitate his loss, and the establishment was rebuilt on even a larger scale than the old. The new plant had a capacity of six tons a day, and from year to year additions have been made until the daily output is now expressed in terms of hundreds of thousands of yards. The buildings cover an area of thirty acres and are models of architecture for buildings of this kind and class, substantially built of brick. The surrounding grounds are tastefully laid out and carefully kept. The works are lighted by electricity, and are well equipped with fire apparatus and with every convenience for safeguarding the life and comfort of the workmen. Mr. Sayles was a pioneer in providing for the welfare and health, comfort and happiness of his men, and the most harmonious relations always existed between him and his employees. He was a prime mover in the establishment of a school district for the village, and on the first Sunday of June, 1860, he organized a Sunday school, and as its superintendent devoted himself to the work during the remainder of his life. The village which grew about the bleachery has come to be called Saylesville, and now has a population of more than two thousand, with stores, post office, and all the attributes of a model manufacturing community. In 1863 Mr. Sayles admitted to partnership his brother, Frederic C. Sayles, with whose coöperation the business was constantly enlarged.

In 1873 William F. and Frederic C. Sayles, to meet the religious needs of the growing community in Saylesville, and to raise a suitable memorial "to the memory to their deceased children," erected a beautiful chapel of Westerly granite, in the Gothic style. The following names are inscribed on marble tablets on the interior walls at each side of the pulpit: "Louisa Marsh Sayles, and Nannie Nye Sayles, children of William F. and Mary W.," on the west side; and "Benjamin Paris Sayles, son of Frederic C. and Deborah C.," on the east side. In 1877 William F. Sayles erected a tower on the corner of the church as a memorial to his deceased son, William Clark Sayles, who died in the previous year while a student in Brown University. A few years later, Mr. Sayles, with his brother, erected, at a cost of \$30,000, a large hall for the use of those in their employ, containing a library and reading room, and a room for the



## SAYLES FAMILY

association of firemen in the bleachery and for other social purposes. One writer said of the village a generation ago what is just as true to-day in a larger sense:

The Moshassuck Bleachery, with its numerous substantial buildings, the neat appearance of the tenement houses around it, the elevated grounds on either side of the winding stream, which gives the valley its name, the pleasant homes of the permanent residents, the chapel, the school house, the public hall, the absence of drinking saloons and the concomitants, the peaceable and orderly character of the people, give to Saylesville its enviable reputation as the model manufacturing village of Rhode Island.

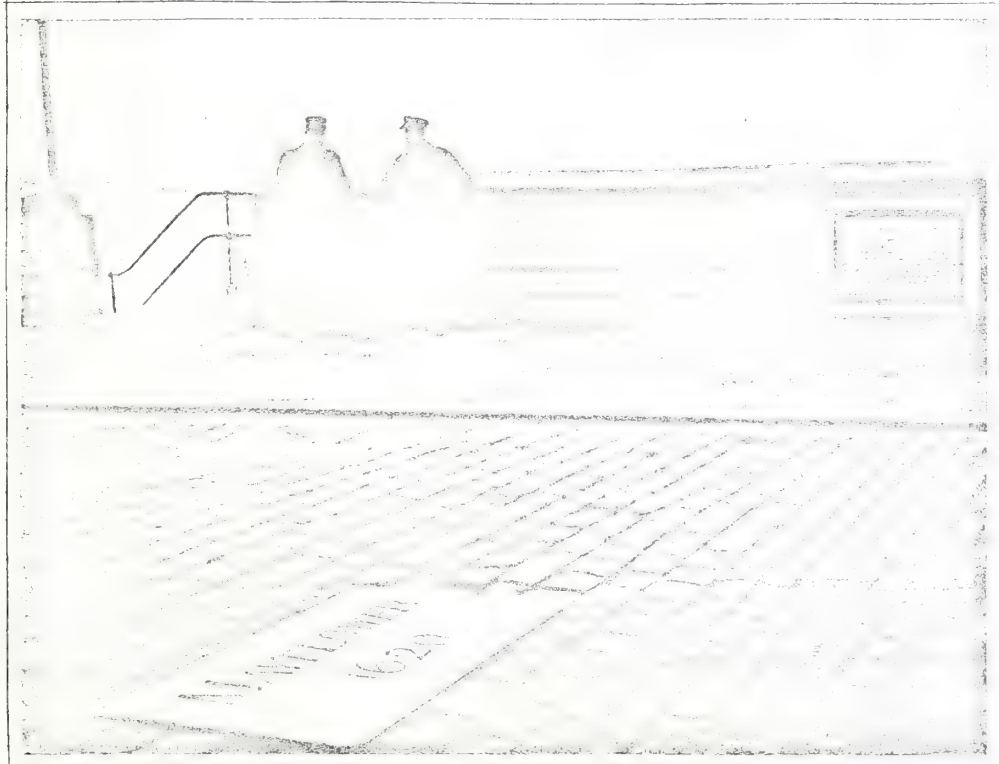
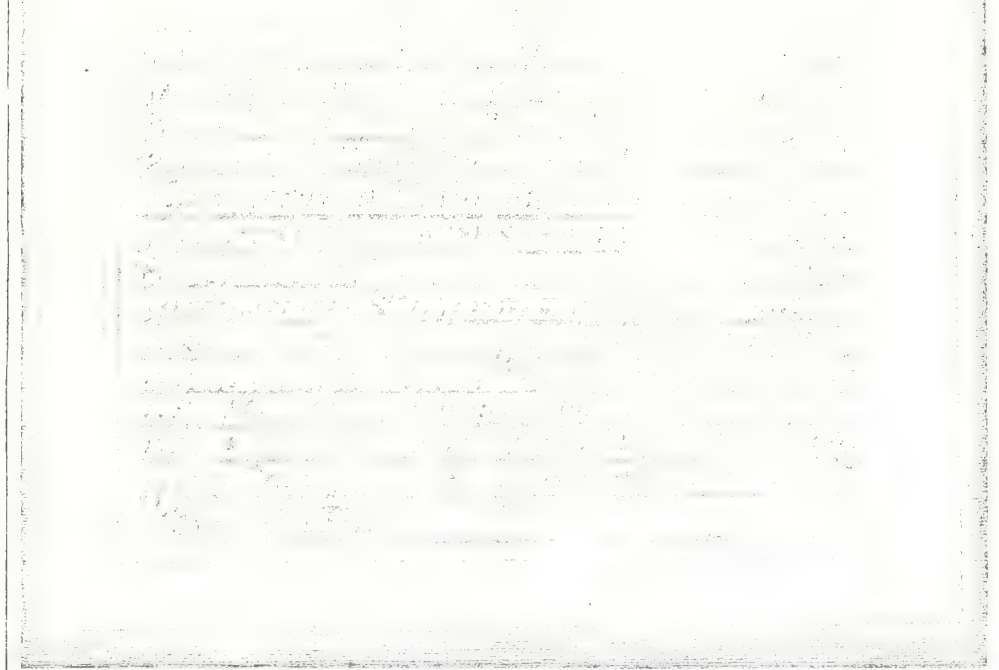
In 1877 William F. and Frederic C. Sayles built the Moshassuck Valley railroad, which connects their village with the Woodlawn station of the New York, New Haven & Hartford railroad. The senior partner became president of the road, and his brother treasurer. This spur track greatly facilitated the transportation of goods to and from the bleachery and opened up an opportunity for indefinite expansion of business. Between Woodlawn and the bleachery, the firm established an extensive business in the Lorraine Mills, in manufacturing ladies' dress goods of the finest quality, especially French cashmeres. At Lorraine another model village grew up about this industry, and the firm erected a chapel there, pursuing the same generous policy which they had followed at Moshassuck.

Mr. Sayles was prominently identified with many of the foremost business and financial institutions in the State of Rhode Island. He was president of the Slater National Bank of Pawtucket, and a director of the Third National Bank of Providence. He was a large stockholder in numerous manufacturing industries, and was president of the Slater Cotton Company of Pawtucket, of which he was founder. He was a director of the Ponemah Mills, of Taftville, Connecticut, the largest cotton manufacturing business in the State, and one of the largest in New England. He was president of the Stafford Manufacturing Company of Central Falls, and a stockholder in numerous mill corporations in Massachusetts.

In politics, Mr. Sayles was a Republican. He served two terms as State Senator from Pawtucket, and proved a wise and efficient legislator. For many years he was president of the trustees of the Pawtucket Free Public Library. In 1878, in memory of his son, William Clark Sayles, Mr. Sayles gave to Brown University the sum of \$50,000 for the erection of a memorial hall. The gift was subsequently increased to \$100,000, and on June 4, 1881, Sayles Hall was dedicated. In 1879 Mr. Sayles was elected to the board of trustees of Brown University, and held that office until his death, May 7, 1894. In his younger days he served in the State Militia, and was lieutenant-colonel of the Pawtucket Light Guard. During the Civil War he gave earnest and loyal support to the government, contributing freely from his wealth for many patriotic purposes.

In 1870-72 Mr. Sayles erected a beautiful mansion overlooking





COMMEMORATIVE STONE AND TABLET ON THE BARBICAN.  
PLYMOUTH, ENGLAND





F. H. Keyles



## SAYLES FAMILY

the cities of Pawtucket and Providence. Here he collected a fine library and many works of art. He was fond of literature and the arts, and travelled extensively in this country and abroad. A contemporary wrote of him:

Active and public-spirited as a citizen, upright, and honorable in all his dealings with his fellowmen, he won and retained the respect and confidence of the community in which he always resided. From the beginning of his business career, he believed in the principle of hard, persistent work and honesty of purpose as the only sure ground of success. Acting upon this belief he succeeded by his own unaided exertions in raising himself from the position of a clerk in a commercial house to the possessor of an ample fortune. Endowed with a sympathetic nature, and bestowing substantial aid where deserved, he strove always to make the applicant depend upon himself rather than on others. While from his door none were turned away empty, his charities were of the practical kind, and calculated to confer permanent aid, as well as to relieve present necessity. His convictions of right and duty were decided and firm, and uncompromisingly maintained, and though a positive man, he viewed the faults of others with charity, his creed being,

That mercy I to others show  
That mercy show to me.

He attended and generously contributed to the work of the Central Congregational Church in Providence, but was not sectarian in his beliefs.

William Francis Sayles married, October 30, 1849, Mary Wilkinson Fessenden, who was born October 24, 1827, and died September 20, 1886. She was the daughter of Hon. Benjamin Fessenden, of Valley Falls, Rhode Island, and Mary (Wilkinson) Fessenden, his wife. Their children were: 1. Mary Fessenden. 2. Louise Marsh. 3. William Clark. 4. Martha Freeman. 5. Frank Arthur, of whom further. 6. Nancy Nye.

*VIII. Frank Arthur Sayles*, son of William Francis and Mary Wilkinson (Fessenden) Sayles, was born December 14, 1866, in Pawtucket, Rhode Island. He was educated in preparatory schools, and was graduated from Brown University in the class of 1890. He entered immediately into his father's bleaching industries, and devoted the period ensuing between his graduation and the death of William F. Sayles to learning the business in all its departments. On the death of his father, Frank A. Sayles inherited the Sayles Finishing Plants at Saylesville and Phillipsdale, and the Moshassuck Valley railroad. He inaugurated at once the policy of expansion and progressive development which within a short period made the Sayles bleaching industries the most noted of their kind in the world. He was a man of inventive as well as executive genius, and to the advancement of the Sayles industries brought the valuable gift of familiarity with mechanical and scientific affairs, as well as his ability as an organizer and director. Broad of vision, thoroughly cognizant of every changing phase of the vast enterprises which he directed, devoting himself to his work with a singleness and intentness of purpose which admitted of no distractions, he reared on the foundations



## SAYLES FAMILY

laid by his father and uncle a business which has no peer in Europe or America to-day, and stands as a monument to his intellectual and creative strength.

Mr. Sayles' interests, although confined largely to the field of woolen and cotton manufacture, were wide and diversified. Rhode Island industries which he operated and of which he was president included the Sayles Finishing Plants at Saylesville and Phillipsdale, above mentioned; the Hamlet Textile Company of Woonsocket and Pawtucket; the Slater Yarn Company of Pawtucket; and the River Spinning Company of Woonsocket. He was president and principal stockholder of the Lorraine Manufacturing Company, and of the Slater Trust Company of Pawtucket. It has been estimated that fully ten thousand persons were employed in the plants which he controlled. Other business enterprises in which he was heavily interested were: The French River Textile Company of Mechanicsville, Connecticut, of which he was president; and the Ponemah Mills at Taftville, Connecticut, of which he was president and member of the board of directors. He was a director in the following corporations: The Blackstone Valley Gas and Electric Light Company; the Castner Electrolytic Company, director and vice-president; the Chase National Bank, of New York City; the Moshassuck Valley Railroad; the Norfolk Southern Railroad Company; the Putnam (Connecticut) Light and Power Company; the United Gas and Electric Company; and the Wauregan Mills. He rendered invaluable service along industrial lines throughout the World War. Part of his service was devoting his plants at Woonsocket, Valley Falls and Phillipsdale to the bleaching of cotton linter used in the manufacture of explosives; the weekly output of these plants was 2,500,000 pounds.

Throughout his entire career, Mr. Sayles was a generous supporter of worthwhile charities and benevolences, giving freely and liberally for the alleviation of suffering and for the advancement of the arts, education, religion, and civic interests. His gifts to war charities were very great and were exceeded by no resident of Pawtucket. Other notable gifts made possible the Pawtucket Memorial Hospital, which Mr. Sayles erected and presented to the city in memory of his mother and sister. He also endowed the Sayles Memorial Hospital with \$75,000.

Mr. Sayles was no seeker after public honors. His life, away from the cares of his great business interests, was essentially simple. He had no fraternal connections and cared little for social life. In his leisure hours he shunned the artificialities and pretenses of modern life, reverting to the simple, homely interests and pleasures of the preceding generation. He was a lover of outdoor life and horses. Of magnetic personality, brilliant in mentality, yet unostentatious, he numbered among his friends some of the foremost

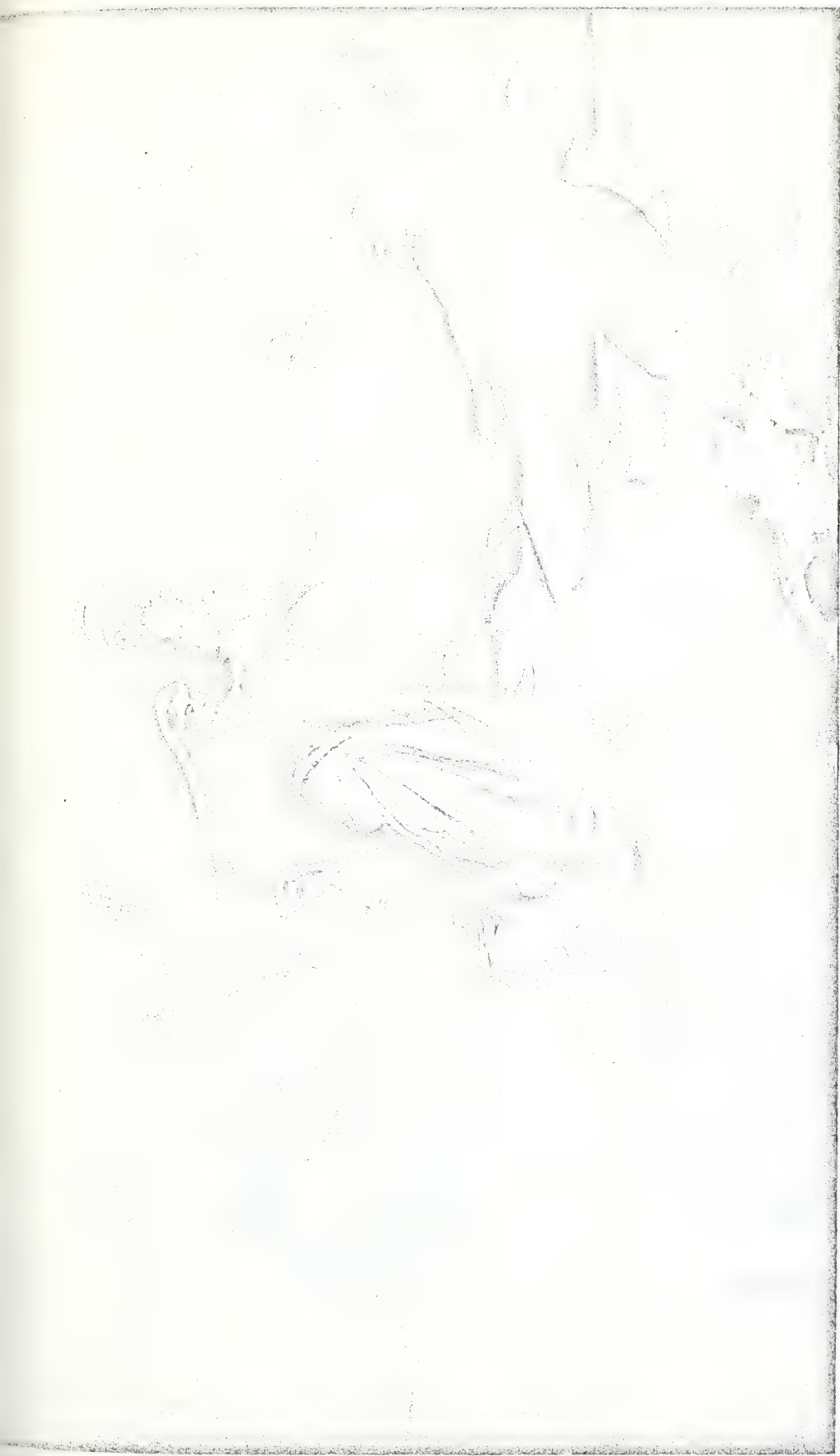




EMBARKATION OF THE PILGRIMS





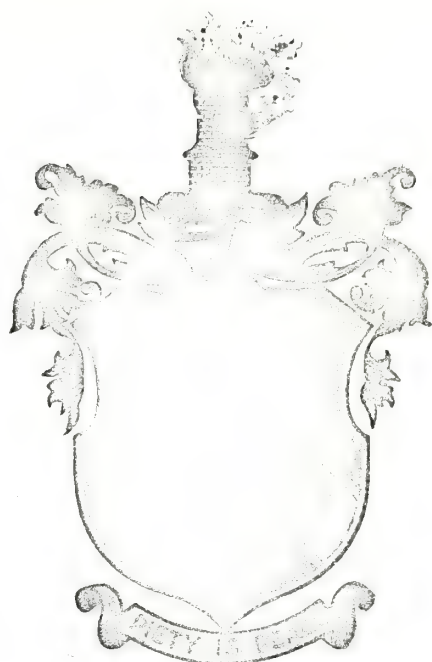


LANDING OF THE PILGRIMS

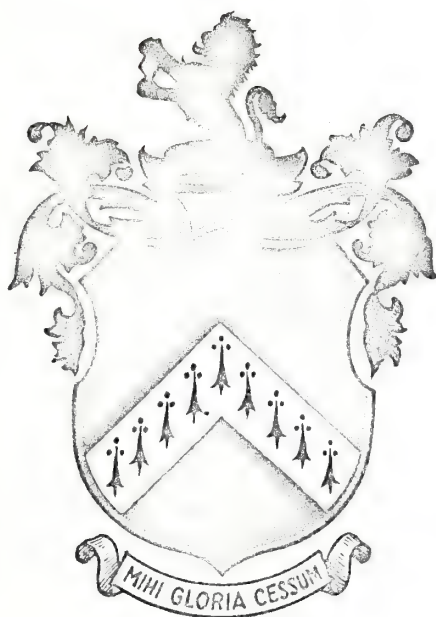




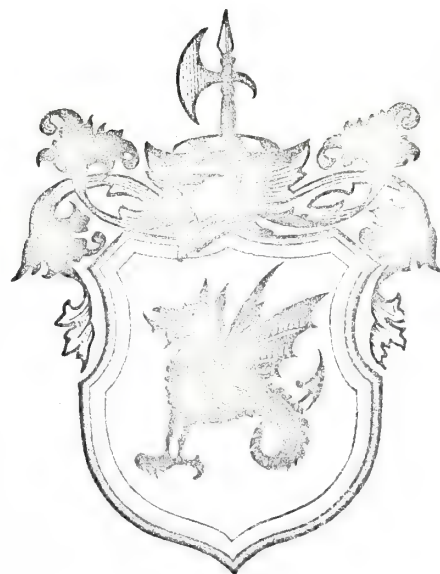
Wilkinson



Hopkins



Arnold



Tilley



## SAYLES FAMILY

men of the State and Nation, men who valued and loved him for the cultured, kindly gentleman and man of affairs that he was. His funeral was carried out with the impressive and dignified seriousness and freedom from pomp and affection with which he had lived his life.

Mr. Sayles had a notable Colonial ancestry, being descended from many of the early Rhode Island families, distinguished in the annals of the Colony. He traced his line from Roger Williams, the founder of Rhode Island, by six different descents, through the Sayles, Winsor and Olney families. He was descended from Thomas Olney, one of the thirteen original proprietors of Providence Plantations, through three lines; from John Whipple, commander of an expedition against the Indians in King Philip's War, 1675-76, by four lines; and from Thomas Angell and Joshua Winsor, two of the thirteen signers of the first written compact of the Providence Plantations, by three lines each.

The well known Field, Arnold, Jenckes, Mowry, Inman, Wicken-den, Rhodes and Wilkinson names were also duplicated by the frequent intermarriages of that era. Other notable Rhode Island ancestry included the Hopkins, the Chad Brown, the Obadiah Holmes, the Harris, Barker, Randall, Scott and Smith families, showing that the Sayles family record was closely interwoven with a large part of early Rhode Island history. Through his maternal ancestry, Mr. Sayles was descended from John Howland and John Tilley of the "Mayflower."

Cape ancestry of note included the Newcomb, Bourne, Skiff, Chipman, Freeman, Otis, Bacon, Russell and Mayo families, while other Massachusetts lines included the Colton, Marshfield, Chapin, Johnson, Marsh, Wilson, Hobart, Adams, Wright, Moody and Collins families. Branches straying into Connecticut were the Rev. Thomas Hooker, the Newton and Talcott lines.

Members of all of these families performed distinguished Colonial service. Indeed, it is worthy of notice that Mr. Sayles claimed over eighty Colonial ancestors, whose services have been recognized and entered in the different hereditary societies, three of whom were Colonial governors, or presidents. He was a member of the Rhode Island Society of Colonial Wars, by right of such services, and although he was not affiliated with the Sons of the American Revolution, he claimed six Revolutionary heroes.

Frank Arthur Sayles married, June 9, 1892, Mary Dorr Ames, daughter of Commander Sullivan Dorr Ames, of the United States Navy, and Mary Townsend (Bullock) Ames, his wife. They were the parents of the following children: 1. Mary Ames, born October 13, 1893; married Neville Jay Booker, of New York, June 8, 1918;



## SAYLES FAMILY

one child, Mary Sayles, born January 1, 1921. 2. Martha Freeman, born July 18, 1896; married Paul Coe Nicholson, of Providence, June 23, 1917; they have children: Paul Coe Nicholson, Jr., born October 12, 1918; Martha Sayles Nicholson, born October 5, 1922. 3. William Francis, born April 23, 1901, died March 21, 1902. 4. Nancy, born April 12, 1905. 5. Hope, born February 21, 1907.

Mrs. Sayles resides at "Saleholme," the Sayles' mansion, in Pawtucket.

Frank A. Sayles died in New York City, March 9, 1920, at the home of his daughter, Mrs. Neville Jay Booker.

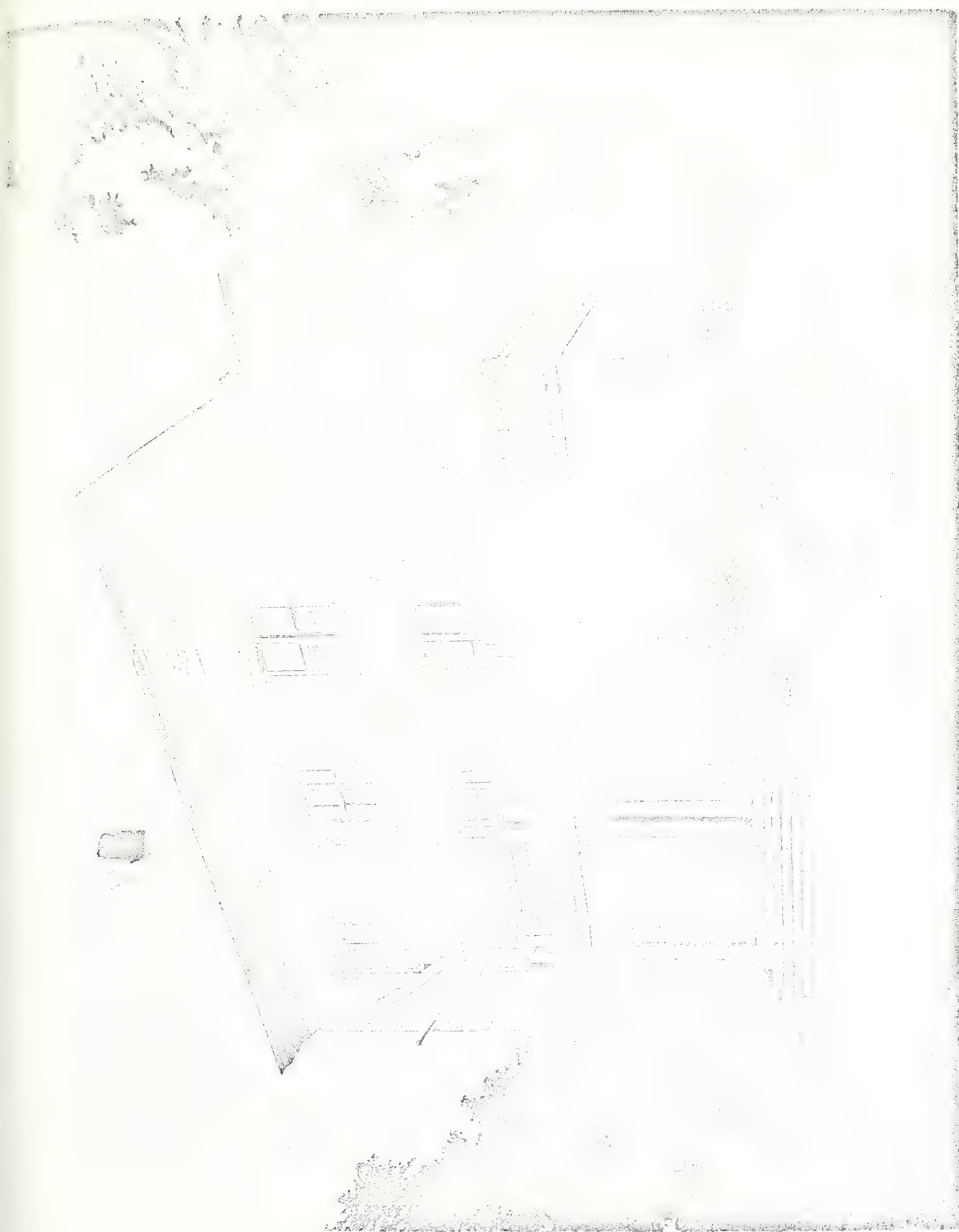
---

EDITOR'S NOTE—The related Ames Family will appear in the July number of "Americana," and the related Dorr Family in the October number.











## Frank Hervey Pettingell

*I. Richard Pettingell*, born 1620, on September 4, 1667, made at Newbury, Mass., a deposition in which he testified that he was then forty-seven years old; was admitted a freeman (when twenty-one years old) at Salem, Mass., June 2, 1641; died shortly subsequent to July 15, 1695, at Newbury, Mass.; married about 1643, at Salem, Mass., Joanna Ingersoll, daughter of Richard and Ann (Langley) Ingersoll, of Salem, Mass., born 1625, died 1692-3 (about two or three years previous to her husband), at Newbury, Mass.

Richard Pettingell came from England and was in Salem, Mass., before June 2, 1641, as he was made a freeman there on that date; Savage (on what authority we do not know) says that, "tradition suggests that he came from Staffordshire, England. He removed to Enon (now Wenham), Mass., being recommended to the church there 1649; he removed to Newbury, Mass., where he bought land April 8, 1651, and where he lived until his death. The year of his birth is well established by various dated depositions in which his age, in each instance, is specifically stated. On July 15, 1695, he deeded to his sons Samuel, Matthew and Nathaniel, and died shortly thereafter, his wife having predeceased him by two or three years. In his deposition made at County Court held at Hampton (now in New Hampshire), 14, 8mo, 1673, when he "was about 52 years old," he states that he knew Giles Fuller (deceased) of Hampton and Matthew Fuller of Bastable [Barnstable] both in Old England and in New England. Matthew Fuller is positively known to have come from Topcroft, Norfolk Co., England, and it is supposed by some that Richard Pettingell came from the neighborhood of Shottesham or Topcroft in Norfolk county, England. Children: Samuel, baptized, Salem, Mass., 9(12) 1644; Matthew (see below); Mary, born Newbury, Mass., July 6, 1652; Nathaniel, born Newbury, Mass., September 21, 1654; a son, born November 15, 1657, died November 17, 1657, at Newbury; Henry, born January 16, 1659, died January 20, 1659, at Newbury.

*II. Matthew Pettingell*, born 1648, about, at Enon (now Wenham), Mass., probably; died between October 24, 1714, and September 29, 1715; will dated October 24, 1714; guardian was appointed for his daughter Abigail, September 29, 1715; married April 13, 1674, at Newbury, Mass., to Sarah Noyes, daughter of Nicholas and Mary (Cutting) Noyes, of Newbury, Mass., born August 22, 1653, at Newbury, Mass.; she was living April 14, 1718, as evidenced by her signing a letter with other relatives on that date. Matthew Pettin-



## FRANK HERVEY PETTINGELL

gell lived in Newbury, Mass.; he took the oath of allegiance in 1678, then "aged 30." He was a felt maker. Children, all born in Newbury, Mass.: Son, probably died young; Nathaniel (see below); Matthew, Joanna, Cutting, Nicholas, Sarah, Mary, John, Abraham, Abigail.

*III. Nathaniel Pettingell*, born January 21, 1675-6, at Newbury, Mass., was baptized there February 6, 1675-6; he was living September 7, 1743, on which date he deeded land to his sons Ephraim and Cutting; married December 22, 1702-3 (intention published at Newbury, October 10, 1702), at Newbury, Mass., to Margaret Richardson, daughter of Edward and Anne (Bartlett) Richardson, of Newbury, Mass., born July 7, 1682, died subsequent to October 20, 1726, when her last child was born.

Nathaniel Pettingell resided at Newbury, Mass., and was a felt maker. His wife was admitted to full communion in the church there February 10, 1717-18. Children, all born at Newbury: Anne, Stephen, Margaret, Moses, Sarah, Mary, Ephraim, Cutting (see below), Elizabeth, Joanna.

*IV. Cutting Pettingell*,\* born January 17, 1721-2, baptized January 28, 1721-2, at Newbury, Mass.; died about March 23, 1793, as he was buried at Newbury, Mass., March 26, 1793, at Newbury, Mass.; married (first) January 13, 1746-7, at Newbury, Mass., by Rev. John Tucker of the First Church of Newbury, to Judith Atkinson, daughter of John and Judith (Worth) Atkinson, of Newbury, Mass., born November 1, 1724, at Newbury, Mass., died May 6, 1755, aged thirty-one years, at Newbury, Mass.; gravestone in Oldtown graveyard, Newbury, Mass., gives her age as thirty-one; he was married (second) August 26, 1756, at Newbury, by Rev. Jonathan Parsons of Old South Church, Newbury, (now Newburyport), Mass., to Ruth Davis, daughter of Benjamin and Ruth (Brown) Davis, of Newbury, Mass., born February 19, 1732, at Newbury, Mass.

Cutting Pettingell was a fisherman and a coaster; he was a private in the train band of Col. John Greenleaf's company, according to a return dated June 8, 1757. He was one of those who November 26, 1745, signed the petition for the formation in Newbury of a new religious society (now the Old South) and who on March 1, 1746, made a petition to the General Court of Massachusetts to build the Presbyterian church, and he was one of the original members of that church. On May 27, 1893, Benjamin Davis (probably father of his second wife), gave bond to exhibit an inventory of Cutting Pettin-gell's estate, which estate was declared insolvent. Children all born at Newbury, Mass.; by first marriage: Eunice, Cutting, Jonathan, Josiah (see below); by second marriage: Nathaniel, Judith, Nathan, Samuel, Benjamin.

\*Descendants eligible to Society of Colonial Wars.



## FRANK HERVEY PETTINGELL

*V. Josiah Pettingill*,† born April, 1753, at Newburyport, Mass.; died June 30, 1826, at Newburyport, Mass.; married (first) (intention published Newbury, Mass., October 22, 1774), to Phillippa French; died June 21, 1796, at Newburyport, Mass.; he married (second) January 6, 1802 (intention published December 18, 1801, at Newbury, Mass.), Mary Duggan. He resided in Newbury, Mass., where he was taxed 1789 to 1799, and then in Newburyport, where he was taxed 1815-1818. He was a fisherman; was in Captain Stephen Kent's company raised for coast defense, Essex county, Mass., in November and December, 1775. Children, all by first marriage: Phillippa, Nathaniel, Judith, Cutting (see below), Josiah, Moses, Henry.

*VI. Cutting Pettingell*,‡ born May 9, (or 23), 1785, at Newbury, Mass.; died September 1, 1865, at Newburyport, Mass.; married September 18, 1808, at South Hampton, New Hampshire, to Olive Smith, daughter of John and Lydia (Graves) Smith, of Newbury, Mass., born December 16, 1791, at Newbury, Mass., died January 14, 1871, at Newburyport, Mass. He resided in Newbury and Newburyport, Mass. He was a member of Capt. John Woodwell's company, Lieut.-Col. Ebenezer Hale's regiment, Second Brigade, Second Division, service at Newbury, Mass., between September 30 and October 4, 1814. Children, all born at Newbury, Mass.: Cutting (1st), Cutting (2nd), Olive, Moses, Lydia Graves, Lucy Goodwin, Mary A., Elizabeth Robbins, Nathaniel Henry (see below).

*VII. Nathaniel Henry Pettingell*, born September 11, 1835, at Newbury, Mass.; died November 12, 1874, at Newmarket, New Hampshire, and was buried in Oak Hill Cemetery, Newburyport, Mass.; married September 6, 1863, at Newburyport, Mass., (by J. A. Ames, clergyman), to Mary Anna Feltch, daughter of Joseph Harris and Mary (Haskell) Feltch, (q. v.) of Newburyport, Mass., born September 10, 1843, at Newbury, Mass., died August 6, 1894, at Newburyport, Mass., and was buried by side of her husband in Oak Hill Cemetery, Newburyport, Mass. Children, all born at Newburyport, Mass.: Agnes Leah, Frank Hervey (see below); Walter F., died young; William F., died young; Walter Joseph, Cutting.

*VIII. Frank Hervey Pettingell*, born January 2, 1868, at Newburyport, Mass.; married (first) January 19, 1898, at Independence, Missouri, to Mary Agnes Morgan, of Independence, Missouri, born February 27, 1876, at Independence, Missouri; married (second) September 5, 1905, Medora Anna Wilson, daughter of John Mitchell and Rosabel (Cantril) Wilson, of Denver, Colorado, born February 27, 1881.

†Descendants eligible to societies representing service in Revolutionary War and to Society of Founders and Patriots.

‡Descendants eligible to Society of War of 1812.





## FRANK HERVEY PETTINGELL

Frank Hervey Pettingell resided in Los Angeles, Cal. He resided in Newburyport, Massachusetts, from birth until 1889; removed that year to Colorado Springs, Colorado, and was connected with the First National Bank of that city for three years, since then has been engaged in stock and bond business. While a citizen of Colorado Springs was elected vice-president and subsequently president of the Colorado Mining Stock Exchange of Denver, Colorado. He was a charter member (and is still a member) of the Colorado Springs Mining Stock Association. Since December, 1912, he has been a resident of Los Angeles, California, and at present (March, 1918) is serving his fourth term as president of the Los Angeles Stock Exchange.

Mr. Pettingell is an officer or member of the following organizations: Suretie, Baronial Order of Runnemede (Sureties of the Magna Charta, A. D. 1215); Society of Colonial Wars in the Commonwealth of Massachusetts; Society Sons of the Revolution in the Commonwealth of Massachusetts; Massachusetts Society, Sons of the American Revolution; New England Historic Genealogical Society (Mass.); Society for the Preservation of New England Antiquities (Mass.); Society of the War of 1812 in the Commonwealth of Massachusetts; Society of Old Plymouth Colony Descendants (Mass.); New Hampshire Historical Society, Concord, N. H.; life member Historical Society of Old Newbury, Newburyport, Mass.; Order of Knights of the Golden Horeshoe (headquarters, Baltimore, Md.), knight commander for the State of California; member The Paul Jones Club, Portsmouth, N. H.; member the Pike Family Association of America (headquarters, Pike, N. H.); honorary vice-president general, National Society, Americans of Royal Descent; honorary president California Genealogical Society 1923 (headquarters, San Francisco, Cal.), vice-president, 1919 to 1923; life member California Society of Colonial Wars; governor California Society of Colonial Wars, 1919-1920; deputy governor general to General Society of Colonial Wars, 1921; historian general of the Society of Colonial Wars, 1921-1924; life member Sons of the Revolution in the State of California, president, 1921-1922; president International Congress of Genealogy, San Francisco, California, 1915; chevalier commander for California, Order of Lafayette (headquarters, Washington, D. C.); vice-president and charter member Lafayette Society of California; State regent for California, the National Patriotic Society of the Lion, (headquarters, San Francisco, California); vice-president Piscataqua Pioneers, Portsmouth, N. H.; member New Jersey Society of the Order of the Founders and Patriots of America; member Orkney Antiquarian Society, Orkney Islands, Scotland (headquarters, Kirkwell, Orkney); vice-president board of library directors, Los Angeles Public Library, 1919-20-21-23; president Los Angeles Stock Exchange (ninth term); senior vice-



## FRANK HERVEY PETTINGELL

president National Mining and Stock Brokers' Association; charter member Colorado Springs Mining Stock Association, still a member; formerly president (1896) Colorado Mining Stock Exchange, Denver, Colorado; member B. P. O. Elks, No. 309, Colorado Springs, Colo., 1895 to 1919, demitted to No. 99, Los Angeles, California; member California Club, Los Angeles, California, since June 9, 1919; president trustees section California Library Association, 1920-21-22; chairman trustees section, American Library Association, 1920-1921; delegate to California Library Association to National Conference of American Library Association at Colorado Springs, Colorado, June 2nd to 9th, 1920; member American Library Association; member of war finance committee, American Library Association, 1917-1918; member Red Cross Team, No. 25, Los Angeles, California, during World War.

Children, all by first marriage: Frank Hervey, born November 27, 1899, at Colorado Springs, Colorado; Mary Agnes, born January 27, 1901, at Detroit, Michigan.

### AUTHORITIES:

"Pettingell Genealogy," by John Mason Pettingell, pp. 2-7, 9-10, 19-20, 42, 85-6, 145-8, 234-5, 324.

Pope's "Pioneers of Massachusetts," pp. 252, 356.

Savage's "Gen. Dictionary of N. E.," vol. ii, p. 521; vol. iii, pp. 297-8, 403-4, 535.

"Vital Records of Newbury, Mass.," vol. i, pp. 26, 165, 367, 393-401, 481; vol. ii, pp. 21, 171, 385-6, 388-690.

"New England Hist. Gen. Register," vol. xxxii, p. 345.

"Record Index of Muster Rolls," series 1710-1774, Massachusetts Archives (for service of Cutting<sup>4</sup> Pettingell).

"Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors of the Revolution," vol. xii, p. 256, for Revolutionary services of Josiah<sup>5</sup> Pettingell.

"History of Newbury, Mass.," by John J. Currier, pp. 604-5, 625-8.

"Essex Institute Hist. Collections," vol. xxxv, p. 162.

Records of War Department, Washington, D. C., for service of Cutting<sup>6</sup> Pettingell.

(The Felch or Feltch Line).

I. *Henry Felch*, the immigrant ancestor, born 1590, about, in Wales (possibly); died August 1670, at Boston, Massachusetts; married (first) (before coming to this country probably), to Margaret (whose maiden surname and parentage are not as yet determined), died 23rd of fourth month (June), 1655, at Boston, Massachusetts; married (second) (after 2nd of eighth month, 1656), at (Boston, Massachusetts, probably), to Elizabeth (widow of Thomas Wiborne, who died at Boston, 2nd of eighth month, 1656; her maiden surname and parentage are not as yet determined), died May 12, 1682, at Boston, Massachusetts.

Henry Felch, the first of the name in this country, was born about 1590. He is supposed to have come from Wales (of which tradition there is no proof) with the party of Rev. Richard Blynman in 1640. This party landed first at Plymouth, where Mr. Blynman is mentioned in the records, March 2, 1641; they next appeared at



## FRANK HERVEY PETTINGELL

Marshfield, which town was incorporated March 1, 1642, and was then called Green's Harbor. In less than a year the party removed to Gloucester, Massachusetts, where in 1642 Henry Felch was owner of "six acres of hoed ground," of which ground there is no grant on the records, so it may be inferred that he was in Gloucester before its incorporation as a town. Gloucester was settled between October, 1641 (when the bounds of the town were approved by the General Court) and May, 1642, when it was established or incorporated as a plantation called Gloucester. The first marriage recorded in Gloucester is that of "a daughter of Henry Felch to Samuel Haieward, March 2, 1641 (N. S.)" Savage (vol. ii, p. 393) indicates that Samuel Haieward's wife was named Isabel, but there are several reasons why this is not likely. Henry Felch was a proprietor in Watertown, Massachusetts, in 1642, and was perhaps of Reading, Massachusetts, in 1644. He lived during his later years in Boston, Massachusetts, where he died between July 4, 1670 (the date of his will) and September 27, 1670, the date of its probate. Presumably before coming to this country, he married his first wife, Margaret, who died in Boston in 1655; his second wife was the widow of Thomas Wiborne, who came to this country on the ship "Castle" in 1638, from Tenterden, County Kent, England, and who died in Boston, 2nd of eighth month, 1656, and whose will was dated September 12, 1656, and proved October 28, 1656. Children, all by his first marriage: 1. Henry, born 1610, about. 2. Daughter (perhaps Isabel), married March 2, 1641, at Gloucester, Massachusetts, to Samuel Haieward. 3. Anna (or Hannah), married Samuel Duntun of Reading, Massachusetts, who died November 7, 1683; she died July 11, 1689. 4. Mary, married John<sup>n</sup> Wiburn (or Wiborne), son of Thomas Wiborne of Boston, by his wife Elizabeth, who became the second wife of Henry<sup>y</sup> Felch.

Elizabeth Wiborne had by her first husband, Thomas Wiborne, five sons and two daughters, viz.:—1. Thomas, executor of his father's will; married (first) Abigail Eliot, who died at Boston, April 24, 1660; married (second) Ruth. 2. James, of Boston, who died March 7, 1658-9; he was one of the executors of his father's will. 3. John, who married his step-sister, Mary Felch. 4. Jonathan, who died at Boston, 10th of tenth month, 1653. 5. Nathaniel, born in Boston, March 12, 1655. 6. Elizabeth, who married, 3rd of second month, 1655, John Merrick. 7. Mary, mentioned in her father's will.

*II. Henry Felch*, born and baptized, 1610, at Wales (possibly); died Nov. 11, 1699, at Reading, Massachusetts; married, 1649, to Hannah Sargent (daughter of Rev. William and his first wife Hannah Sargent of Charlestown, Malden and Barnstable, Massachusetts), born ——— (baptized July 13, 1629), at Northamptonshire, England; died December 15, 1717, at Reading, Mass.





## FRANK HERVEY PETTINGELL

Henry Felch was born about 1610, according to tradition in Pembrokeshire, Wales, Great Britain, and came to America with his parents. He was a proprietor at Gloucester, Massachusetts, and settled for a time in Watertown, Massachusetts, and then removed to Reading, Massachusetts, in 1647, where he was prominent in town affairs, being a selectman in 1647-48-51, and in 1681, and surveyor of highways in 1648. He probably resided in Boston for a time as several of his children were born there. His estate was inventoried December 13, 1699, his son John Felch being administrator. In the town records of Reading he is often spoken of as "Sergeant Henry Felch," which shows that he was a member of the first military corps of Reading, formed probably at the time of the incorporation of the town in 1644, and called "Reading Infantry Company." The first captain of this company was Richard Walker, who was also an ancestor of the proponent, Frank Hervey Pettingell.

Children: 1. Hannah, born February 26, 1650; died April 23, 1668. 2. Mary, born July 31, 1653; died June 3, 1676; married William Green of Woburn, Massachusetts. 3. Elizabeth, born July 15, 1655; died October 8, 1657 (or 18th of eighth month, 1657), at Boston, Massachusetts. 4. Samuel, born June 3, 1657, at Boston, Massachusetts; died October 22, 1661. 5. John (Deacon), born February 26, 1660; died Weston, Massachusetts, April 9, 1746; married Elizabeth Gowing. 6. Samuel, born July 12 (or 22), 1662; died January 14 (or 31), 1683. 7. Joseph, born ———; died May 31, 1727; married Mary ———. 8. Elizabeth, born March 9, 1666; died ———; married Thomas Cutler. 9. Daniel, born January 5, 1668 (see below). 10. Hannah, born September 18, 1672; died ———; married Samuel Parker. 11. Ruth, born June 1, 1675.

*III. Dr. Daniel Felch*, born January 5, 1668, at Reading, Massachusetts; died October 5, 1752, aged 84 years, 9 months, in that part of Hampton Falls now called Seabrook, New Hampshire; married (first) May 6, 1702, at Reading, Massachusetts, to Deborah Dean (or Dane) of Charlestown, Massachusetts (perhaps daughter of Joseph and Elizabeth (Fuller) Dean, of Concord, Massachusetts, and if so) born September 29, 1678; died January 7, 1715; he married (second) Sarah<sup>3</sup> Fuller (dau. of Benjamin (Lieut. Thomas) and Sarah (Bacon) Fuller); he married (third) January 12, 1725, at Salem, Massachusetts (ceremony performed by Rev. Peter Clarke), to Hepsibah Curtis (daughter of Corporal John (Zacheus) Curtis and his wife Mary Looke, who was a daughter of Thomas and Sarah Looke, of Lynn, Massachusetts), born November 28, 1694, at Topsfield, Massachusetts, baptized January 6, 1694-5, at Boxford, Massachusetts; died at the Felch homestead in Seabrook, New Hampshire. Residence: Salem Village (now North Parish, Danvers), Massachusetts, as four of his children were baptized in the





## FRANK HERVEY PETTINGELL

church there between 1718 and 1728. Shortly prior to 1730 he settled in that part of Seabrook, New Hampshire, then included within the jurisdiction of Hampton Falls, New Hampshire. His name appears among the taxpayers in Hampton Falls in 1747-8-9 and 1750. He doubtless studied medicine under some physicians in or near Reading, Massachusetts, and was for many years a practicing physician in and about the vicinity of Hampton Falls, New Hampshire. Seabrook was set off from Hampton Falls, New Hampshire, on June 3, 1768.

Children, by first marriage: 1. Daniel, born March 8, 1703, died September 13, 1713, aged 10 years, 6 months and 5 days, at Reading, Massachusetts. By second marriage: 2. Daniel, born April 5, 1718, baptized April 20, 1718; married Jane Paige. 3. Deborah, born January 13, 1720, baptized April 24, 1720; married Abner Harris. By third marriage, four sons and two daughters, viz.: 4. Curtis, born 1726, about; married and removed to Fitzwilliam, New Hampshire. 5. Samuel, baptized April 23, 1727, at church in Salem Village (now Danvers, North Parish), Massachusetts (see below). 6. Sarah, baptized April 21, 1728, at church in Salem Village, Massachusetts; died January 13, 1811, at Seabrook, New Hampshire, not married. 7. Joseph, baptized April 24, 1728; died February 5, 1803, at Weare, New Hampshire; married Mary Hoyt. 8. Hannah, born October 24, 1731; married Paul Presey (int. pub. Nov. 30, 1750, at Salisbury, Massachusetts). 9. Henry, born July 21, 1735, at Hampton Falls, New Hampshire; died June 27, 1807; married (first) ———; married (second) Deborah Palmer.

*IV. Samuel Falch (or Felch)*, baptized April 23, 1727, in church at Salem Village, now Danvers North Parish, Massachusetts, died June 3, 1811, at Salisbury, Massachusetts; married January 1, 1755, at Seabrook, New Hampshire, to Jemima Selley—later spelled Cilley—(daughter of Thomas (Benoni) Selley by his second wife Lydia French), born April 5, 1737, at Salisbury, Massachusetts, died June 5, 1817, at Salisbury, Massachusetts. Residence: Seabrook, New Hampshire, where he lived in the old Felch homestead. He was a farmer and fisherman. On November 29, 1808, he divided this old homestead into five equal parts which he conveyed in severalty to his five sons by deeds bearing that date. He signed the Association Text as a resident of Seabrook, New Hampshire, with his brother Joseph Felch, April 12, 1776.

Children: 1. Nicholas, born June 12, 1755; died April 13, 1841; married Sarah Gove. 2. Jenne, born June 23, 1757; died March 11, 1836; married Jeremiah Brown. 3. Samuel, born November 18, 1759; died July 17, 1818; married Sarah (March) Harris, widow of Nathaniel Harris. 4. Jemima, born April 16, 1762; died November 15, 1816; married Belcher Dole. 5. Hepsibah, born October 15,



## FRANK HERVEY PETTINGELL

1765; died November 10, 1840; intention of marriage published Feb. 2, 1791, to Benjamin Joy, Jr. 6. Phineas, born March 7, 1768; died April, 1840; married Sarah Ward. 7. Daniel, born October 13, 1771; died June 30, 1839; married Jenny Eaton. 8. Jacob, born February 3, 1777 (see below). 9. Betty, born December 3, 1781; died November 13, 1856; married Thomas Chase.

*V. Jacob Falch (or Felch)*, born February 3, 1777, at Seabrook, New Hampshire; died January 28, 1856, at Newburyport, Massachusetts; he was married Aug. 5, 1802, at Salisbury, Massachusetts, by Edward Noyes (5th minister of the First Church at Salisbury, Massachusetts), to Hannah Wharf Harris, daughter of Nathaniel Harris, by his wife Sarah March, who after the death of Nathaniel Harris, became the wife of Samuel Falch (or Felch), brother of Jacob Falch (or Felch), born Feb. 2, 1783, at Salisbury, Massachusetts; died January 30, 1880, at Newburyport, Massachusetts. Jacob Falch (or Felch) settled early in Kensington, New Hampshire, where he was a resident and tax payer from 1808 to 1819. A family tradition persists that he was an officer of militia during the War of 1812, but this tradition has never been substantiated by proof.

Children: 1. Sarah (or Sally), born 1803, about; died November 17, 1892, at Newburyport, Massachusetts, aged 89; married Moses Floyd. 2. Jacob, born at Seabrook, New Hampshire; nothing further known of him at this writing. 3. Joseph Harris, born April 25, 1804; died September 25, 1882 (see below). 4. Charlotte, born 1807; died October 17, 1892, at Newburyport, Massachusetts, unmarried, aged 85. 5. William Alfonzo, died March 8, 1880; married (first) Lucy M. Page; married (second) Abby Goodwin. 6. Gorham, died April 17, 1881; not married. 7. Mary M., died August 29, 1887; married William L. Shuff. 8. Clara M., born 1817, about; died March 14, 1901, aged 86; married John B. Nelson. 9. Emeline Morrill, born December 24, 1819; died November 30, 1909; married Hiram Janvrin. 10. Lucy Goff, born about November, 1823; died October 23, 1883; married Benjamin W. Coffin.

*VI. Joseph Harris Felch (or Feltch)*, born April 25, 1804, at New Hampshire; died September 25, 1882, at Newburyport, Massachusetts, and was buried in Oldtown graveyard, Newbury, Massachusetts; married (first) by Rev. Leonard Withington, pastor First Church, Newbury, Massachusetts, at Newbury, Massachusetts, April 16, 1834, to Mary Haskell (daughter of John Haskell and his wife Margaret (Thomas) Clouston, of Newburyport, Massachusetts), born July 5, 1804, at Newburyport, Massachusetts; died April 9, 1861, at Newburyport, Massachusetts; married (second) by Rev. James B. Miles, at Charlestown, Massachusetts, January 30, 1866, to



## FRANK HERVEY PETTINGELL

Leah (Osgood) Folsom (widow and second wife of Levi G. Folsom, and daughter of Captain John S. Osgood and his wife Leah Prescott of Gilmanton, New Hampshire), born September 23, 1816, at Gilford, New Hampshire; died Aug. 29, 1887, at Charlestown, Massachusetts. Joseph Harris Felch (or Felch) was a farmer in Newbury and Newburyport, Mass. Children: two (Fletch), both by first marriage, viz.:—1. Rev. Joseph Haskell, Jr., born May 20, 1837, at Newbury, Mass.; died January 19, 1870, at Cummington, Mass., not married. 2. Mary Anna, born September 10, 1843 (see below).

*VII. Mary Anna Felch*, born September 10, 1843, at Newbury, Massachusetts; died August 6, 1894, at Newburyport, Massachusetts and was buried beside her husband in Oak Hill Cemetery, Newburyport, Massachusetts; married September 6, 1863, at Newburyport, Massachusetts, by Rev. J. A. Ames, clergyman, to Nathaniel Henry Pettingell (son of Cutting and Olive (Smith) Pettingell, of Newbury and Newburyport, Massachusetts), born September 11, 1835, at Newbury, Massachusetts, died November 12, 1874, at South Newmarket (now Newfields), New Hampshire, and was buried in Oak Hill Cemetery, Newburyport, Massachusetts. Nathaniel Henry Pettingell's line of ascent is as follows: Cutting,<sup>6</sup> Josiah,<sup>5</sup> Cutting,<sup>4</sup> Nathaniel,<sup>3</sup> Matthew,<sup>2</sup> Richard<sup>1</sup> Pettingell, the immigrant ancestor. Residence: Newburyport, Massachusetts. Children: 1. Agnes Leah, born May 17, 1866; died July 27, 1880, at Newburyport, Massachusetts. 2. Frank Hervey, born January 2, 1868 (see below). 3. Walter Felch, born and died March 10, 1869, at Newburyport, Massachusetts. 4. William Felch, born and died September 25, 1869, at Newburyport, Massachusetts. 5. Walter Joseph, born January 2, 1871, at Newburyport, Massachusetts, and died there September 29, 1911. 6. Cutting, born December 24, 1872, at Newburyport, Massachusetts; married and removed to Seattle, Washington; no children.

### *VIII. Frank Hervey Pettingell, q.v., ante.*

#### AUTHORITIES:

- "Boston Records," Commissioners' Reports, vol. for year 1883, Document 130, pp. 42, 50, 51, 52, 56, 59, 61, 62, 66, 75.
- Pope's "Pioneers of Massachusetts," pp. 163, 400, 517.
- Savage's "Genealogical Dictionary of New England," vol. ii, pp. 150-1, 393; vol. iv, p. 662.
- Bond's "Watertown, Mass.," pp. 206-7, and Appendix, p. 1008.
- "N. E. Gen. Hist. Reg.," vol. ii, pp. 31, 183; vol. vi, p. 289; vol. x, p. 219; vol. xiii, pp. 360-1; vol. xviii, p. 263; vol. liii, pp. 234-241.
- "History of Gloucester, Mass.," by John J. Babson, pp. 53, 93, 97.
- "Genealogical and Family History of New Hampshire," by Ezra S. Stearns, p. 1185.
- "Historic Homes and Places and Genealogical and Personal Memoirs Relating to Middlesex Co., Mass.," by Wm. R. Cutler, vol. ii, p. 407.
- "Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown, Mass.," by Wyman, pp. 342, 845.
- "Genealogical History of Reading, Mass.," by Eaton, pp. 8, 11-13, 15, 19-20, 32, 34, 37, 71, 134, 281-2.



## FRANK HERVEY PETTINGELL

- "Sargent Genealogy," by J. S. and A. Sargent, pp. 32, 171.  
"Essex Institute Hist. Coll.," vol. xvi, pp. 61, 312-13, 318; vol. xviii, p. 34.  
New Hampshire State Papers, vol. xxx, p. 142.  
Published and unpublished records of Salisbury, Mass.  
Published and unpublished Records of Seabrook, N. H.  
Concord Births, Marriages and Deaths, 1635-1850, p. 22.  
"Osgood Family," by Ira Osgood, edited by Eben Putnam, pp. 390-1.  
"Genealogy of the Folsom Family," by Jacob Chapman, p. 84.  
Vital Records of Newbury, Mass., vol. i, p. 165; vol. ii, p. 171.  
Vital Records of Newburyport, Mass., vol. ii, p. 160.  
"N. Y. Gen. and Biog. Record," vol. 49, pp. 194-5.







# Plainfield, New Jersey

## ITS SETTLEMENT AND DEVELOPMENT

By A. VAN DOREN HONEYMAN



SO MUCH has been loosely and unauthoritatively written concerning the early history of Plainfield that unusual pains have been taken to state herein the real facts. The late Mr. Oliver B. Leonard was a prolific writer about the early inhabitants of the city, but largely confined himself to family genealogies and certain of the churches. We have had advantage of much of his material, but almost all the facts following, which are verified by the early State's survey maps, records of grants, etc., are the contribution of Mr. Cornelius C. Vermeule, now of East Orange, a civil engineer in New York City, who has courteously devoted a great deal of time to secure accuracy in this chapter. He has plotted out every grant and practically every ownership within the "Blue Hills" region, the name by which this vicinity was originally designated.

Among those who originally took up land within the present city limits, the largest holder was Peter Sonmans, who in 1685 patented 3,500 acres (two tracts), including all from the base of Watchung mountain to a line parallel with and a little southeast of Eighth street, and from Clinton avenue northeast to the present pumping station of the Plainfield-Union Water Company at Netherwood. This tract included North Plainfield and nearly all of Plainfield. All of Plainfield southwest of Sonmans' patent was purchased by Benjamin Hull from the Indian "Cowankeen," in 1683. In this deed Plainfield was called "Blondyn Plains." This purchase was included in a grant of the Proprietors to Sir Evan Cameron of Lochier, Scotland, the grant being bounded approximately by Sonmans, the base of the mountain and the Bound Brook of Piscataway.

On April 22, 1684, Thomas Gordon, "of Edinburgh," received "confirmation" of one-tenth of one-forty-eighth share of land of the East Jersey Proprietors, and in November temporarily settled on Cedar Brook, in present Plainfield, where ex-United States Senator James E. Martine resides. On February 16, 1685, he wrote back to Scotland, dating his letter at "Cedar Brook," among other things

---

NOTE—These pages are taken from advance sheets of "History of Union County, New Jersey." (Lewis Historical Publishing Company, New York and Chicago; 1923.)



## PLAINFIELD, NEW JERSEY

saying: "Upon the 18th day of November I and my servants [there were seven servants] came here to the woods, and eight days thereafter my wife and [four] children came also. I put up a wigwam in 24 hours, which served us until we put up a better house, which I made, 24 feet long, 15 feet wide, containing a hall and kitchen, both in one, and a chamber and a study."

He then says he cleared ground and made fences, and speaks of Robert Fullerton as going to join him "for a plough this spring, consisting of four oxen and two horses." He also adds: "There are eight of us settled here within a half mile or a mile of each other," and names them as "John Forbes, John Barclay, Dr. John Gordon, his servants, Andrew Alexander and myself." Thomas Gordon soon left Plainfield for Perth Amboy, and subsequently became Attorney-General of East Jersey, and held other important offices. Neither Dr. John Gordon nor Andrew Alexander took up land in this vicinity, but Robert Gordon, of Pitlochrie, held 1,000 acres west of Ash Swamp.

Between Sonmans' northeast line and the present northeast limit of the city was a tract of 300 acres, granted September 2, 1687, to "Robert Fullerton, gent., brother to the Laird of Kennaber." James and Thomas Fullerton, brothers to Robert, were also in this vicinity, but probably resided near South Plainfield. Next, northeast of the Fullerton's was a grant of 482 acres to George and John Alexander, "of Scotland," in 1688; and from this tract northeast came a grant of 125 acres to James Coole, Sr., of "Blew Hills," also in 1688. The northeast line of Coole's tract is now Park avenue, Scotch Plains. The name "Blew Hills" first appears in Coole's grant, but the triangular tract, lying between the mountain, the Short Hills on the east and the Bound Brook of Piscataway on the south, was known for two generations thereafter as "At the Blue Hills."

The name "Plainfield" was first given to John Barclay's grant of 700 acres, surveyed to him and his brother, "Robert Barclay of Urie," January 18, 1685. This land lay at what is now South Plainfield, reaching from Cedar Brook over east to the Short Hills, and Barclay already had a house there in 1684. Cedar Brook was formerly a larger stream than now and, like Green Brook, appears in many early deeds. It originated in Plainfield, and winds its way to the present New Brooklyn Pond. At present it is inconsequential and often dry.

On the opposite side of Cedar brook, west of Barclay, a grant of 425 acres was surveyed to John Forbes, "brother of the Laird of Boynho, Kingdom of Scotland." This was in 1686, and Forbes also had a house there before the survey was made. His grant ran round north of Barclay, reaching over east to the Short Hills, and



## PLAINFIELD, NEW JERSEY

its north boundary ran nearly parallel with and a quarter of a mile south of the present south line of Plainfield.

North of Forbes, and including all of the triangle between Forbes, Sonmans, and the Short Hills, there was a tract of 1,000 acres granted to Robert Burnett "of Lethenty" in 1688. The entire area of Plainfield was taken up by the foregoing grants, but of all these excellent Scotchmen only the Cooles remained as permanent residents after 1710.

Barclay's plantation passed, in 1692, to John Laing, and he set up at his house the Plainfield Meeting of the Society of Friends. In 1713 his son William purchased the Forbes tract, while his other son, John, whose wife was Elizabeth Shotwell, inherited the Barclay place.

About 1718 William Webster (born 1692) and his wife, Susannah Cowperthwait, came and built their house near the east bank of Cedar Brook, about where Prospect avenue now is. (His first child was born 1718; see "Records, Plainfield Meeting.")

In 1720 John Shotwell "of Plainfield" (i. e., of the Plainfield Meeting), came and settled on the Fullerton tract. Another prominent Friend, John Vail, purchased 1,200 acres of Peter Sonmans in 1731. It was the northeast end of Sonmans' great tract, and joined John Shotwell on the northeast. He was of Woodbridge, and his wife was Martha Fitz Randolph. His son John (2nd), who was born at Woodbridge in 1713, married (1) Margaret Laing, and (2), about 1750, her sister, Mary Laing, both daughters of John Laing. John Vail (1st) was a millwright and, about 1735, built a mill on Greenbrook near Grand avenue, at what was later Tier's pond. He was a Quaker preacher, and lived until 1774, dying in his 89th year, but his son John died in 1754, when only 41 years of age. About 1760 William Webster owned the Vail gristmill; French's mill, as known to the present generation, is said to date from about 1782, but by whom built does not appear.<sup>1</sup>

Peter Sonmans found sales slow. In 1733 he sold 660 acres at the southwest end of his tract to Henry Slydorn, who sold again, in 1735, to Adrian Vermeule and his brother-in-law, Direk Cadmus, of Bergen. This tract extended along present Front street from Clinton avenue to within 200 feet of Geraud avenue, thence northwest to the

---

<sup>1</sup>As to mills generally in this place and vicinity, Henry Lines had one in 1738, where Mountain avenue now crosses Green Brook, near Scotch Plains. In 1740, Lawrence Reuth had a mill up in the gap back of Scotch Plains, just above what was later Seely's mill. Luke Covert built a mill at Rock avenue and Green Brook about 1760, and this was purchased by Cornelius Vermeule after passing through the hands of Abner Hampton, in 1767. It was there through the Revolution. Just before the Revolution the Vermeules built a second mill about 600 yards below the present West End avenue bridge. During the Revolution John Manning had a mill on Stony Brook in the gap, and Isaac Doty had two, a grist and saw mill farther up stream, the latter being where the large ice plant now is at Washingtonville.





## PLAINFIELD, NEW JERSEY

mountains. When it was surveyed in 1733, "the widow Miller" had a house near the present intersection of Front street and Clinton avenue. (Doubtless she was the widow of Andrew Miller of Piscataway, and the mother of Rev. Benjamin Miller (1715-1781), pastor of Scotch Plains Baptist Church, but proof is not absolute). Adrian Vermeule died at Bergen shortly after purchasing, but his widow and two sons—Frederick, who never married, and Cornelius—occupied two-thirds of the purchase at once. Dirk Cadmus never came, but his son Andries occupied his third about 1765.

In 1734 William Webster purchased of Sonmans a tract extending north from present Watchung avenue to John Vail's land. After Sonmans' death, Judge Samuel Nevill, his executor, sold the remainder of the tract to Isaac Drake, Isaac Manning, Peter Wooden, Andrew Drake, Thomas Clawson, Richard Lenox and the Vermeules, all before 1745. Of these Isaac Drake already owned a tract east of Cedar Brook, of which the south line is now Randolph road. He was born in Piscataway, Middlesex county, in 1686. He was the son of Rev. John and Rebecca (Trotter) Drake, and was living with his aged father on the Cedar Brook farm. He now purchased of Nevill, in 1743, for his grandson Nathaniel, a farm lying between Plainfield and Grant avenues, and Front and Ninth streets. Near Geraud avenue, northeast of the Dirk Cadmus tract, it had a small frontage on Green Brook, and on this Nathaniel built a house about 1746. (This is what is called "Washington Headquarters.") Nathaniel Drake (born 1725; died 1801) lived here until his death, and was a prominent deacon of the Scotch Plains church. Next north to Drake, Joseph Fitz Randolph purchased the land extending from Plainfield to Watchung avenues and from Green Brook to Eighth street. He was the eldest son of Joseph and Hannah (Conger) Fitz Randolph, and was born at Piscataway in 1691. He married Rebecca, a sister of Isaac Drake.

James Manning (born 1700, a son of James and Christian, the latter a daughter of John Laing) built his house along the west bank of Cedar Brook in 1729. His wife was Grace, daughter of Joseph Fitz Randolph. He acquired by successive purchases several tracts on both sides of Cedar Brook. Isaac Manning, who purchased the tract lying northeast of Dirk Cadmus, between the mountain and Green Brook, was James' brother, and was an active organizer of the Scotch Plains Baptist Church in 1740. Between Isaac Manning and the present Somerset street was Peter Wooden's farm, and, just northeast of Somerset street, was Andrew Drake. These were all Piscataway township families.

Richard Lenox married, 1746, Mercy Dunham of Piscataway, and came to live on a small farm he had purchased of Thomas Claw-





## PLAINFIELD, NEW JERSEY

son. His homestead on Clinton avenue was, later, the home of Richard McDowell Coriell, but, about 1757, Richard Lenox died and, later, his son Levi, a soldier of the Revolution, succeeded to the farm. The Vermeule brothers purchased land all around him, including practically all between Grant and Clinton avenues, Green Brook and Eighth street. Their home was across Green Brook, at the westerly end of Clinton avenue, near the spot where Mr. A. J. Brunson recently resided. A former owner, Jeremiah Van Deventer, tore down the homestead, which was the real "Washington Headquarters" in this vicinity, in June, 1777.

Apparently "the widow Miller" held by Elizabethtown right and sold her claim to Luke Covert about 1740. In 1745 Covert purchased a Proprietary title from Drummond and Alexander, successors to Sir Evan Cameron, to the land southwest of the Vermeules, reaching from Clinton avenue to a little beyond Rock avenue. He had been born in Brooklyn in 1699. Southwest of his place, extending along Green Brook to beyond the limits of Plainfield, was the farm of Ide Marselis, who had settled there about 1735 under Elizabethtown right but also took title from Drummond and Alexander in 1745. Marselis was of another old Bergen family. In 1740, Cornelius Vermeule married his daughter Maritie, while a little later Luke, a son of Luke Covert, married another daughter, Annatie. These four families, Vermeule, Covert, Cadmus and Marselis, as well as the Coriells and Clawsons of Quibbletown, attended the Raritan Dutch Church (Somerville), of which Cornelius Vermeule was an elder.

In 1740 the known houses within the present limits of Plainfield were those of John Shotwell, William Webster, James Manning, Widow Miller, John Vail and Isaac Drake. Just below Drake in Middlesex county, at the then Plainfield Meeting, were the five sons and six daughters of John Laing, who died in 1731, and west, across Cedar Brook, the five sons and two daughters of William Laing, who died in 1735, while west of Green Brook, in what is now North Plainfield, the Vermeule homestead stood alone.

From 1775 to 1783, what is now Plainfield was open farming country. Quibbletown, now New Market, and Scotch Plains, were hamlets, and their names were often loosely applied to the territory lying between. As this territory east of Green Brook was in the Westfield ward of Elizabeth Town borough, all of these names are used at times also; hence Revolutionary history is much confused.

There was an important Revolutionary militia post with a large fort, about 200 yards square, along the east bank of Green Brook, about mid-way between Clinton and West End avenues, the encampment covering about 95 acres, reaching from the present line



## PLAINFIELD, NEW JERSEY

of Central Railroad to the Brook. It guarded both the main road leading from Quibbletown through Scotch Plains and Springfield and the mountain pass, through which Somerset street now leads. It was located on the Vermeule tract, then increased to 1,200 acres, on which then there were three houses. The homestead in North Plainfield was occupied by Cornelius Vermeule, a member of the Provincial Congress of 1775, and of the Somerset Committee of Correspondence, and his younger sons Frederick and Cornelius, who were privates in the First Somerset Regiment. His eldest son, Adrian, had his own house along the road leading across the mountain (Rock avenue). His second son, Eder, lived along the Scotch Plains road in the midst of the encampment and was a lieutenant in Captain Benjamin Laing's Company of the First Essex. Adrian Vermeule, while carrying despatches, was captured by the enemy at Quibbletown in January, 1777, carried off to prison in the Sugar House in New York City, and died there March 9, 1777.

Of the Covert family living on Rock avenue east of Green Brook, the father, Luke (1734-1828), who was, in 1777, 43 years old, and his sons Luke, Jr., 19, Eder 17, and John 17 years old, all served in Capt. Laing's company. Peter Covert, a brother of Luke, was then 49 years old. He had married Mary, daughter of Thomas Clawson, and they had eleven children, but Peter, nevertheless, became a private in Capt. Jedediah Swan's Company and fought through the war. Peter Marselis and John, his brother, living farther along the road toward Quibbletown, also did their bit, as did Isaac Manning (a grandson of Isaac the settler, living north of Andries Cadmus), who was under arms eleven months in all, in the First Somerset.

Captain Benjamin Laing (1746-1819) was a most active, efficient patriot and his company was made up in and about the present Plainfield. He lived on the west side of Cedar Brook, near the Middlesex county line, on part of the land which his grandfather, William Laing, had purchased of John Forbes. He was a son of Benjamin and Mary (Blackford) Laing. Through intermarriage this branch of the Laing family had strayed from the Friends into the Baptist fold.

Another active captain was the Jedediah Swan, already mentioned, who lived west of the Scotch Plains church and organized a company in that vicinity, which, however, also had several men from the present Plainfield, including Peter Covert. This company fought at Long Island, and Recompence Stanbery, the Captain's brother-in-law, was severely wounded there. Stanbery later joined Laing's company and, still later, Capt. Samuel Meeker's Light Horse. Cornelius Drake, a son of Deacon Nathaniel, served with the Morris county militia. Levi Lenox (1748-1828), who lived on the road to



## PLAINFIELD, NEW JERSEY

Samptown, now Clinton avenue, just south of the Fort, where, later, lived his grandson, the late William McDowell Coriell, was also in Captain Laing's Company.

All of those mentioned served at the Fort during the winter of 1776-1777. Col. Oliver Spencer's Battalion of Bergen, Essex and Morris troops, and the First Somerset regiment of Col. Frederick Frelinghuysen, which included all the young men west of Green Brook, were also there. Col. Moses Jaques, of Westfield, commanded a battalion there. The commandant of the post was Col. William Winds of Morris county.

The Friends living here in the Revolutionary period by no means included all whose names have been mentioned by historians as "of Plainfield," for many members of the Meeting lived over in Piscataway, and others at Rahway or Woodbridge. Joseph, Abraham, David and John Vail lived west of Green Brook. They were sons of John (2nd), and grandsons of John, the first settler. John Shotwell's lands had passed to Jacob, Abraham and Benjamin, and his grandson, John Smith Shotwell. John and Hugh Webster had the lands of their father, William, the original settler, including a large tract north of Watchung avenue, reaching from Green Brook to the Short Hills, with more to the south of said avenue (then the road to Rahway) and east of Cedar Brook. Zachariah Pound lived southwest of Luke Covert, along Green Brook. These, with John and William Laing, appear to be the only Friends who were then landowners. Abraham Shotwell, Hugh Webster, John Vail and Elijah Pound, a brother of Zachariah, were members of a Committee for the Relief of Sufferers during the War.

The name "Plainfield" came up from John Laing's place to the Meeting-House in 1788-89. At about that time, however, the vicinity of Front street and Somerset street was known locally as "Milltown," continuing as such until 1800, when the Plainfield post-office was first established, while up in the gap was "Brotherton." During the Revolution we do not find the name "Plainfield" used except in connection with the Friends' Meeting.

The Revolutionary Encampment was usually located by its garrison as "at the Vermeule's" ("Van Muliner's," as the name was often incorrectly written), but, when Sullivan returned to it after his Indian Expedition, he spoke of the locality as "Scotch Plains." The southwest corner of the Vermeule plantation, which then comprised 1,200 acres mostly under cultivation, was just below Washington Rock. Family correspondence shows that Washington quartered at the homestead, and that social relations existed is confirmed by the fact that, in 1814, Cornelius, a son of Capt. Cornelius Vermeule, then a Professor at Rutgers College, was entertained at Mt. Vernon by Judge Bushrod Washington. Another interesting





## PLAINFIELD, NEW JERSEY

and not now locally-known fact is that in 1799, when war with France was threatened, the United States Government purchased the camp site above mentioned and erected buildings thereon for a cantonment. In 1802, when the war "scare" was over, the land and buildings so purchased were sold back to the Vermeule family.

It is interesting to note that the house of Luke Covert still stands southeast of Green Brook on the northeast side of Rock avenue, not, however, within the city limits. Also the house of Capt. Cornelius Vermeule, built in 1784, and in fine preservation. This also is out of the city on the Green Brook road, but near present West End avenue. The only very early house still standing in the city is the Nathaniel Drake House, now locally called "Washington Headquarters," and which is occupied by the Plainfield and North Plainfield Historical Society, but has been taken over by the city of Plainfield (1922) to preserve as the oldest existing house in the city, the adjoining land to be incorporated in a new public park. Most of the early names mentioned in this chapter are still to be found in the Plainfield Directory of to-day.

On March 7, 1881, the Common Council of the city of Plainfield adopted a resolution to establish and maintain the Plainfield Public Library and Reading Room, pursuant to the provision of an act of the Legislature of 1879. On October 3, 1881, Mr. L. V. F. Randolph, then mayor of the city, appointed as directors, Mason W. Tyler, George H. Babcock, Henry E. Daboll, John B. Dumont, John H. Evans, Walter L. Hetfield, Craig A. Marsh, J. Kirtlandt Myers and Henry P. Talmadge, who met and organized, October 26, 1881, by electing Mr. Babcock president; Mr. Tyler vice-president; Mr. Dumont treasurer, and Mr. Hetfield secretary. On May 10, 1882, the library was opened in a room rented on the second floor of the building on the south side of Front street, about thirty feet east of Park avenue, with Mr. J. Oakley Nodine as librarian.

The growth of the library for the first five years was slow, as it was not until 1886 that the collection of books numbered 1,000 volumes. During the following year 5,000 odd volumes were purchased or presented, and records reveal that subsequent years had fairly equal proportions in accessions. During these years the influence of the library in the future development of the community was augmented through the interest of Mr. Job Male, who in 1884 was appointed a member of the board, and in August of the same year was elected president. At this time Mr. Male made known to the board his purpose to erect a building upon the land owned by him at the corner of Eighth street and Park avenue, valued by him at \$25,000, and to donate such lot and building to the board of directors for the benefit of the city of Plainfield for the purposes of





## PLAINFIELD, NEW JERSEY

a public library, art gallery and museum, to be known as the Job Male Public Library, whenever money and works of art and other articles of personal property suitable for such purpose, to the value of \$20,000, should have been donated by other persons. Ten thousand dollars of this sum, it was understood, should be subscribed and paid in money and be applicable to the purchase of books. Under this arrangement the sum of \$10,000 was subscribed for the purchase of books and works of art and other articles, valued at \$10,000, were contributed or acquired for the art gallery.

By an Act of the Legislature, approved March 6, 1886, the act under which the library and reading room was established, was amended so as to authorize libraries and reading rooms organized under it to receive such donations as Mr. Male contemplated, and the levy, for purposes of maintenance, of an annual tax not exceeding one-half of one mill on the dollar of the taxable property in the city, and thereupon Mr. Male conveyed the land with the building he had erected thereon to the directors of the library. Again, in 1887, Mr. Male offered to give to the directors the plot of land fronting on College place adjoining in the rear the land in which the library building had been erected, on condition that \$500 should be donated by other persons for the purpose of "fencing and grading and putting in order the said lot and grading and flagging the sidewalks adjoining the same." The other members of the board provided and paid the sum required. In February, 1895, the directors received, through the will of Mr. George H. Babcock, who died in December, 1893, the sum of \$10,000 for the purchase of industrial, mechanical and scientific books, founding what was to be known as the Babcock Scientific Library. Mr. Babcock also bequeathed to the directors three brick houses in Plainfield, the rents from which were to keep up and enlarge the Babcock Library, which, at this time of writing, numbers 10,388 volumes. Later Mrs. George H. Babcock presented the directors \$1,000 toward a fund for cataloging this collection. The rapid growth of the general library and the increased accommodations required for the Babcock Library necessitated additional stackroom accommodations and in March, 1897, the Common Council granted an additional appropriation of \$7,000 with which a fire-proof addition was built accommodating 50,000 volumes.

In 1907 Col. Mason W. Tyler, president of the board, died. It was at Col. Tyler's suggestion that the initiative was taken to organize the library and he was appointed a member of the first board of directors. This library had been the recipient of many donations during his lifetime on occasions when the exchequer was exhausted and, through his will, received \$10,000 to be invested to found the Tyler Library of Americana, which at the present time consists of



## PLAINFIELD, NEW JERSEY

2,027 volumes. During the twelve years following the erection of the stackroom the library had extended its hours of circulation not only during the day, but to include evenings; instituted special privileges to teachers and adults following special courses of study and opened Sunday afternoons for reading.

The housing capacity of the building had been more than reached by the year 1909, at which time the directors decided to approach Mr. Andrew Carnegie, who had been giving so liberally for the erection of public libraries throughout the country. Through the special appeal of Mr. L. V. F. Randolph, a member of the board of directors and an acquaintance of Mr. Carnegie's in his early business career, the directors were assured of a gift of \$50,000 with which to build a new building and in February, 1912, ground was broken for its erection. Just one year following the building was opened, at which time the hours for circulation were extended daily from 9 A. M. to 9 P. M. and on Sundays and holidays, Thanksgiving and Christmas excepted, from 2 to 6 P. M. The new building contains a large reading and circulating room across its entire width, lighted naturally, until late in the afternoon, by five large sky lights. Off from the north corner is a modern, three story, fire-proof equipped stack, having half the capacity of the original stack-room. In the basement is an auditorium used by various civic societies. The Young People's department occupies the south end of the main room in the old building while the 2,000 volume law library of the late Corporation Counsel, Craig A. Marsh, is housed in the north end. The musical library of classical composers numbering 2,205 volumes is housed in this building while the circulating picture collection numbering 2,100 mounts is located in a basement room in the new building.

At the end of the library year, May 31, 1921, the total volumes in the library numbered 69,181, and the total circulation was 113,353, the largest in the library's history, approximating four books per capita. The young people's department circulated 37,874 volumes, while at the six stations 13,201 volumes were circulated. There are 262 periodicals regularly received, 71 of which are technical, and 13 newspapers are taken regularly. The library coöperates with the public and private schools in putting its reference and research department at the disposal, daily, of the teachers and pupils.

The art objects acquired at the founding of the Plainfield Library proved an incentive to increase this phase of civic work, as Mr. Male acquired a choice collection of Chinese porcelains and cloisonne which he intended presenting to the Art Gallery and Museum to enhance the value of the collections, and which were obtained after his death. A valuable collection of ancient, foreign and United States colonial coins from the children of the late John



## PLAINFIELD, NEW JERSEY

Taylor Johnston, presented in November, 1897, and in June, 1911, a valuable collection of U. S. Continental currency from present Congressman Ernest R. Ackerman, have added to the interest and value of the museum. On October 2, 1900, Mr. Alexander Gilbert, a member of the board of directors, in fulfillment of a request of his wife before her death, presented for the Museum a very large and valuable collection of butterflies, and also provided sixteen large cases specially constructed for their preservation and exhibition. This collection, made by Mrs. Gilbert, is believed to be the finest and most valuable of its kind in the State of New Jersey. The city of Plainfield was fortunate in having a resident who was not only an excellent taxidermist but a student of bird life, and as a result the Museum owns the splendid collection of New Jersey birds, all of which were collected and prepared by Mr. Andrew J. Gavett.

Having as a resident of our city an artist of world repute, Mr. Jonas Lie, Plainfield should easily, through his efforts, become an art center and to further this idea Mr. Lie, with the directors, planned to have a series of art exhibitions. The first was held in January, 1921, when Mr. Lie exhibited fifty of his own paintings and gave art talks to the children of the public and private schools in the art gallery. The result was spontaneous, as approximately 5,000 people came to the exhibition during the two weeks the pictures were shown.

Among the best known newspaper men and writers of the locality have been Ernest Chamberlain, now deceased, who rose from journalistic ranks in Plainfield to become one of the editors of the New York "Sun" and New York "World;" also (now living) Arthur Brisbane, who received his early education in Plainfield and at present draws an immense salary as editor of the New York "American" and "Evening Journal;" also James R. Joy, of North Plainfield, editor of publications of the Methodist Book Concern, of New York City. One of the most eminent of writers and authors is Rev. Jesse Lyman Hulbert, D. D., formerly pastor of the First Methodist Episcopal Church in Plainfield; he now resides in Newark. A still more widely-known preacher and writer was the late Bishop John H. Vincent, founder in 1874 of the Chautauqua Assembly, who resided from 1866 to 1888 in Plainfield, and here carried on that wonderful educational institution until it was removed to Jamestown, New York.





## Editorial—Book Notices

---

### AN INTERESTING EVENT

It is not within the province of such a publication as "Americana" to concern itself with social events, but the recent marriage of Hon. Alton Brooks Parker and Miss Amelia Day Campbell justifies the present innovation. As Miss Campbell, the lady had been on occasion a contributor to the pages of our magazine, performing her work with enthusiasm, intelligence, and excellent taste. Her "Myles Standish, Military Commander and Defender of the Plymouth Colony," (of whom she is a lineal descendant), and her "Women Patriots and Heroines of New York State in the Revolution," show her devotion to lofty ideals and admiration for noble historic characters; while in her "Alaska: The Land of Possibilities," she displayed her powers of portraying the picturesque as well as of describing more material conditions. Judge Parker is so much of a national character that he need only be named. The union is assuredly a happy one.

---

### FAMILIARITY THAT BREEDS CONTEMPT

The writer of this has personal knowledge of Chicagoans who never saw Cropsey's "American Autumn," that superb piece of autumnal forest scene, unfortunately lost in Chicago's great fire; of St. Louisians who never visited Shaw's Garden, with its unsurpassable collections of flowers and herbs; of Cincinnatians who never saw the Probasco Fountain, or the women's marvelously beautiful wood carving on the organ front in Music Hall. It has even been said that there were Bostonians who never heard what Artemus Ward called "the grate orgin," and people within the hearing of Niagara Falls who never saw them. And yet all these were known of by intelligent foreigners who eagerly sought them when visiting in this country.





## EDITORIAL

These reflections were awakened by the articles in our Magazine of January and the present number on Indian history and mythology by Mr. Jacob P. Dunn, and his incidental reference to the inattention given to Indian language, that is, in such systematic manner as is only possible with organization and means. It is true that there are individuals who, like Mr. Dunn, are giving intelligent attention to the matter, but of necessity only in an incidental way. That there is an increasing interest in the subject is attested by the frequency with which such authorities are asked for information; and, most interesting to note, the Boy and Girl Scouts, particularly in the middle and northwestern States, are acquiring valuable information along this line. It has been positively learned that throughout the country there are yet many who have knowledge coming under this head, who are not writers, and who must be seen or communicated with in order to make such knowledge available. More than once has been suggested a Society for the Preservation of the Indian Languages, and various persons of national repute have favored the plan, which has not been carried out for want of endowment funds to the amount of perhaps \$200,000. It seems to be not very difficult to induce people of wealth to contribute generously toward exploration work in Egypt and South America, but our own antiquities command little attention. The pages of this magazine are freely open to any who may desire to follow up the subject, with a possible remedy as the result.

---

## BOOK NOTICES

"Journal of Indian History;" published three times yearly. Editor, Shafaat Ahmad Khan, Litt.D., F. R. Hist. Soc.; University Professor of Modern Indian History, Allahabad, India; Editorial Board: Dr. S. Krishnaswamy Aiyakgar, University of Madras; H. G. Rawlinson, M. A., University of Bombay; Shafaat Ahmad Khan, University of Allahabad. Oxford University Press, London, New York, Bombay, Madras, etc.

This new accession to our exchange table is most heartily welcome, and its pages contain matter of captivating interest. The story of "The Accession of Shah Jahan," (1592-1637), is that of one of the most romantic and pathetic oriental figures of the seventeenth



## EDITORIAL

century. "The Pallavas" is the history of a remarkable people possessed of a remarkable literature, and of kindred interest is "The Rise of the Imams of Sanaa." Coming down to a more practical age, is "Early Trade Between England and the Levant," by H. G. Rawlinson, M. A., F. R. Hist. Soc., going back to the Middle Ages beginnings of the trade in oriental drugs and spices, and the influence of early European art upon oriental painters. The number concludes with a well considered book review department.

"One Who Gave His Life; War Letters of Quincy Sharpe Mills, Lieutenant 168th U. S. Regiment; with a Memoir by James Luby." G. P. Putnam's Sons, New York and London; Knickerbocker Press, 1923.

Of books relating to the World War, there has not been a superabundance of such as those of Admiral Sims, Walter H. Page, Franklin Lane, and others whose writings were of intense interest on the moment, and will be aidful to the future historian. Of another class of books there have been altogether too many—harrowing tales exploiting exceptionally abnormal and vicious characters. Of yet another class there have been too few—such as tell of the modest unobtrusive soldier who left home and occupation to "do his bit," who did it well, with spirit and determination, as an incident of his life work, without esteeming himself a hero or as entitled to any special distinction. Of such were they who constituted the soul of such an army as was led by a Grant, a Lee, a Foch, a Pershing, the memories of whose dead are treasured in every hamlet and town, and become an inspiration to soldiers of later generations.

"One Who Gave His Life" is such a volume as is to be highly commended in the light of the foregoing observations. Lieutenant Mill's letters to his parents and a few most intimate friends reveal most impressively, because of their unstudied modesty, the everyday acts and thoughts of a true soldier. There are no complaints, no harsh criticisms, but hopefulness and faith in his cause and its ultimate triumph; and his determination to "see it through" is only discerned in his diarylike story of duty performed. And yet it is known that he felt a conviction that he would not survive his effort. He came to his instant death from shell wound on the very front line, alone, erect, under heavy fire, making preparation for his platoon which was to follow him.



## EDITORIAL

To enter the service, he had left the editorial staff of a metropolitan newspaper, his position permanent, his qualities as a man, a thinker and a writer, generously recognized, and every promise of a brilliant future. His memorialist, who was his chief in his newspaper work, has performed his task with dignity and sympathy, without effusiveness, but withal in such phrase as to lead the reader to perceive within the lines that while the writer had lost a dear personal friend, his tribute was not to him alone, but to the many fallen ones of whom he was a most significant type.

“John Randolph of Roanoke, 1733-1833; A Biography based largely on New Material; by William Cabell Bruce, Author of ‘Benjamin Franklin Self-revealed,’ and ‘Below the James.’” Two volumes; G. P. Putnam’s Sons, New York and London. The Knickerbocker Press, 1922.

Book-jackets are in so many instances an abomination that they fully justify the mean-looking term by which they are generally called—“blurb.” The jacket which envelopes the volumes above-named is such a commendable exception and such an admirable epitomization of the work it covers, that it is well worthy of reproduction:

“By virtue of his descent from King Powhatan and Pocahontas and the aristocratic Randolph and Bland families of Virginia, his social and plantation background, his love of the horse, the dog, and the gun; his unique presence; his bitter misfortunes; his pride, violence and vindictiveness, combined with the tenderest impulses of love and pity; his brilliant social, literary and rhetorical gifts, and the splendid fame he acquired in Congress and on the hustings, John Randolph of Roanoke is one of the most intensely vivid and interesting figures in American history; and to realize this, one needs but to read this book.”

In this masterly work and in a fashion all his own, the author has made one of the most admirable contributions that adorn American literature, one well worthy to be laid beside his “Benjamin Franklin Self-revealed” which won for him the Pulitzer Prize for Biography. Disdaining the arts of the many wordy writers who affect startling style and exuberant word-painting and set up fictitious psychological distinctions of mental traits, Mr. Bruce has succeeded in largest degree as deep student and discriminating analyst in constructing a story more entrancing than fiction, because of its vividity





## EDITORIAL

and literary style. A multitude of writers, some of them of no mean ability, have at various times before him essayed the task of portraying the remarkable John Randolph of Roanoke, but he has far surpassed them all. He has delved into the deepest recesses of the Randolph era, and brought forth memorabilia which had escaped all his predecessors, enabling him not only to give a most impressive character portraiture of his immediate subject, but also of that subject's contemporaries, of men and far-reaching events of one of the most remarkable eras in all American history. Were Mr. Bruce to devote his life to writing biographies of men who have shone in our national life, he might well be styled the American Plutarch.

"A Study of Monarchical Tendencies in the United States from 1776 to 1801." By Louise Burnham Dunbar, Ph.D., Instructor in History, University of Illinois.

The work entitled as above is No. 1 of Volume X of the exceedingly valuable "University of Illinois Studies in the Social Sciences." It is a most interesting as well as instructive compendium of information upon a subject of which general histories take little note, one which was of magnitudinous importance at the time when was under discussion the form of government which the American colonies were to adopt, and concerning which the average reader has little knowledge, but only a general impression, to use a familiar phrase, that "The United States would be a monarchy had not Washington rejected a crown which was within his grasp."

In treating her subject, the author has made most diligent research, as is well attested by her abundant footnotes and appendical profuse bibliography. The work opens with the attitude of the Americans towards kingship on the eve of the Revolution, setting forth at length that throughout the Stamp Act controversy the people with almost one accord rendered deepest respect to the King, and cast reproach only upon his ministers. The "Stamp Act Congress" of 1765 was effusive in its expressions; it was "sincerely devoted, with the warmest sentiments of affection and duty to his Majesty's person and government; inviolably attached to the present happy establishment of the Protestant succession;" called George III "the best of sovereigns," and declared "we glory in being the subjects of the best of kings." To quote from "Letters of Junius," "They (the colonies) were ready enough to distinguish between you (the





King) and your Ministers. They complained of an Act of the Legislature, but traced the Origin of it no higher than to the Servants of the Crown."

As the time approached when it became evident that the people must establish a government of their own, there were many who contended for a monarchical form, mostly out of lack of confidence in the various congresses which were conducting or at least aiding in the Revolution, and in point of which may be quoted one who shortly afterward became a foremost opponent of a monarchical system—Thomas Paine, who in his indignation exclaimed "if I must be enslaved, let it be by a King at least, and not by a parcel of lawless committeemen." As time went on, various ambitious foreigners busied themselves to create a monarchical movement, and to the disgust of Jefferson, who associated with them certain American army officers who he said "were trained to monarchy by military habits." Out of this latter sentiment grew that bitter opposition to the Society of the Cincinnati formed by army officers at the close of the Revolution, and in protest against which was organized the Tammany Society that as a great political power exists to the present day. The proposed American monarchy collapsed almost on the instant when it was proposed to Washington, provoking him to "frown indignantly at the proposition." The diligent author whom we here review has treated this entire chapter of history covering a quarter of a century period, in most exhaustive fashion. It would require a highly accomplished student of American history who could not be interested if not instructed by the reading of this "Study of Monarchical Tendencies."







ROBERT TREAT PAINE

Signer of Declaration of Independence. For twenty years  
a resident of Taunton, Massachusetts





ROBERT TREAT PAINE

Signer of Declaration of Independence. For twenty years  
a resident of Taunton, Massachusetts





TAUNTON—THE COMMON, WITH OLD COURT HOUSE





# AMERICANA

JULY, 1923

## Beginnings of Bristol County, Massachusetts

MASSASOIT, ZERVIAH MITCHELL AND ELIZABETH POOLE.

BY FRANK WALCOTT HUTT, TAUNTON, MASS.



AT the close of three hundred years, the most eventful in the history of our country, we again approach as near as possible to the threshold of their times and motives, and inquire: Who were the founders of Bristol county, and the cities and towns contained therein? And, witnessing our own day and achievement, we desire to know how the present has fulfilled the expectations of the founders. The past has undeniable fundamental values; the present is working and building upon the foundations that have been laid; both are one in the purpose and progress of their structure. History depends upon their mutual aid. And so the workmen of yesterday and today join forces as the labor proceeds.

As we, from our summits, survey some of the results of the dealings and ventures of the first settlers, it appears to us that they were men and women of the psychological time and the hour, endowed with special capacity for home-building and town-making, equipped both spiritually and physically to begin the colonization of their land of promise. This is no mere sentiment, either, for that which they began has progressed and thriven to this hour.

Historians of earlier works have not made it clear that Bristol county was so named as the result of a promise made by the General Court at Plymouth in 1677 to the inhabitants of the town of Bristol, now in Rhode Island. The promise was, in effect, that when the

---

NOTE—These pages comprise excerpts from forthcoming "History of Bristol County, Massachusetts," by Mr. Frank Walcott Hutt, Secretary of the Old Colony Historical Society; member of Society for the Preservation of New England Antiquities. (Lewis Historical Publishing Company, Inc., New York and Chicago).



## BEGINNINGS OF BRISTOL COUNTY, MASSACHUSETTS

time came that sixty families should have settled in the town, a new county should then be established, and that Bristol should be denominated the county seat. It was on September 1, 1681, that the townsfolk named the village for the great English port, Bristol, and four years later, in June, 1685, the county was incorporated, with Bristol as the shire town. Up to that time all this territory had been a part of the Old Colony, whose General Court headquarters had been established since 1639. Bristol county towns were represented at the court only seven years; for after June, 1692, the General Court of Massachusetts Bay issued all orders to the military and for the civil conduct of the towns of the Old Colony. Thus were the workmen laying foundations. At the time of King Philip's War, 1675-6, these towns were included in the limits of the county that was to be—Attleboro, Berkley, Easton, Dighton, Dartmouth, Freetown, Raynham, Norton, Rehoboth, Swansea and Taunton—with an aggregate population of 22,571. The other towns of this section were not yet incorporated.

In 1685, then, New Plymouth, or the Old Colony, as it soon began to be called by the sons of Pilgrims, was divided into the three counties of Plymouth, Barnstable and Bristol, the town of Bristol continuing as the county seat up to November, 1746, when Taunton was made the shire town. From that date the town of Bristol went over to Rhode Island, and keeping it company were the towns of Barrington, Little Compton and Warren. A petition had been presented to the General Court from several of the towns, asking that Dighton be made the county town in place of Taunton; but it was reported back from the court that "they are of opinion that Taunton will be most benefitall for the county."

All courts up to the year 1828 were held at Taunton, where to the present time a series of four court houses have been constructed. But in that year, New Bedford, then being the largest town in the county, with a population of 6332, was created a half-shire town, with its own court house. The growth of the county called for further division in 1860, when Pawtucket and a part of Seekonk were set off to Rhode Island, and a part of Tiverton was given from Rhode Island to Fall River. The latter city, with its then population of 46,000, was made a half-shire town, with its court.

Retaining its ancient name, and linking its past with that of the colonial era, Bristol county, known for great industry, holds an ad-



## BEGINNINGS OF BRISTOL COUNTY, MASSACHUSETTS

vanced place in the line of march of the State's success. With an area of six hundred square miles, with Norfolk county on the north, Plymouth county on the east, Rhode Island on the west, and Rhode Island and the Atlantic on the south, the county occupies a southern block of the State, about thirty-five miles from Boston. Within the county limits there are now four cities, namely: Fall River, Taunton, Attleboro and New Bedford; and fifteen towns, namely: Acushnet, Berkley, Dartmouth, Dighton, Easton, Fairhaven, Freetown, Mansfield, North Attleboro, Norton, Raynham, Rehoboth, Seekonk, Somerset, Westport.

\* \* \* \* \*

Few rolling-land sections of the State, such as Bristol county is, are more pleasingly situated, both for charming lake and river scenery and for practical utilities. There are a number of rivers that not only water the lands and furnish means of transportation, but provide water power for some of the largest textile mills in the world. The Taunton river, known to the red race as the Tetiquet, or Great river, is a small stream compared with many New England rivers, but it is the most noted among this county group of rivers, rising in Plymouth county, and flowing southwesterly, directly across Bristol county, and emptying into Mount Hope Bay, or Sachem's Bay, as it was called in early times. This river has a remarkable industrial history that began with the Leonard iron-workers and the Lincoln saw-millers, in the middle of the sixteenth century. The head of navigation is at Weir Village, Taunton, though the ocean tide itself flows to East Taunton, rising in Scadding's pond to the north of the city, and joining the Taunton river near the location known as the Neck-of-Land.

Three Mile river, which the Indians called the Nistoquahannock, is formed by the Wading and Rumford rivers, and, flowing through West Taunton, it makes the boundary between Taunton and Dighton and becomes a part of Taunton river. For many miles Ten Mile river constitutes the boundary between Seekonk and Rhode Island. Palmer river rises in the town of Rehoboth, and flows into the Warren river at Swansea. The Segregansett river rises in Taunton, and flowing southwesterly across Dighton, eventually becomes a part of Taunton river. The Westport river has its east and west branches in Westport, and the Slocum and Aponagansett rivers are in Dartmouth.





## BEGINNINGS OF BRISTOL COUNTY, MASSACHUSETTS

Bristol county lakes and ponds share largely in the topographic features of the region. The Watuppa lakes are in Fall River; Sabbatia lake and Scadding's pond are in Taunton; Winnecunnet pond is at Norton; Wilbur pond is at Easton; and Reservoir pond is in North Attleboro.

We can have no actual comprehension of the manner of living of the first settlers in Bristol county bounds; we are better acquainted with that which is nearer our day, a century or two after the Pilgrims—the story of the simplicity of the pre-Revolutionary times; that is, as compared with the luxury that followed, and of our own day. But it was upon their frugality and their laborious life that the foundations of these townships were laid; it is in their artlessness that we of today can find a great deal that is worthy of imitation. Their "board" was actually a board, seldom a table as we know it, and the hands were employed more than any other utensil for the holding and breaking of food. Porridge, fish, meat, some vegetables, constituted the early dishes. Coffee and tea were not to be had. Beer and ale were brewed, and were drunk freely, as was the custom in all lands. It is interesting to note that the laws regarding spirituous drink were always sharply restrictive, and that even as early as 1667 cider was added in the restriction; and measures were taken to keep everything of the sort from the Indians, although the law was outwitted then, as now. The point is, that Colonial law in these and all essential matters was in effect.

Town meeting, wherever we find it, had its New World origin in the Old Colony. From this hither period of time, students of history's eras rejoice in and make much of the rediscovery, too, that the "town" of New England was the cropping up again of a most ancient Saxon institution. But to the forefathers here it was all so natural and primitive a proceeding that they were unaware of any intention on their part to resurrect that old town idea and practice. All they were concerning themselves with, in reality, reducing the matter to its simplest terms, was the making of an independent home and an independent living and the securing of these by mutual plans for government. Whatever the origin of the institution, no one for a moment believes that any of the first-comers to the Bristol county towns went into the business of town-making because the Saxons or the Angles or any of the Aryan nomads before them did so and so. The germ of it all may have been transplanted by the





## BEGINNINGS OF BRISTOL COUNTY, MASSACHUSETTS

Pilgrims; but the Old Colony and the counties that were divided up from it had their inception by the different towns only because of the practical needs of home-makers and independent nation-builders.

The first of the town meetings in this part of the country was not inaugurated upon a stated day, nor with celebrations. It was a quiet and at times unannounced gathering of the leading men of the town in one another's houses for deliberate purposes, and looking into the everyday welfare of the community. It was the early mark and sign of the living needs, the essentials, the individual and community rights in the process of civilization. The senior, the patriarch, the man of chief influence, whether in Bristol county or elsewhere, was the acknowledged leader, and in the course of time a man of that calibre became the meeting moderator, or the keeper of records, or the town clerk. Though the first regularly organized town meeting was held at Marshfield, (outside these bounds), in 1642, yet it was not until four years later, or in 1646, that the General Court at Plymouth established the office of town clerk. Town meeting exercised from the first an influence upon the governing power and customs of the community that today is deeply felt and recognized. It is at this hour a great event in the town life of Bristol county. No assemblage can be more democratic. None signifies so much directly by and for the people.

\* \* \* \* \*

The most famous landmark of any sort within the bounds of Bristol county is the "Dighton Writing Rock," at Berkley, the latter town having originally been a part of Dighton. This noted granite rock within the river margin is eleven and one-half feet long and five feet high. Since the year 1889 it has been the property of the Old Colony Historical Society at Taunton, from a deed of gift of the Royal Society of Northern Antiquaries of Copenhagen. The rock was purchased in 1857 of Thomas T. Dean, of Berkley, by Neil Arneen, of Fall River, who placed it in the possession of the Copenhagen Society in the belief that the findings of the archæologist were proof positive that the markings were those of Danish explorers.

Up to the present time, and dating from the year 1680, there have been proposed more than twenty distinct theories concerning the origin of the symbol-like drawings and letter marks that cover



## BEGINNINGS OF BRISTOL COUNTY, MASSACHUSETTS

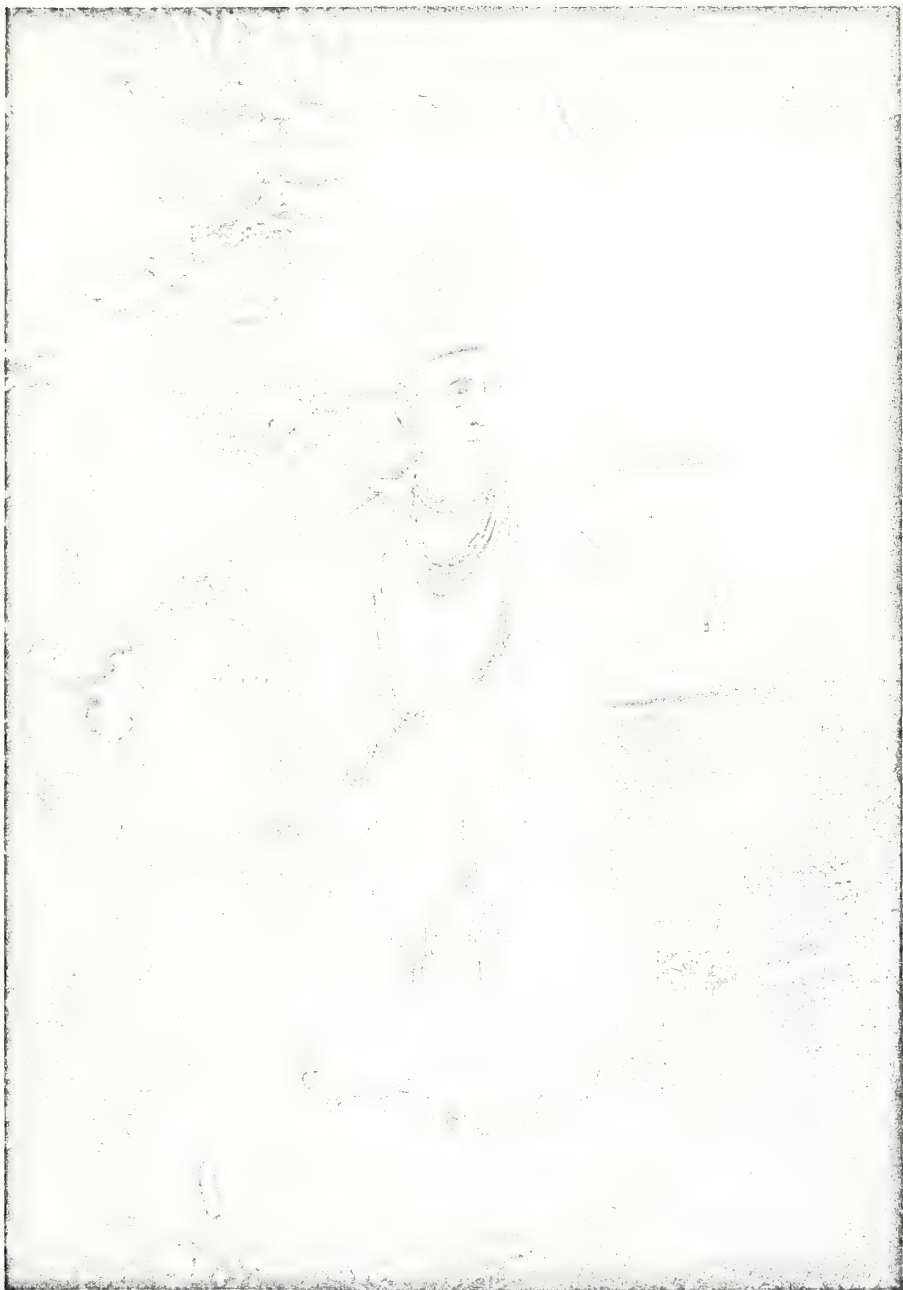
the face of the rock but all of which traceries are slowly becoming defaced both by tides and weather. The theories of the writings are many and varied, the leading one being that they were originally those of native red men. Professor E. D. Delabarre, renowned archaeologist, whose earlier criticism was that the drawings might have been made by Egyptians, 2000 B. C., has compiled three volumes from the publications of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts on the subject of the rock. His more recent theory is that here are marks on the rock that appear to disclose the name of Miguel Cortereal, Portuguese explorer, and the date 1511. In the realm of ethnology, archaeology and cheirology, this monument of great age has been visited and written about by savants of all times, and during many centuries. John Fiske and others refute the Norse origin of the writings. Schoolcraft, the explorer, in 1853 decided they were of Indian origin. Yet concerning the source of the writings on the rock, about which a small library has been written, no one is absolutely sure.

\* \* \* \* \*

Imbibing, as we do, the realism of our times, it follows that we must consider the Red Man's story as genuine as that of the age that ensued, although historians now and then have seen fit to invest much of their era with the glamour of romance. The Indians were real people; their troubles and sorrows were actual; and those of our Massachusetts shores possessed very little of comfort and enjoyment in life, whether from the white man's point of view or their own.

We are now nearly two hundred and fifty years away from King Philip's War, and weighing all causes, as we must, we know that while the colonists had good and sufficient reasons for the eventual retirement of the Indian from the scene, we grant that the natives often suffered at the hands of the newcomers, whose demands, like those of Winslow himself, upon King Philip, were frequently made in an offensive manner. In the formative period of the Old Colony, the transactions between the races were rather ideal, as a whole, but, as the years passed, in spite of the strict governmental rules for clemency of dealings with the Indians, individuals on both sides gradually undermined the fabric of friendship and of mutual help.





MELINDA MITCHELL (TEEWEELEEMA), DESCENDANT OF MASSASOIT



## BEGINNINGS OF BRISTOL COUNTY, MASSACHUSETTS

Massasoit was easy going; King Philip was crafty; yet the reasons for rebellious outbreak on the part of the natives were not always fictitious ones. The real Indians hereabouts were a poor and needy type of humanity; but they bitterly resented and always remembered the enforced enslavement of certain of their kind by marauding Europeans before the "Mayflower" came. Naturally, they disliked being driven from pillar to post; they found fault when their gardens were destroyed and when members of their families were mistreated. Their methods of vengeance were terrible in result; but through the heavy mists of the blood that was shed, it was very hard for that generation of white people, or succeeding ones, to maintain any faith whatever in the ethnological value of the Indian.

The honor once accorded the writer in being granted an interview with Zerviah (Mitchell) Robinson, Indian princess by right, then ninety-three years of age, was augmented by the consciousness that she was a direct descendant of Massasoit, chief of the Pokanoket confederacy of the originally powerful tribe of Wampanoags, first recorded occupants of the present Bristol county region. That Indian woman, who in her early years had been a teacher in public schools, was in her nineties bright and active. Her eyes flashed with hereditary brilliance of her nomadic forbears; but her features were sharp and mummy-like, and drawn with advanced age. She was one of the few that remained of her race; yet, living in our times, as she was, she had made the best of her life. But Zerviah was a living reminder of all that had been known and verified of that wise and peace-performing Massasoit who with his tribe and offspring were familiar to all this section before Taunton or Fall River or New Bedford were foreseen, and who for a half century, when the Europeans appeared and set up their homes here, generally fraternized with the strangers and allowed them the settlers' privileges. After nearly three hundred years, then, practically the last remnant of the people of the woods and barrens had disappeared, and the city and its builders had taken their place, race annihilating race in the ages-old way.

So far as the first settlement of the white people in the old bounds of this county is concerned, their combats with their Indian neighbors were *nil*—there was no menace, to speak of, on the part of the first dwellers here, no disastrous breaks—a condition not usual with the invasion of newcomers elsewhere. At Cape Cod





## BEGINNINGS OF BRISTOL COUNTY, MASSACHUSETTS

and Plymouth the skirmishes were few and far between, and in early Bristol county the Indians peacefully conveyed lands and were satisfied with whatever was given in exchange.

The paucity and segregation of the branches of the tribes were the main causes for the easy foothold obtained here by Europeans. And the leading reason for the lack of anticipated wholesale warlike front on the part of the Indians is found in the declaration made by the Indians and the settlers, that a plague understood by many writers to have been like influenza, had already swept thousands of the Red Men hereabouts out of existence, and that, only a few years before the "Mayflower" arrived. Everywhere graves were abundant, and remains were found heaped together in pits. Those that survived of the nearby Wampanoags, therefore, were weak and generally unhostile. Hence, so far as the traditions have declared, the new homes of civilization increased, and the Red Men's tents were bound to retreat. The Indian occupancy in this region, however, had been and was to be for many years to follow, a real possession. It is too actual a chapter that it should ever be dismissed from the whole story. Romance, poetry and song are not powerful enough realms to absorb the hard realities of the existence of the Indian.

The immediate newcomers landed practically unopposed, and, living up to their ideals of fair play, they sent their delegates a long way in order to find the nearest head man of any tribe, for good fellowship's sake. It was Samoset who welcomed the Englishmen; it was Squanto, who claimed that he was last of the Pawtuxet tribe, that led the way to Massasoit.

The town of Bristol, now in Rhode Island, formerly in Massachusetts, and the head of the county, was founded upon the site of the Indian encampment of the Pokanokets, at Montaup (the Englishmen phonetically calling it Mt. Hope), and there lived Massasoit, who is accounted one of the wisest chiefs that ever ruled a savage race. In 1619 Captain Dermer, a transient visitor, had stopped at Nemasket, just outside this section, and had there met Massasoit and his brother Quadequin. But in July, 1621, was made the first record of white men traveling the Bristol county territory, when Edward Winslow and Stephen Hopkins, accompanied by Squanto, sought out Massasoit in order to make their treaty of friendship. Their visit was successful; so were all their dealings thereafter with that chief.



## BEGINNINGS OF BRISTOL COUNTY, MASSACHUSETTS

Yet there were displeasing episodes. One was that connected with the sub-chief Corbitant, whom Winslow pronounced a "hollow-hearted friend;" though his hospitableness afterwards was conceded. It is said that Corbitant had been inimical towards Squanto, whose part being taken by Myles Standish and the Plymouth people, Corbitant himself, thereupon, was constrained to sign a treaty of peace at Plymouth. When Winslow made his second visit to Massasoit in 1623, while passing through Corbitant's dominions, at the present Swansea, he was alarmed at the report of the death of Massasoit, lest the latter be succeeded by Corbitant to the chieftaincy. But the report was negatived, and Corbitant proved a generous host to Winslow and his friends. Another episode concerned Awashunks, the squaw-sachem of Seaconnet, whose husband was the Indian Tolony, and who had sons Peter and William. She nearly precipitated a war at Freetown, in August, 1671; and again, in 1675, she was almost persuaded, with her warriors, to cast in her lot with that of the English.

Massasoit, who was also known as Ossamequin, as has been pointed out, ruled over the Wampanoags, whose sub-tribes and branches were included in thirty villages, at least, throughout the present Bristol and other counties.

The principal of the sub-tribes that have to do with this section were the Seaconnets, who lived where Little Compton, Rhode Island, now is, and they were ruled by the squaw-sachem Awashunks, to whom reference has been made. The tents of the Pocassets were pitched throughout the territory that is now Fall River, Tiverton, and a part of Swansea, and their rulers were Corbitant and Weetamoc. In succession also were the Tetiquets, who lived on the east side of the Tetiquet (now Taunton) river; and the Assawampsetts, their next door neighbors.

Massasoit was born in 1581. His wife was living in 1621; and besides the brothers of the chief, Quadequin and Akkampoin, there was a sister. Massasoit's two famous sons were: Wamsutta, afterwards known as Alexander; and Metacomet, better known as King Philip; and his daughter was Amie, who married Tispauquin, from whom Zerviah Mitchell was descended. Massasoit died in 1662. A monument to his memory was dedicated at Warren, Rhode Island, October 19, 1907, at the Massasoit Spring, there, by the Massasoit



## BEGINNINGS OF BRISTOL COUNTY, MASSACHUSETTS

Monument Association. Charlotte and Alonzo Mitchell, direct descendants of the chief, were present, and unveiled the monument.

Many names for many occasions, the Red Men seemed to have. The English at first knew Wamsutta as Mooanam, but after 1656 he and King Philip were called by the Christian names they afterwards bore. Alexander, the chief who took Weetamoe, daughter of Corbitant, for his wife, had from the first held an unfriendly attitude towards the whites, generous though his father had been with the new-comers. Yet Alexander was chief only a few months after the death of Massasoit, when he died, having "fretted himself to death," in all probability because he foresaw the powerlessness of his race and, as King Philip did, their extinction. It was Alexander who disposed of lands where Taunton and Attleboro now are. His squaw, Weetamoe, was one of the most noted Indian women of her times in the story of this region. When Corbitant, her father, died, she automatically became the ruler of the Pocassetts. Known at first as Nunmampaum, and being called Weetamoe first in 1662, she married in 1675, just before King Philip's War, Petonowomet, or Peter Nunnuit, as the English phonetically styled him. Later, and before the close of that war, she married the Narragansett sagamore Quinna-pin. The unique description that exists of the squaw leader is worth repeating: "She was dressed in a kersey coat covered with girdles of wampum, from the loins upwards. Her arms from the elbows to the hands were covered with bracelets; and besides a handful of necklaces about her neck, there were several sorts of jewels in her ears. She had fine red stockings and white shoes; her hair was powdered, and her face painted red. She was a severe and proud dame, bestowing every day in dressing herself as much time as any of the gentry in the land; and when she was dressed her work was to make girdles of wampum and beads." Yet in spite of her finery while she was at her best, the lot of Weetamoe was an unenviable one. With the breaking out of the King Philip War, she had about three hundred armed Indians subject to her rule. Her second husband, "Peter Nunnuit," went over and aided the English, but she remained faithful to her race and shared their lot. Separating herself from Nunnuit, she became the wife of Quinna-pin, both of them then being the followers of Philip. Quinna-pin, being accused of plotting with Philip, was shot at Plymouth. His queen, Weetamoe, fled, but by means of the perfidy of a deserter from her camp, her hiding place





## BEGINNINGS OF BRISTOL COUNTY, MASSACHUSETTS

was made known. In all probability she drowned herself, but her corpse drifted ashore, and being seized by the white settlers, her head was cut off and exhibited upon a pole at Taunton.

Philip, whose Indian name was pronounced Pometacum, though at first the English called him Metacomet, is remembered by us of today, chiefly because of the fact that his name was connected with the Indian war of this section, as its leader, in 1675-6. He married a sister of Weetamoe, named Wotonekanuske; and one of the blots on the pages of our history, as we view it today, is the fact that she was sold into slavery with her son, at Bridgewater.

And so Philip, the plotter, and yet the fighting man for his race, came into view on the stage of the time—Philip, untutored, unlettered, vengeful—but whom we must credit with a great love for his people, and as having in his heart a great regret that a new race had come into possession of the lands of his ancestors. While the charge of the colonists was that King Philip and his followers, in a time of comparative peace, were plotting against the new government of the settlers, it should be conceded today, after weighing carefully much that has been recorded with regard to the arrogance and the trespassing of the whites upon the property and the rights of the Indians, that the latter were no more than rebels against what they believed to be a tyrannizing of the colonists. The following incident told in brief, was one of the causes that brought on the war.

John Sassamon, a Massachusetts Indian, though attached to King Philip, had received his education at the Indian school at Natick, and became a home missionary to the Nemasket Indians (where Middleboro now is). He also received the favor of the chief Tuspaquin, who conveyed to him 27 acres of land at Assawampsett Neck, in the Town of Lakeville. Sassamon had a daughter, Assowetough by name, called "Betty" by the English, who married the Indian Felix. To him Tuspaquin and his son William deeded 58½ acres of land, and both conveyed to Assowetough ("Betty") a neck of land at Assawampsett that today is called Betty's Neck. But Sassamon, because of a treacherous communication to the English to the detriment of Philip, met his death at the hands of Philip's people. Thereupon the murderers, Tobias, Wampapaum and Mat-tushamama, were apprehended and shot by the English. Only fifteen days after this execution, or on June 23, 1675, an Englishman was shot at Swansea, and his wife was scalped. The following day,





## BEGINNINGS OF BRISTOL COUNTY, MASSACHUSETTS

others were killed at the same place. It was about this time, too, that Edward Bobbitt, John Tisdale and others were killed at Taunton.

It was on April 10, 1671, five years before the war, that Philip, attended by his warriors, came to Taunton upon request of the colonists, who had become alarmed at the warlike preparations of the Indian party. This council was held in the meeting house near the present Church Green, and after recriminations upon both sides, King Philip and his men signed a treaty and delivered up their arms, at the same time with the promise given that the tribe as a whole would surrender their arms at Plymouth. But the promise was not kept, and after a second one, made on September 26, 1671, the Indians were generally and forcibly disarmed, with the trouble that was bound to ensue.

Most of the so-called battles of this war, from our viewpoint, were little more than a few skirmishes, with a handful of people on either side contending—that is, as the present Bristol county bounds have to do with the trouble. Yet the results, so comparatively few were the white and Indian inhabitants here at the time, were looked upon either as terribly calamitous or as wonderful victories. The dispatching of the three Indians, the slaying of the Swansea family—both were events of the most serious kind, and they so affected both parties.

While our concern is with the greater affairs of the Indians and of this war, we shall refer to the main facts that featured the action of the war to its close, in this region. After the Swansea attack, a battle was fought at Punkateset, now the south part of Tiverton, by a small number of white men under command of Captain Benjamin Church, and three hundred Indians. The record has it that a Captain Golding, who approached the land in his sloop, was the means of saving the colonists from their predicament. Again, Philip and Weetamoe and some Indians were engaged in battle, July 18, 1675, in the Pocasset swamp, near the present Fall River. The English on this occasion lost sixteen of their men, and took possession of one hundred wigwams, while about one hundred Indians fell into their hands. Philip and Weetamoe and most of their party got away.

Infantry, volunteers and mounted men stationed at Swansea, the contingent furnished by Massachusetts Bay for this section, were in charge of Captain Daniel Henchman, Samuel Moseley and



## BEGINNINGS OF BRISTOL COUNTY, MASSACHUSETTS

Thomas Prentice; and Captain James Cudworth commanded a company from Plymouth Colony. He, as ranking officer, had charge of all, with headquarters at Barneyville. Besides skirmishes like that at Myles Bridge, where colonists were killed and wounded, Captain Moseley led in an open fight against the Indians, killing some, and on his way finding the decapitated heads of English, which he buried. When he arrived at Mount Hope, he found that King Philip and his followers had fled to Pocasset, where he was able to re-enforce his outfit with the help of Weetamoe and Awashunks. Meantime, Major Thomas Savage having arrived at Swansea from Boston with one hundred and twenty men, Captain Prentice led a skirmish at Rehoboth, June 30, with disastrous results to a number of Indians.

Philip continued to lay waste the white settlements. A battle was fought at Pawtucket, then within this county's bounds, when Captain Michael Pierce and nearly all his command were slain by Indians under Canonchet. Rehoboth was burned March 28, nearly seventy buildings being destroyed, and on April 9 the fighter Canonchet was captured. Swansea received its second attack June 19, and was burned flat. Taunton was attacked July 11, and houses burned; and it was about this time that the battle of Lockety Neck occurred, with Indian defeat. Twenty Taunton men captured Weetamoe and the last of her followers, at Swansea, August 6, with the result referred to. King Philip himself was killed at Mount Hope, August 12, 1676, and on August 28 his leading captain, Anawan, was captured by Captain Benjamin Church at the place known as Anawan's Rock, at Rehoboth. Thereafter, peace prevailed between the races in this county. The place and power of the aboriginal régime were superseded by those of the newcomer. Henceforth the colonists availed. The wigwam perished and towns and cities appeared and flourished.

The piratical visitations of pre-Pilgrim times, and afterwards the inevitable intrusions of racial pride, preferment and greed for gain, as well as the cruelties practiced by individuals on both sides, were causes of all the trouble the later men of the Old Colony and of Bristol county had with the original holders of the land. The preponderances of statements of any who have written concerning the Indians (particularly of those remnants of the Algonquin tribes of the Massachusetts shores), and the conduct of the white men to-



## BEGINNINGS OF BRISTOL COUNTY, MASSACHUSETTS

wards them, is, in effect, that humane treatment of them was a pre-determined factor of the Pilgrim methods. Had the precedent established by the first governors and their councillors with regard to popular treatment of the Indians been preserved and held sacred by all the townsmen of the settlements, there could have been no war.

An ideal basis, at least for all transactions with the Red Race, was that set forth by the Plymouth General Court in 1643, when it was enacted that "it shall be holden unlawful and of dangerous consequence, as it hath been our constant custom from the very first beginning, that no person should purchase, rent or hire any lands, herbage, wood or timber of the Indians but by the magistrates' consent." And even so far along as the year 1660 it was further enacted that the law should be so interpreted as to prevent any from taking land as a gift.

The consensus of belief, too, is that the Indians were paid all their lands were worth. There is a generally understood axiom contained in the history of property that the value of the latter is destined to vary according to its successive eras and possessors. Bristol county lands today, comprising the wealth of the townships, highways, railroads and bridges, have greatly amassed values over those of other ages. The impoverished province of 1640, for example, was worth to the nomad Indian, who cared but little for it, and to the white man, who gave all he could afford, only that wampum, those useful tools, and often the specie of circulation that were used as medium of exchange. Again and again we are told that the Wampanoags and the Narragansetts were satisfied with the bargains made. "That he do not too much straiten the Indians," was the proviso of Captain Thomas Willett, who was given liberty to make purchase of lands in this county. The Taunton deed of the early purchasers was well understood by the previous owners, and its equitable title, made in 1637, signed by Massasoit, was confirmed by Philip in 1663. And moreover, reservations of land for the Indians were made both by the white men and the Indians themselves.

A word genealogical, concerning recent generations of the Indian race in this county. At the time the writer interviewed Zerviah (Mitchell) Robinson, it was of more than passing interest to note these facts that had been gleaned by herself and the late General E. W. Pierce. Zerviah was one of the children of Thomas C. and Zerviah Gould Mitchell, most of whom were born in North Abington, though Zerviah was born in Charlestown, June 17, 1828. She re-





## BEGINNINGS OF BRISTOL COUNTY, MASSACHUSETTS

ceived her education at the Abington High School, graduated at Union Academy, and married Joseph Robinson, November 14, 1854. In her younger days Mrs. Robinson taught school, and later traveled with her husband in South America. Her sisters, Deloris B., Melinda, Emma J. and Charlotte J., received academic training; and a brother, Thomas C., prepared himself for the ministry, but was drowned at Elder's pond, at Lakeville, in 1859.

The record of the descent of Zerviah from Massasoit has been kept, and is as follows: Massasoit had five children, three sons and two daughters. Amie, one of the daughters, married Tuspaquin, who was known as the "Black Sachem" and was chief of the Assawampsett branch of the Wampanoags. Tuspaquin and Amie had sons, one of whom, Benjamin Tuspaquin, married Weecum, as she was known, and to them were born four children. One of their sons, Benjamin, married Mary Felix, in Lakeville, Mary herself being a direct descendant of Chief John Sassamon. It was Mary's father, Felix, who first received from the Indian owners Chief Tuspaquin's deed of the lands at "Betty's Neck," which place was so called, as was shown, because, in the sixteenth century, the English called Assowetough, the daughter of Sassamon, who resided there, "Betty." There lived Charlotte, a sister of Zerviah. Benjamin and Mary had a daughter Lydia, who married "Wamsley," also an Indian. Lydia received a good education while residing with a family named Moore at Petersham, Massachusetts, but she spent her later days at "Betty's Neck," where she became the chief amanuensis for her people.

"Wamsley" and Lydia had five children, two sons and three daughters. A daughter Phoebe married, for her first husband, Silas Rosten, an Indian soldier of the patriot army of the Revolution. She married (second) Brister Gould. Of the seven children by the second marriage (six daughters and one son), a daughter, Zerviah, married Thomas C. Mitchell, October 17, 1824. He died at Fall River, March 27, 1859. She received her education in Abington and Boston schools, and before her marriage she taught school. Mr. and Mrs. Mitchell were the parents of eleven children, of whom Zerviah (Mitchell) Robinson was one. This being one of the most unique genealogies in New England, and pertinent to the subject itself, it is offered as a vital part of this chapter.

\* \* \* \* \*





## BEGINNINGS OF BRISTOL COUNTY, MASSACHUSETTS

Upon gradual effacement of Indian village and encampment, there presently began and throve within the present county bounds of Bristol the villages and the towns of a race that should soon dominate here, as their Aryan forefathers had done in the course of scores of other migratory eras in Asia and Europe, ages before America was dreamed of by Europeans. As the white race, ever-restless, swarmed from overseas and sought out places here and there for their western homes, it came about that a place should soon be secured for Taunton of New England.

The immigrants to the Taunton or Cohannet neighborhood halted at or near the river and the ponds. Where the bordering lands were of proven fertility, the Indians had been used to raising corn, the river itself providing vast quantities of herring in their season, that were made use of both as food and as means of fertilizing still further the land. The late Senator George Goff often told the writer that credible traditions of his family had it that the first-comers along the river found no trouble in securing literally tons of fish in the spring, which, either ploughed into the ground, or set into the hills with the beans and corn, was the source of the production of rich crops. But as the years passed on, the too abundant use of such fertilizer became the cause of the deterioration of the primitive value of the soil. Then, besides the fish, the river was the known means of transportation; water power was available for mills in prospect; timber grew in abundance; and there was plenty of wood for the winter fires. These, taken together, are not mere hearsay reasons for the coming of the white man, but the practical, established report of the warranted traditions of three hundred years.

We are aware of the presence here of John Winthrop Jr., in 1636, and of his letter to Governor John Winthrop, his father, in regard to his exploration of the Tetiquet river and adjacent country. We do not know what his errand was; but the records of New England industry show that he was a leader in bog-iron working at Lynn and Braintree, and that he had prospected to a great extent that part of the country for possible iron-working. History has not revealed the cause of his brief sojourn along the Tetiquet, neither can we conjecture here; but we do know that in about fifteen years from that time, Taunton's early settlers had formed a company here for the manufacture of iron. In his letter, Winthrop reported "very fertile and rich ground here," and within three years the settlers





*Monument of Miss Pool, Taunton Cemetery.*



TAUNTON GREEN, 1839



## BEGINNINGS OF BRISTOL COUNTY, MASSACHUSETTS

had assured themselves that that statement was true. We are told in the general history of the county how Edward Winslow and Stephen Hopkins, with the Indian Squanto, on their way to Montaup (Mount Hope), had passed through the future Taunton lands in 1621, and of their particular satisfaction with the appearance of the country.

But at length we peruse the most vital and interesting record of those times, as regards the founders. It is in Governor John Winthrop's "History of New England," dated 1637, that he has set down this statement: "This year, a plantation was begun at Tetiquett, by a gentle woman, an ancient maid, one Miss Poole. She came late thither, and endured much hardships, and lost much cattle." And this statement in the Winthrop letter is confirmative, too, of the "Poole Family Records," still preserved at Taunton, England, which inform us that in 1635, "Elizabeth, ninth child, third daughter of Sir William Poole, and aged about 50 years, is now in New England."

Such, in their original brevity and not to be gainsaid, constitute the announcements of the first arrival here, that of Elizabeth Poole, daughter of a baronet, and whose brother William was later to train Taunton men in the use of arms. No one can with certainty state what was the motive for her removing in this direction from Dorchester,—whether religious or industrial. Yet there is an authenticated record that Elizabeth Poole and members of her family while residing in England were interesting themselves in certain salt-works in New England. Among the "Uncalendared Proceedings of the Court of Charles I" is that to the effect that Miss Poole and her brothers, Sir John and Periam, were among the associates of Rev. John White of Dorchester, who had some interest in salt works at Cape Ann during the years 1623 to 1628. Eventually then she had arrived at Tetiquet, and there bought lands of the Indian owners, known as Josiah, Peter and David,—for a jack-knife and a peck of beans, as tradition has it. The lands thus purchased she designated as her Littleworth and Shute farms, named for English estates in possession of her family. Money had no currency value to the Indians, though money was also paid them from time to time by the Europeans; a jack-knife, to them, was a sign of riches; beans meant more food for the nomad. The phrase "Taunton was bought for a





## BEGINNINGS OF BRISTOL COUNTY, MASSACHUSETTS

jack-knife and a peck of beans" is often made use of today, but usually without conception of the originating circumstances.

The bounds of Miss Poole's property are not exactly known, with the exception that the brook called Littleworth bounded the Littleworth farm on the west, and that it was joined with the Shute farm on the south. Another tradition has pointed out the Cain house on Precinct road, near the foot of Caswell street, as the site of the first home of Miss Poole, and a hillock to the west as the site of the place where she kept her cattle that first hard winter. It is understood that the boundaries of Miss Poole's properties encroached upon lands of an Indian reservation as set aside by the General Court at Plymouth; though it is also known that at the time of the Poole purchase there had been made no formal recognition of the reservation on the part of the Indians. As time went on, portions of these lands for this reason gradually passed from her possession, and she was given certain allotments in Cohannet.

It was the Hon. Francis Baylies, Old Colony historian, who first applied the quotation from Virgil, "*Dux foemina facti*," to Elizabeth Poole, and the incident of her settling here. And it was James Edward Seaver, historian and genealogist, who stated a well-founded belief of his that, according to the Old Colony records of December 4, 1638, William Poole, Mr. John Gilbert, Mr. Henry Andrews, John Strong, John Deane, Walter Deane and Edward Case were nearly contemporaneous settlers, Taunton not then being named as a township.

The Littleworth farm locality retains that name today. The Shute farm, to the southeast of that, was confiscated by the government in 1781, John Borland, owner, a grand-nephew of Elizabeth Poole, being a Loyalist. Elizabeth Poole was an energetic and enterprising woman, one of the founders of the first religious congregation in Taunton, and a member of the ironworks corporation. Eventually she removed to her home lot on the south side of the present Main street in Taunton, and there she died, being then in the sixty-sixth year of her age. She is buried at the Plain cemetery, but Taunton women have erected a monument to her memory at Mount Pleasant cemetery. The phrase "*Dux foemina facti*" referred to, was adopted for the present motto of the city seal, January 1, 1865, as advocated by Rev. Mortimer Blake.

Elizabeth Poole "led the way." Then came the Forty-six Pur-





## BEGINNINGS OF BRISTOL COUNTY, MASSACHUSETTS

chasers, and the building of a permanent town. By a confirmatory deed of the First Purchase from Philip, son of Massasoit, wherein it is set down that the year 1638 was that in which the plantation was bought of Massasoit, the following-named, from most of whom hundreds of families throughout the United States claim descent, were the associated purchasers, each name filling a unique place in these first annals: Henry Andrews, John Briant, Mr. John Browne, Richard Burt, Edward Case, Thomas Cooke, David Corwithy, William Coy, John Crosman, John Deane, Walter Deane, Francis Doughtye, John Drake, William Dunn, Mr. Thomas Farwell, Mr. John Gilbert, Thomas Gilbert, John Gilbert, John Gingell, William Hailstone, George Hall, William Harvey, Hezekiah Hoar, Robert Hobell, William Holloway, John Kingsley, John Luther, George Macey, William Parker, John Parker, Richard Paull, William Phillips, Mr. William Poole, the Widow Randall, John Richmond, Hugh Rossitor, William Scadding, Anthony Slocum, Richard Smith, John Smith, Francis Street, Henry Uxley, Richard Williams, Benjamin Wilson, Joseph Wilson. Each of these people, with the exception of Mr. John Browne, was owner of six to twelve shares.

A second list of early settlers, descendants of whom dwell numerous in this county and elsewhere, include Edward Bobit, James Burt, Thomas Coggan, Robert Crosman, Benajah Dunham, William Evins, John Gallop, Giles Gilbert, Joseph Gilbert, Richard Hart, Thomas Harvey, Nicholas Hathaway, William Hodges, Samuel Holloway, Thomas Joans, Aaron Knapp, Henry Leonard, James Leonard, Thomas Lincoln, senior, Thomas Lincoln, Jr., John Macomber, Clement Maxfield, Edward Rew, Oliver Purchase, Ralfe Russell, William Sheppard, Giles Slocum, Richard Stacy, Robert Thornton, Christopher Thrasher, John Tisdale, John Turner, James Walker, James Wiatt, Jacob Wilson.

Taunton families had hardly become settled in their new holdings and built them their shelters,—and Taunton was still Cohannet,—when the settlement was called upon to share in representation at the court of the Pilgrims, at Plymouth. “Taunton began to be added to this booke” is first found in the Colonial Court Records under date of October 2, 1637, although the historians have shown that it must have been entered there after March 3, 1640, since it was not until then that the act was passed that “Cohannet shall be called Taunton.” And then, December 4, 1638, appears the record



## BEGINNINGS OF BRISTOL COUNTY, MASSACHUSETTS

that "John Strong is sworne constable of Cohannett until June next"; and again, on March 5, 1639, there came the General Court's order that "Captain Poole shall exercise the inhabitants in their arms"—the two officers representing the "civil and military existence and authority of the ancient Cohannett."

Afterwards, in due order, came the General Court decrees for the grants and disposal of the lands at Taunton and the fixing of boundaries,—the Cohannet lands being laid out by order of the court in May, 1639, by Captain Myles Standish and John Browne, and bounded by the same men, in 1640, by order of the court. In June, 1639, therefore, Captain William Poole, John Gilbert and Henry Andrews first represented Taunton at the Plymouth General Court, at a time when a number of the "Mayflower" Pilgrims were of that membership. The last General Court of Plymouth, be it stated here, met in July, 1691, the date that has been accepted as marking the close of the Colonial Period—the Old Colony having been divided in 1685 into the three counties of Plymouth, Barnstable and Bristol. These were local epoch-making days, for on March 3, 1640, the Indian name Cohannet, or Quahannock, was changed to Taunton, and the first bounds of the town were set by the Plymouth Court. The township then comprised a territory of sixty-four square miles, or more than forty thousand acres.

The dissatisfaction with dominant religious institutions and conditions in England, that Governor William Bradford himself asserted was the cause of the emigration of the "Mayflower" Pilgrims, extended to shipload after shipload that followed, and among whose passengers were Taunton's first settlers—some Independents, many Congregationalists, here and there a few of the Church of England; some Baptists, some Quakers. Others came here for new fortunes' sake, having set before them the lure of broader spaces and the attractive task of sharing in building the western settlements.

As for Taunton settlers themselves, they were mostly from Somerset, Dorset, Devon and Gloucester; and those like the Deane leaders who hailed from Taunton, in Somersetshire, were influential enough to have the naming of Taunton, as thus stated in a report made at a town meeting: "Whereas, by the Providence of God, in the year 1638 and the year 1639, it pleased God to bring the most part of the first purchasers of Taunton over the great ocean into this wilderness from our dear and native land . . . in honor



## BEGINNINGS OF BRISTOL COUNTY, MASSACHUSETTS

and love of our dear and native country, we called this place Taunton. Signed by James Walker, John Richmond, Thomas Leonard, Joseph Wilbore, John Hall, Richard Williams and Walter Deane." And as every schoolboy in Taunton now knows, the etymology of Taunton is thus—Tain Ton, Gaelic and Saxon words, meaning "the town on the banks of the river"; and so situated are both the mother town and the city in New England. And here, one of a little colony of towns, drifted away from the Old World, strove for the peculiar vantages of self-determination, with results that generations have been proud to own.

\* \* \* \* \*

"Provided leave can be procured from Ousamequin (Massasoit)". The phrase, as contained in an order from the Plymouth Court of 1643, relating to a proposed purchase of lands for Taunton, voices the considerate and just spirit of the colonial executives themselves, in their first relationships with the Indian holders of lands, however the white man may have mistreated the red man since that time. In the case from which the quotation is made, the Plymouth Court were desirous of knowing what Chief Massasoit thought of the matter—his sanction was sought in the dealing; for in those times just payments were made in land transactions, and large reservations of land were set aside for the Indians. It is of continuous record that as fast as the English settlements extended, the colonial government extinguished by fair purchase the Indian titles. And it sometimes happened that double transfers occasioned deeds of conveyance both from the Indians and the Colonial government. Thus was Tetiquet bought of the Indians by Miss Poole, and confirmed to her by the court. These are main facts, in spite of isolated cases of annulment of the natives' rights.

Whenever we think of those hardy settlers whom we have recorded in New England history as First Purchasers, it is a very rare thing for us to give due regard to the land values at the time of their purchase, particularly here in Bristol county, or to the sort of exchanges that were made during the purchase, or to the usages that were soon established to secure such exchange. We have done but little more than set down their names as original purchasers, and as those of founders of towns and ancestors of many families of our times. We give too little heed to the transactions themselves, that were performed under a provision of the General Court, to the





## BEGINNINGS OF BRISTOL COUNTY, MASSACHUSETTS

effect that no group of settlers could go into the wilderness and buy lands indiscriminately of the natives. That was one of the fundamental dealings between civilization and the people of the wilderness. The earlier historians have quoted very nearly in full from scores of old deeds and agreements and colonial records, so that the already fully published results of their minute research need not be reduplicated by any successor. It is now the province of historical publishment by no means to annul any of the results of the comprehensive labors of the old clerks of history; but it is preferable, with the almost miraculous developments of nearly a half century awaiting introduction, to offer chiefly the vital essentials of the Forefathers' day.

From this viewpoint, we may discern the course of the business-like acquisition of properties from the first holdings of the settlers, through the North and South Purchases, and the precinct and town establishments. It was an irreparable loss to Taunton when the fire of 1838 destroyed town records, among which was the deed of the original Cohannet, signed by Chief Massasoit, though his son Philip (Metacomet) made a confirmatory deed of the same March 22, 1683, that has been preserved; the Plymouth Colonial Records also having kept intact that report of Myles Standish and John Brown who in 1640 established the bounds of the Eight Mile Square, Taunton's original territory of sixty-four square miles, or more than 40,000 acres; likewise the report of their boundary of Miss Poole's lands in Tetiquet; and again, the nearly as valuable record of the Hook and Street lands at Berkley—their four hundred acres of upland and thirty of meadow that after their departure to New Haven became the property of John Hathaway, Edward Bobbitt and Timothy Holloway, founders of their families here.

Then, in later years, to verify and realize to us the bounds of that distant period, the late James Edward Seaver in 1892 prepared and published a map of that long square, wherein have been definitely set down the places where the first settlers were to be found at the outset of civilized life. Upon that invaluable map are to be seen the lines of the ancient roads and paths, and the homelots of the pioneers, as well as the many river landings. The plantation as thus set down in record and map, was bought of Ousamequin, so state the Plymouth Court books, but for what consideration that section was purchased, we know not.





## BEGINNINGS OF BRISTOL COUNTY, MASSACHUSETTS

Yet the Eight Mile Square could not encompass within its limits the increasing population who were discovering values for themselves in the wood and river lands; for in 1642 came the request from Taunton for the purchase of more wood and pasture land. The General Court was ready to grant the request, and "that the best and speediest means be used to procure their further enlargement on that side of the main river to answer to Mr. Hooke's and Mr. Streete's farms on the other side; and whereas they desire the neck of Assonet for pasturing young beasts, it is also granted, provided leave can be procured from Ousamequin."

The colony was now continuously stretching out for the unused near-by lands, and but four years later, June 2, 1646, the General Court gave the town permission to purchase a calf pasture—the locally celebrated "calves pasture" near Nemasket pond. It was this lot, a landmark, that was conveyed to Henry Andrews, April 11, 1647, in payment for the building of the town's first meeting-house. The southern boundary of the town remained undefined until 1663, when it was fixed by the General Court. The settlers had for some years borne in mind the fact that a strip of land two miles in width, known to them as the "Two Mile Strip," separated the Eight Mile Square from Tetiquet. Therefore, as a result of their petitions, in 1665 the General Court granted this strip to William Brett, Thomas Haward, senior, Arthur Harris, Richard Williams, John Willis and John Carey, "to each of them three score acres of land lying betwixt the lands of Taunton and Tetiquet." The centre of the Taunton that was to be was now defined by the lands contained within these boundaries named. To the north and to the south, other Europeans were entering and making their homes—"purchased of the Indians" being the frequently recurring phrase in all records and agreements of the time. And there the final extensive purchases of territory of the mother town were to be made, which territory, so joined onto the nucleus, would one day peacefully secede for the establishment of yet other townships.

The northwest corner of the Plymouth Patent, still remaining under Indian ownership, was purchased of Alexander (Wamsutta) son of Massasoit, in 1661, by Captain Thomas Willett, enterprising settler, and later the first English mayor of New York. This purchase was made in all likelihood at the suggestion of the General Court, who placed it in the hands of a committee—Thomas Prence,



## BEGINNINGS OF BRISTOL COUNTY, MASSACHUSETTS

Major Josias Winslow, Thomas Southworth, and Mr. Constant Southworth, to dispose of it for the colonies' use. Part of this newly acquired property became what is known as the Rehoboth North Purchase, the remainder, fifty square miles, being still in the Colony's possession, and bounded by the Massachusetts Patent on the north, Bridgewater on the east, Taunton on the south, and Rehoboth North Purchase on the west, Taunton's north corner, known as Cobbler's Corner, projecting at the south. It again appeared to be Taunton's opportunity to come into new possessions; thereupon, June 6, 1668, a deed was granted to fifty-two purchasers. The men of early time were buying lands not as they buy them in the west of our day, with some large outlook for fortune-making; but chiefly to establish a home site, and to till lands and to live the simple life of the pioneer, separated by an ocean from native land.

Thus the North Purchase was joined onto Taunton—an area containing 32,000 acres, and £100 being the price that was paid. In the deed there soon were made those lesser changes, when the name of George Shove was inserted with the others, and the two parcels of John Bundy and Thomas Briggs were excepted from the sale. Complications presenting themselves that were soon solved, were contained in such cases as these: One claim of ownership was raised through Josias, Peter and David Hunter, Tetiquet Indians, who for the consideration of a little over £3 gave a quit-claim deed. In 1689, again, Major William Bradford put in a claim for Taunton territory, and once more satisfaction was obtained by a quit-claim deed. From such sources, the Taunton North Purchase came into possession of both English and Indian titles.

The South Purchase along the meadowlands of the river, south, was attracting settlers, also. This noteworthy purchase required several town votes before James Walker and John Richmond could be empowered to "purchase the land of the Indians in the behalfe of the town of Taunton, lying on the west side of Taunton river, from the Three Mile river down to a place called the Store House."

Eventually, October 1, 1672, King Philip, Anawan and others signed the deed whereby a tract three miles long on the Great river, as the Tetiquet was sometimes called, and extending westerly four miles, beginning at the mouth of Three Mile river, came into the hands of Taunton colonists, the consideration being £143. On that day, also, King Philip, upon receipt of £47 conveyed to Constant



## BEGINNINGS OF BRISTOL COUNTY, MASSACHUSETTS

Southworth, Assistant at the General Court, another strip on the south of the first tract, one mile wide, on the Great river, and extending four miles westerly from the river, Southworth immediately assigning this deed to the committee of the first deed. Both deeds were paid for to the extent of £190.

Again, on September 27, 1672, Constant Southworth assigned a prior mortgage on the whole (from Philip and the colony) to William Harvey and John Richmond, in behalf of the town, for the sum of £83. So that the South Purchase cost £273 in all. By a declaratory deed of November 26, 1672, the four-mile square tract was conveyed to the parties interested, eighty-seven persons being named as probable owners at that time; but on March 18, 1683-4, another declaratory deed was made to but seventy-seven of that list, as it is likely entire compliance was not made with the conditions in the deed.

Up to this time the natives, from whom all the Taunton purchases had been made, with or without a confirmatory deed from the government, had refused to part with Assonet Neck, which is two miles long and less than one mile wide. But this, the first seizure by the colony, was taken in 1675, to pay the expenses of the Indian wars, its value being placed at £200. This land was added to Taunton in July, 1682, but when Dighton was incorporated in 1712, it was included in that town, and later on added to Berkley, in 1799. Another indication of earliest colonial and native dealings with local territory is found in Governor Thomas Hinekley's confirmatory deed of 1685, in which it is shown that the first purchase of Taunton's Eight Miles Square was made from Massasoit.

Finally, two more complications with regard to this territory were solved, when in 1689 Major William Bradford making some claim to all this territory, was paid £20, giving a deed of release and confirmation to John Poole and one hundred and three others. The other instance occurred in 1672, when a controversy over the new territory made between Taunton and Swansea was settled by the addition of a corner of Swansea known as the Two Mile Purchase, to a part of Dighton. Now, it will be seen that the entire set of Purchases amounted to one hundred and fifty square miles, or approximately one hundred thousand acres.

Confirming much that has been written with regard to the earliest intention to deal honestly with the natives, is that often-quoted





## BEGINNINGS OF BRISTOL COUNTY, MASSACHUSETTS

letter of John Richmond, son of the first settler in Taunton of that name, to Lieutenant Colonel Elisha Hutchinson and others, dated April 30, 1698, to be seen at the State Archives, Vol. 113, p. 167, thus: "We bought it first of Woosamequin in the year 39 or 40 (this was in my minority) the sum paid I know not; then we bought all again of Philip, and paid him 16 pounds for it; then we bought that very spot of Josiah, he claiming some land there, as appears by his deed; then we bought that spot again, with other land, of Major Bradford, and he had 20 pounds more."

After the division of lands, from the first possession of the home lot to the complete distribution of the whole territory many years after the first settlement, the North and South Purchases steadily increased as to their population, and the demand arose for the setting off of portions of the settlement into precincts. The first of such petitions was from the North Purchase and a part of Old Taunton township, dated November 2, 1707, and signed by forty-three townsmen, who asked for a minister to become settled among them. There were remonstrants who desired a township rather than a precinct, and the controversy, as it progressed, became a very warm one. But on June 12, 1711, the bill was passed for raising the new town of Norton, though but two years previously the prospect of a precinct was by far the more encouraging one. In the meantime, similar demands for a precinct were made by settlers in the South Purchase "by reason of the remoteness from the meeting-house," and thereupon the precinct was established, September 16, 1709, though the town Dighton soon after petitioned for was raised May 30, 1712.

From that time onwards for nearly twenty years, no more territorial changes took place here. But then arose petitions and counter-petitions, the new movement resulting in the creation of the town of Raynham, April 1, 1731. Then Berkley asked for recognition as a town, and the act of raising the town was passed April 18, 1735; and finally in 1789, Myricks by vote was taken from Taunton and added to Berkley. In this way, and for reasons of "remoteness from the meetinghouse" and the centre—though there were local industrial reasons, too, the iron forges and the grist and other mills sharing in the later groupings of the interests of population—the new towns withdrew from the mother town. Economical and industrial, and, according to the statements in the petitions, religious





## BEGINNINGS OF BRISTOL COUNTY, MASSACHUSETTS

forces, had performed their distributive tasks. Territorially, the region was getting ready to welcome the newcomer, the new era, and the expanding town and city of Taunton.

\* \* \* \* \*

The insistence of the leading importance of present-day events and people in these volumes is undeniable. The story of our own day and its directing forces and the individuals that control them is the intimate narrative of our generation, verifying to us the issues of our remarkable times. But there was also a day of the First Comers, that even at this hour is a continuous portion of history, and cannot be annulled. No one appreciates this more than the New Englander and the thousands of descendants of the first New Englanders. The founders who ventured into the wilderness,—the sturdy, hard-working yeomen, with their faults and frailties, too,—let them have place in our vision.

Though Elizabeth Poole did not buy "Taunton," as the popular account sometimes has it, but only a small portion of the eastern borders of the then unoccupied territory—it is the brief narrative of her coming here that shall always remain like a star in the crown of the beginnings of the city. We have been told of her arrival from England to Tetiquet by way of Dorchester, and how she actively interested herself in every fundamental project of the busy settlement. Were she living today, every cause of civic, religious and industrial advancement would at least have her approval.

To all appearances, her brother, Captain William Poole, came here when his sister did; but though they both went to Dorchester first, he is not mentioned here as of 1637, the year of Elizabeth's arrival. Whatever the reasons of the latter may have been for settling at Tetiquet, it is evident from all other accounts as well as from the wording of her will, that she was a Puritan woman of piety, with inbred reverence for the religious life and the means to religion. She was interested in establishing a church here, according to her teaching and light, and with William Hooke and Nicholas Street, Oxford University graduates, she did begin that church. It is plain, too, that here she was accorded equality of rights, whether in the purchase of lands, in the sharing of iron works holdings, or in the establishment of religious interests.

Taunton military men of today may salute the memory of the



## BEGINNINGS OF BRISTOL COUNTY, MASSACHUSETTS

first of their local captains—William Poole. As soon as there were men enough here to form a military company, and that was only two years after it is recorded that the town was settled, Captain Poole, brother of Elizabeth Poole, was appointed by the General Court the captain, and ordered to exercise the inhabitants in their arms. He may be said to have been the Myles Standish of the village; and both in 1646 and 1658 he was chosen a member of the Colony Council of War. He lived to be more than eighty years of age, but years before he died he went back to Dorchester to reside, and while there he was not only the town's schoolmaster, but also clerk of writs and registrar of the vital records of the town for about ten years. He was a "revered, pious man of God," remark the Dorchester records. He had three sons and two daughters, born in Taunton, namely—John, Nathaniel, and Timothy, and Mary and Bethesda. Timothy met his death by drowning, and John went into business in Boston; and it was through him that his aunt Elizabeth's property came to the Borland family, from whom it was confiscated at the time of the Revolution. John married Elizabeth, a daughter of William Brenton, who lived in Taunton many years, and from whom the famed Haliburton family of Nova Scotia claim descent.

Go where one may, in any of the old towns and cities of New England, and there will be found in vogue the "prevailing names," handed down for seven or eight generations, like the Lincolns of Hingham and the Newhalls and the Breeds of Lynn, and "their lines have gone out into all the world," also. Many names of original settlers survive in Taunton today, but none quite to the extent of those of Williams and Dean and Hall. Genealogists of recent years have produced a vast amount of information from their researches concerning the Taunton branches of the families of those names, and inquiries have been incessant from all over the country with regard to Colonial and Revolutionary lines. In the course of his voluminous writings, the late Judge Josiah H. Drummond, of Portland, Maine, registered the names of more than twelve hundred descendants of Richard Williams, for example.

Richard Williams' descendants for nearly three hundred years have held places of trust and honor in city, county and State. He is generally mentioned among the first of the Taunton settlers because of the fact that he was an energetic pioneer who took the lead in many important matters of town building; he was a typical first



## BEGINNINGS OF BRISTOL COUNTY, MASSACHUSETTS

settler, a man devoted to all the best interests of the new town. He came originally from a family of Glamorganshire in Wales, and married Frances Dighton, a sister of Catherine Dighton, the wife of Governor Thomas Dudley, of the Bay Colony. He was a descendant in the same family as that of Oliver Cromwell, the Protector, who sometimes signed himself Oliver Cromwell, alias Williams; but he was not related, as some have supposed, to Roger Williams, founder of Providence, Rhode Island.

Richard Williams, upon his coming here, bought the house and lot of Henry Uxley, the latter leaving no trace of his presence other than that record. Richard Williams was a deputy to the General Court in 1643, and he served thirteen years in that capacity; he was selectman 1665-1677, and for many years he was deacon of the church. His home lot on Dean street is still pointed out, and there he died in 1693, at the age of 87 years, though his wife, who outlived him, died in 1706, at the age of 96 years. Although he could neither see nor hear, he announced when he attended "meeting" in his last years, that it was "comforting and helpful to be with the people of God in their worship."

It seems that John and Walter Deane, brothers, had more to do with the naming of Taunton than any other, they having originated at Taunton Dean, in England. Thousands of the name are descendants of these worthy brothers, in city, State and Nation; and genealogists have compiled a number of records relating to their respective families. Both men were of that sturdy type fitted to subdue the wilderness. Their home lots at the Hartshorn and Newbury estates on Dean street are still pointed out.

John Deane was one of the first seven freemen of Cohannet; he was also constable in 1640 and 1654, surveyor of highways in 1640, and selectman in 1657. Walter Deane was a younger brother of John. He was a deputy to the General Court in 1640, and a selectman from 1666 to 1686. He married Elinor, a daughter of Thomas Coggan, and not a daughter of John Strong, as had for years been stated. Descendants of both John and Walter Deane are prominent in all the affairs of the city today.

One of the near-by neighbors of the Deane family at the outset was John Strong, who was appointed the first constable of the town, in 1638. Caleb Strong, governor of Massachusetts from 1800 to 1807, was one of the descendants of this Taunton first settler.





## BEGINNINGS OF BRISTOL COUNTY, MASSACHUSETTS

Whenever we speak of George Hall today, we invariably associate the name with the first live and extensive business of the town. He was first clerk of the iron works established by James Leonard and his associates, and town and city owe much to his acumen and enterprise. The genealogist has traced his descendants by hundreds to this hour, and they are among the leaders in the professions in commonwealth and city. George Hall was a constable, a selectman, and a large landowner on Dean street.

Burt is another of those names of well-merited perpetuation, that was introduced here by Richard Burt,—father and son; and later by James Burt, senior. Richard, junior, took the oath of fidelity in 1657. Both he and his Uncle James lived at Weir Village,—“the Ware,” as they called it. The genealogists have thoroughly canvassed the lines of this ancestry.

John Crossman was not a notably prominent first settler; but his descendants through his industrious son, Robert, are very numerous. The Crossman house, built by a son of Robert, and known to have been in use in 1700, and kept as an inn in Revolutionary times, still stands on Cohannet street.

Genealogy is well-equipped, too, with the concerns of the Richmond family,—John Richmond and his son John having been first settlers and large owners in the section still known as Richmond-town. The same may be said of Henry Andrews, the family lines having been notably well traced. Yet Henry Andrews was foremost in all things—a live deputy and committee-man, and so capable a builder of the first little meeting-house here in 1647, that he was granted a large section of land known as “Calves’ pasture,” still pointed out beyond his ancient home site. The Paulls, too, are very many in descent from Richard Paull, who married Margery Turner in 1638,—the first of Cohannet marriages.

If William Harvey were living here today, he might be eligible for any office of trust—he was constable, surveyor, deputy and selectman, and he was often deputy and selectman the same year. He lived not far from the Taunton Gazette building; and it was at his house that the conference for the sale of Taunton North Purchase took place in 1668, at a meeting of Governor Prence, Major Josias Winslow, Captain Thomas Southworth, and Constant Southworth—an eventful affair of the period.





## BEGINNINGS OF BRISTOL COUNTY, MASSACHUSETTS

Many here and elsewhere are descendants from William Phillips, a militia-man, surveyor and landowner. Hezekiah Hoar, first proprietor, constable and surveyor, was one of the leaders on the ironworks enterprise. William Holloway was a first settler; and though he removed to Boston, his sons remained, and preserved the name here.

An exemplary pioneer, soldier and officer, was George Macey, lieutenant of the Taunton company through the Indian wars. William Parker is recalled as the town's first "Keeper of Records," and he was authorized to take oaths and to marry. John Parker, his younger brother, was at one time a deputy to the General Court. Little is known of the first settlers who bore the names of Henry Uxley, Joseph Wilson, Benjamin Wilson, William Coy, John Smith, Richard Smith, John Drake, Robert Hobell, David Corwithy, John Luther, Hugh Rossiter, John Kingsley, Thomas Farwell, John Briant, or William Scaddings—though the name of the latter is perpetuated in that of the Scaddings pond and meadows.

"Pondsbrooke" in Berkley is still pointed out as the home of John Gilbert. Late in life he emigrated to England, and Thomas Gilbert, his eldest son, followed him. Edward Case, one of the first freemen here in 1637, had lands on Caswell street, that were afterwards sold to Samuel Wilbore, town clerk, later to the Caswell family, from whom were descended President Caswell of Brown University and President Angell of Yale. John Brown was prominent in the affairs both of colony and town; in Plymouth he was one of the governor's assistants, and he was appointed one of the commissioners of the United Colonies, on the part of Plymouth colony, in 1644. He became an original settler and proprietor in Taunton as well as in Rehoboth; and his son-in-law was Captain Thomas Willett, the first English mayor of New York.

William Hailstone was the only one of his name here. William Dunn, sea-captain, was an original purchaser, and he brought William Witherell, first settler within the bounds of Norton, and from whom leading business men hereabouts have descended. The "widow Randall" was one of the first purchasers in the eastern section of the settlement. Thomas Cooke and his son Thomas were recorded as subject to military duty in 1643. John Gingell was among the first to take the oath of fidelity. Francis Doughty was a first settler, and an opponent to the first church gathering here. Dis-



## BEGINNINGS OF BRISTOL COUNTY, MASSACHUSETTS

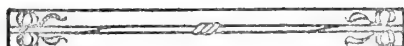
grunted and mischief-making, he soon afterwards left the settlement.

Rev. William Hooke and Rev. Nicholas Street were the first ministers in succession. Jointly, they were granted a tract of four hundred acres of upland and thirty acres of meadow in Berkley, which farm eventually went into the hands of John Hathaway, Edward Bobbitt, and Timothy Hathaway, the tract still being known as "The Farms."

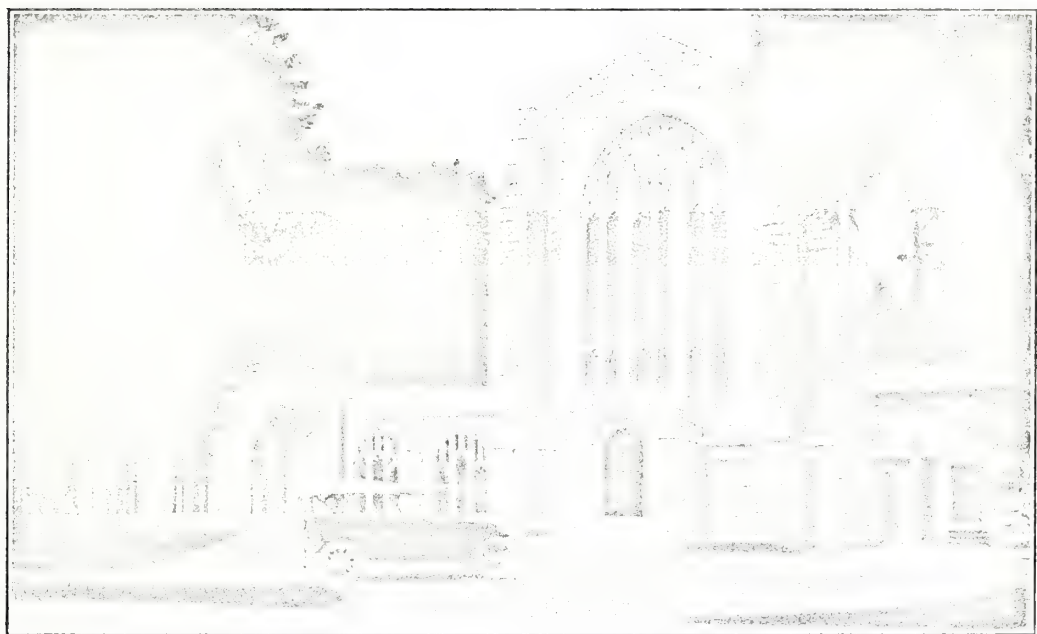
Anthony Slocum, surveyor of highways here, later removed to Dartmouth, and became one of that town's first settlers, as well. Edward Bobbitt was first of the Bobbitt-Babbitt clan in this section, and he was first to lose his life in King Philip's War in 1675, in Taunton. Captain John Gallop was not only a first comer in Taunton, but also a professional pilot in Boston harbor, and Gallop's Island in that harbor was named for him. He was killed in the Narragansett Swamp fight.

One of the most thorough and comprehensive genealogies that have been written is that of the Hodges family, tracing descent from William Hodges, who owned much land here, and whose descendants, owning property on High and Tremont streets, have been leaders in affairs of village and town.

Of Thomas Lincoln, James Leonard, James Walker and John Turner, there is much to be said industrially and otherwise. John Macomber was a surveyor in 1670. Oliver Purchase was a first settler and town clerk. John Tisdale was founder of a large family of descendants. James Wyatt was constable and surveyor. Later arrived the progenitors of the Kings, the Reeds, the Harts, and many others who have added to the advancement of the town and city's interests.







WASHINGTON MEMORIAL CHAPEL



# Valley Forge—Its Park and Memorials

BY WILL L. CLARK, WOODBINE, IOWA.



NE CAN hardly avoid traveling over sacred ground in passing through Montgomery county, Pennsylvania. Nearly everywhere one turns, his eye falls upon some association with the Revolution, apart from the preëminent one of all America, that of Valley Forge. Yet it is to be regretted that these historic spots have, as a rule, not been sufficiently appreciated by the neighboring citizens to move them to place proper "markers" of wood, stone or bronze to inform the passer-by that he is traveling over historical, almost sacred, ground.

But it is of Valley Forge that we write at this time, and which is a gratifying exception to what is written above.

Cornwallis remarked at Yorktown to Washington: "Sir, your greatest victory was not at Yorktown, but at Valley Forge." Then no wonder the residents in and surrounding this spot should take on a just pride and delight themselves by showing to the stranger the sights at hand, and pointing to the everlasting hills and majestic windings of the Schuylkill, on whose charming scenes the eyes of Washington rested in "the times that tried men's souls"—1777-78—when the destiny of a new-born nation was being determined.

Valley Forge Park is the direct result of the untiring work of the Valley Forge Park Commission appointed by the General Assembly of the State of Pennsylvania in June, 1893, and providing "for the acquisition by the State of certain ground at Valley Forge for a park." What was styled the Valley Forge Monument Association began its work in 1882, and men like George W. Childs became its charter members. Congress was appealed to for aid, but nothing was accomplished through such effort. Then appeal was made to Pennsylvania to throw out its protecting arm around the sacred spots about Washington's Headquarters at this point. At

---

NOTE—This article treats on General Washington's occupancy of Valley Forge and its environs, in Montgomery and Chester counties, Pennsylvania, including the present State Park and Memorials.



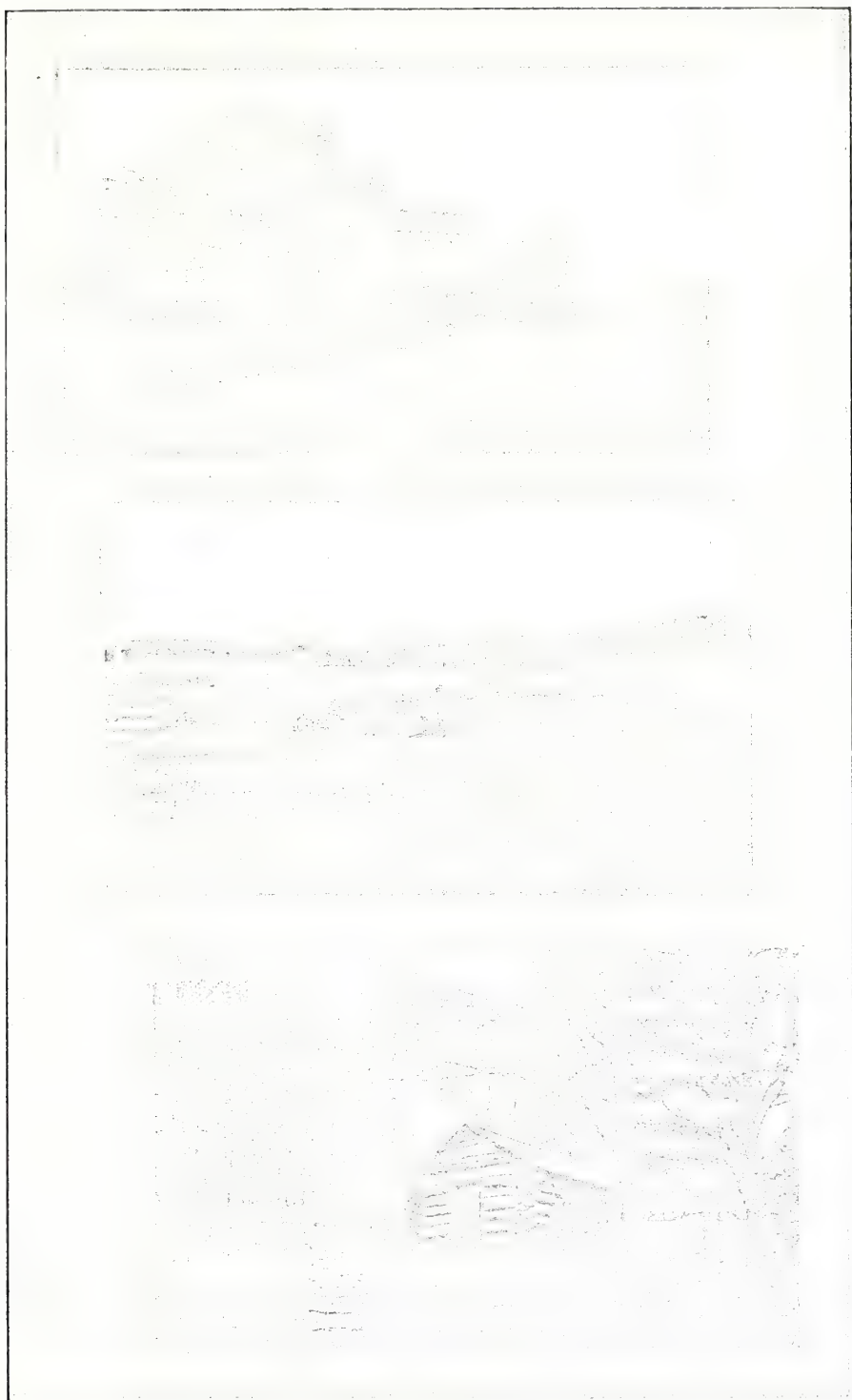


## VALLEY FORGE—ITS PARK AND MEMORIALS

first it was asked that a befitting monument like that at Bunker Hill, or the Washington Monument in the National Capital, should be erected by the Commonwealth. Fortunately, a better judgment prevailed, and the idea of preserving the entire grounds containing fifteen hundred acres was developed, and the bill making an appropriation for such purchase was passed in 1893. There is ever some courageous, far-sighted person who has to do with the beginnings of all great accomplishments, of all meritorious institutions. Such was the case here. Just who this person might have been, it is certain that as early as 1842 (so said the late Governor Pennypacker), Dr. Isaac Anderson Pennypacker wrote in behalf of the preservation of this encampment, and in 1845 suggested the erection of a suitable monument on Mount Joy. To this end came the great Daniel Webster, William H. Seward, Neal Dow, and others, to Valley Forge. But enthusiasm soon died out with the greater interests of a Nation that was destined soon to be baptized in the blood of her own people before true liberty and freedom could be vouchsafed.

The first act passed as above stated, in 1893, provided \$25,000 for the purpose of the Commission, and in 1895 the sum of ten thousand dollars was appropriated. Pennsylvania has now expended several hundred thousand dollars in purchasing the lands, and the building of excellent paved roads, etc. But prior to all of these efforts was the celebration of the one hundredth anniversary of the evacuation of Valley Forge. To bring about this centennial observance a society was organized, known as "The Centennial and Memorial Association of Valley Forge," of which Mrs. Anna M. Holstein was elected regent. Subscriptions and the sale of membership tickets to the Association were carried on successfully, until the old stone headquarters house of Washington and an acre and one-half of land surrounding it, had been secured at an expense of \$6,000, one-half being on credit and secured by a mortgage. Later the Association found it impossible to pay the interest on this mortgage, and an appeal was made to the Patriotic Sons of America in its convention at Norristown in 1885. Six months later, this worthy order had paid off the interest and principal and received thirty-six hundred shares of stock, which gave it a voice in the management of affairs at Valley Forge. In 1887 the State provided \$5,000 to further the work of improvement, and in 1887 the building was restored to its original condition. Additional lands were purchased in





VALLEY FORGE—MASSACHUSETTS MONUMENT, NATIONAL ARCH.  
FORT WASHINGTON AND CONTINENTAL ARMY HUT



## VALLEY FORGE—ITS PARK AND MEMORIALS

1889 and in 1904. A small fee had always been charged to visit the "Headquarters Building," that fine stone structure, but in 1904 the Park Commission suggested that the State take over the property, and in August, 1905, it became so possessed. The amount paid the Association by Pennsylvania was \$18,000, which the courts held must be forever held in trust by the Association and not be divided or alienated.

Since the State took possession of this immense natural park, with its numerous buildings, vast improvements have been effected. But so great have become the interests centering around this national shrine, that outsiders are desirous of having a part in the making more beautiful and perfect this spot, visited annually by tens of thousands of people from both our own and foreign lands. Just at this time (1923) a chime of thirteen bells, one for each Colony, is being placed at Valley Forge. The first bell was donated by the Massachusetts Society of the Daughters of the Revolution, and is named "Paul Revere". The great tenor bell, weighing over one ton and a half, will be given by the Pennsylvania Daughters of the American Revolution. The New Jersey Society will soon have the fund raised for their bell. The Colonial Dames of Delaware will furnish one bell for their State. New York will have one of the heaviest bells in the chime, at a cost of five thousand dollars. Each bell will be endowed, so that a ringer will be present every day of the year, and every hour will be marked by a patriotic air. The national anthem will be played each day at sunset.

The Valley Forge Park Commission recently endorsed and approved the plan of building an historic shrine at Valley Forge, in honor of the heroes who fell in the late World War, and the project is being forwarded by the American Legion, War Mothers, and other patriotic societies. It is to be a memorial of rare size and exquisite beauty. Such buildings are much more practical and truly useful than the old-fashioned monuments of marble and granite. With the completion of the above chime of bells and this Victory Hall, the improvements around a spot almost neglected and forgotten by the average American up to thirty years ago, will indeed be a credit to Pennsylvania, Montgomery county, and the location so long known as Valley Forge.

Upon the occasion of the services held on Evacuation Day in 1904, at Valley Forge, President Roosevelt said: "If the men of '61



## VALLEY FORGE—ITS PARK AND MEMORIALS

had failed in the great struggle for national unity, it would have meant that the work done by Washington and his associates might almost or quite as well had been left undone. There would have been no point in commemorating what was done at Valley Forge if Gettysburg had not given us the national right to commemorate it."

As one visits Valley Forge, his eye will be greeted, as he passes over the thousand of acres within the State Park and its surrounding lands, by many an interesting and truly historical object, nearly all of which have been provided within this present generation. Among these may be named: Washington's Headquarters, the fine old stone residence given over to the "Father of His Country," by the pioneer settler Potts during that long memorable winter of 1777-78; the Earthworks; the Washington Memorial Chapel, an Episcopal church of rare and costly design, which is open daily from eight in the morning to six in the evening, and which has been made possible only through the untiring zeal and natural ability of the present rector, Rev. W. Herbert Burk, D. D., who is also president of the Valley Forge Historical Society; the Cloister of the Colonies; the Valley Forge Museum of American History; the Soldiers' Hut; the Old Camp School; the Waterman Monument; the Wayne Monument; the Muhlenberg Monument; the Delaware Marker; the Maine Marker; the Massachusetts Monument; the New Jersey Monument; the Pennsylvania Columns; the Monument to the Unknown Dead; the Brigade Hospital; (reproduction); the Headquarters of Commanding Officers (no admission); the view from the Observatory on Mount Joy; the Defenders' Gate, near the Chapel and Museum.

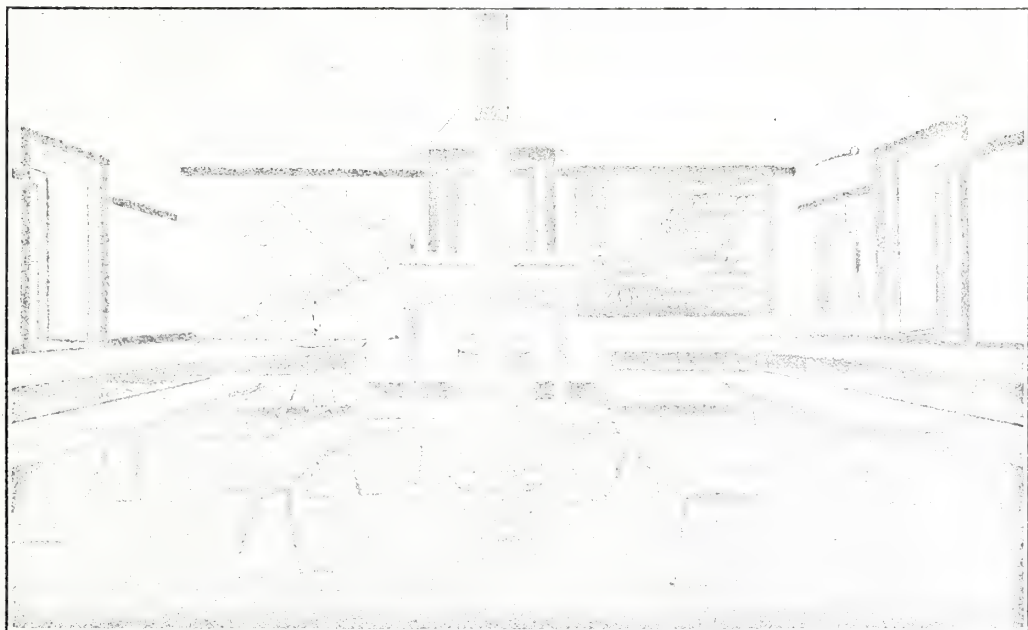
But the most interesting object of interest to the thoughtful visitor is the original field tent General Washington used as his headquarters the first week he spent upon the exposed hillsides at this point, before Mr. Potts took pity upon him and gave him quarters in the now historic stone house, the first building one sees after alighting from the railway train when entering the little hamlet of Valley Forge. To look upon the real canvas tent which the Great Commander used as his sleeping place and general headquarters, rivets the attention upon its every thread and fold, as it is seen in the Museum, in the last place where one would think to find so valuable a relic. It was secured by Dr. Burt from its owner, Miss Mary Custis Lee, the daughter of Mrs. Robert E. Lee, wife of the great







OLD CAMP SCHOOL HOUSE



INTERIOR OF OLD CAMP SCHOOL HOUSE



## VALLEY FORGE—ITS PARK AND MEMORIALS

Confederate commander, first on an option for its purchase at five thousand dollars, and on August 19, 1909, the first payment was made, amounting to five hundred dollars. The remaining forty-five hundred dollars was to be paid with money procured from exhibition of the tent, and the money to go to the support of the Old Confederate Women's Home at Richmond, Virginia, of which Miss Lee was president. This tent is in fine condition, about eight by fifteen feet in size, and high enough to walk under easily. The Washington Memorial Library now contains about fourteen thousand volumes, awaiting a proper home for safekeeping and use.

The Valley Forge Historical Society was organized by the Rev. W. Herbert Burk, D. D., June 19, 1918, to collect and preserve documents and relics relating to Valley Forge and the history of the United States of America, and other objects. But, as has been well said by another, "the exhibition of the character of Washington is the crowning glory of Valley Forge."

The latest achievement of Mrs. Griffith of Philadelphia, a noted artist and sculptor, is a remarkable portrait in bronze of Rev. W. Herbert Burk, D. D., founder of the Washington Memorial Chapel. Dr. Burk is shown wearing his academic gown and doctor of divinity hood. The artist has given her creation a touch of real life. The Daughters of the Empire (an English society of Philadelphia), made up of women of British origin, presented this portrait to the Valley Forge Historical Society, in appreciation of Dr. Burk's remarkable work for the American people.

The village of Valley Forge is situated on the south bank of the beautiful Schuylkill river, at the mouth of East Valley creek, which for nearly a mile forms the boundary line between the counties of Montgomery and Chester. It is six miles above Norristown, and twenty-three miles from Philadelphia. That portion of the village within Montgomery county and Upper Merion township, forty years ago was credited with having a general store, a grist mill, a paper-mill, and ten houses, including the old Potts two-story stone house, known as "Washington's Headquarters" to travelers of today, now has no commercial interests whatever, save for the dimes to be picked up by sellers of pictures of the historic objects throughout the extensive park now under State control, or providing meals and lodgings in the summer months only, to the "stranger within the gates." What is known as the Washington Inn is a large hotel



## VALLEY FORGE—ITS PARK AND MEMORIALS

building which at some seasons of the year does a good business. The attractive stone "Headquarters" building which pioneer Isaac Potts, the iron founder of Revolutionary days, invited Washington to occupy so long as his army was stationed thereabouts, will never cease to be of interest to student and traveler from whatever clime they may come. This house is under the daily watch-care of a man regularly engaged to look after the premises and guide visitors around and through the historic building, now containing numerous Washington real relics. The Philadelphia & Reading Railway Company a few years ago erected one of the neatest stations at this point along its line. Its double tracked storm-sheds are supported by more than one hundred fluted colonial columns, which are all the more attractive for the reason that the road at this point is around a sharp curve, thus giving the platform and columns a semi-circular appearance.

The real business transacted at what is called Valley Forge, is on the opposite side of the creek that divides the two counties, hence is within Chester county, and not Montgomery. Where once stood the old "Valley Forge" (the iron works) is now seen a simple iron post with a metallic sign-board telling the passer-by that the post is to indicate where the iron-works once stood. This refers to the rebuilt iron-works, for the British soldiers destroyed the first iron-works of the locality.

Bean's "History of Montgomery County," has the following on Valley Forge and its name:

"The name of this place was derived from a forge erected here by Isaac Potts, a son of John Potts, the founder of Pottstown. How early this forge was erected, we cannot say; but it must have been before 1759, for it is noted on Nicholas Scull's map of the Province, published in the same year, as being on the Upper Merion side of the stream, which is confirmed on William Scull's map of 1770. On September 19, 1777, a detachment of the British army encamped here, and burned the mansion house of Colonel Dewees and the iron works, leaving the grist mill uninjured. From all that history and tradition can show in this matter of where the 'forge' actually did stand, it is now generally believed that it was on the Montgomery side, and not on the west side of East Valley creek, as some have hitherto asserted. Another proof is that Isaac Potts was in Upper Merion, as well as the iron ore obtained near by, that necessarily, for convenience, the forge would also be on the same side."



## VALLEY FORGE—ITS PARK AND MEMORIALS

Valley Forge being within Upper Merion civil township, of Montgomery county, naturally much Revolutionary war history is attached thereto. On December 11, 1778, Washington with his army left Whitemarsh township, and on the afternoon of the 13th crossed at Swede's Ford and proceeded towards the Gulf and the vicinity of King of Prussia, and remained there until the 19th, when Valley Forge was reached, where the troops were destined to remain until the following June 18th, exactly six months. Owing to the lateness of the season, the men at once set about building huts to shelter them from the rigors of winter. General Porter, who had been stationed at the Gulf in November, now marched towards Swede's Ford and joined Washington's army, when a court martial was held to try such men as threw away their arms and equipment for the purpose of facilitating their escape in the late attack made at the Gulf by the British from the city. A number were sentenced to be publicly whipped, which was carried into effect, and produced not a little excitement in the camp. Although at some distance from Philadelphia, the citizens suffered considerably from the marauding expeditions of the British army.

Historian William J. Buck states that Norristown came in for its share of Revolutionary war history, and among other things has the following:

“Only two days after the defeat of Washington at Brandywine, he dispatched General Armstrong, with a portion of the militia, along the Schuylkill to throw up redoubts at the different fords which were to be occupied that in case the enemy should attempt to cross they might be opposed. At that time the principal place for crossing was at Swede's Ford, and on this account it was expected that they might pass there, and for this reason, under the direction of Chevalier Du Portail, an engineer formerly in the French army, Armstrong's men threw up entrenchments and breastworks opposite that place, and now in the borough, and it is said that they were scarcely completed before the British made their appearance on the other side, but in consequence changed their line of march toward Valley Forge. Remains of these works were still visible in 1843.

While Washington was near Pottsgrove, the enemy crossed the Schuylkill at Fatland Ford, five and a half miles above Norristown, on the night of September 22, 1777, and proceeded leisurely on their march to the city. On the 23rd a portion of their army was over night in or near the present borough of Norristown, on which occasion they set fire to and burned down nearly all the buildings in the





## VALLEY FORGE—ITS PARK AND MEMORIALS

place. So great was the damage done that on a valuation being made, the State allowed to Colonel Bull for his loss 2,080 pounds; to the University 1,000 pounds; to Hannah Thompson, 870 pounds, and to William Dewees 329 pounds,—the whole equivalent to \$11,240 of our present money."

Upper Dublin township, Montgomery county, contains some landmarks of the great Revolutionary struggle, in way of the large stone building used by General Washington as his headquarters from October to well into December, when he removed his army to Valley Forge. This stone farm-house stands on the south side of Camp Hill, only a few yards from the Springfield township line. In the early part of the nineteenth century it belonged to Caleb Emlin, but in 1810 it passed into other hands, the farm being subdivided into smaller tracts. The last known of its ownership to the author, was when it was in the hands of Charles T. Aimen, who was then still preserving it perfectly as a landmark of those long ago days. It is a stone structure thirty-five by seventy-five feet, and two stories high. The steps at the front are of the finest quality of soap-stone, neatly wrought. The general appearance of the entire building shows it to have been a well planned and finely executed edifice for the day in which it was erected. While Washington was here, the army was camped on the hill to the north of the mansion, which was certainly a strong military position. On the night of December 5, 1777, General Howe came hither from Philadelphia, by way of Chestnut Hill, with a view of surprising the camp; but on seeing the position, and unable to draw out the American army, he returned by way of Abington and Jenkintown, counting his attempt a dismal failure.

Washington had numerous headquarters within this county, as well as that at Valley Forge. There is still standing today a fine old style, well preserved, solid stone, two-story farm house, known as "Washington's Headquarters," October, 1777. It stands between the Skippack and Morris roads, six miles from Norristown, and about one mile out of the present borough of Ambler Station. It has been well preserved in every detail, and now looks as though built but a decade or so ago. For many years it was the property of Saunders Lewis.

Pottstown also comes in for her share of Revolutionary events. At the time of that great struggle, Pottstown was only a village



## VALLEY FORGE—ITS PARK AND MEMORIALS

containing one public house, one or two mills, at least one house of worship, and probably twenty dwellings. The battle of Brandywine was fought September 11, 1777, and resulted disastrously to the Americans. The next day Washington and his army proceeded to Germantown, and after resting and refreshing the men one day, returned over the Schuylkill with the intention of giving battle to General Howe. Near the Warren Tavern they met, but owing to a severe storm and heavy fall of rain a general engagement was prevented. The British then moved to Swede's Ford, but beholding the entrenchments thrown up there on the opposite side to dispute the passage, proceeded up the Schuylkill to the vicinity of Valley Forge, which led Washington to believe that their object was to capture the military stores that had been collected at Reading. This now induced him to cross to the other side of the river on the 19th, at Parker's Ford, five miles below Pottstown. There the American army went into camp and remained until the 26th, for Washington's report states "Here we lay until the 26th, on which day we marched downwards as far as Pennypacker's Mills. While we lay near Pottsgrove the enemy crossed the river."

From General Muhlenberg's orderly-book it is learned that the army did not arrive near Pottsgrove until the evening of September 22d. On this day orders were given to the "the clothier-general immediately to distribute all the clothing and shoes in his possession." The result of this was that Washington, in a letter to Congress, dated "Camp near Pottsgrove, September 23d," states that he had "early in the morning received intelligence that they had crossed the fords below. Why I did not follow immediately, I have mentioned in the former part of my letter; but the strongest reason against not being able to make a forced march is the want of shoes. Messrs. Carroll, Chase and Penn, who were some days with the army, can inform Congress in how deplorable a situation the troops are for want of that necessary article. At least one thousand men are barefooted, and have performed the marches in that condition." On this day general orders were issued that "each regiment is to proceed in making cartridges for its own use, that may be held in store. General Knox will furnish them with materials. It is expected as the weather is growing cool, that the troops will never have less than two days provisions by them." On the 25th a general court-martial was held for the immediate trial "of all



## VALLEY FORGE—ITS PARK AND MEMORIALS

persons who may be brought before them." The orders were on the morning of the 26th to march at nine o'clock, and that afternoon found them encamped on the hills of the Perkiomen, near the present village of Schwenksville.

From what has now been stated, it will be observed that Washington and his army was encamped in this vicinity from the evening of September 22d until the morning of the 26th, making all of three days and four nights. From Jesse Ives' relation in 1850, it was learned some of the soldiers while here had been quartered in the Friends' meeting-house. Rev. H. M. Muhlenberg, who resided at the Trappe, states in his journal, under date of September 23d, that "the main body of the American army is up in New Hanover, thirty-six miles distant from the city, as it was supposed the British troops would go up the Schuylkill to Reading." The inference of this is that the main body of Washington's army while here was encamped below Pottsgrove, very probably where Sprogell's run crosses the Philadelphia road, which would be about the distance mentioned from the city, and then in the township.

Among the early fords of the Schuylkill river is Swede's Ford, in the neighborhood of Norristown and Bridgeport. At twelve o'clock at night, after the battle of Brandywine (September 11, 1777), Washington wrote a dispatch to Congress from Chester, in which he says, "this day's engagement resulted in our defeat." On the 13th he formed his headquarters at Germantown, with the determination of having another engagement before the fate of Philadelphia should be decided. General Armstrong, with a portion of the militia, was posted along the river Schuylkill to throw up redoubts at the different fords where the enemy would be the most likely to cross, and which were to be occasionally occupied while Washington moved with the main army to the other side to make another attack. Apprehending that it would be very likely that the British would attempt to cross at Swede's Ford, Chevalier DuPortail, a French engineer, constructed a number of redoubts on the east side of the river, upwards of half a mile in length, with the assistance of Armstrong's command. It is said that they had scarcely completed these works before the British made their appearance on the opposite side of the river, and on beholding the defenses, changed their purpose and crossed at Fatland Ford.

When Washington broke up his encampment at Whitemarsh,





## VALLEY FORGE—ITS PARK AND MEMORIALS

with the intention of going into winter quarters at Valley Forge, it was his intention to cross the Schuylkill at Matson's Ford, now Conshohocken, for which purpose a temporary bridge was formed; but on reaching there they found Lord Cornwallis was in possession of the Gulf Hills, when the troops were recalled, and he proceeded up the east side of the river. It was ascertained afterwards that the British troops on this occasion had only been out here on a foraging expedition. At Swede's Ford the army crossed December 13th, which was witnessed by Major Holstein, then a boy, accompanying his father, who related that it was effected by making a bridge of wagons all backed to each other. The aforesaid date is confirmed by an eye witness in a letter of Colonel John Laurens, Washington's private secretary, to his father, from which we take an extract:

"The army was ordered to march to Swede's Ford and encamp with the right to the Schuylkill. The next morning the want of provisions—I could weep tears of blood when I say it—rendered it impossible to march—we did not march till the evening of that day. Our ancient bridge, an infamous construction which in many parts obliged the men to march in Indian file, was restored, and a bridge of wagons made over Swede's Ford, but fence rails from necessity being substituted for plank, and furnishing a very unstable footing, the last served to cross a trifling number of troops. On the 19th instant we marched from the Gulf to this camp."

The aforesaid is interesting, showing conclusively that Washington crossed here at the aforesaid date, and that his army remained encamped in the vicinity until the 19th, when they reached Valley Forge.

It may be of no little interest to know how Washington came to decide on making his "winter quarters" at Valley Forge. From the much said by historians on this subject, the writer believes the facts to be along the following line: Both Washington and his officers were satisfied that Whitemarsh, where he was located in the autumn of 1777, would not be a suitable place to remain the ensuing winter. The General consequently requested his general officers to communicate to him, in writing, their sentiments respecting the most eligible site for that purpose. A council of war was held on the 30th of November, at which a wide difference of opinion prevailed as to the locality and the best manner of cantoning the troops. So various and contradictory were the opinions and councils that unan-





## VALLEY FORGE—ITS PARK AND MEMORIALS

imity could not be hoped for, and it was necessary for Washington to act according to his own judgment and upon his own responsibility. He decided to form an encampment at Valley Forge, where he might be near enough the British army to watch its movements, keeping its foraging parties in check, and protect the country from the depredations of the enemy. For this purpose the patriot army left Whitemarsh, Montgomery county, December 11, 1777, but did not arrive at Valley Forge until the 19th. Two days before, Washington issued a proclamation to the army, in which he gave his reasons for the course he was about to pursue. It was an interesting document, and breathes throughout the language of devotion and patriotism, while at the same time it evinces the cool determination to conduct the war to a happy close. Owing to the great length of this document, only the subjoined paragraph will here be given:

“The General ardently wishes it were now in his power to conduct the troops into the best winter quarters; but where are they to be found? Should we retire to the interior of the State, we should find them crowded with virtuous citizens, who sacrificing their all, have left Philadelphia and fled hither for protection; to their distresses humanity forbids us to add. This is not all. We should leave a vast extent of fertile country to be despoiled and ravaged by the enemy, from which they would draw vast supplies, and where many of our firm friends would be exposed to all the miseries of an insulting and wanton depredation. A train of evils might be enumerated, but these will suffice. These considerations make it indispensably necessary for the army to take such a position as will enable it to most effectually to prevent distress and give the most extensive security; and in that position we must make ourselves the best shelter in our power. With alacrity and diligence, huts may be erected that will be warm and dry. In these the troops will be compact, more secure against surprises than if in a divided state, and at hand to protect the country. These cogent reasons have determined the general to take post in the neighborhood of this camp, and, influenced by them, he persuades himself that the officers and soldiers, with one heart and one mind, will resolve to surmount every difficulty with a fortitude and patience becoming their profession and the sacred cause in which they are engaged. He himself will share the hardships and partake of every inconvenience.”

It is not the intention here to enter into the details of the important events that transpired at Valley Forge during the six months encampment, for that belongs rather to the Revolutionary



## VALLEY FORGE—ITS PARK AND MEMORIALS

history of the county, but merely mention a few local facts outside of that subject. Washington, in the latter part of the summer of 1796, when his second term as President of the United States had nearly expired and he was about to return to private life, concluded once more to visit this place, the scene of so many toils and struggles. This information was received through Mr. Henry Woodman, a native of the vicinity in 1858, then aged sixty-three years, as obtained from his father, who at the time was engaged in plowing on his farm near the place of the encampment. In the afternoon he had observed an elderly man, of dignified appearance, on horseback, dressed in a plain suit of black, accompanied by a colored servant, ride to a place in the road nearly opposite, where he alighted from his horse and came into the field. He stated that he had called to make some enquiry concerning the owners and occupants of the different places about there, and also in regard to the system of farming practiced in that part of the country, and numerous other questions relating to agriculture. He also made enquiry after certain families in the neighborhood. As answers were given, he noted them down in a book. Mr. Woodman informed him he could not give as correct answers as he wished, as he had only moved to the neighborhood since the war, though he had been in the army while encamped here. This gave a new turn to the conversation. The stranger informed him that he had also been in the army and at the camp, and as he expected to leave the city in a few months, with the prospect of never returning, he had taken this journey to visit the place which had been the scene of so much suffering and distress, and to see how far the inhabitants had recovered from its effects. On learning that it was Washington, he told him that his appearance had so altered that he did not recognize him, or else he would have paid more respect to his late commander, now the chief magistrate of the nation. He replied, that to see the people happy and the desolate fields recovering from the disasters they had experienced, and to meet with any of his old companions, now peaceably engaged in the most useful of all employments, afforded him more satisfaction than all the homage that could be paid to his person or station. He then said that pressing engagements rendered it necessary for him to be in the city that night, and taking him by the hand, bade him an affectionate farewell.

In a journal kept by one of the prisoners taken by General



## VALLEY FORGE—ITS PARK AND MEMORIALS

Burgoyne, Captain Thomas Anbury, appears among other graphic descriptions of the winter at Valley Forge, the following:

“A Loyalist at whose house I was quartered, at Valley Forge, and who resided here at the time Washington’s army was encamped, told me that when General Washington chose that spot for his winter quarters his men were obliged to build their huts with round logs and suffered exceedingly from the inclemency of the season. The greater part of them were in a manner naked at that severe season of the year, many without shoes and stockings, and very few except the Virginia troops with the necessary clothing. His army was wasting away with sickness, that raged with extreme mortality in all his different hospitals, which were no less than eleven. His army was likewise so diminished by constant desertions in companies, from ten to fifteen at a time, that at one period it was reduced to four thousand, and those with propriety could not be called effective.

“The horses, from being constantly exposed to showers of rain and falls of snow, both day and night, were in such a condition that many of them died, and the rest were so emaciated as to be unfit for labor; had he been attacked and repulsed he must have left behind all his artillery for want of horses to convey it. In addition to all those distresses, Washington had not in camp at any one time, not a week’s provisions and sometimes he was totally destitute. The Loyalists greatly censured General Howe in suffering Washington to continue in this weak and dangerous state from December to May, and equally astonished what could be the motive he did not attack, surround or take by siege the whole army when the severity of the weather was gone. They expected that in the month of March, April and May they should hear of the camp being stormed or besieged, but it seems that General Howe was in exactly the same situation as General Burgoyne respecting intelligence, obtaining none he could place a perfect reliance on.”

The house occupied by Washington as his headquarters is still standing, and was visited in the month of January, 1923, by the writer. It was owned in time of the Revolution by Isaac Potts, proprietor of the iron forge. It is a two-story stone building, situated near the Reading railroad. The main portion of it has a front of about twenty-four feet and is thirty-three in depth. The outside is of dressed stone, pointed. The interior woodwork is in a good state of preservation, and with care this building may be made to last for centuries, as its walls appear as durable as when first built. No one familiar with our Revolutionary history can enter the room that





WASHINGTON'S HEADQUARTERS





## VALLEY FORGE—ITS PARK AND MEMORIALS

served the great chief for nearly half a year, both as reception and bed-chamber, and where he wrote many important dispatches, without feelings of the deepest emotion. In the sill of the east window of this room, and out of which can be seen much of the camping ground, is still pointed out a small, rough box, as having contained his papers and writing material. We gazed at this depository and other objects around with much interest. Adjoining is a wing one and a half stories high and about twenty-four feet in length, which has been built since the war, but it occupies the site of a smaller structure that was erected for the accommodation of Mrs. Washington. In a letter to a friend this lady remarks: "The General's apartment is very small; he has had a log cabin built to dine in, which has made our quarters much more tolerable than they were at first."

This property was long owned and carefully preserved by Mrs. Hannah Ogden, of whom in 1878 it was purchased by the Centennial and Memorial Association of Valley Forge, which was especially organized for this purpose, and it can therefore no longer be regarded as private property, and is now looked upon as a sacred shrine of the American republic. At its front stands a very tall flagpole, from which between sunrise and sunset beautiful "Old Glory" floats to the breeze every day in the year, being run up and down by the faithful caretaker of the premises.

Kind American reader, don't "*go abroad*" until first you have visited Valley Forge. It is safe to state that not ten per cent. of our native born population have any knowledge concerning this sacred shrine; many do not even know where it is situated, what it now consists of, or what it meant to the Revolutionary soldiers. On your next outing, take in Valley Forge.





# Hackensack, County Seat of Bergen County, New Jersey

BY FRANCES A. WESTERVELT, CURATOR OF BERGEN COUNTY HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

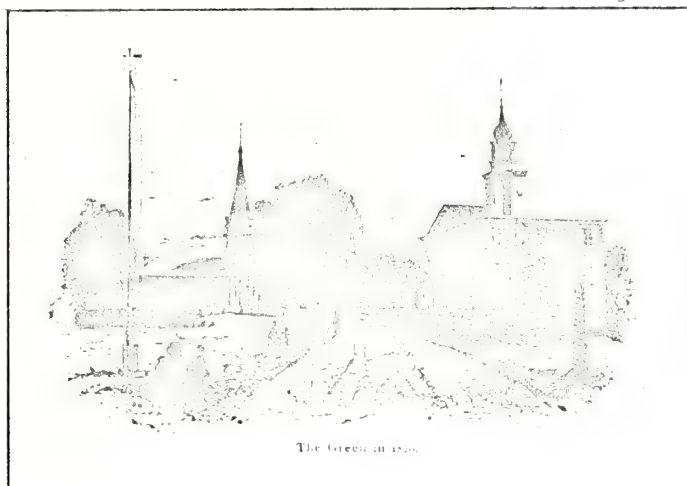


WHEN the Legislature, during the month of November, 1921, passed the bill which designated Hackensack as a city with a commission form of government, it gave to the place for the first time the official name of Hackensack. Previous to this the legal name was New Barbadoes township, which it had borne for two hundred twenty-eight years, despite the fact that the community had been designated by the name of Hackensack, which was in common use.

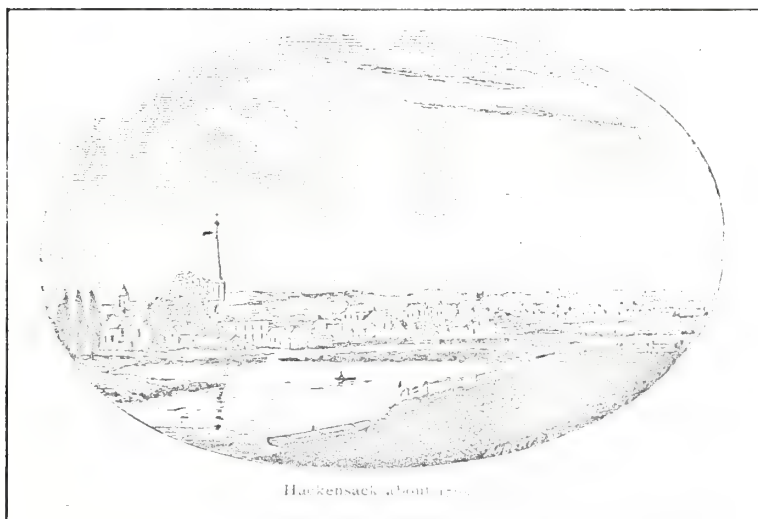
The whole tract of land from the Passaic river to the Hackensack river was known as "New Barbadoes," Essex county. The patent for these lands was granted March 26, 1668, to Nathaniel Kingsland, of the Island of Barbadoes. This island was discovered in the Sixteenth Century, and on account of its tropical forests in which the trees were hung with long pendants resembling a beard, it was given the name of Barbadoes, or the Bearded Isle. It was, however, sometimes called Little England.

The county of Bergen was established in 1682, and included all of the land between the Hudson and Hackensack rivers on the east and west, and the New York Province line on the north, and Newark bay on the south. The northern part of this strip of land on the east side of the Hackensack river was known by the Indian name with its various spellings; then "Old Hackensack," by inference to the old Indian site, where Oratam, the Sachem of the Achkincheshacky tribe of Indians, had his village. In 1693, when the township divisions were made, it was designated as the Township of Hackensack, the unofficial name of the locality used with the prefix Township, as occurred in the case of the Township of Bergen and the Township of New Barbadoes, the name of the homeland of the three gentlemen who held the first patent from the Indians for the locality—Messrs.





The Green in 1800



Hackensack about 1820

THE GREEN IN 1780, AND HACKENSACK ABOUT 1820



## HACKENSACK, COUNTY SEAT OF BERGEN COUNTY, N. J.

Kingsland, Sanford and Berry. In 1693 it became the legal name. In 1686, when thirty-three of the inhabitants of Old Hackensack formed a religious organization, it was the logical procedure to give in the title the name of the location. In the records we find "Minutes of the Consistory of Ackensack." First were written in this book the memoirs of Do. Petrus Tassemaker. In the year 1686 the following persons were elected and installed as elders and deacons of the congregation of Hackensack (having no church building).

John Berry, of New Barbadoes township, county of Essex, learning of this condition and their anxiety to build a church building, gave in 1696 two and three-quarter acres of land in New Barbadoes township (on the Green) for a church site for the inhabitants of Hackensack, New Barbadoes and Acquiggenouck.\* They built the church on the Green in the same year, and the official name was the Dutch Reformed Church of Ackensack, thus unknowingly bestowing on the location an unofficial name that it carried two hundred twenty-five years before it was righted by the vote of the people in November, 1921, and became the City of Hackensack. The land between the Hackensack and Passaic rivers in 1682, from Newark bay to New York Province line, was titled the County of Essex, and in 1693 the whole section was called the Township of New Barbadoes, and Acquiggenouck. The former township in 1709 was detached from Essex county and became a part of the county of Bergen, and also its county seat. The first court house was evidently, according to records, built about 1715, south of the creek, near present Hudson street. The second was on the Green, and was enlarged several times and in 1780 was burned by the British. As this act had been feared by the authorities, their good judgment called for an act being passed authorizing the building of a temporary gaol and court house at Yaupaw, and the county records to be taken by Abraham Westervelt, the county clerk, to New York for safe keeping, all this being done before the attack was made. After the war was over, there was a new court house built on Bridge street, near Main. Mr. Westervelt went to New York and brought back the county records. In 1819 another court house was built on Court street, near the church on the Green. About 1905 the great need of a larger court house and jail was very evident. The following record puts some

---

\*In this and similar instances, the author follows the variations of orthography, as they appear in old documents.





## HACKENSACK, COUNTY SEAT OF BERGEN COUNTY, N. J.

light on the situation: "1909, Nov. 12. Having succeeded in surmounting various obstacles in the three years' preparation for the building of a new court house, the Bergen County Building Committee, composed of James M. Gulnac, chairman, Collector Walter Christie and Sheriff George M. Brewster, last Saturday morning announced the awarding of the contract for erecting the new building to J. T. Brady Company, of New York, at a figure of \$827,672.25, to be built on Court street and Main." These figures could not have covered the full expense, according to other records as follows: "1910, July 8. The cornerstone of the 'New Million Dollar' Court House in Hackensack was laid with appropriate services on Wednesday. 1912, May 1. Prosecutor Wendal Wright moved from the Van Valen building to the second floor of the new court house. Many of the other officers were located in their new quarters also."

There has been taken at various times from the limits of this original township, territory to construct other townships, and in 1879 it was reduced to its present area, which is now included in the city of Hackensack, a strip of land on the west bank of the Hackensack river of about five miles in length with an average width of two miles, having for its northern and southern boundaries on the Hackensack river, New Bridge on the north and Little Ferry on the south, hence the Township of New Barbadoes became obsolete as a civil organization. Thus it can be readily seen that the present city of Hackensack can be confused with that of old Hackensack and the township of Hackensack, which in the past have been the cause of many historical problems.

The name of the location on the east side of the river in the colonial records has been spelled in various ways, the present orthography being adopted in 1685, credit being given for it to the Dutch. Previous to this date it was spelled Achkincheshacky, Hackinkeshackey, Hackinghsackin, Ackinsack, and sometimes Hackquinsack and Hockgumdachque. The primary application of the name was to the Indian tribe and settlement or village, river and adjacent districts; and, as Van Tienhoven wrote, to a certain savage chief named Hackquinsacy. The Rev. Thomas Campanus (Holm), who was chaplain to the Swedish settlements on the Delaware, 1642-49, and who collected a vocabulary, wrote the name Hochung, also Hockueng, signifying "hook." This sound of the word may have led the Dutch to adopt Hackingh as an orthography, the modern Haking, *i. e.*,



## HACKENSACK, COUNTY SEAT OF BERGEN COUNTY, N. J.

“hooking” incurred as a hook, like the letter S. The most satisfactory interpretation of the name is suggested by the late Dr. Trumbull, from Huckqua or Hocquann, a *hook*, and *sauk*, mouth of a river, literally hook-shaped mouth, descriptive of the course of the stream around Bergen Point by the Kill von Kull to the New York bay. The Lenapes called the place Hocquoan.

The fertility of the land was an attraction, and the section soon became a great producer of vegetables for New York City. Clay was also to be found in abundance in the vicinity, and great brickyards soon dotted the land along the Hackensack river. Among the early residents was Abraham Ackerman, who lived in 1704 in what is now Essex street. In this house was found a painting of the old pioneer representing him ploughing in a field, on the back of which was an invocation in the Dutch language, the translation of which was as follows:

ABRAHAM ACKERMAN BORN MAY 15, ANNO DOMINI 1659

O Lord, teach me to count my days and to keep death before my eyes;  
How could an Ackerman thrive if there was no sunlight, or without the stars or the moon?

The law of our forefathers is just as necessary;  
Keep the Lord before your eyes.  
Live piously, and think on the Angel of Death.

The Demarests three years later were located on the corner of the Polefly road and Essex street. The records show a deed in 1708 from Jan Berdan and his wife Eva to Paulus Van derbecker, and a house on this plot of land bearing the date 1717, was razed in 1921. On the site of the present Anderson Hall (now Van Stone building) in 1710 stood the house of W. A. Waldron. John Wright and his wife Anna's homestead, in 1723, was on the present Main street in front of the west side of the court house. Prior to the Revolution, in 1751, Peter Zabriskie resided on the site of present Mansion House. He deeded land to the county in 1785, beginning at the public road leading through the town of New Barbadoes. In the latter half of the eighteenth century and the first part of the nineteenth century, Peter Wilson and his wife Catherine lived, in 1787, on Main street, on the present site of the building now owned by R. H. Gilbert. In 1800 Teunis Banta resided at the corner of the present Main and Passaic streets. Albert Doremus lived on Main street, near Bergen street, and on the present site of the library the Berdans resided. On the corner of the present Ward and Main streets there is an old type



## HACKENSACK, COUNTY SEAT OF BERGEN COUNTY, N. J.

of a residence that has stood for many years. In the year 1818 the Van Giesons lived north of Warren street, on Main street; John J. Anderson resided on the corner of Main and East Passaic streets; John Anderson, his grandfather, had a homestead which is now a part of the Oratani Club House; Adam Boyd's house was on Main, west of Bridge street; Archibald Campbell's pre-Revolutionary site was where the Union League Club is now located, and the Washington Institute (1768) was corner of Main and Warren streets. Dr. Peter Wilson was the first instructor.

At a meeting held in Hackensack in 1767, a long discussion was had whether Queen's (now Rutgers) College should be located in Hackensack or New Brunswick, and the matter going to the Legislature, the contest was decided in favor of New Brunswick, as the modesty of Dr. Peter Wilson, who was a member of Assembly, would not permit him to cast the deciding vote for his own town. That is why Hackensack is not a college town.

The only notable event that occurred during the Revolutionary War in what is now the city of Hackensack, was the British and Hessian raid on March 23, 1780. The raiding party consisted of about four hundred British, Hessians and refugees, commanded by Lieut.-Col. McPherson, of the 42nd Regiment. They passed on their way through Hackensack to attack some Pennsylvania troops stationed at Paramus. They entered the lower part of the town about three o'clock in the morning. The town was garrisoned by a small company of militia, numbering twenty or thirty, who had retired for the night. The first half of the enemy marched quietly through town, the remainder, consisting mostly of Hessians, broke open doors and windows, robbed and plundered, and took a few prisoners, among whom was Archibald Campbell, who in the confusion escaped and hid in the cellar of a house. The Hessians destroyed two dwellings, Adam Boyd's and John Chapple's, also the court house situated on the Green, the tavern of Archibald Campbell being saved by the family throwing water over the roof. By this time the militia was aroused and alarmed the troops at Paramus, and when the enemy arrived at Red Mills (now Arcola), four miles from Hackensack, the Americans were on their way to meet them. Disappointed in not surprising the Americans, the enemy retraced their steps, and on nearing Hackensack turned to the north on the road leading to a bridge to the left of which there was an elevation about





## HACKENSACK, COUNTY SEAT OF BERGEN COUNTY, N. J.

a half mile distant from the road, the intervening ground being level. The Continentals and militia were kept at a distance by flanking movements of the enemy, who were detained about two hours in replacing the plank of the bridge, which had been torn up by the Americans. Having crossed over the river, the enemy marched down the east bank of the Hackensack through the English Neighborhood and were pursued by the Americans twelve miles to Bergen Woods. The British lost many killed and wounded; the casualties of the Americans numbered only two—a young man was wounded by a spent ball, which cut his upper lip, knocked out four teeth and lodged in his mouth; and Captain Outwater, who commanded the militia, received a ball below the knee, that was never extracted. The county records were removed to New York City before the time of the burning of the court house, which is evidenced by an entry in the minutes of Justices and Freeholders, dated May 12, 1784, when an account was rendered by Abraham Westervelt for expenses amounting to £2 for obtaining the records in that city.

It is interesting in these days with the complaint of the high cost of living, to review the prices that were established by the court for the supplies for the Continental army located in Bergen county in 1779-80. For the first year mentioned, wood was \$8 a cord; hay, \$4 a hundred weight; rye and corn by the bushel was \$14; buckwheat and oats \$8 a bushel. For transportation for firewood and provisions to the army, \$12 a day was allowed. The following years these prices were considerably increased: Hay of the first quality was \$200 a ton, second quality \$180 a ton, a third quality \$160 a ton. Corn and rye was \$18 a bushel, buckwheat and oats \$12 a bushel, a cord of wood was worth \$12. The price of carting was \$32 a day, and a viewer of damages received \$20 a day. Of course these large prices are in the depreciated Continental currency.

The following is taken from the recollections of the late George J. Ackerman, a prominent citizen of Hackensack, which was first published in 1902. The recollections are from fifty to sixty years, antedating the publication, when there were no names to any of the streets in the village:

The first acquisition of land in city of Hackensack (New Barbadoes township), was a grant to John Berry, which included all of what is now the city of Hackensack. Berry's grant was subsequently subdivided. Isaac VanGieson purchased the tract from what is



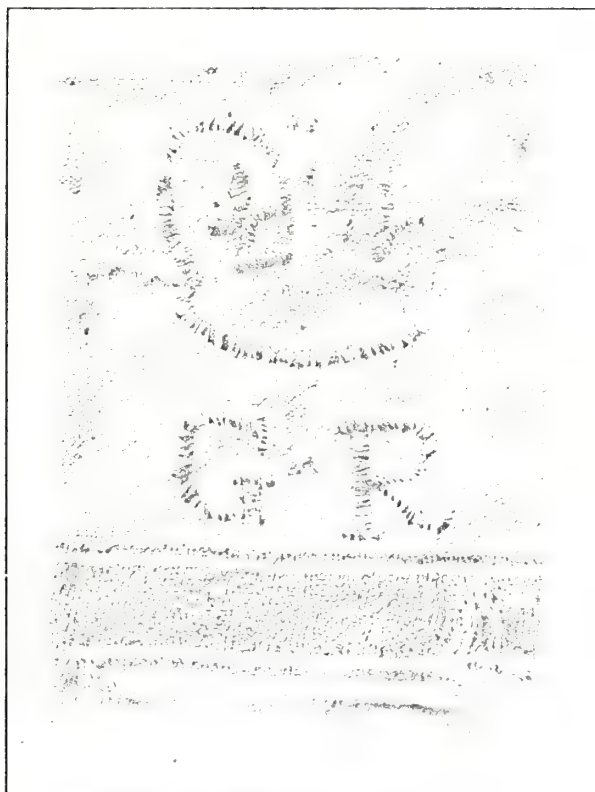


## HACKENSACK, COUNTY SEAT OF BERGEN COUNTY, N. J.

now Warren street north to the south side of the store formerly occupied by Julius Ellis, and which at the present day is occupied by the Woolworth site and C. A. Bogert candy kitchen. Rynier VanGieson, who was a son of Isaac VanGieson, donated in 1762 the plot of ground on which now stands the Washington Institute. Another early purchaser was Jan Berdan, who on the ninth day of June, 1708, being the seventh year of the reign of Queen Anne, purchased "all that tract lying between Isaac VanGieson's north line and the Kings road (now Passaic street) from the Hackensack river to the Saddle river." He and his wife Eva executed in 1717 a deed for one-half of this tract to Paulos Vanderbeek, the money consideration being £87 of the current money of the Province of New York. The said Vanderbeek and his heirs and assigns also agreed to pay yearly on the twentieth day of March as a cheife or quit-rent to John Berry, his heirs and assigns forever, the sum of seven shillings and one penny, current money of the Province of New York. These early landowners had their residences on the main thoroughfare, to which they opened lanes for the purpose of going to and from their farms, which extended beyond the Red Hill, and it is probable there was a back lane or street farther west; these lanes did not run beyond the eastern line of this lane, therefore we find that all of the three original lanes were but a block long; what is now Camden street led to the Berdan property, Salem street to Vanderbeek and Warren street to the VanGieson. The last of the Berdan homestead was destroyed in 1921; its cornerstone bore the date of 1717, and it was the original residence of the first settler, Jan Berdan, and was located near what is now Salem street. On this property in 1822, after enlarging the original house, was established by Isaac Vanderbeek, the noted Hackensack Tavern. The beautiful Dutch colonial house of Paulos Vanderbeek, built in 1717, has been used for several years by the New York Telephone Company as a store house, but is to be demolished (in 1922) to make room for enlarged improvements. On the west side of the back lane (State street) were farm and pasture lands and many orchards of trees laden with luscious apples, and immense fields of corn and waving grain were not an uncommon sight during the early autumn months.

The Washington Mansion House, still standing (though now much enlarged), was kept by David D. Demarest. It had always been a noted place of resort for travelers and people having business at the county seat. Historical records tell us it was the private residence of Peter Zabriskie (at the time of the Revolutionary War), who was a friend of General Washington, who made the home his headquarters, his meals being sent to him from Archibald Campbell's tavern. In 1834 the Weehawk Bank had its headquarters in this building, John DeGroot president, and George Y. Alliare cashier. The bank was subsequently removed to the house built for





KING GEORGE'S CROWN  
Homespun Blanket from Burdett Home, Fort Lee



## HACKENSACK, COUNTY SEAT OF BERGEN COUNTY, N. J.

it, standing east from the Mansion House. The bank failed and the house is still standing, occupied as law offices. The old church standing east of the Green is a time-honored monument which was held in respect by our ancient Dutch progenitors. The pews were sold to the members, who received a deed for the same, in which ownership lasted forever, with the provision "that it should not be destroyed or defaced." The church was heated by two wood-burning stoves placed on either side of the main entrance, each of which had a pipe extending the full length of the building. In cold weather the women folks generally carried little foot stoves in which was a metal pan filled with live coals to keep the feet warm during the services, which were of rather long duration, generally three hours. The pulpit was quite small, being semi-circular in front and elevated about five or six feet above the floor. It was reached by a circular stairway placed on each side of it. Directly underneath and in front of the pulpit was a desk and chair occupied by the precentor, who would sing the hymn, to be followed by the congregation. He used a tuning fork to get the pitch. There was no choir, and there was not even an organ or any other musical instrument in any of the churches. In fact, it was considered by some profane and irreverent to have any instrument of music in their houses of worship, and was deprecated in the most caustic terms by the old dominies.

Across the Green was another tavern, afterwards called the Hackensack House, kept by Edward VanBeuren. Next door to it, looking east, was the county court house and jail, built 1819. At that time the building was much smaller than at present. The jail was in the building and the cells, four in number, two on each side of the main entrance, were reached by a narrow passageway running in front of them, and secured by two doors, one of iron and one of wood, with massive lock and key. It was in one of these cells the ill-fated murderer, Billie Keating, was confined in 1850. At the execution, the sheriff, John V. H. Terhune, attired in full military regalia, with sword, cocked hat and feathers, officiated, and Sam Dawson, who was the jailor, cut the rope. The scaffold was erected in the triangle enclosure on the west end of the court house, in full view of everybody who wanted to see enacted the last drama in the life of that unfortunate murderer. The Green was crowded with people from all parts of the county, and rich and poor jostled each other to get a view of the tragedy. He was clothed in a white suit and cap made by a tailor named Royce. At that time there was a flagpole about one hundred feet high standing in the centre of the Green, surmounted by a Cap of Liberty. An American flag was generally displayed from the top of the pole on every Fourth of July, and the old Revolutionary cannon, "The Bergen" (bereft of the carriage and lying now in the cellar of Johnston's Public Li-



## HACKENSACK, COUNTY SEAT OF BERGEN COUNTY, N. J.

brary, the property of the Bergen County Historical Society), boomed forth its voice of terror.

The Zabriskie mansion, with its corinthian columns, stood on the present site of the Bergen County Children's Home. On the other side of the street just beyond the New Jersey & New York railroad crossing, still standing, is the Mabon residence, one of the famous landmarks of Hackensack, which, if it could only speak, could tell a remarkable history. It was here that the first progenitor of the Ackerman family in Bergen county settled and built a house in 1704, which was evidently the old end that was demolished lately, and the large and beautiful house was built later. On stones in the east end wall is the following inscription:

A. A. M. G. A. M.  
D. A. M.  
Anno 1704

It was accompanied with the symbols of husbandry, viz.: A plough and spinning wheel and three hieroglyphics. The letters stand for Abraham AckerMan, his wife Gietje AckerMan, and his oldest son, David AckerMan. It is still in the possession of the descendants of the original owner. The parsonage of the church on the Green stood by the creek. It was moved about 1858 to property owned by the church on Sussex street, sold and still stands in fine condition. Bert Campbell owned and lived in the house on the west-erly corner of State and Essex streets. Old Hannah Simonson, as she was familiarly called, owned and occupied a little low one-story house between State street and the creek, on the site of the house of Schuyler Boyd.

One of the ancient landmarks of Hackensack is the Green, its history dating back to 1696, the date of John Berry's gift of two and three-quarters acres of land to the inhabitants of Hackensack and New Barbadoes townships. Here stood the whipping post and stocks, public notices were posted, and training bands met for drill and parades. The ground on the Green was trod by the feet of Washington and Lafayette and the patriotic soldiers in the great struggle for freedom. After the American troops had taken their departure from the town about November 20, 1776, a different picture was presented the next day, when at about noon time the British took possession of Hackensack, and in the afternoon the Green was covered with Hessians, a horrid, frightful sight to the inhabitants. There were between 3,000 and 4,000 Hessians, with their whiskers, brass caps, and kettle drums. A part of these troops were





## HACKENSACK, COUNTY SEAT OF BERGEN COUNTY, N. J.

taken prisoners two months later at Trenton. Here, too, the forefathers of the hamlet of Revolutionary days saw their court house, which stood on the Green, facing Main street, burned to ashes, and the town sacked and plundered by British invaders in 1780. The Hessians threatened also to destroy the old church on the Green, but it escaped their sacrilegious hands.

The Green as pictured in 1820 was a bare plot of ground, with a tall flag-pole in the center, and willow trees on the side, with the old church and court house to the east, while the Mansion House was on the north and the Hackensack House on the south of the park. In 1858 the Green was the subject of acrimonious contention between the church people and common citizens of the town. The citizens wanted the spot enclosed with an iron railing; the consistory objected and combatted, but the people scored a victory and contributed \$200 for the posts and iron railing. Editor Kimball, who published the "Bergen County Journal" in Hackensack at that time, manifested his satisfaction over the matter with this glowing comment: "It is our duty as Christians, as citizens of Hackensack, as lovers of the beautiful, to insist upon the improvement of this spot. It is to Hackensack what the Common is to Boston, what the Central Park will be to New York." That spelled *finis* for the gnarled and knotty old willows that had stood for a century or more, and they were removed and new trees planted, some being elms, which are standing to-day. Old willows which were familiar landmarks in other parts of the town have nearly all disappeared within the recent past. The Green has been made use of for various purposes ever since its formation. Both the Democrats and Republicans have held mass meetings on the Green, and liberty poles have been erected, and the late Judge Joseph D. Bedle spoke there in his campaign for Governor in 1874. An Assembly District caucus was held by the Democrats on the Green one autumn afternoon in 1868, and Eben Winton received the nomination. That is somewhat different from the primary procedure to-day. More recently ornaments began to be placed on the Green. First came a fountain, then a band stand, the gift of Frank Poor, one of the greatest promoters of Hackensack, which served its purpose for a time and was then removed. Just east of the fountain is a cannon which was presented by the War Department at Washington to Hackensack about ten years ago. On the following Decoration Day appropriate exercises were held around the big gun, on



## HACKENSACK, COUNTY SEAT OF BERGEN COUNTY, N. J.

which occasion Col. Alfred T. Holley, of Hackensack, delivered a most eloquent oration. This was followed by a military parade through town.

The Green is not fenced in to-day, being all open, with concrete walks running across it. There is also a flagstaff near the center of the park, placed there by the Hackensack Commission, and "Old Glory" is hoisted every morning by one of the town employees, provided the weather is fair. After the World War a large honor roll board was placed on the west side of the Green, along Main street, containing the names of the Hackensack young men who were called to the service. The board was removed in 1921.

Hackensack from the time of its organization in the dim distant past was an important place and the center of considerable business activity, becoming more so as the years rolled along, and the population in the outlying districts increased. For more than one hundred years it was the business center for all the surrounding country, and to the northwest it commanded the trade for a distance that extended to the extreme limit of the county and beyond. At that time there was considerable navigation on the Hackensack river, especially in the fall and spring, of farm and industrial products seeking transportation to Newark and New York, but now navigating the Hackensack river would be entirely too slow in these days of rapid transit by rail and motor truck. Better roads and more rapid communication with the cities and large towns in more recent years have reduced the limits of the trade and business of Hackensack by affording other commodious outlets to the surrounding country. The New Jersey & New York railroad and the New York, Susquehanna & Western, which pass through the town, bring it within about half an hour of the great metropolis, besides which there is the Hudson river trolley line to 130th street, New York, also a short run. Many business men reside in Hackensack, while their place of business is in New York and elsewhere. It is largely a place of pleasant homes and beautiful abodes, although there are several industrial plants. Some forty years ago the finest residences in town were located on Essex, Main and Passaic streets, but the scene has since shifted and now the most pretentious homes are found in the hill section on Summit and Prospect avenues, etc.

Hackensack has a form of government different from that in operation in any other municipality in New Jersey, and is styled



## HACKENSACK, COUNTY SEAT OF BERGEN COUNTY, N. J.

the Hackensack Improvement Commission. This commission was created by act of the State Legislature in 1868, and has been in existence fifty-four years. In the early days of the commission, only property owners could vote for commissioners or be elected commissioner, and a \$100 lot constituted a property owner. By securing title to that much real estate on a certain occasion, one citizen was enabled to be a candidate for commissioner. That restriction, however, has long since been removed, and commissioners are elected the same as candidates to any other public office.

The commission act was supplemented in April, 1871, by a provision empowering the commission to organize a fire department. On June 1 following, two fire companies were organized, and subsequently four or five more companies were formed, but the volunteer companies have all gone out of existence and a dozen years ago a paid fire department was organized under the control of the commission. Five commissioners constituted the full membership of the commission until about 1911, when the act was again amended, increasing the number to seven, the law providing that there should be one commissioner elected from each of the five wards, a commissioner-at-large, and a president of the commission. The term of the president and commissioner-at-large is two years, and that of the commissioners three years. There is no salary attached to the office.

Two or three efforts have been made to change the form of government to something different, a city seeming to be the most favored, but nothing was accomplished, the last time the question was agitated being about ten years ago. Then the matter was discussed and a city plan proposed, but no conclusion was reached, and there the matter dropped. After slumbering until the summer of 1921, the proposition was again revived. This time it was something entirely different from what had formerly been proposed. It was not to change the form of government, but simply to change the name of the municipality. The question that was submitted to the voters at the general election on November 8, 1921, was this: "Shall the name of the municipality be changed from 'Township of New Barbadoes, County of Bergen, to City of Hackensack?" The voters decided in favor of the change by a good majority. So Hackensack is a city in name.

Contemporaneous with the organization of civil government in





## HACKENSACK, COUNTY SEAT OF BERGEN COUNTY, N. J.

the Province of New Jersey, the Assembly of November, 1668, in consideration of the inconveniences that do arise for the want of an ordinary in every town, ordered that Bergen and other counties provide each an inn for the relief and entertainment of strangers. Later the town authorities had the power given them to appoint innkeepers, and he was considered a town officer. The appointment was one of honor, and authorities were very particular to whom licenses were granted, requiring the innkeeper to provide meat, drink and lodging, and to those holding a license the sole privilege was given to retail liquors under the quantity of two gallons.

The Legislature in May, 1668, endeavored to correct the vice of drunkenness by imposing a fine. Innkeepers were assessed from forty shillings to three pounds for the use of the poor. They were required to provide two good spare feather beds more than was necessary for family use, and to have good house room, stabling and pasture for drovers. Near the early churches there was always a tavern, as many of those attending church drove many miles, they were made welcome by the proprietors, then men refreshing themselves with one of the popular drinks of the day, and it is said the ladies, too, took mild refreshments and had their little foot stove pans refilled with hot coals before they entered the church for the three-hour service. The noon hour called for another visit with stoves, as another three hours' service was ahead of them, and then before leaving for the long, cold ride home, the stoves were refilled and placed in the sleighs or wagons, the seats therein being chairs brought by the women for use in the chairless, fireless churches. Innkeepers were prohibited from allowing tippling or drinking in their houses on the Lord's Day, especially "during time of Divine Worship," to which was added, "excepting for necessary refreshments." The following official rates are from the original copies:

A rate for Tavern Keepers, 1763—A warm dinner, three shillings; cold dinner, one shilling; supper, one shilling; breakfast, nine pence; bottle meadeary wine, five shillings; common wine, three shillings; quart lime punch, one shilling six pence, without limes, one shilling; gill of rum, five pence; quart of beer, five pence; quart of cider, five pence, quart of oats, three pence; night feed of English hay, two shillings; salt hay for a horse, nine pence; gill of brandy or gellwine, eight pence; a lodging one night for a person, eight pence; pasturing one horse, one shilling.

The following rates are established by the court of quarter







### INN SIGN

Signboard of John A. Hopper's Tavern, Hopperstown (now Hohokus)



## HACKENSACK, COUNTY SEAT OF BERGEN COUNTY, N. J.

sessions for tavernkeepers, March 29, 1781—Dinner, extraordinary, two shillings, six pence; common dinner or breakfast, two shillings; supper extraordinary, two shillings, six pence; common supper, one shilling, six pence; gill of West India rum, nine pence; quart of cider, six pence; quart of beer, six pence; night's lodging, six pence; feed hay for a horse, one shilling, six pence; common or salt hay, one shilling; good pasture for a horse, nine pence, quart of oats, two pence.

The importance of the inn and the activities therein is taken from Lee's "New Jersey as a Colony and a State." "During the colonial period of New Jersey the Inn became a social and political center. Not only were these houses designed for entertainment of man and baiting of beast, but they served as meeting places for council and assembly, as the temporary executive mansions for the governors, as county court houses, polling places, tax collectors, school houses, regimental headquarters on training days, terminus for post and passenger stages, post offices, banks, and traveling ministers of various denominations, while the county freeholders frequently had no other building in which business could be transacted."

The arrival of the itinerant tax assessor at the local tavern was a public event in the early part of the nineteenth century, the town folks gathering to receive him, to indulge in a holiday. The rounds in the First District of New Jersey were made in June, 1816, by John Dodd, and every householder, landholder and slaveholder was duly notified to be present and give an exact accounting of his property, both real and personal, in compliance with the law. Dodd was due at VanHouten's Tavern, Saddle River, June 20; Hopper's Tavern, Hopper Town, June 21; Demarest Tavern, Harrington, June 22; at Hackensack the following day, where a well-earned rest was taken till Monday morning, when he was to be at Vanderbeek Tavern. At each of these places the assessor made a speech something in this manner:

Fellow citizens, I am here for the purpose of securing information that may be furnished as to the changes which may have taken place in the assessable property of individuals since the last assessment, made under the act of June 9, 1815, and previous to the first of June, 1816, which information must be given in writing under the signature of the person whose tax may be affected thereby. First, assessable property omitted to be assessed. Second, transfer of real



## HACKENSACK, COUNTY SEAT OF BERGEN COUNTY, N. J.

estate and slaves. Third, change of residence. Fourth, burning or destruction of houses or other fixed improvement. Fifth, slaves that have been born or have died or have run away or have otherwise become useless since the preceding assessment. Any person becoming the owner of a slave by transfer to him from collection district other than that in which he resides is required under penalty of \$10 to render a statement specifying the age and sex of such slave, who is to be valued according to his or her existing value. Ahem! The assessor waits for the citizen to walk up to his desk and make his statement.

John Dodd was, at the end of his trip, the best informed man on about every subject in the district. He knew of every public house or tavern, every home, and much of the gossip. Saddle bags were required for filing books and papers.

The first tavern of any prominence in Hackensack was kept by Archibald Campbell, on the site of the present Union League Club house, corner of Main and Morris streets. Mr. Campbell was the first postmaster of the town, and was succeeded as innkeeper by his son in about 1804. The last proprietor was evidently James Vanderpool, who was also interested in a line of stages running to the Hoboken ferry. Among other early taverns mention is made in the minutes of the Justices and Freeholders of a meeting held in 1766 at Mrs. Watson's, near the Hackensack river. This was evidently a tavern in pursuant to an act of the Governor's Council and General Assembly provided for that purpose. Adam Boyd was also another early tavern keeper, his home being where Scivanies' fruit store is now located. The Morris Earle tavern was on the corner of Main and Bridge streets; the freeholders met there in 1793; the building is still standing. Dr. John Campbell's tavern is referred to in 1802 as being located at the end of the Hackensack and Hoboken turnpike in Hackensack. The Hackensack House stood on the south side of the Green, and amongst its different proprietors were Abe Van Saun, Mr. Conkrite, Mr. Van Buren and others. This was known to be an old tavern site on which there was an enlarged building, and it may be possible that it was the pre-Revolutionary "Abraham Ackerman's Tavern, near the Court House." Isaac Vanderbeek purchased the original homestead of Jan Berdan, built 1717, on Main street, near Salem street, which he enlarged and opened a tavern called the Hackensack Tavern, in 1833, which was a popular resort for forty years. Later it became a private classical and



# • RATE OF TOLL •

1	HORSE WAGON	— — —	5	cts.
1	“ CARRIAGE	— — —	5	“
1	“ CART	— — —	5	“
1	“ SLEIGH	— — —	5	“
2	“ WAGON	— — —	10	“
2	“ CARRIAGE	— — —	10	“
2	“ CART	— — —	10	“
2	“ SLEIGH	— — —	10	“
	Additional Horse or Mule	—	4	“
	1 Horse or Mule with Rider	—	4	“
	Neat-Cattle	— — —	2	“

## EXCURSION RATE

2	HORSE WAGON	ECT. 2 GATES	18	cts.
2	“	“ 3 “	25	“
2	“	“ 4 “	25	“
2	“	“ 4 “	15	“

By Order of Bergen Turnpike Co.





## HACKENSACK, COUNTY SEAT OF BERGEN COUNTY, N. J.

mathematical school, but in 1921 was demolished to make way for more modern buildings. There is no doubt that there were other taverns located in Hackensack, but there is no record establishing their existence.

The residence of Peter Zabriskie, built in 1751, was where Gen. Washington had his headquarters in 1776, having entered Hackensack with about 3,000 troops. The supplies for the General's table while at the Zabriskie home were furnished by Archibald Campbell, the tavern keeper on the opposite corner. Before leaving town the General rode to the dock to take observations of the enemy's encampment, and then returned to Mr. Campbell's door and called for some wine and water. A bronze tablet placed by the Bergen County Historical Society on the outer stone wall of the Mansion House, on the Main street side, to commemorate the place as Washington's headquarters, bears the following inscription: "Placed by the Bergen County Historical Society to mark the site of the Mansion House occupied as headquarters by Gen. George Washington during the retreat from Fort Lee, 1776." Two rooms of especial interest to visitors to the Mansion House are the main parlor and Room 19, on the second floor, one with brown, the other blue tiling, in the fireplaces. These tiles, brought from Holland, picture well known Bible scenes. In this respect the Mansion House supplies material found in no other local building of the olden days.

The next record tells that in 1834 David D. Demarest was proprietor of a tavern in the Zabriskie house. The same year he was chosen postmaster, and in the bar room of the tavern the mail was kept for distribution in a handy box. Mr. Demarest became sheriff in 1841 and was reappointed postmaster 1843-45. About this time the tavern was known as the Albany Stage Route Tavern. It was probably so named when Albert G. Doremus, the noted stage coach owner, was running for the government his route to Albany to carry the mail. When passing through Hackensack his passengers patronized the tavern while Mr. Doremus changed horses at his own stables. Mr. Doremus died in 1854, when the stage business was at its height. His son, Richard A., succeeded him until the stage coaches passed out of service. About 1858 must have been the time the name of Washington Mansion House was given to the Albany Stage Route Tavern, which has still been retained. Mr. Albert Doremus' home was the beautiful stone house that stood on Main near Bergen



## HACKENSACK, COUNTY SEAT OF BERGEN COUNTY, N. J.

street (on which were his stage barns and stables, later turned into dwellings), later owned by Dr. A. Frank, who has altered the front into stores.

Elections have been held in the "ball room" of the Mansion House, and the Democrats made it their headquarters for many years, holding county conventions and mass meetings there. Some noted speakers were heard there in the old days. Old Company C, National Guard, when first organized in 1872, held its drills in the Mansion House. Entertainments were also held there. In Civil War days the proprietor of the Mansion House was John Lovett, who continued for some time after the war period. More recent proprietors of the ancient hostelry were: Abraham Brownson, John Ryan and Erwin Shivler, the latter now owning the property. The Mansion House was the scene of a great jollification on June 25, 1863, when the companies of the Twenty-second Regiment who served in the War of the Rebellion returned to Hackensack. Having been mustered out of service at Trenton and given a magnificent reception by ladies and citizens at the State Capital, upon their arrival in Hackensack the men were welcomed with warm congratulations and a collation was served at the Mansion House.

There were several stage routes having their headquarters in Hackensack, leading to Boiling Spring (Rutherford), Paramus, Fort Lee, Old Bergen, etc. Then came the railroads and steam coaches, and the doom of the stage coach was at hand. Line after line of stage coaches was discontinued, and tavern after tavern fell into disuse, until before many years had gone by, stage coach and tavern were found only in isolated regions. But in the present period has been restored something of the early methods by the auto-bus in operating from town to town, but lacking in its picturesqueness, because of the passing of the taverns, besides other attractions.

Francis Bazley Lee, in "New Jersey as a Colony and as a State," says from the opening of the nineteenth century until the introduction of railway legislation in the early thirties, marks the era of the turnpike, when New Jersey, following the example set by other States, as well as by the national government, made efforts to unite by a better system of public roads the small towns, not only one with another, but with the great centers of Philadelphia and New York. These instruments of association, crude as they may have been, formed the connecting link between the colonial avenues



## HACKENSACK, COUNTY SEAT OF BERGEN COUNTY, N. J.

of transportation, out of which they grew, and the days of steam. Thomas F. Gordon, in his "Gazetteer," published in 1834, in examining the causes leading to the construction of turnpikes in New Jersey, states that "the objects of their incorporation were three-fold. First, it was the desire of facilitating communication between Philadelphia and New York; the need of an outlet for the products of the fields and mines in the northern interior; and the creation of a market in New York City, to which end metropolitan capital was largely invested in New Jersey turnpike enterprises." The ambitious enterprise of the proprietors and associates of the Paulus Hook scheme led to the chartering of a turnpike company in 1804, connecting Jersey City (Old Bergen) with Hackensack, to which plan the State subscribed \$12,500. Two years previously a charter for a turnpike from Hackensack to Hoboken had also been secured.

Lamps were to be placed and lighted every evening hereafter, so long as the said bridges or either of them shall stand, before it grows dark, and continue lighted until daylight in the ensuing morning, and for each and every night's neglect, the said corporation, or the person or persons operating the said bridge or bridges, his or their agent or manager, shall forfeit and pay the sum of \$12. There were also penalties for injuring the bridges, and attendance was to be given to raise the draw. The Turnpike Company had the right to enter lands and convert them to their use, damages to be settled later, also stone or gravel could be taken from any land.

It was further enacted that the said corporation shall cause milestones to be erected, one for each and every mile on said road; and on each stone shall be fairly and legibly marked the distance the said stone is from Hoboken, and also shall cause to be affixed and always kept up at each gate, and in some conspicuous place, a printed list of rates of toll, which from time to time may lawfully be demanded, under a penalty of \$10 for each omission of placing and keeping up a milestone or printed rates, to be recovered before any justice of the peace of the County of Bergen, with cost of suit. The penalty for injuring the milestones, etc., was that if any person shall wilfully break, throw down or deface any of the milestones so erected on the said road for the information of the people traveling, the same shall forfeit and pay a fine of \$20. All wagoners and drivers of carriages of all kind, whether of burthen or pleasure, using the said road shall, except when passing by a carriage of slower





## HACKENSACK, COUNTY SEAT OF BERGEN COUNTY, N. J.

draft, keep their horses and carriages on the left hand of the said road in the passing direction, leaving the other side of the road free and clear for other carriages to pass and repass, etc. The toll gates of Bergen county were abolished in 1915, after a service of one hundred and thirteen years.

### THE TOLL GATE HOUSE.

By John Drinkwater.

"The toll gate's gone, but still stands lone,  
In the dip of the hill, the house of stone,  
And over the roof in the branching pine  
The great owl sits in the white moonshine.  
An old man lives, and lonely there,  
His windows yet on the crossroads stare,  
And on Michaelmas night in all the years  
A galloping far and faint he hears.  
His casement open wide, he flings  
With "Who goes there!" and a lantern swings,  
But never more in the dim moon beam  
Than a cloak in the night can he see.  
Of passing spurs in the night can he see,  
For the toll gate's gone and the road is free."

Following the close of the war, a number of roads were projected and built in Passaic and Bergen counties. In 1815 came the Hackensack and Hoboken and the Paterson and Hackensack in 1816, a pike from Hudson to the Hackensack and Hoboken road. Broadly it may be said that from 1800 to 1828 there were fifty-four original charters secured for turnpike companies in New Jersey, of which only one-half conformed to the terms of the act of incorporation. During this period about 550 miles of gravel and dirt were laid, but little or no continuous telford or macadamized road. Among the people who frequented the highways there was much of the colonial manner and spirit. There could be found old men who, unmindful of the statute in the case made and provided, drove to the left in passing another vehicle. Men of quality still went about on horseback. In the mid-summer, clouds of dust betrayed the presence of sheep or cattle on the hoof being driven to market, urged by the barking of dogs and the "gads" of the drovers. Stage coaches rumbled along the highways, the great steeds tugging in their harness. Then came winter and early spring, the wagons hub-deep in mud or caught unprotected in the drifting snow. But there was no dearth of taverns with their courtyards alive with arriving and departing stages, with spacious bars and heavy dinners, with their light and life and joy, now but memories and traditions. But few of the sleep-





## HACKENSACK, COUNTY SEAT OF BERGEN COUNTY, N. J.

ing rooms of the taverns were warmed. The sojourner was sent to a cold room and put into bed with a copper warming pan and an apple-brandy toddy, "with" or "without," as taste and the extent of the pantry might dictate. Stages invariably started at unseemly hours, seldom later than sunrise, no matter whether the journey was five or fifty miles in length. Romance was passing away, leaving a few courtly old men, much rare mahogany which was later to give place to crude painted pine.

The name of Bergen Pike was changed in January, 1920, to State Route No. 10, which was a saving to Bergen county taxpayers of about one and a half millions of dollars. The checkered career of the old pike from plank road to toll road, to county, to State highway, marks steadily in its progress the growth of the county and indicates the epochs in American history from stage coach to trolley, to motor cars. The Bergen pike, known in its early days as the Old Plank Road, was the only outlet for this part of the country to New York City. Later the Bergen Turnpike Company operated it as a toll road. Then with the coming of the Public Service Corporation it became a part of that great system used mainly for trolley purposes. The Board of Freeholders purchased the road from the Public Service and abolished forever the old antiquated toll road system. There were many criticisms of this official deed, as the corporation had passed on to the county by this transfer all the heavy financial obligations to maintain the road, but it was, nevertheless, a forward movement, a natural evolution toward the proper place for this old artery of travel.

When the State highway system was being worked out, the possibilities of having the State take over the Bergen pike was agitated. This proposal appealed to the State authorities, and on examination of the route by General George Goethals, at that time head of the Highway Department of the State, it was finally accepted and became known as Route 10 of the State highways, thus relieving the taxpayers of Bergen county of all maintenance cost, to say nothing of three bridges which were antiquated and which it would be necessary to rebuild in the near future.

The early colonies were indebted about 1694 to Colonel John Hamilton, a son of Governor Andrew Hamilton, twice acting governor as president of the Council, for devising a scheme by which the post office was established. Hamilton received a patent and after-



## HACKENSACK, COUNTY SEAT OF BERGEN COUNTY, N. J.

wards sold his right to the crown. By an act of the Legislature in 1785 the stage coach was allowed to carry the mail.

The rate of postage established by an act of Congress, February 1, 1816, was for a single letter not exceeding forty miles, six cents; over forty miles and not exceeding ninety miles, ten cents; over ninety miles and not exceeding one hundred and fifty miles, twelve and half cents; over one hundred and fifty and not exceeding three hundred miles, seventeen cents; over three hundred and not exceeding five hundred miles, twenty cents, and over five hundred miles, twenty-five cents. If the letter contained two pieces of paper the charge was double; if three, triple; and if four, quadruple. Over four sheets, if the conveyance was by land routes and weighing one ounce or more, single postage for each quarter of an ounce was charged; by a water route the charge was not to be more than a quadruple postage. Newspapers carried over one hundred miles were a cent each, if over one hundred miles one and a half cents each, but anywhere within the State the postage was one cent. Magazines and pamphlets were rated for fifty miles one cent per sheet; over fifty miles and not exceeding one hundred miles, one and a half cents; and at greater distance, two cents. By order of the postmaster-general railroads were utilized in 1838 to carry the mail.

It took one hundred and nineteen years with twenty-five postmasters for Hackensack to cover the period from its first post office, which was in a bar room of a tavern, to the present government building completed in 1917. The present office is a distributing center for nineteen square miles of territory, requiring the employment of a postmaster, assistant postmaster, superintendent of mails, twenty-one clerks, twenty-six regular carriers, four special delivery carriers, twenty-two rural delivery carriers and one clerk and one laborer in each sub-station. There are three branch post offices—Leonias, Hasbrouck Heights, and Lodi; seven sub-stations, five in Hackensack, one in Bogota and Leonias, and a rural sub-station in Teaneck. Each rural carrier covers twenty-two miles a day.

The Bergen County Historical Society was organized in 1902 with sixty-seven members, was incorporated in 1907, and the membership now numbers six hundred. The headquarters of the society's assembly room, depository of records, and the museum, are located in Johnson Public Library building in Hackensack. The offi-



## HACKENSACK, COUNTY SEAT OF BERGEN COUNTY, N. J.

cers for 1922 are: Reid Howell, president; James W. Mercer, treasurer; Theodore Romaine, secretary, and Mrs. F. A. Westervelt, curator.

The museum is not only the resort of authors, newspaper writers, educators and the general public, but has won recognition as a necessary coöperative adjunct to what is known as the visual and tactile method of teaching, and is visited by large classes of pupils from the schools to whom the curator delivers instructive lectures on the various topics illustrated in the collections relating to local history. These lectures, or "Dutch Kitchen Talks," as they are called, are practically unlimited in their range of subjects. A "talk," for example, was on a well preserved Indian dug-out canoe, unearthed near the banks of the Hackensack in 1868. In it were some stone implements and an halberd. The life of Oratam, the great sachem of the Ackinkeshacky tribe of this region of whom an ideal memorial bronze bust has been presented by the sculptor, John Ettl, now adorns the assembly room. The bust is thirty-one inches high, the width of the shoulders being twenty-four inches. On the panel in the base is printed "A Memorial to the Life of Oratam, Sachem of the Ackinkeshacky Indians, 1577-1677." Underneath this inscription is his mark, also the following: "Prudent and sagacious in council, prompt, energetic and decisive in war." On each side of the panel are eagle claws; on the left side is an Indian reaping grain, and on the opposite side an Indian using a bow and arrow. In a space fifteen by eight inches on the back is a home scene representing a teepee, child, squaw, and warrior using a bow and arrow. The turtle reproduced on the breast of the sachem is the totem of the Delaware tribe of Indians. The sculptor, John Ettl, a resident of Leonia, New Jersey, with an office in New York City, after obtaining an early education became interested in the study of art, primarily giving his attention to sculpture. He studied in the ateliers of France, Hungary, Switzerland, Italy and Germany. Among some of his sculptural productions are the Memorial Tomb of Esteves Island, Peru; the bust of Professor Orton, of Vassar College; the Michael Conway memorial portrait at the Elks' Club, Ithaca, New York; the Abraham Lincoln bust in the Leonia High School; the sculpture on the Palace of Justice, Berne, Switzerland, also on the main entrance gate of the Paris Exposition of 1900; the Soldiers' Monument at Haverstraw, New York, and the War Memorial at





## HACKENSACK, COUNTY SEAT OF BERGEN COUNTY, N. J.

East Rutherford, New Jersey. The pedestal of the bust of Oratam is to be made of the native sandstone from the Indian sachem's village site.

Among other native curios and relics of the museum are samples of wampum, and pictures of the interior of the building in which the white man carried on the wampum industry; old Dutch Bibles; slave papers; early pottery of local manufacturers; tavern sign from Hoppertown, 1802, bearing Thomas Jefferson's picture; the last of the toll gate period, 1802-1915, shown by boards bearing the rates of toll; a reproduction of a Dutch kitchen, including the brick oven, built up and furnished by the curator from parts and contents of the old Bergen Dutch houses; hundreds of pictures illustrating the unique domestic architecture of our Jersey Dutch ancestors, their manners and customs, their religion, their system of education, their faults and their virtues. All these and many other subjects of talks and lectures are a delight to both children and adults.

The first attempt to establish a public library in Hackensack was in 1833, when on July 2 the Hackensack Library Association was formed, the following acting as trustees: Abram Westervelt, Abram Hopper, Samuel H. Berry, Rowland Hill, Richard W. Stevenson, Henry H. Banta and Richard Danah. This association was not of a long duration, but another organization adopting the same name was formed January 3, 1859, and certificates of stock were issued. Seven persons were elected trustees, but the association did not have a successful existence. Later, about 1871, another association was formed, who inherited the assets of the defunct organization. The trustees for this new endeavor were: R. W. Farr, W. L. Comes, David Terhune, Dr. Henry Banta, G. I. Blauvelt, E. E. Poor, Frederick Jacobson, James Quackenbush, W. S. Banta and J. N. Gamewell. The library was located on the second floor of the Wilson building, where it remained until removed to its present location. Later the work was taken up by an association of young women, who employed Mrs. Arthur Friend as librarian. About 1878 the Hackensack Lyceum, a literary society composed of young men, took charge, and through subscriptions and entertainments were enabled to increase the volumes on the shelves of the library. The society was in charge of the library until it was dissolved in 1884, part of the time the members acting as librarian, and the balance of the period Mrs. Arthur Friend was employed. The library





## HACKENSACK, COUNTY SEAT OF BERGEN COUNTY, N. J.

was then placed in charge of an association of young ladies who called themselves "The Library Girls," composed of Misses Carrie Acton, Kittie Chrystal, Lillie and Annie Cumming, Mary Gamewell, Effie Gardner, Nina Price, Kittie Rennie, Jennie Sage, Anna Stagg, Fannie Conklin, Anna Williams, Louise Claredon, Emily and Susan Taplin, Helen Voorhis, Amelia Williams, Jennie Hatfield, Mrs. H. M. Bogert, Eva Hasbrouck (Skinner) and Mrs. James A. Romeyn. They took the name of the former association, and with the assistance of a few citizens went to work mending the old books, covering new books, canvassing the town for subscribers, and, as there were no funds for a librarian, these ladies performed the work. In this way the library was kept going, and finally in 1898 the Hackensack Improvement Commission made an annual appropriation of \$500 towards its support. Thus through careful management new books were added, a large list of periodicals placed on file, and the reading room was free and well patronized. Through the energy of these ladies there was a creditable and marked success, and Miss Jennie H. Labagh was installed as permanent librarian.

It was in the year 1901 that William M. Johnson announced his intention to present to Hackensack an adequate library building. He purchased a plot of land on the corner of Main and Camden streets, running through to Moore street, measuring about 100 by 200 feet. On this site was erected a two-story building of attractive design, of rock-faced Belleville stone, with a frontage of seventy-five feet and a depth of fifty-six feet. The first story contained stock, reference and reading rooms, and smaller apartments for the use of the library force. A room on the second floor was set apart for the children's apartment, and in another room was housed the interesting collection belonging to the Bergen County Historical Society. The ladies of the Library Association donated the 3,648 volumes on their shelves and contributed to the new building the furniture for the children's room, and a bronze tablet inscribed to the donor of the building. Under the provisions of the State Library act, the Hackensack Improvement Commission on April 1, 1901, appointed the following trustees: Miss Fannie DeW. Conklin, Mrs. David St. John, the Rev. William Welles Holley, William M. Johnson, and William A. Linn. The president of the Hackensack Improvement Commission and the president of the Board of Education were trustees *ex-officio*. The trustees organized April 4, 1901,



## HACKENSACK, COUNTY SEAT OF BERGEN COUNTY, N. J.

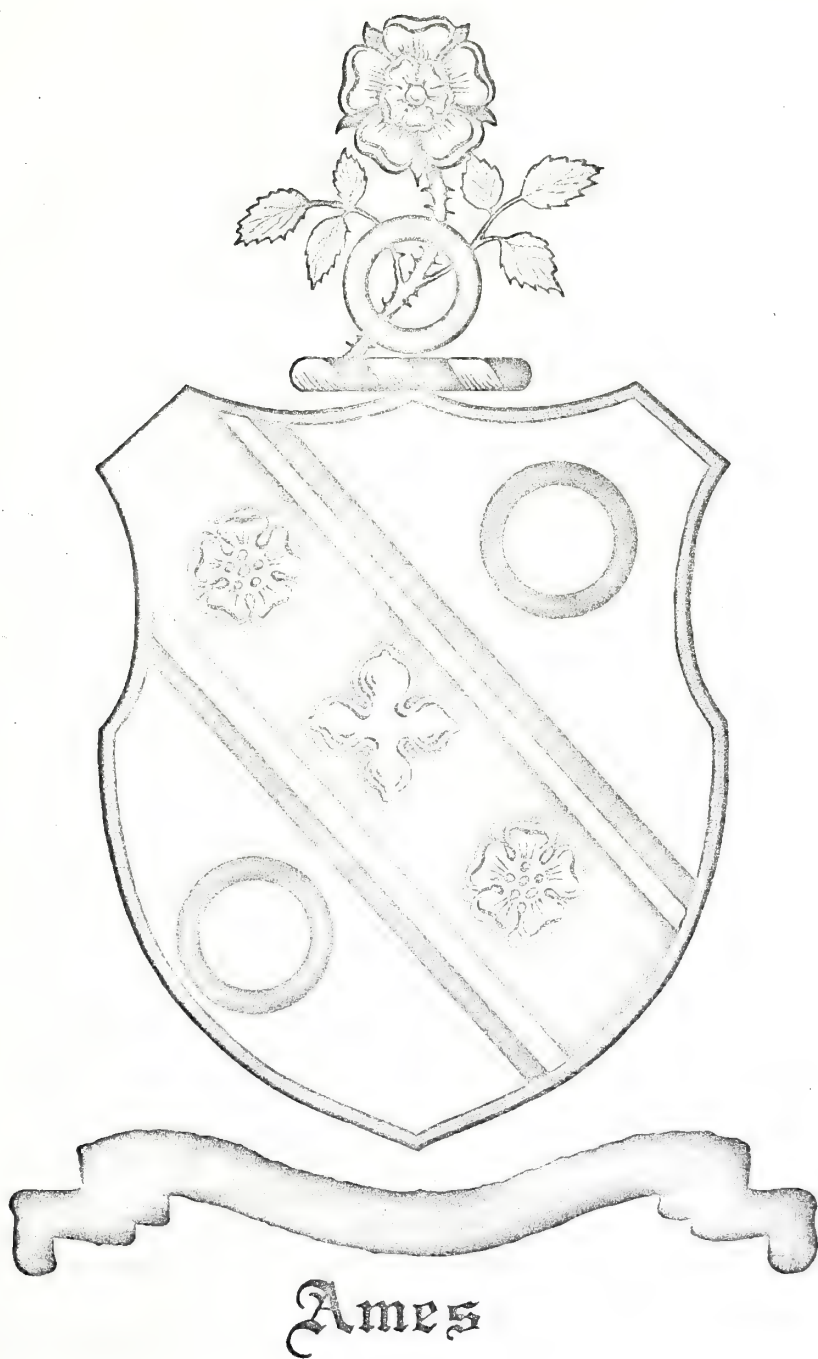
under the corporate name of The Johnson Free Public Library of Hackensack, with Rev. Dr. Holley as president, Mr. Linn as secretary, and Miss Conklin as treasurer. Miss Mary Fair was engaged as organizer, but she gave place, May 1, 1902, to Miss Mary Boggan, the present librarian.

With the gift of the building, Senator Johnson contributed a fund of \$5,000 for new books. The Library was opened October 5, 1901, with appropriate exercises. The annual appropriation was one-third of a mill on each dollar of valuation, which was increased in 1905 to one-half of a mill. Senator Johnson's contribution exceeded \$45,000, and it becoming evident in 1915 that larger quarters were necessary, the special purpose being a much larger stock room and an adequate reference room in 1916, he made a further contribution of \$30,000. The Library was closed for ten weeks while this substantial addition was built, and was reopened July 10, 1916. The citizens of Hackensack, in recognition of Senator Johnson's liberality, tendered to him a dinner at the Hackensack Golf Club on the evening of June 13, 1916, at which ex-Governor John W. Griggs made the principal address.

The Library is indebted to many persons for valuable gifts of books, but special reference is made to the contributions of the late F. B. Van Vorst, numbering 1,676 volumes covering science, English history and philosophy, and a collection of works on Italy, many of them in the language of that country. The Library in 1921 circulated 104,288 volumes, the registration of borrowers was 5,562, and number of books on the shelves was 25,881.









# Ames Family

By MRS. HEROLD R. FINLEY, ST. LOUIS, MISSOURI.

*Arms*—Argent, on a bend cotised between two annulets sable, a quatrefoil between two roses of the field.

*Crest*—A rose argent slipped and leaved proper, in front thereof an annulet or.

*Motto*—*Fama candida rosa dulcior.*



THE family of Ames is said to have been originally of Bruton, in Somersetshire, England.\* Here a certain John Ames, or Amyas, the first progenitor of whom there seems to be positive knowledge, was buried in the year 1560. Some of his descendants eventually came to America in 1638 and 1640, and settled in Duxbury and Braintree, Massachusetts, and later removed to Bridgewater.

With this Duxbury and Bridgewater family, the Providence Ames have no known connection. Whether the Providence line actually traces back to John Ames, of Bruton in Somersetshire, yet remains to be proved. Judge Samuel Ames, of Providence, Chief Justice of the Supreme Court of Rhode Island, was fifth in descent from Robert (1) Ames, of Andover and Boxford, Massachusetts.

I. *Robert Ames* probably came from Boxford, England. He settled in Boxford, Massachusetts, and undoubtedly resided near the Andover line, as several of the births of his oldest children are recorded on the Andover town records. His home estate was in the West Parish. He was one of the committee chosen by the town of Rowley and the village of Rowley (afterwards Boxford), to establish the dividing line between the two towns, July, 1685. In December, 1689, he was one of those chosen to meet with the Topsfield committee to settle the line between that town and Boxford. This committee evidently did not accomplish its object, as another committee was appointed for the same purpose in March, 1695. In 1692 Robert Ames, Sen., was selectman for Boxford.

Robert Ames married, in 1661, Rebecca Blake, eldest daughter

---

\*The early spelling of the name was Eames. Also found Emes, Emms, Emmes, Eamms, and Amaes.





## AMES FAMILY

of George Blake, of Gloucester, Massachusetts, who afterwards settled in Boxford. In 1692 she was arrested as a witch and condemned, but after seven months' imprisonment she was included in the general reprieve of July 22, 1693, a strong reaction and protest against the amazing and incredible superstition of those days having set in. A full account of her trial is given in the "History of Boxford, Mass." (1880), by Sidney Perley, pp. 120-123. Robert and Rebecca (Blake) Ames had eight children, of whom the third was Robert, mentioned below.

*II. Robert (2) Ames*, son of Robert (1) and Rebecca (Blake) Ames, was born February 28, 1667-68, in Andover, Massachusetts. He married, April 20, 1694, in Boxford, Bethiah Gatchell, of "Sec-onke," of whose parentage nothing is known. Robert Ames was a husbandman and lived in Boxford, where two children were born. He resided in Boston between 1695 and 1700, where the births of three children are recorded. The first child on the Boston records was Samuel, through whom the line descends. The actual date of death of Robert Ames has not been found.

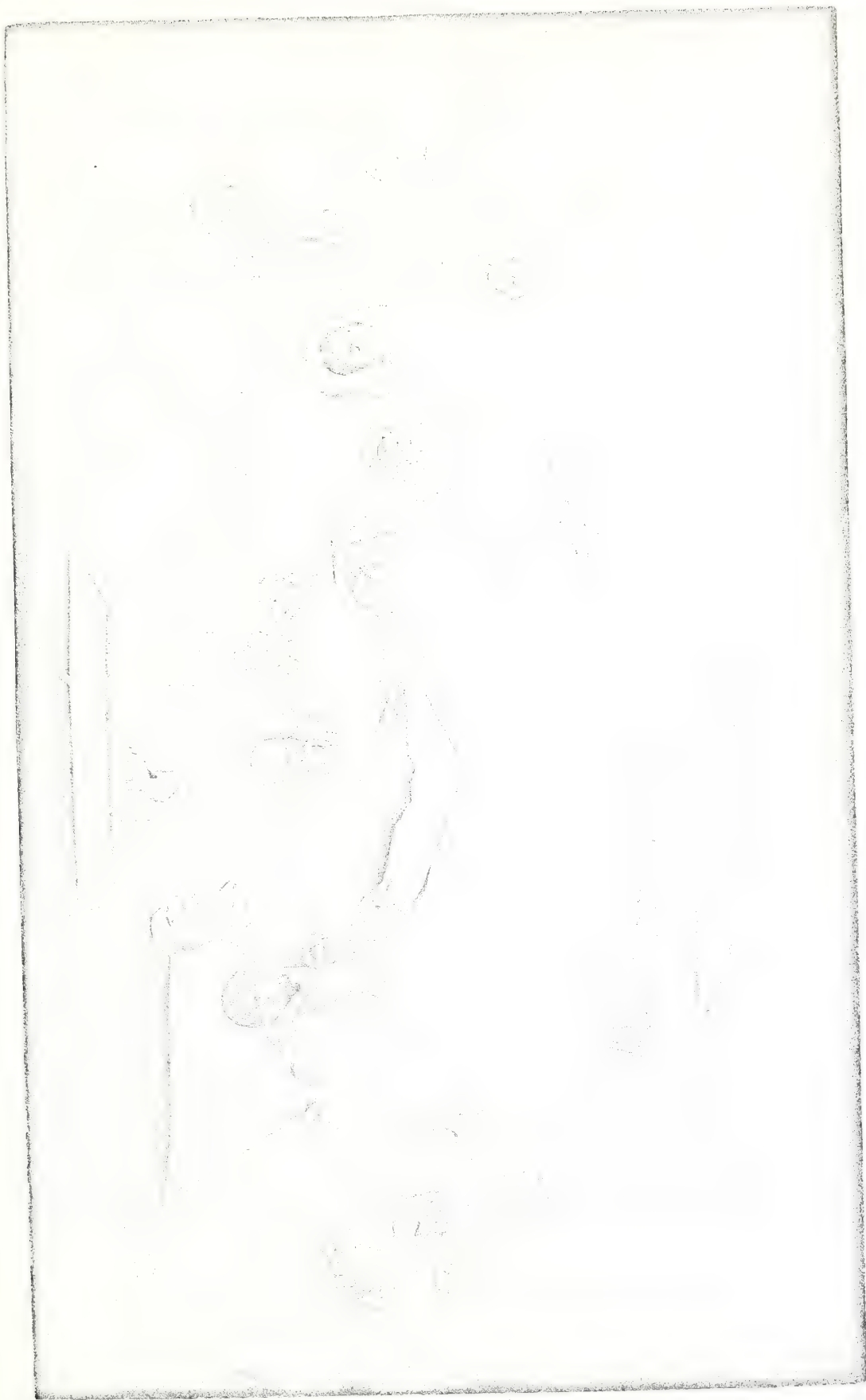
*III. Samuel Ames*, son of Robert (2) and Bethiah (Gatchell) Ames, was born in Boston, Massachusetts, February 24, 1695. He was a resident of Andover by 1719, where a child by his first wife, Abigail (Spofford) Ames, of Rowley, was born. She died June 25, 1719, and he married (second), January 13, 1720-21, Hannah Stevens, of Andover.

Samuel Ames was in Lexington in 1722, when he bought land; at Natick by 1729, where a child was born; at Andover again by 1734; and at Groton by 1756. He was a housewright, also called "yeoman" in some of the deeds. He died between the date of his will, February 13, 1782, and April 20, 1784, when it was probated. His wife was living in 1782, but the date of her death has not been ascertained.

*IV. Nathan Ames*, son of Samuel and Hannah (Stevens) Ames, was born in Natick, Massachusetts, April 27, 1729. He was a resident of Andover and of Groton, Massachusetts. He was called "of Westford" in 1791, but he probably lived in the extreme eastern part of Groton, next to the Westford line.

Nathan Ames married (first) in Groton, April 19, 1763, Deborah





SIGNING OF THE COMPACT



# IN YE NAME OF GOD, AMEN.

We whole names are underwritten, the loyal subjects of our dread soveraigne Lord, King James, by ye grace of God, of Great Britaine, France and Ireland, King, defender of ye faith, etc., have-ing undertaken for ye glory of God and advancement of ye Chris-tian faith, and honour of our King and countrie, a voyage to plant ye first Colonie in ye Northerne parts of Virginia, doe by these presents solemnly, and mutually, in ye presence of God, and of one another, covenant and combine ourselves together into a civil body politick for our better ordering and preservation and furtherance of ye end aforesaid, and by vertue hereof to enacte, constitute and frame such just and equal lawes, ordinances, acts, constitutions and offices from time to time, as shall be thought most meete and con-venient for ye generall good of ye Colonie, unto which we promise all due submission and obedience. In witnes whereof we have hereunder subscribed our names at Cape-Codd ye 11 of November, in ye year of ye raigne of our soveraigne Lord, King James of En-gland, France and Ireland, ye eighteenth, and of Scotland ye fiftie-fourth. Ano Dom. 1620.

- |                        |                      |                            |
|------------------------|----------------------|----------------------------|
| 1. John Carver,        | 15. Edward Tilly,    | 29. Degory Priest,         |
| 2. William Bradford,   | 16. John Tilly,      | 30. Thomas Williams,       |
| 3. Edward Winslow,     | 17. Francis Cooke,   | 31. Gilbert Winslow,       |
| 4. William Brewster,   | 18. Thomas Rogers,   | 32. Edmund Margeson,       |
| 5. Isaac Allerton,     | 19. Thomas Tinker,   | 33. Peter Brown,           |
| 6. Myles Standish,     | 20. John Higdale,    | 34. Richard Brittonbridge, |
| 7. John Alden,         | 21. Edward Fuller,   | 35. George Soule,          |
| 8. Samuel Fuller,      | 22. John Turner,     | 36. Richard Clarke,        |
| 9. Christopher Martin, | 23. Francis Eaton,   | 37. Richard Gardiner,      |
| 10. William Mullins,   | 24. James Chilton,   | 38. John Allerton,         |
| 11. William White,     | 25. John Crockston,  | 39. Thomas English,        |
| 12. Richard Warren,    | 26. John Billington, | 40. Edward Dorey,          |
| 13. John Howland,      | 27. Moses Fletcher,  | 41. Edward Lister,         |
| 14. Stephen Hopkins,   | 28. John Goodman,    |                            |



54.

set by them done (this their condition considered) might  
be as firme as any patent; and in some respects more sure.  
The forme was as followeth.

In y<sup>e</sup> name of god Amen. We whose names are underwritten,  
The loyal subjects of our dread souveraigne Lord King James  
by y<sup>e</sup> graco of god, of great britaine, france, & Ireland king  
defondor of y<sup>e</sup> faith, &c.

Having undertaken, for y<sup>e</sup> glorio of god, and aduancement  
of y<sup>e</sup> christian, and honour of our king & countrie, a voyage to  
plant y<sup>e</sup> first Colonie in y<sup>e</sup> Northward parts of Virginia: God  
by these presents solemnly & mutually in y<sup>e</sup> presence of god, and  
one of another, Covenant, & combine our selves together into a  
Ciuill body politick, for y<sup>e</sup> better ordering, & preservation & fur-  
therance of y<sup>e</sup> ends aforesaid; and by vertue hereof to enacte,  
constitute, and frame such just & equall Lawes, ordinances,  
Acts, constitutions, & offices, from time to time, as shall be thought  
most meete & convenient for y<sup>e</sup> generall good of y<sup>e</sup> Colonie: unto  
which we promise all due submission and obedience. In witnes  
whereof we haue hereunder subscribed our names at Cap-  
Codd y<sup>e</sup> 11. of Nouember, in y<sup>e</sup> year of y<sup>e</sup> raigne of our souveraigne  
Lord King James of England, France, & Ireland y<sup>e</sup> eighteenth  
and of Scotland y<sup>e</sup> fiftie fourth. An. Dom. 1620.]

After this they chose, or rather confirmed in John carver (a man  
godly & well approued amongst them) their gouernour for that  
year. And after they had provided a place for their goods, or  
comon store, (which were long in unlading, for want of boats  
foulnes of y<sup>e</sup> winter weather, and sicknes of diuers), and beyond  
some small cottages for their habitation; as time would aduise  
they met and consulted of Lawes, & ordors, both for their  
civill & military gouernments, as y<sup>e</sup> necessitie of their condi-  
tion did require, till adding therunto as vrgent occasion  
in severall times, and cases did require.

In these hard & difficult beginnings they found some discontents  
& murmurings <sup>arise</sup> amongst some, and mutinous speeches & carriage  
in other; but they were soon quelled, & overcome, by y<sup>e</sup> wis-  
dom, patience, and just & equall carriage of things, by y<sup>e</sup> govt.  
and better part w<sup>th</sup> cleare faithfull loyallty in y<sup>e</sup> maine.  
But that which was most sad, & lamentable, was, that in 2  
or 3. moneths time parte of their company dyed, especially  
in Jan: & february, being y<sup>e</sup> death of winter, and wanting  
houses & other comforts; being distressed with y<sup>e</sup> hunger &







PLYMOUTH ROCK



## AMES FAMILY

Bowers, daughter of Samuel and Deborah (Farnsworth) Bowers, of Groton. She was born in Groton, September 2, 1746, and died there, April 8, 1782, and he afterwards married again. He died March 7, 1791, aged sixty-one years, in Groton. By his first wife he had nine children, of whom the second was Samuel, mentioned below.

V. *Samuel (2) Ames*, son of Nathan and Deborah (Bowers) Ames, was born in Groton, Massachusetts, February 7, 1766. He married, in Boston, Massachusetts, September 8, 1801, Anne Checkley, born August 13, 1785, in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, daughter of John Webb and Anne (Bicker\*) Checkley, of Philadelphia. John Webb Checkley was on Governor Mifflin's staff (Pennsylvania) during the Revolution. He belonged to one of the old Puritan families, whose members took a prominent part in the early Colonial history of Massachusetts. The original form of the name is asserted to be Chichele, which passed through many modifications until the present form of Checkley, as used by the emigrant ancestor, Colonel Samuel Checkley, of Boston, and was finally established in America. Colonel Samuel Checkley was born at Preston Capes, England, October 14, 1653. He came to America, arriving in Boston, August 3, 1670. Here he married, in 1680, Mary Scottow, daughter of Ensign Joshua Scottow, and became the progenitor of the American family of his name.

Samuel Ames removed to Providence with his brother, Asa, where they were shopkeepers. On March 11, 1795, a petition is recorded in Middlesex county, Massachusetts, probate files, wherein Samuel and Asa Ames, of Providence, shopkeepers, acknowledge a receipt of money from the estate of their grandfather, Samuel Bowers. (See *ante* under Nathan Ames).

The children of Samuel and Anne (Checkley) Ames were: 1. Samuel, mentioned below. 2. John Checkley. 3. John Checkley. 4. Frank. 5. William. 6. Ann Checkley. 7. Sophia Bichler (or Biehler). 8. Elizabeth Lothrop.

VI. *Hon. Samuel (3) Ames*, of Providence, son of Samuel (2) and Anne (Checkley) Ames, was born there, September 6, 1806. He received his early education in Providence, after which he was prepared for college at Phillips (Andover) Academy, Massachusetts.

---

\*Name also found "Bichler" and "Biehler."



## AMES FAMILY

Entering Brown University, he pursued his studies with distinction, and was graduated in the class of 1823, at the age of seventeen years. Among the classmates of Judge Ames at Brown were Judge Edward Mellen, of Massachusetts; William R. Watson; George Prentice, of the "Louisville Journal;" and Dr. Henry Seymour Fearing, of Providence.

After his graduation, Samuel Ames immediately entered upon the study of law in the office of the Hon. S. W. Bridgham, also attending for a year the lectures delivered by Judge Gould at the law school in Litchfield, Connecticut. In 1826 he was admitted to the Rhode Island bar, and opened an office in Providence, Rhode Island, where he at once began the practice of his profession. He soon became well known as an able advocate, and his fluency and earnestness of style gained for him a wide reputation as a popular orator. In political campaigns he was a most effective speaker, and in the exciting times of 1842 and 1843, when political affairs in Rhode Island were undergoing a tremendous upheaval, his voice was conspicuous and frequently heard. He became quartermaster-general of the State in 1842, and served also in the City Council. He was a member of the General Assembly for many years. His influence throughout the entire period of disturbance was most marked and beneficial to his native State, being always staunch and firm on the side of law and order. In 1844 and 1845 he was elected speaker of the Assembly, and became prominent as a leader in all debates. His practice, which was a most successful one, was wide and far-reaching, extending into the Federal courts and winning for him distinguished honors and emolument.

In 1853 he was appointed by the Legislature as State representative to adjust the boundary between Rhode Island and Massachusetts; and in 1855 he was one of the commissioners for revising the statutes of Rhode Island, the work being conducted chiefly under his supervision and finished in 1857. In 1855 he received also his degree of LL. D., and in May, 1856, the year following, he was elected by the General Assembly to the office of Chief Justice of the Supreme Court, being appointed at the same time reporter of the court. His "Reports" contained in the four volumes, IV to VII, inclusive, are "remarkable for their clearness, their learning, and their conformity to the settled principles of jurisprudence," and remain as a monument to the ability and industry of their author.



Judge Samuel Ames.







*Mary Throckmorth (Dorr) Ames*



## AMES FAMILY

Judge Ames was also the author, in collaboration with Joseph K. Angell, of an elaborate treatise entitled "Angell and Ames on Corporations," which has ever since been regarded as a standard work on corporations and has passed through many editions. In 1861 Judge Ames was one of the delegates from Rhode Island to the Peace Convention held in Washington, before the outbreak of the Civil War, the other members of the delegation being William H. Hoppin, Samuel G. Arnold, George H. Browne, and Alexander Duncan. It was, however, by his labors on the bench and his rare qualities as an accomplished lawyer and erudite judge that his name will be preserved to posterity.

Judge Ames held the office of Chief Justice of the State of Rhode Island, to which he had been appointed in 1856, for a period of nine years, covering the troublous times of the Civil War, and on November 15, 1865, owing to failing health, he was constrained to tender his resignation. He died a few months afterward, very suddenly, in Providence, the city of his birth and center of his life's activities, December 20, 1865, having but recently entered upon his sixtieth year. He was a man no less distinguished for his social qualities than for his legal and political services, and for his excellence as a man of learning and letters. He was a contributor to the New England Historic-Genealogical Society, of which he was elected a corresponding member in 1845, and in whose cause he manifested keen interest.

Judge Ames married, June 27, 1839, Mary Throop Dorr, a daughter of Sullivan and Lydia (Allen) Dorr, of Providence, and sister of Thomas Wilson Dorr, leader of the famous Rebellion of 1842, during which Judge Ames, notwithstanding the connection, distinguished himself by his patriotism and wisdom of conduct, standing always on the side of the Constitution. It may be said of his wife's brother, however, who, though subversive of law and order, was a brilliant and accomplished man even before his leadership of the suffragist party, that, "but for the menace of civil war the suffrage would never have been extended," and made universal as it was in 1843, at the close of the brief and easily suppressed Rebellion. Thomas Wilson Dorr, convicted of high treason, was pardoned within three years, and finally restored to his civil rights in 1852; time dealt leniently with him after all.

Judge Ames, who was survived by his widow, left four sons and



## AMES FAMILY

one daughter. Two other children died in infancy. Two of these sons became prominent figures in public affairs, and distinguished themselves in both military and civil life. Their children were:

1. Sullivan Dorr, mentioned below.
2. Colonel William Ames, born in Providence, the old home of the family, was a short time before his father's death in command of the heavy artillery, and served with much honor in the campaigns of Virginia and South Carolina during the Civil War, attaining the rank of colonel. He was a graduate of Brown University in the class of 1863, and received the degree of A. M. by special vote in 1891. He was a leading manufacturer in Providence, having been connected with Allen's Print Works for the four years subsequent to the Civil War; he was also interested in many large enterprises, and was an officer and director in several. He was a member of the Rhode Island House of Representatives, and was a leading Republican, and belonged to a number of clubs both in Providence and New York. Colonel Ames married (first) Harriette Fletcher Ormsbee, of Providence; (second) Anne Ives Carrington, widow of Gamaliel Lyman Dwight, of Providence.
3. Edward C., a well known lawyer of Providence, now deceased.
4. Mary Bernon, wife of William Gordon Reed, of Cowesett.
5. Samuel, Jr., prominent Providence lawyer, now deceased.

*VII. Commander Sullivan Dorr Ames*, son of Judge Samuel (3) and Mary Throop (Dorr) Ames, was born in Providence, Rhode Island, July 16, 1840. He served with distinction with the Rhode Island troops during the Civil War, rising to the rank of lieutenant. In 1865 he was commissioned as an executive officer of the "Colorado," attached in that year to the Mediterranean squadron. From this time until shortly before his death, November 22, 1880, he was active and prominent in United States naval affairs.

Commander Sullivan Dorr Ames married, February 21, 1870, Mary Townsend Bullock, daughter of William Peckham Bullock, of Providence, and Phila Feke (Townsend) Bullock, of Newport, his wife. Their children were: 1. Mary Dorr, born January 16, 1871, who became the wife of the late Frank A. Sayles, of Pawtucket. (See Sayles VIII, in "Americana," Vol. XVII, p. 201). 2. Sullivan Dorr, born January 5, 1878, died February 22, 1903.

The Ames line thus runs back from Mrs. Frank A. Sayles as follows:



*Bullock Arms*—Gules, a chevron ermine between three bulls' heads cabossed argent, armed or.

*Crest*—Five Lochaber axes sable, encircled by a ribbon or.

*Motto*—*Nil conscire sibi.*

*Townsend Arms*—Azure, a chevron ermine between three escallops or.

*Crest*—A stag trippant proper.

*Richmond Arms*—Argent, a cross patonce azure between four mullets gules.

*Crest*—A tilting spear headed or, broken in three parts, one piece erect, the other two in saltire enfiled with a ducal coronet of the last.

*Motto*—Resolve well and persevere.

*Winthrop Arms*—Argent, three chevrons crenellé gules, over all a lion rampant sable, armed and langued azure.

*Crest*—A hare proper running on a mount vert.

*Gorton Arms*—Gules, ten billets or, a chief indented of the last.

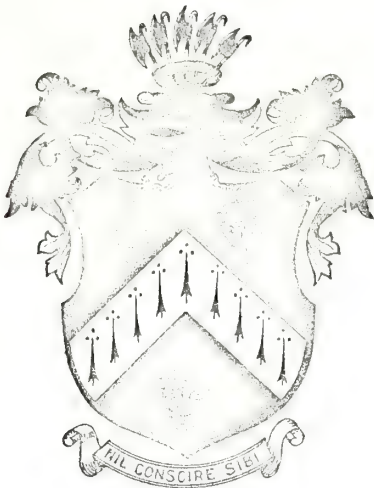
*Crest*—A goat's head erased argent, ducally gorged or.

*Harris Arms*—Or, three hedgehogs azure.

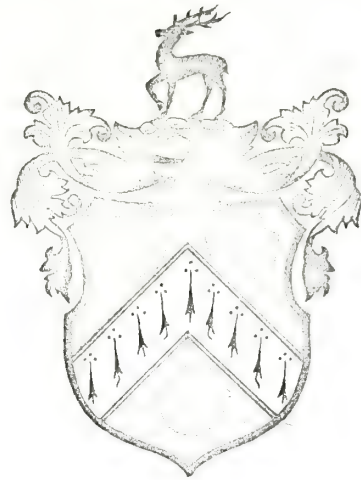
*Crest*—A hedgehog or.



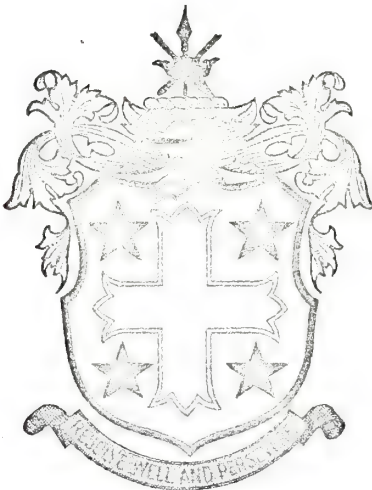




Bullock



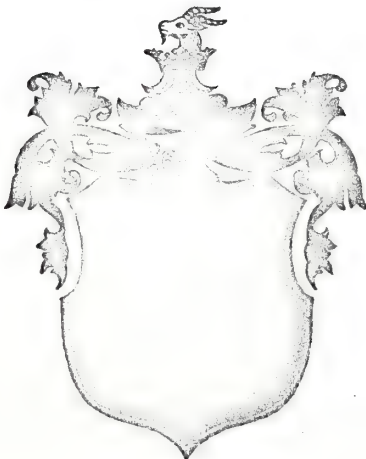
Townsend



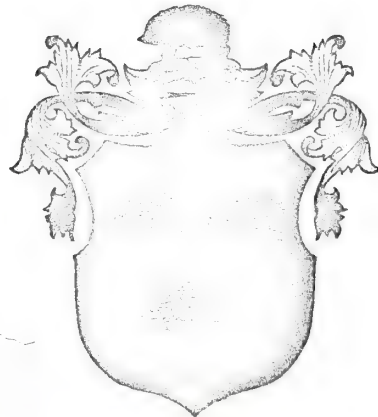
Richmond



Winthrop



Gorton



Harris



2 Commander Sullivan Dorr Ames, U.S.A.





*Mary Townsend (Bullock) Ames*



*Thomas Wilson Dorr*





## AMES FAMILY

(VIII) Mary Dorr (Ames) Sayles, of Providence and Pawtucket.

(VII) Sullivan Dorr Ames, of Providence.

(VI) Hon. Samuel Ames, of Providence.

(V) Samuel Ames, of Groton, Massachusetts, and Providence, Rhode Island.

(IV) Nathan Ames, of Andover and Groton, Massachusetts.

(III) Samuel Ames, of Boston, Andover, Lexington, Natick, and Groton, Massachusetts.

(II) Robert Ames, of Andover, Boxford and Boston, Massachusetts.

(I) Robert Ames, of Andover and Boxford, Massachusetts.

Turning from the direct Ames descent, many interesting Colonial lines are found in the ancestry of Mrs. Frank A. Sayles.

In common with her husband, she traces descent from many prominent Rhode Island families, touching Mr. Sayles' ancestry on a number of lines, as the Whipple, Smith, Barker, Holmes, Angell and Field families.

A line replete with historical associations is that of Dorr. There is no other name in Rhode Island history which has more dramatic interest. The family is not one of the founder families of Rhode Island, although closely allied by marriage with several of the most influential and notable in the State, but the name is written indelibly for all time, not only in the history of the State but of the Nation, through the immortal deeds of Thomas Wilson Dorr, the apostle of civil equality and universal manhood suffrage. (See *ante*).

---

EDITOR'S NOTE—The related Dorr Family will appear in the October number of "Americana."





# John Champe

## THE STORY OF A PATRIOT SPY



AN interesting incident connected with Revolutionary times, occurring within the confines of old Bergen village, was the pursuit of John Champe, who voluntarily subjected himself to all the disgrace and obloquy of a renegade and deserter in order to carry out the wishes of his commanding officer.

The revelation of the treason of Arnold and the capture of André, with the intelligence received by Washington through his confidential agents in New York of a widespread conspiracy involving an officer high in command, created in the mind of the commanding general an uncertainty as to the trustworthiness of some in whom he had placed implicit confidence. As soon as he reached the army headquarters in the vicinity of Tappan, he sent for Major Lee, who had always been his close friend and adviser, who with his light horse was encamped near by, and gave him a full statement of the information he had received, with the papers connected therewith. After their perusal the major was inclined to attribute the statements to an English plot to undermine that confidence between the commander and his officers, without which no military operations could be conducted with any show of success. But the general sadly replied, "that the same suggestion might have been made with just as much force, in the case of Arnold," and continuing said, "I have sent for you in the expectation that you have in your corps individuals capable and willing to undertake an indispensable, delicate, and hazardous project. Whoever comes forward upon this occasion, will lay me under great obligations personally, and in behalf of the United States I will reward him amply. . . . My object is to probe to the bottom the afflicting intelligence contained in the papers you have just read, to seize Arnold and, by getting him, to save

---

NOTE—This interesting narrative is by Mr. Daniel Van Winkle, President of the Hudson County (New Jersey) Historical Society, as it will appear in a work now in press, "History of the Municipalities of Hudson County, New Jersey." (Lewis Historical Publishing Company, Inc., New York and Chicago).



## JOHN CHAMPE

ndré." Major Lee suggested Sergeant-Major Champe for the mission, and on receiving the concurrence of the commander, sent for him and explained the nature of the service wanted.

The sergeant-major, while appreciating the honor of his selection and the importance of the undertaking, disliked the plan proposed because of the ignominy attached thereto. The plan was for him to desert and join the enemy's forces, seek an opportunity to seize Arnold and bear him within the American lines. He offered, however, that if any mode could be contrived, free from disgrace, he would cordially embark in the enterprise. Finally, by persuasive reasoning his scruples were overcome and the details determined upon.

The sergeant returned to camp and taking his cloak, valise and orderly book, he drew his horse from the picket and, mounting him, disappeared in the darkness. His absence was soon discovered, and the officer of the day reported to Major Lee that one of the patrol had fallen in with a dragoon, who on being challenged put spur to his horse and escaped. Desiring to delay the pursuit as long as possible, Lee, pretending to be fatigued by his ride to and from headquarters, answered as if he did not understand what had been said, and compelled the repetition of the message, thereby gaining some delay. Finally he was obliged to order a pursuit, and directed Cornet Middleton to take command of the pursuing party. His orders were, "pursue as far as you can with safety Sergeant Champe, who is suspected of deserting to the enemy and has taken the road leading to Paulus Hook. Bring him alive, that he may suffer in the presence of the army, but kill him if he resists or escapes after he is taken." Major Lee's knowledge of Middleton's disposition convinced him that the orders would be carried out only under the most extreme conditions. A shower of rain falling soon after Champe's departure enabled the pursuing dragoons to take the trail, as the shoes of the horses belonging to the camp were of a peculiar pattern. When Middleton started in pursuit, Champe had about an hour's lead, and because of the shortness of time Lee was fearful of his capture.

The pursuing party during the night was on their part delayed by the necessary halts to occasionally examine the road. When day broke, Middleton was no longer obliged to halt, and he pressed on more rapidly. Ascending an eminence just before reaching the



## JOHN CHAMPE

"Three Pigeons," a tavern situated some miles north of the village of Bergen, Champe was seen but little more than half a mile in advance. At the same moment the sergeant discovered his pursuers and, giving spur to his horse, determined to outstrip them. Middleton responded at once, and, being well acquainted with the country, he recalled a short route through the woods to the bridge over the Mill creek, located near the present West Shore railroad depot at the foot of the hill on Newark avenue, below the Dickinson High School. This road diverged from the main road just beyond the "Three Pigeons." Reaching the point of separation, he divided his party, directing a sergeant with a few dragoons to take the near cut and occupy the bridge, while he with the remainder of his force followed Champe, feeling sure that with this disposition of his force he must certainly capture the fugitive.

Champe did not forget the short cut and would have taken it himself, but he knew it was the usual route of travel for raiding parties and decided upon the other road, being persuaded that his pursuers would avail themselves of the shorter route. He likewise determined to abandon his first design of reaching Paulus Hook, and seek refuge from two British vessels lying in Newark bay west of Bergen. This was a well-known place of rendezvous for the vessels of the British fleet, and he felt confident of escape through their aid. Entering the village of Bergen, Champe turned to the right and followed the beaten streets (present Summit and Bergen avenues), and, turning as they turned, he passed through the village and took the road toward Elizabethtown Point. Middleton's sergeant gained the bridge at the Mill creek, where he concealed himself in readiness to seize Champe upon his arrival, while Middleton with his force pursuing his course through Bergen, soon reached the bridge also. After a short delay he found to his great mortification that the sergeant had slipped through his fingers. Returning up the road, he enquired of the villagers of Bergen whether a dragoon had been seen that morning ahead of his party. He was answered affirmatively, but could learn nothing satisfactory as to the route he took. While engaged in making inquiries himself, he spread his party through the village to search for the trail of Champe's horse. Some of his dragoons spied it just as Champe turned in the road to the point. Pursuit was renewed with vigor and again he was discovered. Fearing such event, he had prepared himself for it by lashing his be-





longings on his shoulders and holding his drawn sword in his hand. He thus made ready for swimming in case Middleton, when disappointed in intercepting him at the bridge, should discover the route he had taken. Champe's delay caused by his preparations enabled his pursuers to draw near, and the pursuit was rapid and close, and, dismounting, he ran through the marsh to the river bank, plunging in and calling upon the vessels for help. A boat was sent out to meet Champe, while his pursuers were fired upon. He was taken on board the vessel and carried to New York, bearing a letter from the captain of the vessel detailing the circumstances as he had witnessed them.

The sergeant's horse, cloak and scabbard were recovered, and the crestfallen pursuers returned with these as their only capture. On the return of the detachment with the well known horse led by one of Middleton's dragoons, his old companions made the air resound with acclamations that the scoundrel was killed. Major Lee was compelled to hide the agony he experienced at the thought of his participation in the death of his brave and faithful follower, but his relief was great when he discovered that the sergeant had made his escape, with the loss of his accoutrements. Ten days elapsed before Champe was able to formulate his plans, at which time Lee received from him a detailed statement of his contemplated movements. The third subsequent night Champe had arranged to deliver Arnold to a detachment of Lee's forces at Hoboken. Champe on his arrival in New York enlisted in the American Legion, as Arnold's command was called, it being composed almost entirely of deserters from the American army, and hence had every opportunity to become acquainted with the habits of the general. He discovered it was his habit to return home about twelve o'clock every night, and that previous to retiring he always visited the garden. During this visit the conspirators were to seize him and, being prepared with a gag, would apply it immediately.

Adjoining the house in which Arnold resided, being next to that in which it was designed to lodge him after seizure, several palings had been taken off the fence between, and replaced skilfully so that with care and without noise the way into the adjoining alley could be readily opened. Into this alleyway Champe was to have conveyed his prisoner, aided by his companion, while his other associate was to be with the boat lying at one of the wharves on the Hudson to re-



## JOHN CHAMPE

ceive the party, who would then be conveyed to the Jersey shore. The appointed time arrived, and Lee, never doubting the success of the enterprise, with a party of dragoons left camp late in the evening with three led horses—one for Arnold, one for the sergeant, and one for his associate. The party reached Hoboken about midnight, where they concealed themselves in an adjoining wood. Lee, with three dragoons, stationed himself near the river shore, but hour after hour passed without any indication of success. At length, the increasing light indicating the approach of day, the major and his party was obliged to return to camp.


A few days after, he received an anonymous letter from Champe's patron and friend, informing him that on the day previous to the night fixed for the execution of the plot, Arnold had removed his quarters to another part of the town to superintend the embarkation of troops preparing, as was rumored, for an expedition commanded by himself, and that the American Legion had been transferred from their barracks to one of the transports. Thus it happened that John Champe, instead of crossing the Hudson that night, was safely deposited on board of one of the fleet of transports and enrolled among the enemies of his country, from whom he was unable to escape until the troops under Arnold landed in Virginia. When he finally escaped and returned to his old corps, he was welcomed most cordially by Lee, and his whole story made public. Thus the stigma heretofore attached to his name was completely dissipated, and his daring and arduous attempt received universal admiration. He was sent to General Washington, who magnificently rewarded him and granted him an honorable discharge from the army, lest he might fall into the enemy's hand, when the gibbet would be his fate.





# Highland Scottish Clans, Sub-Clans and Families Represented in America, with Origin of Names

BY JOEL N. ENO, A. M.

HE Roman orator Eumenius is the first in whose writings appears, in 297 A. D., the name "Picti," that is, "painted," for the people of the Highlands of Scotland, or that portion north and northeast of the mouth of the Clyde. In the annals of Tighernac (1034 A. D.) and of Inisfallen in the thirteenth century, the oldest and most authentic which Ireland possesses, they mention under the years 236 and 565 the "Kings of the Cruithne" in the present eastern Ulster, and so St. Adamnan (living about 624-704) of the event at the latter date, which was the killing of Diarmat of Ulster by "Aidus nigrus Cruithnicum gente," i. e. Black Hugh of the race of Cruithne, a name which describes the same people in Scotland which the Romans called the Picti, and supposed to be the corresponding Irish word. According to the "Confessio" of St. Patrick (living about 389-461) the great body of the people of Ireland were Hibernians invaded in the north and in his time dominated by a tribe called in Latin, in which he wrote, but not by themselves nor by the Hibernians, Scoti; the native name being Gaedhel, whence the English, Gael.

In an invasion of the Strathclyde Britons they took St. Patrick to the north of Ireland, where he was kept as a slave. Ossian corroborates St. Patrick except that he calls the Hibernians of southern Ireland Firbolgs, who in the second century crowded the Gaels of the north until Conor, brother of the King of Scotland (whence came the Gaels), came to their aid, founding a race of kings who ruled at Tara in Meath; but in the third century the Firbolgs again got the upper hand; hence probably Gael incursions into Alban and Strathclyde, as it is only about fourteen miles from Antrim, Ireland, across the North Channel to Kintyre, Scotland. About 503 A. D. a general migration took place from Ireland into southwestern Scotland, where they settled the territory which was afterwards called Airer



## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

Gaedhel, the land of the Gaels; Englished as Argyll, the name Scotia disappeared from Ireland's history.

The Picts, who occupied the rest of the Highland region, were, according to the best authorities, related more nearly to the Britons than to the Scots, with whom they made alliance, but had absorbed an aboriginal people similar to those along the north coast of the Mediterranean sea and hence called the Mediterranean race; they were short, dark, and long-skulled. From 795 A. D. the Norse sea-rovers harried both the west coast of Scotland and the east coast of Ireland, and at length Norwegians settled on the islands west of Scotland, and Danes at Waterford, Wexford, and Dublin, Ireland. During this period up to about 1000 A. D., communication between the Gaels of these countries was difficult and dangerous; and from 795 the development of the Gaels of Scotland and of their clans has been almost entirely independent of Ireland. (See William F. Skene, "Celtic Scotland".)

The Picts meanwhile adopted the Gaelic language. As to the professed genealogies of the chiefs of the clans up to 1000 A. D., the Highlands have none contemporarily written, and have adopted those set down by the Irish sennachies who, from lack of facts, in Professor Skene's judgment can produce only vague and late tradition and mythical personages. In this connection note that the prefix "Mac," meaning son, is the distinctive characteristic of the clan names of Scotland; and "Va," grandson, the characteristic of Irish clan names; evidently neither became permanent fixtures until after the separation of Scottish Gaels from Irish in which Mac, with a few exceptions, is a separate word, a common noun, until modern times. Clan names by the use of these prefixes have developed from personal names into patronymics, the father's name naturally falling into the genitive case which involves phonetic change in all Celtic languages; as to which it particularly needs to be noticed here that Scottish Gaelic (like its nearly related languages, Manx, Irish, Gaelic and Welsh), is subject to aspiration, represented in Scottish Gaelic by the addition of "h" to a consonant, a tendency especially pronounced at the beginning of the father's name in the genitive, following the "c" in Mac, whose strength dominates or softens the first consonant following it. When such consonant is b, c, d, f, g, p, s or t, bh and mh, then sound as v; dh and gh as y; c becomes ch, sounding like the German ch; fh is silent; ph sounds as f; sh and th





## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

as h. Examples of each, Englished: MacVeagh, for MacBheatha; MacVurrich for MacMhuirich; MacConnachie for MacDhonnchaidh; Macilwraith for MacGhillebhraith; MacChoiter, son of Cotter; Mac Kinlay for Mac Fhionnlaigh; MacFall for MacPhail (son of Paul); MacKimmie for MacShimi; MacComas for MacThomas. (See Alex MacBain, "Etymological Dictionary of the Gaelic Language"; also Dwelly, "Gaelic Dictionary".)

Johnson's map of the Clans and Highland proprietors of Scotland according to Acts of Parliament 1587 to 1594, draws the line of separation between Highlands and Lowlands from Dumbarton northeast to Drummond Castle; thence to Blairgowrie, to Airlie Castle, then north; thence northwest through Ballater and Abergeldie to the Spey; then westward, excluding County Elgin and most of County Aberdeen from the Highlands; also Caithness, the Hebrides, Orkneys and Shetland Islands, which are mainly Norse. There is Norse mixture in the blood of the northwestern clans, and Norse influence in the language. (See Henderson's "Norse Influence on Celtic Scotland," 1910.) For example, the northern Clan Gunn has more names with the Norse suffix, "son," than with the Gaelic "Mac."

Mistaken attempts have been made to compare the clan system with the village community system of India, Russia, etc., the simplest form of civil and civilized organization; but the village community is a farming community, necessarily and permanently attached to a definite tract of land from which it draws its subsistence. Some of the effects of the feudal system are similar or identical with those of the clan system; but the feudal system is based upon land tenure, since its community draws its chief subsistence from tillage of the land; while the property of the clan is mainly in flocks and herds, from which it obtains most of its subsistence. The feudal lord, being the hereditary proprietor of a tract of land, is entitled to service and obedience of all who dwell on the land. The fundamental principle which held together the clan is kinship to the hereditary successors to the founder of the clan, a patriarchal system; the land being grazed as commons, though under the jurisdiction of the chief.

The pasturage of the Highlands being separated into limited sections by mountains, resulted in much division of clans, so that the sub-clan, with its chief the head of a branch of the high chief's fam-



## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

ily, became at length of an importance which was almost wanting under the less urgent conditions of Ireland. Succession to chieftainship of the clan was the highest honor, and derived from lineal descent from the founder, not from the last chief; brothers, as nearer in degree of kinship, invariably succeeded before sons of the last chief, the succession, by the laws of tanistry, being strictly in the male line. If the son of the deceased chief was under fourteen years of age (the Highland age of majority), the nearest of blood to the chief was chosen; but after his death the son succeeded. The law of gavel divided the property of the deceased among all the male branches of his family, females being excluded from succession to either chieftainship or property, the chieftain's aim being to attach to himself as many war men as possible.

Feudalism aimed not only to furnish men, but also their support. The clan in war aimed to live off the enemy. The written history of Scotland up to the sixteenth century is that of conflict between clans, the minor; and between clan and feudal authority, the major struggle. The supreme virtue of the clansmen was loyalty and unhesitating obedience to their chief, whose deadly feuds they warmly espoused; and there was rarely perfect cordiality between clans. The clans were distinguished from each other by the colors of their tartan, a woolen cloth, checkered or cross-barred with narrow bands of various colors; the plaid about two yards wide and four yards long, worn outside, being the most important, the kilt or skirt; and the truis (or long trousers reaching from waist to toe, worn in full dress) were of tartan and the stockings usually of the same material. A plant-badger was worn on the bonnet (cap). A clan war-cry was used (James Logan, "The Clans of the Scottish Highlands;" plates in colors, by M'Ian).

The power of the Highland clans was reduced by the Kings of Scotland and broken by the Act of 1748, abolishing heritable jurisdiction of the chiefs on account of their rebellion in 1745 in favor of Prince Charles Edward Stuart; and the clan and sub-clan names became family names. Under the clan system the only genealogy was that of the ruling family and its branches, the heads of the sub-clans. Chiefs who accepted feudal offices used the feudal laws of inheritance. William Pitt, when chancellor had the wit to utilize and at the same time to honor the bravery and fighting ability of the clans by organizing them into the Highland regiments of the British



## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

army. (See Frank Adam, "The Clans, Septs, and Regiments of the Scottish Highlands," 1909.)

There was a large immigration of people of Scottish blood into the American colonies during the half century preceding the Revolution, especially from those settled in Ulster province, Ireland, during the century preceding the immigration; and in the Revolution they formed the major element in Pennsylvania west of the Blue Ridge Mountains, Western Virginia, North and South Carolina, which later became the States of West Virginia, Kentucky and Tennessee, besides smaller settlements elsewhere. Hanna, in "The Scotch-Irish," estimates the element called by that name as 410,000 at the Revolutionary period. MacLean in his "Historical Account of the Settlement of Scotch Highlanders in America" estimates that 20,000 went directly from the Highlands to America between 1763 and 1775. The number of Scottish origin now within the boundaries of the nation is in the millions.

### THE CLANS

*Brodie*—The name originally was "DeBrothie" and its first record was in 1311 in an Elginshire charter. Shaw in his "History of Moray," says the name is manifestly local, taken from the lands of Brodie, and probably they were originally of the ancient Moravienses and were one of those loyal tribes to whom Malcolm IV gave land about the year 1160 when he transplanted the Moray rebels. At the time of the burning of Brodie House by Lord Lewis Gordon in 1645, the old writings of the family were destroyed.

From Malcolm, Thane of Brodie, living in the reign of Alexander III, descended Alexander Brodie, styled Lord Brodie, born July 25, 1617. He was a senator of the College of Justice; his son, James Brodie, of Brodie, born September 15, 1637, was his successor. The latter married in 1659, Lady Mary Ker, daughter of William, third Earl of Lothian. The issue of this union was nine daughters but no son, and he was succeeded by his cousin, George Brodie, son of Joseph Brodie of Aslisk, and grandson of David Brodie of Brodie, brother of Lord Brodie. He married in 1692 his cousin Emily, fifth daughter of his predecessor, and died in 1716, leaving three sons and two daughters. The eldest son and heir of George Brodie was James Brodie, who died young, in 1720, and was succeeded by his brother Alexander, born August 17, 1697. He was appointed Lord Lyon of





## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

army. (See Frank Adam, "The Clans, Septs, and Regiments of the Scottish Highlands," 1909.)

There was a large immigration of people of Scottish blood into the American colonies during the half century preceding the Revolution, especially from those settled in Ulster province, Ireland, during the century preceding the immigration; and in the Revolution they formed the major element in Pennsylvania west of the Blue Ridge Mountains, Western Virginia, North and South Carolina, which later became the States of West Virginia, Kentucky and Tennessee, besides smaller settlements elsewhere. Hanna, in "The Scotch-Irish," estimates the element called by that name as 410,000 at the Revolutionary period. MacLean in his "Historical Account of the Settlement of Scotch Highlanders in America" estimates that 20,000 went directly from the Highlands to America between 1763 and 1775. The number of Scottish origin now within the boundaries of the nation is in the millions.

### THE CLANS

*Brodie*—The name originally was "DeBrothie" and its first record was in 1311 in an Elginshire charter. Shaw in his "History of Moray," says the name is manifestly local, taken from the lands of Brodie, and probably they were originally of the ancient Moravienses and were one of those loyal tribes to whom Malcolm IV gave land about the year 1160 when he transplanted the Moray rebels. At the time of the burning of Brodie House by Lord Lewis Gordon in 1645, the old writings of the family were destroyed.

From Malcolm, Thane of Brodie, living in the reign of Alexander III, descended Alexander Brodie, styled Lord Brodie, born July 25, 1617. He was a senator of the College of Justice; his son, James Brodie, of Brodie, born September 15, 1637, was his successor. The latter married in 1659, Lady Mary Ker, daughter of William, third Earl of Lothian. The issue of this union was nine daughters but no son, and he was succeeded by his cousin, George Brodie, son of Joseph Brodie of Aslisk, and grandson of David Brodie of Brodie, brother of Lord Brodie. He married in 1692 his cousin Emily, fifth daughter of his predecessor, and died in 1716, leaving three sons and two daughters. The eldest son and heir of George Brodie was James Brodie, who died young, in 1720, and was succeeded by his brother Alexander, born August 17, 1697. He was appointed Lord Lyon of





## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

Scotland in 1727, and died 1754. By his wife, Mary Sleigh, he had a son Alexander, and one daughter Emilia. The son and heir, born May 29, 1741, died at an early age and was succeeded by his second cousin, James Brodie, son of James Brodie of Spynie. This gentleman, Lord Lieutenant of the County of Nairn, was born August 31, 1744, and married Lady Margaret, the youngest daughter of William, first Earl of Fife; this lady was burned to death at Brodie Hall, April 24, 1786. The death of the head of the family occurred January 17, 1824, leaving two sons and three daughters. The eldest son, James, was drowned in his father's lifetime, leaving by Ann his wife, daughter of Colonel Story of Ascot, two sons and five daughters. The eldest son, William Brodie, Esq., of Brodie, in Morayshire, Lord Lieutenant of Nairnshire, born July 2, 1799, succeeded his grandfather, January, 1824, married, November 27, 1838, Elizabeth, third daughter of Colonel Hugh Baillie, M. P., of Red Castle. Their son, Hugh Fife Ashley, R. A., born September 8, 1840, died 1889, leaving Ian Ashley as his successor.

There were no sub-clans; the other branches of family are, Brodie of Lethen, and Brodie of Eastbourne, Sussex.

*Buchanan*—The clan was founded by Auselan, and some historians claim it is of ecclesiastical origin. It was designated by the name of the ancient Celtic race of MacAuslan. In Gaelic the name is usually *Mac-a-Channonaich* (the son of the Canon), therefore it would seem to be of Celtic ecclesiastical origin. The second generation of the clan of Auselan was John MacAuselan, and he was succeeded by Auselan (2nd), and his son Walter was the fourth chieftain of the clan. His successor was his son Bernard, who in turn gave way to his son MacBeath. Tradition gives the foregoing six lairds as possessors of an estate in the parish of Buchanan in Stirlingshire.

The seventh chieftain, Auselan (3d), son of MacBeath, received in 1225 a charter of the island of Clar in Loch Lomond: this is the earliest record. It was towards the middle of the thirteenth century that Gilbert, the son of Auselan (3d), a seneschal of the Earl of Lennox, obtained from him a part of the lands of Buchanan in Stirlingshire and adopted the name de Buchanan. Donald, sixth earl of Lennox renewed to Sir Maurice (or Muredach) the son of Gilbert, the grant the former Earl had conferred upon his ancestor. The King granted to his successor, Sir Maurice (2nd), a son of Sir



## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

Maurice, a charter of confirmation of the lands called Bouchannane, together with Sallachy, these lands to be held by the delivery of a cheese out of each house in which a cheese is made on said lands.

Through the marriage with a daughter of Menteith of Rusky, Sir Walter, the son of Sir Maurice (2nd), became connected with the Royal house. John, the only son of Sir Walter, married the sole heiress of the ancient family of Lennie or Leny. He died before his father and left three sons—Six Alexander, who was slain at the battle of Verneuil; Walter, who succeeded to Buchanan; and John, who came into possession of Lennie. Walter married Isabel, daughter of Murdoch, Duke of Albany. Their son Patrick married the heiress of Killearn and Auchrech. Their youngest son, Thomas, founded the House of Drumihill. The line of succession became extinct in 1682, and the estate was acquired by the Duke of Montrose of the Graham clan. This estate extended along the north and east of Loch Lomond, eighteen miles, it is said, at its fullest extent. The headship of the clan then went to the Buchanans of Lennie, who with Auchmar, Carbeth and Drumihill branches still survive. The Buchanans, being at the southern border of the Highlands, had the duty of starting the “Fiery Cross,” a small wooden one with the ends on fire or charred, which was the signal of warning sent from one clan or sub-clan to the next, and so on by swift messengers. One branch of MacMillan is from Methlen, the son of Auselan (2d). The clan badge is a sprig of birch; its war-cry, “Clar Innis,” for an island in Loch Lomond.

Sub-Clans and derivation of their names:

Colman, from Colman (3d), son of Auselan (2d), who was named from St. Columbanus; in Norman, Colman.

Donleavy, from the Gaelic Duinn-shleibhe, man of the mountain.

Dove or Dowe, the English translation of Colman, which is from *columba*, dove.

Gibb, Gibson, Gilbert, Gilbertson, from Gilbert, the eighth Laird.

Harper, Harperson, from a Buchanan who was an official harper.

Lennie, from the Lennie estate.

MacAldonich, from the Gaelic MacMhuldonich, from Muldonich, a man of the Lennie branch.

MacAndeoir, son of the stranger (deoradh).

MacAslan or McAuslan; MacCalman (MacCalmont, MacCammond) MacColman.



## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

MacChruiter, i. e., a son of a harper, from the Gaelic word *cruit*, harp.

MacCormack, from the Gaelic *MacCormaig*; from *cormac*, a brewer.

MacDonleavy; MacGibbon, MacGilbert, MacGreusich from the Gaelic word *greusaich*, a shoemaker.

Macinally, (for MacKinlay).

MacIndeor, MacIndoe,-r, MacIndie, MacKindeor, Mackinder, for MacAndeoir.

MacKinlay, Gaelic *MacFhionnlaigh*, from *fionn*, white, and *laoch*, hero; MacMaurice.

MacMaster, from the Gaelic *MacMaighister*, and from Latin *magister*, a master.

MacMurchie, from the Gaelic *MacMurchaidh*.

MacNuyer, MacNuir.

MacWattie, son of Watt, i. e. Walter, a name among the Buchanans of Lemmie, derived from Sir Walter, the eleventh Laird of Buchanan.

MacWhirter.

Masterson.

Murchie, Murchison.

Risk, Ruskin, from Gaelic *narusgain* of the bark, i. e. a tanner; a branch of MacColman.

Spittal, from Spitalfield, in Perthshire.

Watson, Watt.

Yuill or Yule, born upon Yule, or Christmas.

*Cameron*—This name is from the Gaelic *camshron*, meaning wry-nose, or crooked nose. The first Cameron of whom there is any record is Angus, who married Marion, daughter of Kenneth of Lochaber, and sister of Bancho, governor of Lochaber. The Camerons held their possessions east of the Lochy river, from the Lord of the Isles, as superior. Lochiel and Loch-Arkaig lands west of Lochy river and Loch were granted to and long held by MacDonald, of the clan Ranald, before it came into the hands of the Camerons. Gillespie or Archibald, the oldest son of Angus, succeeded him; and John, his son, was the third laird. The latter's son Robert was a witness on record before 1200 in the reign of William the Lion. The next laird, John, the son of Robert, had two sons; Robert and Hugo are mentioned in 1219. The next in succession was Robert, mentioned above, who was succeeded by his son John, who was a prominent figure in the time of Robert Bruce. The next laird in regular succession was John, the son of John, who was succeeded by Allan,



## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

in whose time began the feud between the Camerons and the MacIntoshes which was not settled until late in the seventeenth century, the Camerons having occupied lands formerly held by the MacIntoshes. The Camerons were a part of Clan Chattan of Moray, and followed its chief. A battle was fought between them in 1380; and in 1396, on account of the success of the MacIntoshes at the battle of North Inch in Perth, which gave them the leadership of the clan, the Camerons withdrew and became a separate clan.

It was under Ewan, the tenth laird and oldest son of Allan, was fought the famous combat between thirty picked warriors of Cameron and a like number of MacIntosh. His brother, Donald Du, in 1411 was the first assured chief of the clan, and at the battle of Harlaw in that year lost many of his followers. He married the heiress of MacMartin of Letterfinlay and succeeded to her property, thus uniting the Camerons and the MacMartins under one chief, the followers of the latter adopting the name of Cameron. There were at this time four branches of the Camerons, namely, Gillonie, Sorley, MacMartin and the Camerons of Lochiel. When the royal forces in 1492 attacked Alexander, Lord of the Isles, Lochiel adhered to him, and the other three, with Clan Chattan, went over to the King's forces. Donald Du left two sons—Allan, who succeeded him; and Ewen, the progenitor of the latter MacGillonie, Camerons of Strone. Allan left two sons—Ewen, his heir; and John, from whom descended the Camerons of Callart.

The line of the Camerons of Lochiel is as follows: Ewen, the son of Allan, outlived his heir Donald, who died between 1536-1539; his son Ewen was the progenitor of the family of Errach, and another son of the Camerons of Kin-Lochiel. The successor of Ewen was his grandson Ewen, known also as "Eoghan Beag," who was the father of the famous warrior *Taillear dubh na Tuaighe*, the Black Tailor of the Axe. His successor was Donald, recorded in a grant of land in 1564; his nephew Allan succeeded to chieftainship at the age of fifteen years, and died about 1647. When an act of Parliament was passed commanding all chiefs and proprietors of estates to appear in the Court of Exchequer before May 15, 1597, and to exhibit charters and find bail or security to pay crown revenues and to live peaceably in all coming time, the clans were brought into line with the rest of the kingdom.

The next hereditary chieftain was Sir Ewen, a grandson of





## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

Allan by his oldest son John. He was born in 1629, in the castle of Kilchurn, the residence of his mother's family, the Campbells of Glenorchy. Sir Ewen died in 1719 at advanced age, having completed his ninetieth year. He was succeeded by his son, John, who died in exile at Newport, Flanders, in 1747 or 1748, at a very advanced age. His eldest son Donald, known as "The Gentle Lochiel," was his successor. Like his father, he joined in the uprisings of 1715 and 1745 in favor of Charles Stuart; he was present at the battle of Falkirk, also at Culloden, where he was severely wounded; he escaped to France, where he died October 26, 1748, having been chief of the clan less than a year. He was succeeded by his son John, who died unmarried in 1762, and was succeeded by his brother Charles. The latter died in 1776, and was succeeded by his son Donald, who was only seven years of age. He had the family estates restored, subject to a fine of £3492 under the Indemnity Act of 1784. He died in 1832, and was succeeded by his oldest surviving son, Donald, a captain in the Grenadier Guards who was present at the battle of Waterloo. His death occurred in 1859, and his eldest son Donald, born in 1835, became the head of the family. His death took place November 30, 1905, and he was succeeded by his son Donald Walter. The badge of the clan is crowberry, and its war cry "Sons of the hounds, come here and get flesh!"

### Sub-Clans:

Chalmers.

Clark, Clarkson, Clerk, MacChlerich, MacChlery, all five from *clericus*, a learned man.

Kennedy, from Gaelic *Ceanaideach*.

MacGillonie, from Gaelic *Gill-an-fhaigh* (for *fhaidh*), servant of the prophet.

Macildowie from the Gaelic patronymic of the 11th chief *Mac Dhomh'uill duibh*.

MacKail, for MacVail.

Maclerie, usually MacChlerich.

MacMartin, same as called in manuscript of 1467, *Gilla Martain*, servant of St. Martin; later, Gaelic *MacMhartain*.

MacOnie, for MacGillonie.

MacOurlic, for MacUlric.

MacPhail, a son of Paul, head of a branch of Cameron.

MacSorley, from Gaelic *Somhairle*, a name borrowed from the Lords of the Isles, descendants of Somerled, Norse, *Sumarlidhi*.

MacUlric, son of Ualrig Kennedy.



## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

MacVail, for MacPhail.

MacWalrick, variation of MacUlric; Martin.

Paul; Sorley.

Taylor.

The main branches are MacGillonie, MacMartin and MacSorley. See Alexander Mackenzie, "History of Cameron").

*Campbell of Argyll*—The Campbells take their surname from a facial deformity, from the Gaelic words *cam*, wry, and *bruel*, mouth—*cam-bruel*, wry mouth. The earliest record of the clan is in 1266, when Gillespie, or Gillespie Cambell was a witness on the charter of Newburgh in Fife. His name however appeared on the Exchequer roll in 1216, when he returned as holding lands of Menstrie and Auchie in Stirling. He married the heiress of Lochaw. The war cry of the Campbells is *Cruachan*, for a mountain near Loch Awe; the clan pipe music for salute, *Failte Mharcuis*, the "Marquis Salute;" for march, *Bail-Ionaraora*, the Campbells are coming; for lament, *Cumha Mharcuis*, "the Marquis Lament." The badge is *oid*, wild myrtle, or Garbhag an t-sleibhe, Fir Club Moss.

The successor of Sir Gillespie Cambell was his son Colin (Calean), who was reckoned as seventh from the founder. At this same period Dugald Cambell was connected with Dumbarton Castle about the year 1289. Arthur and Thomas Cambell in 1296 are mentioned as King's tenants in Perthshire, and Duncan Cambell "of the Isles" in the same year swears fealty to Edward I. About the same time Neil Cambell was made King Edward's ballie over the lands from Lochfyne to Kilmartin in Argyll.

From Calean Mor, the prefix signifying great, mentioned above, the house of Argyll gets its patronymic MacCalean Mor. He was knighted by King Alexander III in 1280, and supported the claim of Bruce to the throne of Scotland in 1292, and is entered on a document as connected with Argyll. Sir Colin had a quarrel with the MacDougalls of Lorn, and in 1294, at a battle called "Ath Dearg" (Red Ford), sometimes called string of Lorn, he was slain. These feuds continued for a series of years between the houses of Lochin and Lorn, but at last terminated by the marriage of the first Earl of Argyll with the heiress of Lorn. Sir Gillespie, the grandson of the first Sir Gillespie, was a witness to a charter in 1266, and his eldest son, Sir Nigel or Neil, married Mary, the sister of Robert Bruce; his name appears on the Ragman Roll of 1299. The second son of Sir Gillespie, Sir Duncan, founded the house of the Campbell of



## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

Loudoun. The next chieftain of the clan, Sir Colin, was a son of Sir Nigel; he captured the Castle of Duncan in 1334, and was appointed its keeper. His successor was Sir Archibald, who died in 1372 and was succeeded by his son, Sir Colin Campbell (Cailean Iongantach), who was in great favor with King Robert II and was employed by his royal master to restrain the Highlanders, for which he received grants of lands. He died in 1413 and was succeeded by his son, Sir Duncan, "Donnachadh an Aidh" (Duncan the Fortunate). He was noted for his valor and wisdom, and was a man of great ability. He was created Lord Campbell by James II in 1445, and was the first of the family that took the title of Argyll. He was accounted one of the wealthiest barons in Scotland. His wife was Marjory, daughter of Robert Stewart, Duke of Albany, a brother of King Robert III. He died in 1453, and was buried in the church of Kilmun, where there is a monument erected over him with a lifesize statue of himself; round the verge of the tomb is the inscription, "Hic jacet Dominus Duncanus Dominus le Campbell, Miles de Lochow, 1453."

Sir Archibald Roy Campbell succeeded his father, and married Elizabeth, daughter of Lord Somerville, by whom he had one son, Colin, who succeeded him. The new laird was granted Argyll; he was created Earl of Argyll in 1457 by James II, and was appointed to the chieftainship of the county. He was Lord High Chancellor of Scotland in 1483. By a marriage with Isabel, second daughter of John Stewart, Lord of Lorn, he was created Baron of Lorn, and in 1481 received a grant of lands in Knapdale. He died in 1493, and was succeeded by his son Archibald, the second Earl of Argyll, who had the honor to command the van of the Royal army at the battle of Flodden and there fell with his Royal master, King James IV, September 9, 1513. By his wife, Lady Elizabeth Stewart, the eldest daughter of John, first Earl of Lennox, he had four sons and five daughters. His eldest son, Colin, third Earl of Argyll, added to the estate and power. He was succeeded in 1530 by his son Archibald, the fourth Earl of Argyll. He changed his religious views in 1547, and was one of the first of the nobility to embrace the Protestant religion. He died in 1558 and was succeeded by his son Archibald, the fifth Earl of Argyll, who was present at the coronation of James VI, where he carried the Sword of State. He espoused the cause of Queen Mary and commanded her Majesty's





## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

force at the battle of Langside. He died without issue in 1575, and was succeeded by his half-brother Colin, sixth Earl of Argyll. He died in October, 1584, and his eldest son, Archibald, became the seventh Earl of Argyll. He was present at the battle of Glenlivet in 1594, reduced the MacGregors in 1603, and suppressed a favorable insurrection of the MacDonalds in the Western Isle in 1614. He afterwards entered the service of Philip III of Spain, and obtained renown in the wars of that monarch against the States of Holland. His eldest son, Archibald, born in 1598, succeeded his father in 1638 as the eighth Earl of Argyll, and was created Marquess of Argyll in 1638. After the Restoration he was beheaded, May 27, 1661. His estates and titles were forfeited, but Charles II restored to his son Archibald the estates and title of Earl of Argyll. He took part in Monmouth's rebellion, and was beheaded June 30, 1685. He was succeeded by his son Archibald, the tenth Earl of Argyll, who returned from Holland with the Prince of Orange in 1688, who created him Duke of Argyll in 1701. He died two years later and John, his son, became the second Duke of Argyll and Earl of Greenwich. He was a noted warrior and died in 1743, leaving no male issue. His English titles became extinct; his brother Archibald succeeded to the estate and the Scottish honors, Duke of Argyll, etc. His death occurring without issue in 1761, the title devolved on his cousin, General John Campbell, of Mamore, second son of Archibald, the ninth Earl. John, the fourth Duke, died in 1700 and was succeeded by his son John, the fifth Duke, who died in 1790 and left two sons, George William, the sixth Duke, who died in 1839, and was succeeded by his brother, John Douglas, the seventh Duke, known chiefly as the father of George John Douglas Campbell, the author of "The Reign of Law," etc. He was known as Marquess of Lorn before the death of his father in 1847, whom he succeeded as eighth Duke of Argyll. His death occurred in 1900, when John Douglas Sutherland, born August 6, 1845, became ninth Duke of Argyll. He had married in 1871, when he was known as Marquess of Lorn, Princess Louisa, daughter of Queen Victoria. He died in 1914, when he was succeeded by his nephew, Niall Diarmid Campbell, the tenth and present Duke.

### Sub-Clans:

Bannatyns, from John de Bennachtyne, Edinburghshire, 1361. (Ballantyne, Bellenden).





## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

Burnes, one living at a burn or brook.

Connechie, MacChonnechey, MacConochie, Gaelic.

MacDhonnahaidh, son of Donnchaidh or Duncan.

Denoon; Denué from estates MacDermid or MacDiamid, from Diarmid alleged progenitor of the clan.

MacGibbon, from Gilbert, among early Campbells.

MacGlasrich, from Campbell of Glassary parish.

MacIsaac (MacKesock, MacKissock), from Isaac Campbell.

MacIver, MacIvor, Gaelic MacIamhar, from Norse Ivarr.

MacKellar, Gaelic MacCallare in Argyll records, 1470.

MacNichol, as from Nicholas Campbell.

MacOran.

MacOwen.

MacTause or MacTavish, from Gaelic MacTamhais, son of Tamhus, *i. e.* Thomas, also MacThomas, Taweson, Thomas, Thomason, Thompson.

MacUre and Ur, for MacIver.

*Campbell of Breadalbane*—The founder of this branch of the Campbell clan was Black Colin of Rome ("Calean dubh na Roimbe"), second son of Sir Duncan Campbell by his wife, Lady Marjory Stewart. Sir Colin in 1492 received as patrimony from his father the lands of Glenorchy, from which the MacGregors had been driven, and from these lands they took their title. Sir Colin was married four times, his first wife being Mariot, daughter of Sir Walter Stewart; his second wife, Lady Margaret, daughter of John Stewart, Lord of Lorn, and with whom he received the third of the lands of Lorn. During his absence, Lady Margaret built the castle of Kilchurn (Caolchuirm) Loch Awe. His third wife was Margaret Robertson, of Strowan; his fourth, Margaret, daughter of Luke Stirling of Keir. Sir Colin during his eventful career added greatly to his possessions by extending his borders eastward and northward. He died in 1498 and was buried at the chapel of Finlarig Killin. He was succeeded by his son, Sir Duncan, and the frequent insurrections of the MacGregors gave the family occasion to suppress them, thereby increasing his own power and obtaining grants of that clan's land from the Crown. He was killed at the battle of Flodden in 1513. He was succeeded by his three sons—Duncan, John and Colin. The latter died in 1583 and was succeeded by his son Duncan (VII), who was created Baronet of Glenorchy. He was known as Black Duncan, or Duncan with the cowl. He added greatly to the lands and church possessions of the family, was the first of



## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

the Highland lairds to turn their attention to rural improvements, planted trees, and enforced the planting of them by his tenants. Sir Duncan died in 1631 and was succeeded by his eldest son, Sir Colin, who died without issue. His brother Robert became the third baronet, and was succeeded by his eldest son, John, who died in 1686, and his eldest son John became his successor.

Sir John (XI), known as "Iain Glas," was born in 1635 and was created Earl of Caithness in 1677 by Charles II of England, and he immediately began to invade the lands thus granted, which historical event is commemorated in the well known song "The Campbells are Coming." His Majesty, realizing he was in error, compelled Sir John Campbell to drop the Caithness title, and he created him, in 1681, Earl of Breadalbane and Holland. He was succeeded by John (XII), the second Earl, who died in 1752 and was succeeded by his son John (XIII), who died in 1782, leaving no issue. John (XIV) succeeded to the title, being a lineal descendant of Colin of Mochaster, second son of Robert (IX). He was created a Baron of the United Kingdom of Great Britain in 1806 by the title of Marquess Breadalbane of Taymouth Castle, County of Perth. John, the second Marquess and fifth Earl, succeeded his father in 1834; he represented Perthshire in Parliament in 1832. He died without issue in November, 1862, when the Marquisate of Breadalbane and Earldom of Ormelie in the Scottish Peerage became extinct, and the succession was disputed. He was succeeded in the Scotch titles by Sir John Alexander Gavin Campbell, sixth Earl of Breadalbane; his succession to the titles were based on his being a lineal descendant of William, the fifth son of Sir Robert Campbell (IX). Sir John was born in March, 1824, and succeeded his cousin in 1862. He married in 1871 Mary Theresa, only daughter of John Francis Edwards of Dublin, Ireland. He died in 1871 and was succeeded by his son Gavin Campbell, created Marquess of Breadalbane in 1885. He married in 1872, Alma, daughter of the fourth Duke of Montrose.

*Campbell of Cawdor*—The first record we have of this branch of the Campbell clan is John, the seventh Thane of Calder, or Cawdor. He married Isabel Rose, daughter of Kilravock in 1492, and died two years later, leaving a posthumous daughter, Muriel or Marion. Her grandfather, Kilravock, intended that the heiress should wed his grandson, her first cousin. Kilravock with the Mackintosh attempted to possess themselves of the lands of Urquhart of Cro-



## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

marty. Argyll, the chief justice general, indicted him by a criminal process for robbery, and secured a wardship in 1495 of Muriel's marriage from the King, and later she was removed to Inveraray. In the autumn of 1499, Campbell of Inverliver received the child on the pretence of sending her south for her education. His force of sixty men was pursued by her uncles Alexander and Hugh Calder with a superior party. The child was sent forward under an escort of six men, and, to deceive his antagonists, Inverliver dressed a sheaf of corn with the child's clothes, which was kept in view in the rear by one of his party. Inverliver being unable to overcome the attacking party, retreated, leaving the fictitious child to the Calders. Tradition says, in the midst of the congratulations of Lady Muriel's safe arrival at Inveraray, Campbell of Auchinbreck was asked what was to be done if the child should die before she was marriageable. "She never can die," said he, "so long as a red haired lassie can be found on either side of Loch Awe!" Therefore it would appear that the heiress of the Calders or Cawdors was redheaded.

Lady Muriel in 1510 married Sir John Campbell, third son of Argyll. "The Book of the Thanes of Cawdor" says Sir John was a Campbell of the old stamp, incessantly increasing his possessions, extending his influence and his treaties with his cousins, also with the MacLeans, MacDonalds and MacNeills, thus showing policy and knowledge power. From 1524 until 1546, the year of his death, Sir John Campbell resided permanently at Cawdor. Lady Muriel survived him for many years, also their son Archibald. Lady Muriel died about 1575, resigning her thanedom to her grandson, John (III), who married a daughter of William, fourth Earl Marischal, by whom he had two sons and two daughters. The eldest of these daughters married Sir John MacDonald of Islay, the other daughter married Campbell of Glenfaochan in Lorn. Sir John early in the seventeenth century sold Croy and disposed of Ferintosh to Lord Lovat, and mortgaged other lands in order to purchase or conquer the island of Islay. The thanes of the clan of Campbell of Cawdor kept possession of Islay from 1612 to 1726, when it was purchased by Daniel Campbell, one of the Skipness family.

The successor of Sir John (III) was his son, Sir John (IV). He married for his first wife Jean, a daughter of Sir Duncan Campbell of Glenorchy; his second wife was Margaret, daughter of William, Earl of Angus. Sir John resigned the estate of Cawdor in





## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

1622 to his eldest son, Sir John, who was a member of parliament from Nairnshire. He married Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Thomas Urquhart of Cromarty, and died in 1654. The next successor to the estate was Sir Colin, the youngest son of Sir John (IV). His son, Sir Hugh, was knighted in 1660, and his son Sir Alexander during his lifetime resigned the estates to his son John, born 1695. John Campbell married Mary, eldest daughter and co-heiress of Lewis Pryce. He was a Lord of the Admiralty and afterwards of the Treasury. He died in 1777 and was succeeded by his grandson John, who was elevated in 1796 to the Peerage of Great Britain by the title of Baron Cawdor of Castlemartin, Pembrokeshire. He died in 1821 and was succeeded by his son, John Frederick Campbell, first Earl of Cawdor. He married a daughter of Thomas, second Marquess of Bath, and died June 27, 1860. His eldest son, John Frederick Vaughan Campbell, became the second Earl of Cawdor, and died in 1898, and his son, Frederick Archibald Vaughan Campbell, born in 1849, became the third Earl of Cawdor, and at his death in 1911 was succeeded by his son, Hugh Frederick Vaughan, born in 1870, fourth Earl of Cawdor. His death occurred in 1914, and his successor was his son, John Duncan Vaughan Campbell, the fifth Earl of Cawdor.

Sub-Clan—Caddell, Cawdor, Calder, from a town in Lanarkshire.

*Campbell of Loudoun*—The first of the present house of Loudoun was Sir Duncan Campbell, grandson of Sir Colin Campbell, ancestor of the Duke of Argyll, already mentioned. He married Susanna, daughter and heiress of Sir Reingald Crawford, High Sheriff of Ayr, who fell in battle in 1303, and was a grandnephew of the mother of the celebrated Sir William Wallace.

Loudoun was in 1381 converted into a free barony by a charter granted by Robert I, and included the lands of Stevenson. Sir Duncan also obtained from King Robert a charter of the Red Castle, and by his wife had a son, Sir Andrew, who was taken prisoner with David II at the Battle of Durham, and held in captivity in England until 1357. His son, Sir Hugh of Loudoun, was one of those appointed to meet King James I at Durham in 1423, and his grandson, Sir George, became a hostage for the King's ransom and accompanied the unhappy Princess Margaret to France in 1436, when she became the wife of the future Louis XI. Two Sir John Campbells





## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

of Loudoun succeeded; Sir Matthew Campbell was a faithful subject of Queen Mary, and fought for her at Langside. His second son, Matthew, settled in Levonia and became the ancestor of the famous Earl of Loudoun, who became famous in American history in the eighteenth century.

Sir Hugh Campbell of Loudoun was, like all of his predecessors, High Sheriff of Ayr, and possessed large landed estates derived from Charles, granted between 1580 to 1600. In 1601 he was created Lord Campbell of Loudoun by James VI. He married Margaret Gordon, of the house of Lochinver. His son John died before him, leaving a daughter Margaret, who succeeded to all the honors of Loudoun in 1623, and married Sir John Campbell of Lawers, a descendant of Colin Campbell, the first Baron of Glenorchy. He was created by Charles I in 1633, Baron Tarrinzean and Mauchline and Earl of Loudoun, and in 1641 was Lord High Chancellor of Scotland. His grandson, the second Earl of Loudoun, was James Campbell, colonel of the Scots Greys, and as a major-general was killed at the battle of Fontenoy in 1715. His elder brother Hugh became the third Earl of Loudoun, and joined King William's forces at the time of the Revolution, and died in 1731. His son John, the fourth Earl of Loudoun, attained the highest military honors. He was active in the government service in 1745, and raised a regiment of Highlanders, consisting of twelve companies, which covered itself with distinction in the war in Flanders. This regiment was disbanded in 1748, and the Earl in 1756 was appointed commander of the forces in America. Two years later he was commander in Portugal, and in 1770 he was colonel of the Scots Foot Guards. He died unmarried, in 1782. The title thus reverted to his brother, Major General James Mure Campbell, who married Flora, eldest daughter of MacLeod of Rassay, by whom he had one child, Flora Mure-Campbell, who became the Countess of Loudoun, and married in 1801 General Earl of Moira, commander-in-chief in Scotland, afterwards governor-general of India, and who in 1816 was created Marquess of Hastings. The Countess Flora was succeeded by her son George, the seventh Earl of Loudoun and the second Marquess of Hastings. The seventh Earl of Loudoun in 1858 was succeeded by his eldest son, Paulyn Reginald Serlo, who became the third Marquess of Hastings and eighth Earl of Loudoun. He was an officer in the army, and died unmarried in 1861, and was succeeded by his



## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

brother, Henry Weysford Charles Plantagenet, the fourth Marquess of Hastings and ninth Earl of Loudoun. At his death in 1868 the marquisate and the other titles created by patent, except the Scotch honors, became extinct. The ninth Earl of Loudoun was succeeded in his Scottish honors by his eldest sister, Edith May, Countess of Loudoun, who married Charles Frederick Clifton, afterwards Lord Donington. The Countess died in 1874, and was succeeded by her eldest son, Charles Edward Hastings, who became the eleventh Earl of Loudoun.

Sub-Clans—Loudoun, a branch.

*Colquhoun*—In the reign of Alexander II, Maldowin, Earl of Lennox, granted a charter of the lands of Culchone or Colquhoun to Umfudus (Humphrey) de Kilpatrick. Humphrey's successor Ingram adopted the name of the lands as a surname. In the beginning of the reign of Robert I a charter of Luss was given by Malcolm, Earl of Lennox, to Malcolm, Laird of Luss, confirming John, Laird of Luss, his charter to his son of those lands. Therefore it would appear that there were three branches of the family—Colquhoun, Kilpatrick, and Luss. With regard to the Kilpatrick line, it appears during the reign of Alexander II that Umphresuis de Kilpatrick obtained a grant of land and barony of Colquhoun in Dumbartonshire, on which occasion he assumed the name and arms of Colquhoun. There were, however, others of the name in early times. Under David II, Gilbert Colquhoun, a herald, was forfeited, and lands of Barinneheurie were bestowed on Isabel of Athois. In the same year a charter was given to Malcolm Culchone of Gask.

Ingram, Humphrey, Sir Robert and Sir Humphrey, all Colquhouns of that ilk, and Luss, succeeded each other, and then came Sir John, who was governor of Dumbarton Castle during the minority of James II. He and one hundred and twenty of his clansmen were lured into an ambush by Lauchian McLean and other Islesmen, and massacred. His son Malcolm predeceased him and left a son, Sir John, who succeeded his grandfather and married a daughter of Lord Boyd. Sir John was a prominent figure in Scottish history; a man of ability, he was Comptroller of the Exchequer, 1465 to 1469; Great Chamberlain of Scotland in 1474; appointed governor, for life, of Dumbarton Castle in 1477; and was member of that commission whose futile scheme was an attempt to arrange a marriage between the Crown Prince of Scotland and Cecily, the daughter of



## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

Edward IV of England. Sir John was granted the lands of Roseneath, also the Castle of Douglas, whose ruins adorn the banks of the Clyde, belonging to the Colquhouns. He was slain by a cannon ball in 1478, during the siege of Dumbarton Castle, in which the famous "Mons Meg" figured.

Sir John was succeeded by his son, Sir Humphrey, who died in 1493, and his successor was his son, Sir John, who was knighted by James IV and obtained under the great Seal grants of land and baronies in Dumbartonshire. He died in 1535-36 and was succeeded by his eldest son, Sir John, who died in 1574. His son, Sir Humphrey Colquhoun, the twelfth Laird of Luss, succeeded to the estates in his minority; he acquired the heritable coronership of Dumbartonshire in 1583. He married (first) Jean, daughter of the Earl of Glencairn, and (second) Jean, daughter of Lord John Hamilton, but left no issue. He was defeated with loss of two hundred men at the bloody battle of Glenfruin in 1607, by the MacGregors, and was afterwards killed in his own Castle of Benachra by the MacFarlanes. His successor was his brother, Sir Alexander, who died in 1617, when his son, Sir John Colquhoun, became the Thane of the Clan. He had obtained in 1602 a charter for ten pounds of land in Donnerbuck. He was made Baronet of Nova Scotia by Charles I in 1625, and during the protectorship of Cromwell was mulcted of two thousand pounds sterling. His son, Sir John, was the second Baronet of Nova Scotia, and died in 1676. His son, Sir John, was the third Baronet, and died unmarried in 1680. He was succeeded by his uncle, Sir James, the fourth Baronet, and at his death in 1688 his son, Sir Humphrey Colquhoun, became the seventeenth Laird of Luss. He was a member of the Union Parliament, and married a daughter of Houston of that ilk, by whom he had a daughter Anne. She in 1702 married James Grant, of Pluscardine. Sir Humphrey being resolved that the young couple should succeed him in his whole estate and honors, in 1704 resigned his baronetcy to the Crown and obtained a new grant, giving himself a life rent, to his daughter and son-in-law in fee, providing that their heirs should adopt the name and arms of Colquhoun and that the estates of Grant and Luss should never be conjoined. Sir Humphrey died in 1718, and James Grant succeeded as Sir James Colquhoun. His elder brother dying without issue in 1719, he succeeded to the estates of Grant, and resuming that name was succeeded in the estates of Luss by his third





## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

son, Sir Ludovick, who on the death of his elder brother unmarried, succeeded to the estates of Grant; that of Luss went to his younger brother James, born 1741, created Baronet of Luss in 1786 and died in 1805. His son, Sir James, was his successor, and was succeeded by two James's, the last dying in 1907. The titles and estates then devolved to Sir Alan John, a cousin of his predecessor. He died in 1910, and was succeeded by his son, Sir Lain, born in 1887, fourteenth Baronet of Colquhoun, and seventh Baronet of Luss, the present chief of the clan. The war cry of the clan is "Cnoc Ealachain;" the clan pipe music is Gathering "Ceann na Drochaide Bige," "Head of the Little Bridge." March "Caismeachd Chloinn a Chompaich," "The Colquhouns' March." Lament—"Ruaig Ghlinne Freoine," "Rout of Glenfruin." The Badge: *Bráoileag nan con* (Dogberry) or *Caltuinn* (Hazel). In the United States the clan is known by the family name of Calhoun or Calhoon, the badge being a hazel.

### Sub-Clans:

Cowan.

Kilpatrick.

Kirkpatrick.

Macachounich.

MacCowan, from the Gaelic MacComnghain, and a personal name Comgan. (St. Comgan).

*Cumin, Comyn, Cumming*—This once powerful clan is now practically extinct. Its badge was *Lus Mhic Cuimin*, the Cumin Plant, common sallow, *i. e.*, willow. The clan was located at Badenoch, in the southeast district of Inverness-shire, a wild, mountainous country, interspersed with bleak moorland. From 1080 to 1330 the clan flourished in strength and then began to decline.

Though some researchers claim that they originated in Comines in the *arrondissement* of Lille, France, this Norman tradition according to the Chronicle of Melrose would seem fictitious. The first one of the name in accordance with the authority mentioned above came from Northumberland, and was slain with Malcolm III at Alnwick in 1093, leaving two sons, John and William. From the former all the Cumins in Scotland are said to be descended. William was preferred to the See of Durham by the Empress Maud.

Sir John, the Red Cumin (or Comyn), was the first to be designated as Lord of Badenoch, and was in 1240 ambassador from Alex-





## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

ander II to Louis IX of France. His son John, called the Black Lord of Badenoch, was second to none of the subjects of Scotland in wealth and power, and was one of those who vowed to support Queen Margaret, daughter of Alexander II, in her title to the crown, against all mortals; he however agreed to her marriage with the eldest son of Edward I in 1290, and on her death became an unscrupulous competitor for the crown of Scotland, basing his claim as being the son and heir of John, a son of Richard, son of William, son of Hextilda, a daughter and heiress of Gotherick, son and heir of Duncan, King of Scotland. Prior to this, Cumin, Lord of Tynedale, married the heiress of Fergus, the last of the old Earls of Buchan, and in 1220 in her right became Earl of Buchan.

Edward I of England, in pursuance of his schemes against Scotland, favored the rival claims of John Baliol to the throne of Scotland, which however did not prevent the Lord of Badenoch from swearing fealty in 1292 to the foe. Five years afterwards he died a prisoner in England, leaving his wife, daughter of John and sister of King John Baliol. His son, also known as Red Cumin, was an artful and ambitious dissembler, a panderer to the King of England, and on the point of betraying Robert Bruce perished under the daggers of Bruce and Kirkpatrick in the Church of Dumfries, February 10th, 1306. He was the last Lord of Badenoch of the surname of Cumin.

The line of the Earl of Buchan continued to flourish. Earl William, first of the title, founded the Abbey of Deer, now in ruins. He was Great Justiciary of Scotland in 1220 under Alexander II. His brother William was by that monarch created Earl of Menteith on his marriage to the heiress of that family, with whom he acquired a vast estate. Alexander, third Earl of Buchan, was Justiciary of Scotland, and with his clansman, the Lord of Badenoch, was one of the regents appointed on the death of Alexander III. John, his son, fourth Earl of Buchan, was High Constable of Scotland and one of the arbiters on the part of Baliol.

The slaughter of the Red Cumin by Bruce inspired the whole clan with a desire to avenge his death. They opposed the King, and were defeated at the battle of Barra in 1308, and pursued as far as Fyvie. The Earl was outlawed and his forfeited estates were divided between the Keiths, Hays and Douglasses, faithful supporters of the King, and whose good swords helped to win the battle of Ban-



## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

noekburn. His only son married a daughter of the Earl of Pembroke, and died without issue; but Jordanus Cumin, a kinsman of his got the lands of Inverallochy from Earl Alexander and became ancestor of the Cumins of Culter; however, Sir Robert Douglas got a charter of these lands in 1477 from James III. A number of the Cumin clan were slain in 1335 in the feudal battle of Culblean, in Glenmuick. The old clan is now represented by the Gordon-Cummings, Baronets of Gordonstoun, through the Cummings of Altyre, who succeeded to the name and arms of Gordon by intermarriage.

Sub-Clans:

Buchan, named from a district in Aberdeenshire.  
MacNiven or Niven, from Gaelic, *Naomh*, a saint.

*Davidson*—This clan associated themselves and took protection under William Mackintosh, seventh of Mackintosh clan, prior to 1350, and ever since has been regarded as a sept of Clan Chattan. Clan Chattan was an early confederacy of eight clans, deduced from a reputed founder, Gillacattan Mor; *i. e.* servant of St. Catan, whose name means little cat, the cat appearing in the crest and motto. He had two sons—Neachtan, ancestor of the MacPhersons; and Neill, whence the MacIntoshes. Neachtan's son was Read or Reth, through whose son Angus was a grandson Malcolm MacBeth, whose title to the earldom of Moray and the chieftainship of the clan was acknowledged by all Gaelic Scotland. Historians say that these eight clans and also the Camerons were of the same stock, and up to the dispute over chieftainship the MacPhersons, Davidsons, MacGillivrays, MacBeans, MacIntoshes, and three clans now extinct, followed the same chief; but in modern times these clans are treated separately. They wore the same badge, red whortleberry, and had the same war-cry, "Loch Moy."

The Davisons of Invernahaven in Badenoch were, according to common tradition, originally a branch of the Comyns. After the downfall of that clan, Donald Du of Invernahaven associated himself with Clan Chattan, married a daughter of Angus, sixth Mackintosh, and became a leading member of Clan Chattan. The Davidsons, called "Clann Daidh," from the first known leader, David Du, were chief actors in two disastrous fights at Invernahaven and the North Inch of Perth. In the former encounter, their leadership being favored by the captain of Clan Chattan, aroused the jealousy of another clan and they suffered defeat. The Davidsons and Mac-



## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

Phersons were not only of the Clan Chattan, but were relatives of the chief, and it is not intelligible why there should be such a bitter antagonism between them. The battle of Invernahaven arose on account of a dispute between the Camerons and the Mackintoshes. A portion of the Mackintosh's lands laid in Lochaber; this had been leased to the Camerons, and their refusal to pay the rent caused the Mackintoshes to seize their cattle. Ultimately this led to several severe fights, with varying success. About 1370 the Camerons convened their numerous clans and dependents, together with several friendly clans, to demand reprisals. The Mackintoshes collected an equal force consisting of several tribes under the general name of Clan Chattan. When the opposing forces came in sight, an unfortunate difference involving priority arose between the MacPhersons and Davidsons. An appeal being taken to Mackintosh, the captain of Clan Chattan, he imprudently decided in favor of the Davidsons. This decision incensed Cluny, the chief of the MacPhersons, and he withdrew his men, which greatly weakened his allies, who suffered a defeat. Mackintosh becoming irritated on account of his defeat, denounced the conduct of the MacPhersons, and stigmatized them as cowards, which so stung and incited Cluny that he called upon his men to attack the Camerons by night, which resulted in a dreadful slaughter, the enemy being pursued to the foot of a mountain, and their chief, Charles MacGillony, was killed, at a place called to this day "Coire Thearlaich," or Charles' Corry. At the battle of the North Inch of Perth the leading men of the Davidsons, with exception of one, were killed, whereby the family became virtually extinct.

The Davidsons of Tulloch stand high among the old landed families of the Highlands. Alexander Davidson of Davidson in Cromarty married in 1700, Miss Bayne, of Tulloch, and purchased the estate from his father-in-law. The Baynes of Tulloch for many generations occupied great position and influence in Ross-shire. Tulloch Castle is of ancient date, the keep having been built in 1166, and other parts of it in 1665. In the seventeenth century a branch of the family entered the service of France, having proved their descent to be noble for six generations prior to July, 1629, as shown by the *Livre d'Or* in the imperial archives of France. Another leading family is that known as the Davidsons of Cantray, in Inverness-shire.





## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

### Sub-Clans:

Davidson, from the Gaelic MacDaibhidh, usually spelt Mac-Daid (h).

MacDade, Dade, Davis, Davie, Dawson, Dow.

MacDhardh, pronounced MacKay and Kay.

*Drummond*—The traditional origin of this clan as stated by various genealogists, is in Maurice, the son of George, who was a younger son of Andrew, King of Hungary. Maurice espoused the cause of Edgar Atheling, the rightful heir to the English throne. With his mother Agatha and sisters Margaret and Christian, on his return voyage to Hungary, the ship was wrecked at a place on the Forth now known as St. Margaret's Hope. The eldest princess became the Queen of Malcolm III. Maurice was granted by the King the lands of Drummond or Drymen in Stirlingshire, adjoining the Buchanan estates, from which the family took their name. Drymen is derived from the Gaelic word *Druenan*, from *druim*, a ridge. The badge of the clan is *Lus an righ*—wild thyme; or *cuileann*, holly.

Maurice married one of the maids of honor of Queen Margaret, and from their son Malcolm all the Drummonds in Scotland are descended. There is no doubt that in the early stages of their history the Drummonds reached opulence and influence. Malcolm Beg, so-called from his low stature, the sixth of the family, married Ada, daughter of Malcolm, Earl of Lennox. He is mentioned in charters in the thirteenth century. Two of his grandsons became prisoners of Edward I, and the eldest Sir John under compulsion swore fealty to that monarch and served in the army against France. His eldest son, Sir Malcolm Drummond, married a daughter of Graham of Kincardline; was loyal to Bruce, and received from him certain lands in Perthshire. The grandson of Sir Malcolm Beg, Sir John, married Mary Montifex, who brought him the estates of Cargill Stobhall and other places. He had a bitter feud with the Monteiths of Ruskie, in which his kinsman Bryce Drummond was slain in 1330; he was accused of slaying in retaliation three of the Monteiths, and in compensation was forced to resign Rosneath. He retired to his lady's seat at Stobhall. Their daughter Annabella became Queen of Robert III.

Near the seat of Lord Gwdyr, in Muthill, stands the ruins of the stronghold of this ancient family. How the Drummonds parted





## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

with the lands of Drymen is not known. Sir Malcolm Drummond, the eldest son of Sir John, acquired Cargill, Stobhall, Kinloch, and other lands, from his aunt, Queen Margaret. He married Isabel Douglas, Countess of Mar, and was murdered in 1403 by a band of highland marauders. His son, Sir John Drummond, of Cargill and Stobhall, Judiciary of Scotland, was his successor. His son Walter succeeded him and had three sons; the eldest, Sir Malcolm, died in 1470, and his son John became the head of the clan. He was a Judiciary of Scotland, a privy councillor, constable of Stirling Castle, and employed in various embassies. He was created Lord Drummond in 1487-88. He died at age of eighty-one, in 1519, and was succeeded by his great-grandson David.

David, the second Lord Drummond, was twice married, and at his death in 1571 his eldest son Patrick became third Lord Drummond. Balfrone was bestowed upon Thomas, a younger brother of the chief, who before 1305 gave the patronage of the church to the Abbey of Inchaffry. The Barony of Drummond, which still goes by that name, before 1488 belonged to the first Earl of Lennox; this nobleman attempted in 1489 to avenge the death of James III, and lost the barony by forfeiture. Ten years afterwards the estates were bestowed upon the first Lord Drummond who, though ennobled by King James, joined the insurgents. It remained in the Drummond or Perth family for one hundred and thirty years, when in 1630 John, second Earl of Perth, sold it to William, Earl of Monteith.

The fourth Lord Drummond was created Earl of Perth in 1605, and his son John, the second Earl, was taken prisoner at the battle of Philiphaugh. James, the third Earl of Perth, was eldest son. James, the fourth Earl, was Lord Chancellor of Scotland; followed the fortunes of James VII and was created Duke of Perth, K. G., and died at St. Germain, France, in 1716. James, his son, the second Duke of Perth, married Lady Jane, daughter of the first Duke of Gordon. He joined the revolution of 1715, and died at Paris, France, five years later. He was succeeded by his eldest son, James, who was wounded in 1746 at the battle of Culloden. This line became extinct in 1902, at the death of the fourteenth Earl without male issue.

James, the second son of David, the second Lord Drummond, was created by James VI in 1610 Lord Maderty of Easter Craigton.



## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

On the death of the third peer, the title devolved on his brother, Viscount Strathallan, and his descendant, the ninth Viscount, succeeded to the Earldom of Perth. The present chief of the Drummonds is William Huntly Drummond, fifteenth Earl of Perth, also Viscount Strathallan born in 1871. Among other families which may be mentioned are the Drummonds of Hawthornden in Midlothian, cadets of the Perth Drummond; also the Drummonds of Coneraig; the Drummonds of Stanmore in Middlesex; and the Drummonds of Blair Drummonds.

*Farquharson*—The Farquharsons are one of the leading septs of Clan Chattan. Their war cry is *Carn na Cuimhne*, "Cairn of Remembrance;" their badge, *Ros na greine*, little sunflower, or *Lus-nam-ban-sith*, foxglove. The clan branch off from Alexander Ciar, the third Shaw of Rothiemurchus, who married one of the Stuarts of Kincardine, the progenitor of the clan being the Farquhar, the fourth son of this marriage. The clan took up their residence in Aberdeenshire, and the descendants of Farquhar became known as Farquharsons, or Clan Fhearchair. The name is derived from the Gaelic word *ferchar*, fear man; and *car*, friendly;—therefore the clan became known as Farquharsons, or Clan Fhearchair, now MacKeracher or MacKercher. The founder settled in Aberdeenshire in March, 1371, and his great-grandson, Findla or Finlay Mor, gained distinction in history of Scotland in 1547 when he was killed while performing the duties of standard bearer at the battle of Pinkie, and after him the Farquharsons were termed Clan Fhionnlaidh, or descendants of Finlay. The Farquharsons acknowledge MacIntosh as their chief in a bond of 1594.

Farquharson of Invercauld in 1641 bore a prominent part in the Scottish civil wars of that period, and was ordered by Parliament to levy a body of armed men to secure Angus and the Mearns. Four years later he served at the head of his clan at the battle of Montrose. In the Rising of 1715, John Farquharson of Invercauld, with a force of one hundred and forty men, joined the Clan Chattan regiment. He was lieutenant-colonel of the regiment, and accompanied it to England, and was taken prisoner at the battle of Preston, after defending a most dangerous post. He was released from prison August 9, 1716. His daughter Anne married Angus, the chief of the MacIntosh clan during the Rising of 1745; she took a leading part for the Stuarts, and was called "Colonel Anne." At the battle of



## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

Culloden the Farquharsons numbered five hundred men, and were in the center of the front line.

The Laird of Invercauld in 1748 gave a ninety-nine years lease to the government of the Castle of Braemar for a military station. James Farquharson died in 1750, and was succeeded by his son, also named James; the latter in 1745 was a captain of Foot in the Hanoverian army. He retained possession of the estates for fifty-six years; dying in 1806 without male issue, the entail descended to his only surviving child Catherine, who married Captain James Ross, of the Royal Navy, a second son of Sir John Lockhart, Baronet of Balnagowan; he took the name of Farquharson, and died in 1810. His successor was his son James, who died in 1862, and in turn was succeeded by his son, James Ross Farquharson, who died in 1888 and was succeeded by the present Laird Alexander Haldane Farquharson, born in 1867.

The land of the Farquharsons was an ideal residence of a Highland chief, Invercauld, standing on rising ground not far removed from the bank of the river Dee, which glides silently and majestically through the valley. The surrounding country contains vast forests of birch and fir trees. Among the other leading families of the name are the Farquharsons of Monaltrie, Whitehouse, Haughton, Allargue and Breda and Finzean, all located in Aberdeenshire.

### Sub-Clans:

Coutts, from Cutts, nickname of Cuthbert.

Farquhar.

Fin(d) lay from Fin (d) layson.

Greusach, from the Gaelic *greusaich*, shoemaker.

Hardie or Hardy, from the Norman word *hardi*, daring.

Lyon, a lion.

MacCaig.

MacCardney, MacCartney, said to be from MacHardie.

MacCuaig; MacCaig derived from *cuthaig* or *cubhag*, a cuckoo.

MacFarquhar, MacEaracher, MacKer (ra)cher, from the Gaelic MacFhearchair.

MacHardie.

MacKin (d) lay.

Reoch, Riach, from the Gaelic word *riabhach*, mottled gray.

*Fergusson*—The badge of clan of Fergusson is the same as that of the Farquharsons. The ancient home of the clan was in Atholl, where they founded before the time of Robert the Bruce. Their





## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

chief was Baron Fergusson of Dunfallandy; they also possessed the third part of the lands of Strathardle and Glenshee in Perthshire. The Fergussons were strong supporters of Bruce and wherever in Scotland he held lands, branches of the clan settled, therefore we have the Fergusons of Craigdarroch, of Kilkerran, of Kinmundy, of Pitfour, and of Balquidder.

The Atholl branch followed the banners of Montrose in the civil wars, and was the original nucleus of the victorious cavalier army. After Killiecrankie, they joined Viscount Dundee's army and formed an important fighting strength of the Dukedom of Atholl and Earldom of Strathardle. They espoused the cause of Prince Charlie in 1645, and the Laird was arrested the June following the battle of Culloden, and imprisoned in the gloomy dungeon of Carlisle.

The Balquidder branch of the clan was settled in that parish in the thirteen century, but it is not known definitely whether they originally came from Atholl. They were an important branch of the clan, and at one time were ministered to by the famous Robert Kirk, the first to give the Highlanders a metrical translation of the Psalms in their own language.

The Fergussons of Aberdeenshire were land owners in the fourteenth century; the best known families were the Kinmundy and Pitfour, many of whom distinguished themselves on the Bench and at the Bar. The Fergussons also were found in Banffshire and Kincardineshire, as well as Fife and Forfar. They were not however confined to the east coast of Scotland, as several colonies are to be found in the eighteenth century in Argyllshire. In the Cowal district there are many families of the name. Fergusson of Glenshellich was the head of the Argyllshire families. He held the office of serjeantry or mairship of Strachur. Daniel Fergusson the last of the family to hold the estates, died in 1808.

Fergus Fergusson had a crown charter of Kilkerran, Ayrshire, in 1466; Duncan Fergusson of Kilkerran appears on the record 1508-1547, and Bernard Fergusson of Kilkerran 1564-1600. His son, Simon Fergusson of Kilkerran, died in 1591. He was succeeded by his son, Sir John Fergusson of Kilkerran, who suffered for his attachment to the cause of Charles I and died before 1650. His eldest son, Alexander, sold Kilkerran to his cousin, Sir John Fergusson, the son of Simon of Auchinwind, the second son of Sir John Fergusson of Kilkerran. He was created a Baronet of Nova Scotia





## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

in 1708, and at his decease in 1729 his eldest son, Sir James, became the second Baronet. He was a judge of the Court of Sessions in 1741 and a member of Parliament from Sutherland. His son Adam was the third Baronet, and dying in 1813 without issue, the title devolved on his nephew, Sir James Fergusson, born in 1765. He married Jean, daughter of Sir David Dalrymple, Lord Hailes. Their only son, Charles Dalrymple Fergusson, on the death of his father in 1838 became the fifth Baronet. His death occurred in 1849, and his eldest son, the Right Honorable Sir James Fergusson, became the sixth Baronet. He gained distinction in military life, also in government circles; was governor of South Australia, New Zealand and Bombay. He also filled the position of Under Secretary of Foreign Affairs and Postmaster General. He died in 1907, and was succeeded by his son, Sir Charles Fergusson, the fifth and present Baronet, who was identified in the military life of Great Britain, died in 1805, and the estate was sold three years later.

The family is of great antiquity in Dumfries and Galloway, and the Fergussons of Craigdarroch are among the old families of Scotland. The head of this family in 1587 was summoned before the Council and fined for being in rebellion against the King. John Fergusson of Craigdarroch was in 1642 Commissioner in Parliament for Dumfriesshire. A head of the family married Annie Laurie, of Maxwelltown, made famous by the Scottish song. Another Laird was slain at the battle of Killiecrankie.

The name is derived from the Gaelic words, *fear*, a man, and *gus*, strong, and has many variations, as Fergus, Ferries (for *MacFearghuis*), MacFergus, MacKerras (Gaelic, *MacFearghuis*), MacKersey.

Sub-Clan—MacAdie.

*Forbes*—The clan of Forbes takes its name from the Aberdeenshire parish of Forbes, and the Morgans was also an Aberdeenshire clan and are possibly one and the same with the Forbeses. The first one on record is Duncan Forbes, who had a charter for the lands of Forbes from Alexander III in 1271. John Forbes of Forbes is named in 1306 on the English Roll. Sir Christopher De Forbes is named in a grant of land in 1325.

John De Forbes of that ilk had a charter from Thomas, Earl of Mar, of lands of Edinbanchory and Craigloggy, which was confirmed in 1364 by King David II. He was sheriff of Aberdeen in



## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

1374, and the Bishop of Moray granted him the lands of Fyronie in 1378. He was succeeded by his son, Sir John Forbes, who was a man of eminence in the days of Robert II and III. He further increased the acquisitions of the family possessions and died in 1406. He had four sons—Alexander, William, John, and Alaster Cam; and from the three younger sprang the Forbeses of Pitsligo, Culloiden, Waterton and Foveran.

His successor, the eldest son Sir Alexander Forbes, accompanied in 1408 Alexander Stewart, Earl of Mar, on an expedition into England to tilt with English knights. He served with honor in France at the head of one hundred horse and forty pikemen under Constable Buchan, in the war against Henry V, and was raised to the peerage by James I about 1442 as the first Lord Forbes. At his death in 1448, he was succeeded by his eldest son, Sir James, who in 1456 received a license to fortify the castle of Drumminor, commonly called Forbes. He married Egidia, daughter of William Keith, the first Earl Marischal. Of their three sons, William became the third Lord Forbes, Duncan ancestor of the Forbeses of Corsindae, and Monymusk and Patrick ancestors of the Forbeses, Barons of Craigievar, now Lord Sempill, and also of the Earls of Granard.

Sir William married Christian Gordon, daughter of Alexander, first Earl of Huntly, and was succeeded in rotation by his three sons—Alexander, Arthur, and John, as the fourth, fifth and sixth Lord Forbes. The latter was twice married. His eldest son by his second marriage, John, was executed in 1537 for an alleged conspiracy against the life of James V. His second son, William, became the seventh Lord Forbes, and married Elizabeth, daughter and co-heir of Sir William Keith of Innerugie; died in 1547, and his eldest son, John, the eighth Lord Forbes, became his successor. He was active on the King's side against the Catholic Lords, 1594-95. His eldest son, William, became a member of a religious order abroad and died in 1592. His second son, John, succeeded to the title and estates as the ninth Lord Forbes, but joined the order of Capuchins and died unmarried; and Arthur, his half-brother, became the tenth Lord Forbes. His eldest son, Alexander, succeeded him as the eleventh Lord Forbes. He was a lieutenant-general under Gustavus Adolphus, afterwards in command of the Scottish army sent in 1643 to Ireland, and died at Stockholm, Sweden, in 1672.



## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

The successions of the baronetcy for the next half century were to the eldest sons, all named William, who respectively were the twelfth, thirteenth, and fourteenth Lord Forbes. Francis, the fifteenth Lord Forbes, was a son of William, and was succeeded by his uncle James as the sixteenth Lord Forbes. His son James became his successor as seventeenth Lord Forbes, and married in 1760 Catharine, only daughter of Sir Robert Innes, Baronet of Orton. He was appointed deputy governor of Fort William, where he died in 1804, when the title and estates devolved on James Ochonoar, his eldest son, who became the eighteenth Lord Forbes. He was a general officer in the army, colonel of the Twenty-first Scots Fusiliers. His eldest son, James, lieutenant-colonel of the Coldstream Guards, died before his father, and he was succeeded by his second son, Walter, as the nineteenth Lord Forbes. His lordship also served in the Coldstream Guards at the battle of Waterloo, and died in 1868, and was succeeded by his second son, Horace Courtenay Gammell, as the twentieth Lord Forbes. At the latter's death unmarried, in 1914, this brother, Atholl Laurence Cuninghame, the sixth son of Walter, the nineteenth Baron Forbes, succeeded to the title and estates. The Barony of Forbes is the first in the peerage of Scotland, and takes rank before all the Lords of Parliament.

*Forbes of Pitsligo*—As before stated, Duncan the second son of James, the second Lord Forbes, was the ancestor of the Forbes of Pitsligo. He married Christian Mercer, daughter of the Laird of Ballief, Provost of Perth, and widow of Gilbert Skene of that ilk. Their son William married Margaret Lumsden; their two sons were James, who continued the line, and Duncan who obtained the Priory lands of Monymusk at the time of the Reformation. He married Agnes Gray, and died in 1587, and their son William married Lady Margaret Douglas, daughter of William, the ninth Earl of Angus. The death of William Forbes of Monymusk occurred before 1618, when he was succeeded by his eldest son William, who was created a Baronet of Nova Scotia in 1626 and became the first Baronet of Monymusk. His son William was the second Baronet of Monymusk, and was succeeded by his only son, Sir John, as the third Baronet of Monymusk. He had with other issue John, from whom the family of Ogilvie-Forbes of Boyndlie are descended. The fourth Baronet, Sir William Forbes, sold Monymusk to Sir Francis Grant, Lord Cullen, in 1713. William, the fifth Baronet, succeeded his grandfather, and





## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

at his death in 1743 his eldest surviving son, Sir William, a banker of great eminence in Edinburgh, succeeded to the title and estates. His death occurred November 12, 1806, and he was succeeded by his eldest son William as the seventh Baronet. He married Williamina, sole child and heir of Sir John Belches Stuart. Of the issue of this marriage, William, the eldest son, a captain in the army, died unmarried in 1826. The second son, John Stuart, at the death of his father in 1828, became the ninth Baronet. Sir John assumed the additional name of Hepburn on the death of Alexander Hepburn, as their entail to the barony of Invermay and as heir-in-law to the estate of Balmanno, both in the county of Perth. He died May 27, 1866, and was succeeded by his nephew, William Stuart Forbes, born June 16, 1836, as the ninth Baronet. He died July 5, 1906, and the honors and estates devolved on his oldest son, Sir Charles Hay Hepburn Stuart Forbes, born June 8, 1871, the present Baronet.

The Forbes, Baronets of Craigievar, a branch of the ancient clan of Forbes, was founded by Patrick Forbes of Corse, armor-bearer of James III. He had in 1482 a feu charter from the crown of Coull Kencraige and Corse in the barony of Oneil. His son, David of Forthirbirss, had the same lands confirmed in 1506, and five years later they were erected in his favor into the barony of Oneil. His son by his wife, Elizabeth Panter, Patrick Forbes of Corse, married Marjory, daughter of Lumsden of Cushny, and was father of William Forbes of Corse, who died in 1596, having married Elizabeth, daughter of Strachan of Thornton, by whom he had with other issue, Patrick of Corse, Bishop of Aberdeen, noted for his piety and learning. William, his second son, accumulated a large fortune by mercantile pursuits abroad, and purchased Craigievar in 1610 from John Mortimer, and finished the beautiful castle that the former owner had commenced. The male line of the Bishop failing, he succeeded his father, and in 1630 was created Baronet of Nova Scotia and became first Baronet of Craigievar. He acted on the Parliamentary side during the civil war and at his death was succeeded by his eldest son, Sir John Forbes, known as "the Red Sir John," a man of note and of great energy of character. His son, Sir William Forbes, became the third Baronet, and was succeeded by his son, Sir Arthur Forbes, who for many years represented the County of Aberdeen in Parliament. His son, William, the fifth Baronet of Craigievar, married Hon. Sarah, eldest daughter of John, thirteenth





## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

Lord Sempill, and their son Arthur, the sixth Baronet, was succeeded by his brother John, who died February 16, 1846, having issue William, who as the eighth Baronet, succeeded his cousin Maria Janet Baroness Sempill as the seventeenth Baron Sempill. He was a lieutenant in the Coldstream Guards and served in the Crimean War. He died July 21, 1905, and was succeeded by his eldest son, John Forbes Sempill, as the eighteenth Lord Sempill.

The Irish branch of the Forbes clan was established by Sir Arthur Forbes, the sixth son of William Forbes of Corse, and a grandson of Patrick Forbes, the armor bearer of James III. He settled in Ireland in 1620; two years later he was made by patent a free denizen of that kingdom. He was created in 1628 a Baronet of Nova Scotia, and obtained a grant of lands in the county of Longford, which were erected into the manor of Castle Forbes. He married Jane, widow of Sir Claud Hamilton of Clonyn, and she defended Castle Forbes in 1646. Sir Arthur was killed in a duel in 1632, while abroad as lieutenant-colonel of his regiment in the service of Gustavus Adolphus. His eldest son, Sir Arthur, zealously espoused the royal cause in Scotland, served under Montrose, was rewarded after the Restoration by being sworn of the privy council in Ireland and appointed marshal of the army in that kingdom. He was elevated to the peerage of Ireland in 1675 as Baron Clanehugh and Viscount of Granard, county of Longford, and in 1684 was created Earl of Granard. His lordship died in 1695 and was succeeded by his son Arthur, who also gained military honors and was imprisoned in the Tower by William III. He died in 1734, and his only surviving son, George, became the third Earl of Granard. He was called to the House of Peers during the lifetime of his father as Lord Forbes. A naval officer of great eminence, at the time of his death he was senior admiral of the British Navy. His son George, the fourth Earl of Granard, was a lieutenant-general in the army, and at his decease in 1769 was succeeded by his only son George, whose surviving son George became the sixth Earl. This nobleman was created in 1806 a peer of the United Kingdom as Baron Granard of Castle Donnington in the county of Leicester. His lordship died in Paris, June 9, 1837, and was succeeded by his grandson, George Arthur Hastings, who died in 1889, when the title and estates devolved on his eldest son, Bernard Arthur William Patrick Hastings, the eighth and present Earl of Granard.



## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

The war cry of the Forbes is Lonach—a mountain in Strath Don. The clan pipe music is march, *Cath ghlinn eurainn*, the battle of Glen Eurann; also The Lonach Highlanders. The badge, *bealaidh*, broom.

### Sub-Clans:

Bannerman, flagbearer.

Fordyces, from Fordyce parish in Banffshire.

Michie, a variant spelling for Forbush.

*Fraser*—The name Fraser is spelt variously as Frazer, Freser, Frezel, Frisel, and on the Roll of Battle Abbey it is Fresell. The Gaelic form is "Friseal." The name is referred to in the old French, as *freze*, strawberry, a possible diminutive of which is *frezel*, Latin *fragula*. Seven strawberry leaves form part of the armorial bearings of the Frasers. The war cry is "A Mhor-fhaiche," "The Great Field," and later "Caisteal Dhuni," Castle Downie. The badge, *iubhar*, yew.

The clan is of Norman descent, and their first resting place in Scotland was East Lothian, and in the twelfth and thirteenth centuries they diverged into Tweeddale and subsequently into the shires of Inverness and Aberdeen. In the thirteenth century a line of Frasers owned Oliver Castle, in the county of Peebles. The first record is of Gilbert of Fraser, a witness of a charter to the monastery of Coldstream in 1109, during the reign of Alexander II. Simon Fraser made many donations for religious purposes in the time of David I. During the reign of William the Lion, Bernard Fraser in 1178 made a donation to Newbattle Abbey. In the time of Alexander II there are records of Gilbert Fraser, Bernard Fraser of Drem, and Thomas Fraser. But it is difficult to connect these Frasers with each other, though doubtless they come of common stock.

Oliver, of Oliver Castle in the county of Peebles, son of Gilbert, dying without issue, Adam, son of Oliver's brother Udard, succeeded; Laurence, the next in succession, dying without issue, was succeeded by the third son of Gilbert. Simon, son of the last incumbent, was succeeded by his brother Bernard, prominent in the reign of Alexander II, and he by his only son, Sir Gilbert Fraser of Oliver Castle. Sir Simon, *pater*, was succeeded by Simon, *filius*. As he had no son, the reversion went to Sir Andrew Fraser, son of Sir Gilbert, who was younger brother of Simon *pater*. His son was the



## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

first of the Frasers of Lovat, says Mackenzie ("History of the Frasers"). Sir Simon Fraser of Oliver Castle held a high position among the *Magnates Scotiæ* in the troubles after the death of Alexander II. He won three battles of Roslin in one day in the year 1303; three years later he was executed by Edward I, leaving two daughters as co-heiresses. The male succession was continued by the posterity of Alexander Fraser, a younger brother of the family, who seems to have been the first Frazier to possess estates in the Highlands. He was killed at the battle of Dupplin.

Burke continues the succession from Simon *filius*, to a brother Alexander, who married Mary, sister of Robert Bruce, and head of the Frasers of Findrack; Hugh was a grandson of this Simon. He was a portioner, with Sir William Fenton of Ard, of lands from the Bishops of Moray, and owned Kinnell in Forfarshire. His grandson Hugh, who succeeded as chieftain of the clan, was High Sheriff of Inverness, one of the ransom hostages for James I, and on his return from England granted lands in Nairn and of the barony of Kinnell in Forfarshire. By some authorities he is counted as the first Lord Lovat. He died in 1440, and was the father of Thomas or Hugh Fraser, who died ten years later, leaving a son in his minority.

Hugh Fraser is generally acknowledged as the first Lord of Lovat or Lord Fraser of Lovat, created between 1458 and 1464. His eldest son Hugh fell in the battle of Flodden, and his second son, Alexander, was ancestor of the Frasers of Farraline and Ledclune. Thomas, the second Lord Lovat, was in the reign of James IV, Justiciary of the North of Scotland. He died in 1524, and his eldest son Hugh became the third Lord; his second son James was the ancestor of the Frasers of Culbokie. The third Lord of Lovat was Queen Mary's Justiciary in the north, and was in 1544 with his eldest son Hugh, killed in an engagement with the MacDonalds at Loch Lochy. His second son, Alexander, became the fourth Lord Lovat, and at his death in 1558 the title and the estates devolved on his eldest son, Hugh, who died in 1576, and his son Simon became the sixth Lord Lovat. His death took place in 1633, and his eldest son Simon having predeceased him, the succession went to his second son Hugh. The seventh Lord Lovat died in 1646, and was succeeded by his grandson Hugh, a son of his second son Hugh, who died in 1643.





## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

Hugh, the eighth Lord Lovat, had a son Hugh, who on his death in 1672 became the ninth Lord Lovat. He married Amelia, daughter of John Marquess of Atholl. The issue of this marriage was four daughters; Amelia, the eldest, on the death of her father in 1696, assumed the title of Baroness Lovat, though her right was questioned by her uncle Thomas Fraser of Beaufort, and his son Simon. The case was contested in the courts, though she continued to possess the estates until 1715, when the case was compromised. Thomas Fraser of Beaufort and his heirs was declared as possessor of the title and estates as the tenth Lord Lovat *de jure*. His death having occurred in 1699, his son Simon became eleventh Lord Lovat. His career was remarkable. After the death of Hugh, the ninth Lord Lovat, he induced his eldest daughter to elope with him, but she soon afterwards returned to her mother. He then seized the estates, and for this and other acts of violence he was tried in absence in 1698 and a sentence of death and attainder pronounced against him. He next forcibly possessed the person of the widow of the ninth Lord and compelled her to marry him, for which he was tried and outlawed in 1701. In 1715 he took part with the government, obtained a remission of his crimes and a gift of Fraser of Fraserdale forfeited life rent of the Lovat estates. He then endeavored to assert his right to the dignity of Lord Lovat at an election of representatives peers, but his vote was objected to. He however obtained from the Court of Sessions a remission of the decision, giving the heir female the title, and in virtue of decree in his favor in 1730 became eleventh Lord Lovat. He took part in the rebellion of 1745, was impeached by the House of Lords, and executed April 9, 1747. His son Simon became a general in the army, saw service in Portugal and America. His father's forfeited lands were granted him, and he died in 1782. The last of the direct line of the family was Archibald Campbell, Consul General to Algiers in 1766, and member of Parliament for Inverness in 1782. He married Jane, daughter of William Fraser of Ledclune. His five sons predeceased him, unmarried. He died December 8, 1815, and the male representation of the family passed to Thomas Alexander Fraser, twelfth Baron Lovat, descended from Thomas, the second son of Alexander, the fourth Lord. He was created Baron Lovat of Lovat, county Inverness, January 28, 1837, in the peerage of the United Kingdom, and also established his rights to the Scottish barony of Lovat. He





## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

was succeeded on his death, June 2, 1875, by his eldest son Simon, the thirteenth Baron Lovat, born December 21, 1828, and died September 6, 1887, when the honors devolved on the present baron, his second son, Simon Joseph.

### Sub-Clans:

Frissell, or Frizell.

Macinmey, Makemie, MacKim, MacKimmie, MacShimes, MacSimon, MacSimin, MacSymon, Sim, Sims, Simon, Syme, Syom, all from Simon *pater*, his sons being in Gaelic, MacShimi, pronounced Macimney.

Tweedie (Twiddy), emigrant from Tweeddale.





## Editorial—Literary Notes

---

It is pleasing to find in such discriminating prints as the literary pages of the "New York Times" and the "New York Evening Post," appreciative references to "Americana." These publications are held in regard by an unusually intelligent contingent of the reading public.

The current number of "The Yale Review" presents, as usual, a most appealing array of papers, of real timeliness, neither too reminiscent nor too anticipative. Among the principal ones are Mario Puccini's "Young Italy," telling of the new aspirations of Italy's people as following after the Great War; Mr. McCracken's masterly study of "American College Government;" Mr. Lett's "A Child's Religion," of deep interest to every parent who recalls his own youth and contrasts himself with his son and daughter just entering upon young man and young womanhood; Professor Bragg's "New World of the Atom," which suggests more stupendous questions than science has yet answered; and C. Reinold Noyes' "Chart of Population." As usual, the Book Reviews are of commanding interest, but only a few captions may be here cited: "Autobiographical Intimacies," dealing with recent volumes by Mrs. Patrick Campbell, John Drew, the Countess Tolstoy, Harry Kemp, John St. Leo Strachey and James Gibbons Huneker; "Memorials of Prime Ministers," portraying various of Britain's leading men during the war recently closed: "Self-Criticism in America," suggesting wherein American literature is deserving of rebuke; and "Wilsonia," citing more than a half-dozen volumes in which "The Peace President" (such is the title of one of them), is considered from as many different standpoints by as many different close observers, most of them on more or less intimate relations with him.

This summary cannot be dismissed without mention of the review by Mr. Beers of P. P. Howe's "Life of Hazlett," a hack writer whom the reviewer brings into vivid contrast with several



## EDITORIAL

brighter geniuses. But why should said reviewer in these "fair, well spoken days," call up such visions as witness the following:

"At one time, Hazlett drank too much gin, though his biographers do not acknowledge that it hurt his complexion. And he broke off the habit, and during his last fifteen years took nothing stronger than tea—very strong tea, which was probably worse for him than gin. Charles Lamb also drank too much gin; Addison exceeded in wine-bibbing; Thackeray was over-fond of claret; and Daniel Webster's performances with the brandy bottle are legendary. There was more drinking in a single night at Ambrose's than Hazlett or Lamb equaled in a month. But then they drank whiskey at Ambrose's, 'the true Glenlivet,' the drink of Tories and gentlemen."

The reviewer might have added, which he did not, and it is not necessarily a reflection upon present-day writers, that there was a very superior literature in those (as-compared-to-the present) dissolute days.

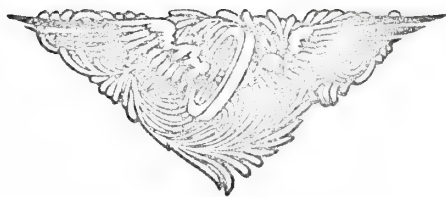
"The Canadian Historical Review" (Toronto, June, 1923), has an article of commanding interest, "Some Letters of David Thompson," who has been denominated "the greatest land geographer the British race has produced." Born in England, in 1770, he left school at the early age of fourteen, but with an ardent love for mathematics, and was apprenticed to the Hudson's Bay Company, which he left after thirteen years to join the North West Company. While thus employed, he devoted himself to exploring and surveying the immense region between the Rocky Mountains and Hudson's Bay, and from his data he made his famous map of Northwestern America. His later days were pitiful. He impoverished himself in paying off the debts of sons whom he had set up in business. His eyesight failed him. Finally, he was obliged to sell his surveying instruments and even to pawn his coat, to procure food for his family and himself. His biographer (Mr. J. B. Tirrell) has said of him that with extraordinary accuracy he placed on his map the main routes of natural travel in one million two hundred thousand square miles of Canada, and five hundred thousand square miles of the United States; he surveyed the head waters of the Mississippi, he opened the first trade between what is now Canada and the territory beyond the Great Divide; he fixed the locations of outstanding geographical points over this vast area with the sure-



## EDITORIAL

ness of an expert astronomer, though he had to learn how to figure with the stars when he was a boy wintering on the Saskatchewan river. Adds Mr. Tirrell, what he did has been of inestimable practical value to the continent and to the world. And after all this, Mr. Tirrell finally says:

“ For whatever reason, the project of publishing the map came to naught. It is a curious commentary on human nature that while other maps of the period were eagerly purchased, often for the sake of information that had been lifted without acknowledgment from Thompson's map, no market could be found for the original, although it contained not only all that the map-makers of the day could offer in regard to Northwestern America, but also a wealth of information, the result of a lifetime's close observation, which hitherto had not seen the light in any form, and some of which has not even yet been published except insofar as it is included in the reproduction accompanying the Champlain Society's edition of Thompson's Journals.”







STATEMENT OF THE OWNERSHIP, MANAGEMENT, CIRCULATION, ETC.

REQUIRED BY THE ACT OF CONGRESS OF AUGUST 24, 1912.

OF AMERICANA, published Quarterly at Somerville, New Jersey, for April 2nd, 1923.

City and State of New York, } ss.  
County of New York, }

Before me, a Notary Public, in and for the State and County aforesaid, personally appeared Marion L. Lewis, who, having been duly sworn according to law, deposes and says that he is the Vice-President and Manager of the American Historical Society, Inc., publisher of Americana, and that the following is, to the best of his knowledge and belief, a true statement of ownership, management, etc., of the aforesaid publication for the date shown in the above caption, required by the Act of August 24, 1912, embodied in section 443, Postal Laws and Regulations, to wit:

1. That the names and addresses of the publisher, editor, managing editor, and business managers are: Publisher, The American Historical Society, Inc., Somerville, N. J., and 80 East 11th street, New York City; Editor, Fenwick Y. Hedley, No. 80 East 11th street, New York City; Managing Editor, Marion L. Lewis, No. 80 East 11th street, New York City; Business Manager, Marion L. Lewis, No. 80 East 11th street, New York City.

2. That the owners are: The American Historical Society, Inc.; Benjamin F. Lewis, Sr., No. 908 Central avenue, Wilmette, Ill.; Marion L. Lewis, No. 80 East 11th street, New York City; Metcalf B. Hatch, Nutley, N. J.; Ed Lewis, No. 192 Park Place, Brooklyn, N. Y.; F. M. Keller, 80 East 11th St., New York, N. Y.; Benj. F. Lewis, Jr., 180 North Market St., Chicago, Ill.; John P. Downs, 1006 East 28th St., Brooklyn, N. Y.; Louise M. Greuling, 22 Weston Place, Nutley, N. J.; Harriet H. Lewis, 908 Central Ave., Wilmette, Ill.; Mabel E. Lewis, 171 Prospect St., Nutley, N. J.; Myrtle M. Lewis, 1006 East 28th St., Brooklyn, N. Y.; Florence K. Parks, State Road, Great Barrington, Mass.

3. That the known bondholders, mortgagees, and other security holders owning or holding 1 per cent. or more of total amount of bonds, mortgages, or other securities are: None.

4. That the two paragraphs next above, giving the names of the owners, stockholders, and security holders, if any, contain not only the list of stockholders and security holders as they appear upon the books of the company, but also, in cases where the stockholder or security holder appears upon the books of the company as trustee or in any other fiduciary relation, the name of the person or corporation for whom such trustee is acting, is given; also that the said two paragraphs contain statements embracing affiant's full knowledge and belief as to the circumstances and conditions under which stockholders and security holders who do not appear upon the books of the company as trustees, hold stock and securities in a capacity other than that of a bona fide owner; and this affiant has no reason to believe that any other person, association, or corporation has any interest direct or indirect in the said stock, bonds, or other securities than as so stated by him.

MARION L. LEWIS, Business Manager.

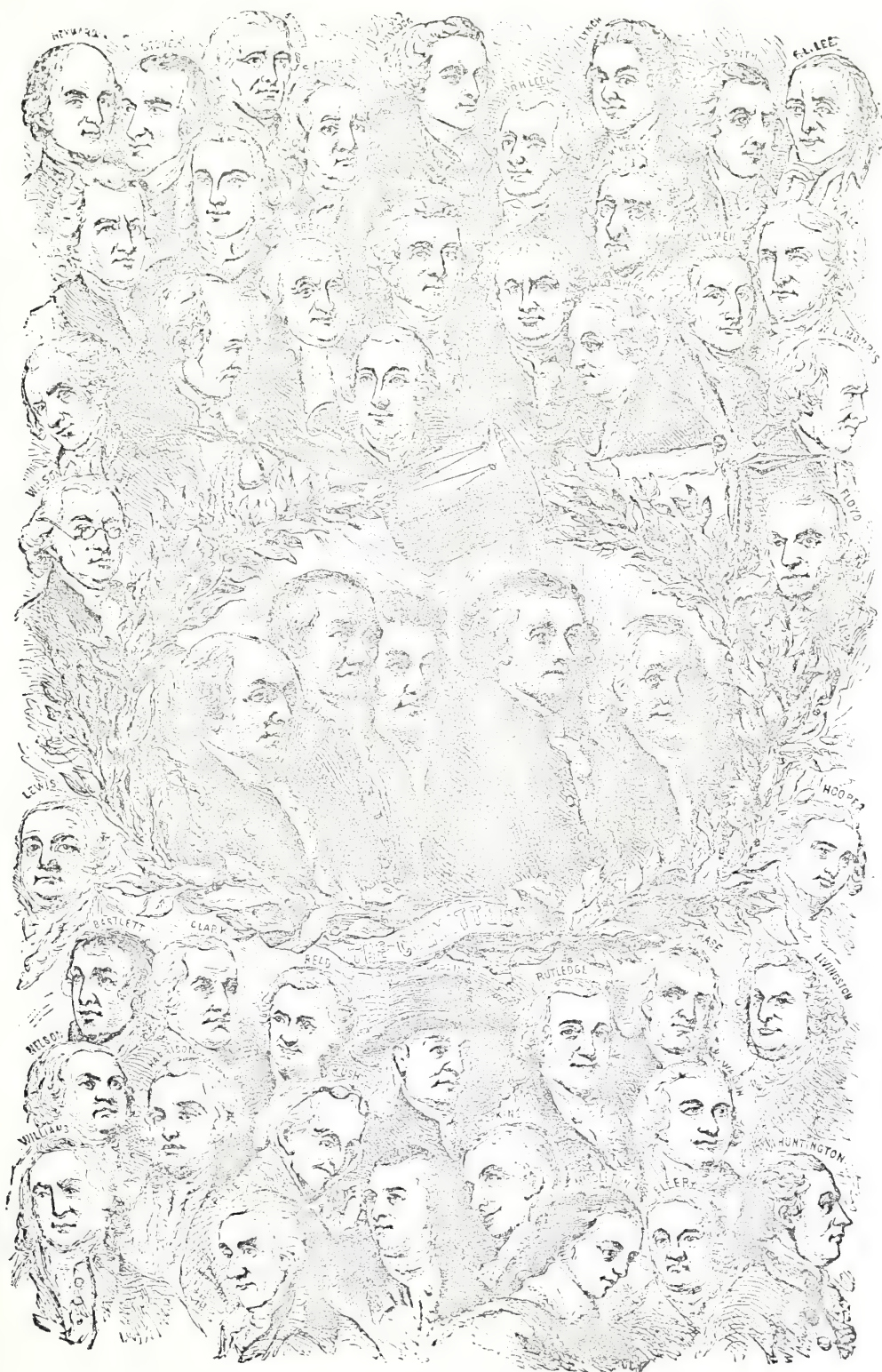
Sworn to and subscribed before me this 2nd day of April, 1923.

(Seal).

F. M. KELLER.

Notary Public Bronx Co., No. 84.  
Certificate filed in N. Y. Co., No. 482.  
Commission expires March 30, 1924.





PORTRAITS OF THE SIGNERS OF THE DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE.





Above, Standish Hall, Standish. Below, Cross and Stocks, Standish




# AMERICANA

OCTOBER, 1923

## Historic Pilgrim Shrines

BY MRS. ALTON BROOKS PARKER (AMELIA DAY CAMPBELL)

N my travels through Europe last summer, as a descendant of Mayflower ancestry I made pilgrimages to the countries with which the lives of our Pilgrim Fathers are interwoven. Holland claimed my first attention, and I approached Leiden with reverence. It is only a short distance from the Hague, and is one of the most picturesque towns in Holland. It has a population of less than sixty thousand. The rivers run through the town, and are used as canals. A favorite means of freight carrying is by the boats on these waterways, propelled by their huge magenta colored sails. There are many attractive public buildings, and it was from the Burg that the inhabitants watched for eleven months for the relief promised them by William the Silent, which eventually arrived in time to drive the Spaniards away.

The place of greatest interest to Mayflower descendants is St. Peter's Church, where John Robinson lies buried in the southwest chapel. On the outside of the wall is this inscription:

The Mayflower 1620  
in memory of  
Revd. John Robinson M. A.  
Pastor of the English Church worshipping  
Over against this spot A. D. 1609-1625  
Whence at his prompting went forth  
The Pilgrim Fathers  
To settle in New England 1620  
Buried in this House of Worship 4 March 1625  
Act. 49

The church is a very large handsome edifice, seating several thousand people. The pulpit is that used by John Robinson. Be-





## HISTORIC PILGRIM SHRINES

fore the Pilgrims worshiped here it was a Catholic Cathedral. There is a row of grated windows opening on a high balcony through which the nuns used to listen to the service.

There is one place in Leiden that sightseers, even Mayflower descendants, like to visit because of its quaintness, seclusion and charm, and that is St. Anna Hofgen, meaning almshouse. One opens a street door and walks down a long passage to a little cloistered square full of flowers and sunshine. There are thirteen entrance doors from the square, each of which admits to a tiny compartment of one room with a cupboard in the wall for sleeping, and a pantry, the upper attic room being the kitchen. These thirteen compartments are now occupied by thirteen old ladies, but were formerly the abodes of thirteen nuns. In this enclosure there is a small chapel about twelve feet square, "above which is the priest's small room containing the confessional chair, the tiny oak panelled recess for his bed, the iron chest for his collections, and his copper warming pan."

We are not unmindful of the fact that it was here in Leiden that the Pilgrims lived for about twelve years, and that it was the liberal laws of government, equal educational advantages for boys and girls, and others as well under which they had dwelt in Holland, on which many of their own laws were based when they settled in Plymouth. At the same time the Hollanders must have learned much from these English people who resided so long in their midst. I found the Hollanders delightful, courteous and helpful. There was no question asked that they did not answer cheerfully, and no help needed that was too much trouble to perform. They spoke English fluently, therefore we had a bond of mutual understanding from the outset.

I heard a very good story a few days ago told by an English knight from South Africa. It seems a brawl took place in a crowded room in which about twenty men were attacking one man. Suddenly his voice rang out, "Is there anyone here who speaks God's language and with an American accent?" At once six men jumped up and rushed to his rescue. One of them was a Dutchman. It was he who told the story to Sir Percy Fitzpatrick, and further told him that he had learned the accent from the American doughboys during the late war. He probably knew the language long before.

I left Holland with regret, but war-time restrictions still pre-



## HISTORIC PILGRIM SHRINES

ailed, and if one stayed more than a certain number of days it was necessary to have a special permit and one's passport viséd anew.

The next place of interest, after visiting the Standish country, of which I will speak in detail later, was Plymouth, England. It is a fine old town with a rock-bound promontory coast strongly fortified, and a magnificent view. The esplanade at the top is called the Hoe. It is one of England's chief seaports, and has a finely sheltered harbor. I stood at the Barbican and on the commemorative stone inscribed "Mayflower 1620," which memorializes the spot from which our forefathers set sail for Plymouth, Massachusetts, crowded into the *Mayflower* because of the unseaworthiness of the *Speedwell* which had brought some of them from Holland. In the wall is a bronze tablet which reads as follows:

On the 6th of September, 1620, in the Mayoralty of Thomas Fownes after being kindly entertained and courteously used by divers Friends there dwelling, the Pilgrim Fathers sailed from Plymouth in the *Mayflower*, in the Providence of God to settle in New Plymouth and to lay the Foundation of the New England States. The ancient Cawsey whence they embarked was destroyed not many Years afterwards, but the Site of their Embarkation is marked by the Stone bearing the name of the *Mayflower* in the pavement of the adjacent Pier. This Tablet was erected in the Mayoralty of J. T. Bond 1891, to commemorate their Departure, and the visit to Plymouth in July of that Year of a number of their Descendants and Representatives.

The Barbican was the site of another historic event almost three hundred years later, for in June, 1919, "standing on the Mayflower slab, the Mayor welcomed the crew of the American seaplane NC 4, the first aircraft to cross the Atlantic."

We now come to the Standish country in Lancashire, not far from Manchester. No greater contrast could possibly be imagined than that existing today between Standish Hall, the former seat of the Standishes of Standish, and Duxbury Hall, the seat of the Standishes of Duxbury. Both branches claim to be the birthplace of Myles Standish, and in making the pilgrimage to his birthplace as one of his descendants I was eager to visit both places. I left Manchester early Sunday morning and arrived at Chorley in less than an hour,



## HISTORIC PILGRIM SHRINES

but not knowing conditions or how I was to accomplish my mission, for my only knowledge of the place was from my guide book. The beautiful music of the chimes in the Cathedral which greeted me as I alighted from the train gave me courage, and I inquired the way to the Chorley Parish Church, wondering if the chimes proceeded from that ancient historic place in which the Standishes of Duxbury were wont to worship. I found this was not the case. They were in a newer and more wonderful edifice, and were recently placed there as a memorial to the soldiers who died in the late war. However, the handsome Chorley Church is of gray stone, of old English architecture, and it is hard to realize its age, so well is it preserved.

The service was about to begin as I entered, and on explaining my mission to a man seated in a rear pew, whose welcoming countenance assured me of sympathetic assistance, he pointed out the throne-like pew of the Standishes, and said that Mrs. Mayhew, the present owner of Duxbury, was already occupying it for the service. She was a stately woman with a face of sweet dignity and charm beneath her black lace-veiled hat—a widow of less than two years. It was a privilege most unexpected to attend the service and feel that I was walking in the footsteps of my ancestors. I saw the Standish coat-of-arms over the two throne seats in the box pew, and the stripes and star were pointed out to me as being the source of the American flag. We are told today that it is to the coat-of-arms of the ancestors of George Washington that we are indebted for our stars and stripes, but as some historians have declared that Standish, Washington and Lafayette are related, perhaps we can reasonably assume that the star and stripes of the Standishes is the source of our flag. The shield in the stained glass window and many memorial tablets in the church told of the Standishes departed.

With true American perseverance, I secured an introduction at the conclusion of the service, and was invited to motor a mile and a half to Duxbury Hall for luncheon with Mrs. Mayhew, her sister and niece. Nothing could have been more agreeable nor more unexpected. As we passed through the large gate I was shown the coat-of-arms of the Standishes of Duxbury, with the Cock d'Argent over the door of the lodge. We sped along the drive through a beautifully kept park and grounds, arriving at the Hall, a large substantial house of stone measuring about eighty by ninety feet, with a huge Doric pillared portico in front. Part of the Hall dates back to the

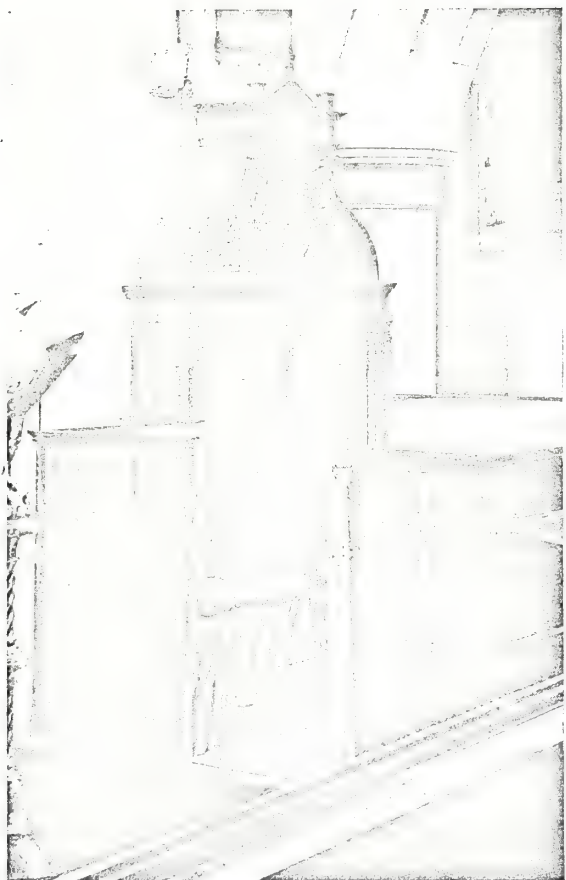




THE CHORLEY PARISH CHURCH







THE STANDISH PEW, CHORLEY PARISH CHURCH



## HISTORIC PILGRIM SHRINES

early sixteenth century, but in 1828 it was faced with huge blocks of ashlar gritstone.

Mrs. Mayhew suggested that we see the gardens before lunch, and I was shown the Italian Garden, filled with scarlet geraniums, walks bordered by rhododendron hedges, close mown lawns as smooth as a billiard table, the rock garden, trees hundreds of years old—yew, weeping birch, and chestnut; the greenhouses with large bunches of grapes suspended from vines covering the glass roof, and with luscious peaches apparently climbing the walls. Then to the stables, the old tithing barn with huge hand-hewn beams, the stepping blocks in the stable courtyard, and it was easy to conclude that the mistress of all this loveliness loved every tree and shrub and ancient landmark, even though in no way related to the Standishes. Mrs. Mayhew is a Canadian by birth and married an Englishman, who bought the Hall many years ago, and they both loved it for its history as well as beauty, which their pride and care brought to its present state of perfection.

After lunch in the beautiful oak-panelled banquet hall hung with paintings by old masters, I was shown the house, which was filled with many treasures of historic value, and flowers everywhere. Here again I saw the pride with which every object was treasured and loved, and every Standish relic exhibited with keen pleasure because of my relationship. There was a carved stone coat-of-arms of the Standishes of Duxbury in the entrance hall, which had been brought in to protect and preserve it from the elements. The cellars were full of partitioned bins in large spacious rooms beneath arched roofs. Many passages led to different parts, which seemed a perfect maze to me. Here and there in an out-of-the-way corner was a mysterious opening which extended up to the roof of the huge hall, for which there was no apparent use.

Was it here that Myles Standish was born, or would Standish Hall seem the more probable place?

Standish Hall, in the village of Standish, was only three miles distant, and Mrs. Mayhew and her sister accompanied me there. The village of Standish contains the old stone church of generous proportion, a row of houses built close together and which look very old and most uncomfortable. There are the stocks where punishment was administered publicly once upon a time, the stone cross, and other



## HISTORIC PILGRIM SHRINES

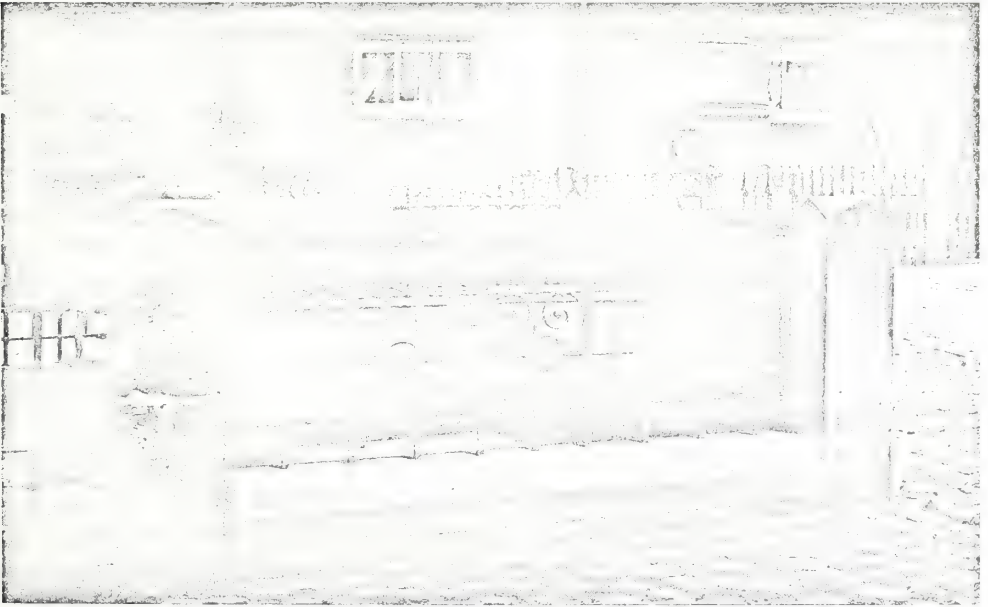
bygone relics. I knew from newspaper reports several months previously that the carving, which Mrs. Mayhew declared was the most beautiful she had ever seen, had been removed from several rooms in Standish Hall and shipped to an American purchaser, but the devastation of the place was surprising until I learned that it had not been occupied by the Standishes since 1824, since when it had had many tenants but presumably no owners. The estate had been sold in small parcels of land, and the trees purchased by a lumber merchant. To a lover of trees it was a sad sight to see those giants of the ages lying prostrate on the ground, while others were standing in their beauty awaiting the axe.

Standish Hall, which is mentioned as early as 1537, is deserted and soon to be torn down, and my pilgrimage was just in time to get a first and last look at it. The old sixteenth century part of the Hall was very interesting. The mullioned windows from the outside were set in a black and white wall of quartre-foil ornamentation, which on the inside opened into a corridor. The rooms from which the carved panelling had been removed were bare to the plastered walls and old hand-hewn beams. The mantels had been removed with the panelling. There was still, however, one shrine left, even though crumbling, and that was the room in which it is said Myles Standish was born—a large square upper room with the coat-of-arms over the mantel. It was in a crumbled condition from the efforts to remove it, but the design was still plainly to be seen—three standing dishes on a blue azure field, surmounted by an owl with a rat in its talons.

From the despoiled and fast-ruining old part, we went to the Chapel. That, too, was but a ruin, although the dome over the altar still showed the decoration of a bygone day, and the "I. H. S." perhaps proving that the Standishes of Standish had originally been Catholic. There was the outline of the stair which went to the balcony facing the altar, the hole for the old bell rope, and the door now boarded up which led to the Hall.

Formerly Standish Hall was surrounded by a moat, which was filled up in 1780. Standish Park existed in 1336, and the family has been an ancient and honorable one, while the history of the Hall itself has been varied. It was the meeting place for Lancashire gentlemen devoted to the Jacobite cause, and it is recorded that many plots were there put on foot in behalf of the banished king.





Above, Standish Cross. Below, Pillory and Stocks





## HISTORIC PILGRIM SHRINES

In this beautiful park-like English country and once lovely surroundings, Myles Standish was born and lived and went forth to fight for her Majesty Queen Elizabeth when she made him a captain in her army which was sent to Holland to assist in her war with Spain. How sharp the contrast to the rude hut which was his dwelling place in Plymouth, Massachusetts. It must have been terrifying to the frail Rose Standish, his wife, who was probably of the Duxbury Standishes, and Myles' cousin, and it is not to be wondered at that she died within two months of her arrival on the Massachusetts shore from the hardships and privations there encountered. But Myles was a warrior, and undaunted he took charge of safeguarding the Pilgrims against Indian attacks, and on his intrepidity and courage the Pilgrims relied. Indeed, they placed their safety in his hands to good purpose.

It is recorded in history that Barbara Standish, Myles' second wife and mother of his children, was sister to Rose, and if so was undoubtedly of the Duxbury branch. Duxbury, Massachusetts, was founded by Myles Standish and other Mayflower families, and named either in honor of his own birthplace or that of his wife. It is in Duxbury that Standish sleeps his last sleep.

The Tercentenary Celebrations marking the three hundredth anniversary of the landing of our Pilgrim Parents on the Massachusetts coast at Plymouth, taught us much that we did not know about them, and thus gave us the privilege of proudly and humbly paying added homage. It brought the tributes of other countries as well, for Great Britain and Holland had their own Tercentenary Celebrations of this historical event, and joined with us in worthily recognizing this anniversary of world-wide interest and importance.

When the famous Compact was signed by the men of the *Mayflower* passengers which was to guide the newly born Pilgrim settlement, their aim was for its preservation, protection and a community of interests, to which the graphic words of Dumas can well apply, "All for one, and one for all." Little did they realize, however, that they were people of destiny, whose institution of laws was to result in a great Democracy which after three hundred years' existence is striving to establish an *international* community of interests through mutual faith and mutual understanding with the countries and peoples of the world. Truly, the hope and faith with which



## HISTORIC PILGRIM SHRINES

it is undertaken must ultimately crown the efforts toward universal harmony, if not with accomplishment, at least with very long strides toward such a goal.

America has been the pioneer in founding a democracy, in establishing statehood, in leveling boundaries. The frontier between the United States and Canada, where Maine joins soil with the Provinces of Quebec and New Brunswick, is designated merely by cement posts inscribed "Treaty of Washington" and placed very far apart, and one feels that they are merely of historical interest, and in no respect *barriers*.

America was the pioneer in urging a period of Limitation of Naval Armament to the minimum of what was necessary to police her water boundaries and protect her rights. The sanctuary found here by the Pilgrims, and many others during these three centuries, aims to make the entire world a sanctuary from the future devastations of wars—A World Sanctuary for Peace.

The Tercentenary Celebration in this country began in Provincetown in 1920. Our Government participated by sending the two dreadnaughts *Florida* and *Delaware* to represent the Navy; Secretary of State Bainbridge Colby brought a message from the President of the United States. Great Britain sent a cruiser, and her naval attache at Washington brought greetings from his Government. France sent a battleship; Holland her Minister of the Netherlands with a greeting from the Queen. Patriotic organizations sent their prominent officers as delegates. Famous American artists gave their time and talents in preparing the picturesque parade. Dr. John Finley, who represented the Red Cross organization in the Orient during the World War and entered Jerusalem with General Allenby, was one of the many noted speakers, and presented to the Pilgrim Church of Provincetown water from the River Jordan, which he poured from his canteen into the ancient pewter baptismal font in which many Pilgrim descendants have been baptized. Rev. John Sewall, the pastor, in accepting the gift said: "I thank you, honored sir, in behalf of that organization in our community which still perpetuates among us their faith and life; and I promise you that this water, mingled with that of the spring in yonder valley where first the Pilgrims drank the water of this new land, shall be used hereafter in consecration of true Pilgrims of today and tomorrow to the Pilgrims' faith and service."



## HISTORIC PILGRIM SHRINES

It was at Provincetown that the Pilgrims first landed, and a granite tablet marks the spot where the women did their first washing. There is also in front of the Town Hall a splendid tablet containing the names of all the Mayflower passengers. On the highest elevation of this sand-dune end of Cape Cod, rises to a height of 252 feet the dignified monument to the Pilgrims, which is visible for many miles by sea and land. It is of old world beauty, being a copy of the famous tower of Siena, Italy; and the inclined plane of its interior is so easy of ascent that one readily credits the story that Napoleon rode on horseback to the top of the original—the Campanile San Marco of Venice. Great men sponsored this monument, for its cornerstone was laid by President Roosevelt, and it was dedicated by President Taft. Provincetown is to have a statue to the Pilgrim Mothers a little later on, as well as a broad parkway from the monument down to the shore of the bay.

However, it is *Plymouth* that is today, and for all time, the Shrine of Remembrance, and it is there that the impressive pageant, the "Pilgrim Spirit," was enacted in the summer of 1921—that reverent, historical spectacle that sent us away thrilled with pride at what our country has accomplished through the periods of war and peace, pestilence and health, despairs and inspirations, through which she has been born and reared. From the coming of the Norsemen in the year 1000, to the arrival of the Pilgrims in 1620 and re-enacted in 1921, made realistic by the replica of the *Mayflower* out in the Bay, by the voice that speaks from Plymouth Rock, and by the treaty with the Indians, we were shown the different phases of wars, religions and explorations, right down to our recent World War, and the massing of the armies and their colors of these different periods at the finale, was a never-to-be-forgotten sight.

As the hands of the clock neared the hour of five on days when the Pageant was not performed, citizens and visitors were to be seen hurrying toward Town Square, through streets across which were hung banners bearing the names of the Mayflower passengers, and in some part of the town every name was represented. On the stroke of five, at the beating of a drum, the "Pilgrims' Progress" began, and from the foot of Leyden street and along the way, people dressed as Pilgrims came out from the houses and fell in behind the drummer—the men with muskets, the women with prayer books, and the





## HISTORIC PILGRIM SHRINES

little children by their sides. They were all there—Winslow, Carver, Standish, Bradford, Hopkins—and their dignity, seriousness and devotional demeanor were fittingly in keeping with the times they portrayed, as they wended their way to Burial Hill, at that time Fort Hill, and formed a hollow square while the Scriptures were read, a hymn sung and a prayer said. Mayflower descendants living in Plymouth took great pride in being a part of this progress daily, while descendants visiting there joined the Pilgrim band too, and for the time being became their ancestors of three hundred years ago.

The graves of historical interest on Burial Hill were plainly marked so that they could be readily found—Governor Bradford, John Howland, and others; also the site of the First Fort and of the old Watch House; while many houses along Leyden street were marked as the sites where three hundred years ago stood their early houses and meeting places. The Old Town Brook was marked, and a drinking fountain stands on the site of the spring from which they drank.

Various patriotic societies had different days set apart for their participation and celebration. Our Government joined, and President's Day became a country-wide event, when President Harding, Vice-President Coolidge, their wives, Cabinet officers and Members of Congress, came to do those Pilgrims reverence. There was an outpouring of the best in nature's sunshine, the best our nation had to offer, and the best that fifty thousand people could give by personal pilgrimage. There was a parade with notables in Government and civil life; battleships came as escort and brought officers and men of the Navy; the Army was strongly represented; the Governor of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts was there. Beautiful and characteristic floats represented Patriotism, Loyalty, Industry, and history of Massachusetts townships. The British sailors from the British ship in the Bay took part, a special envoy came from Plymouth, England, and the speeches by the British Naval Attache and the Netherlands Minister, made it an international occasion.

President Harding's address was an epic. You will be interested in a few of the many tributes he paid the Pilgrims: "Whether we reflect upon the restraints upon freedom which the Fathers imposed, or whether we measure the broader liberty under the law of today, here began the reign of dependable public opinion, which unfailingly is the law of highest civilization. . . . Hand of man





## HISTORIC PILGRIM SHRINES

did not build alone what was founded here; it was but the visible sign, the human symbol of a purpose which we may not understand, but for whose beneficence all men must give tribute of praise and voice undying gratitude. We may speculate and conjecture, we may seek to frame laws of human relationship, by which to account for such results as here have been wrought; but at last we will have to recognize that they are not for us to explain."

In speaking of what we owe by personal endeavor, President Harding said: "Just as the Pilgrim Fathers had a practical mind for material things amid effective pursuit of their higher ideals, so must we with our inheritance. God never intended an achievement without great effort. There is no reward without great labor. Freedom is the field of endeavor, not the fancied abode of idleness."

Plymouth may well be called Memory's Shrine, for the bearers of gifts make it a living Memorial to the Pilgrims. The quaint, dignified reserved little town put her best foot forward all during the summer of the Tercentenary and proudly displayed her many shrines, gratefully accepting them as each new one was fittingly dedicated.

The Sarcophagus presented by the Society of Mayflower Descendants—a large granite monument which bears the names of all who died the first winter—is on Cole's Hill, where they were buried, though no one knows the exact spots. But what matter where their bodies were laid when their spirits are so richly awake? The dedication services were held in the First Church on September 8th, and it was an impressive sight to see the Mayflower Descendants, whose Society was holding their Ninth Congress in Plymouth, march from the church two by two down through Town Square, past many sites of their early buildings, each person carrying a flower which was finally placed along the top of the Sarcophagus, until the place where they are enshrined was enwreathed with these beautiful floral emblems of remembrance. The inscription on the north end explains the real purpose of its erection:

"The bones of the Pilgrims, found at various times in and near this enclosure and preserved for many years in the canopy over the Rock, were returned at the time of the Tercentenary Celebration and are deposited within this monument, erected by the General Society of Mayflower Descendants, A. D. 1920."

The south end bears a quotation from Bradford's History, with



## HISTORIC PILGRIM SHRINES

its quaint spelling: "Aboute a hundred sowls came over in this first ship and began this work which God of his goodnes hath hitherto blesed. Let his Holy name have ye praise. Bradford, 1620."

The long side of the monument facing the water contains the fifty-two names of those who died the first winter, while the opposite side reads:

"This Monument marks the first burying ground in Plymouth of the passengers of the Mayflower. Here under cover of darkness the fast dwindling company laid their dead, leveling the earth above them lest the Indians should learn how many were the graves. Reader: History records no nobler venture for faith and freedom than that of the Pilgrim band. In weariness and painfulness, in watchings, often in hunger and cold, they laid the foundations of a state wherein every man through countless ages should have liberty to worship God in his own way. May their example inspire thee to do thy part in perpetuating and spreading the lofty ideals of our Republic throughout the world."

Truly that last sentence is a haunting message of inspiration to us of today.

During the processional and the exercises at the monument, the sweet and rich tones of the chimes in the church tower made beautiful music. These chimes were played for the first time on President's Day. They are the gift through the efforts of Elijah R. Kennedy, of the New England Society of Brooklyn, and a popular subscription in which Plymouth, England, shared to the extent of a hundred pounds.

We all know of the part played by the Indians in that first settlement, and the debt of gratitude the Pilgrims owed them. The Peace Treaty made with the Indians through their Chief Massasoit was kept "with fidelity" as long as Massasoit lived, a period of fifty years. One of the articles of that treaty referred to disarmament, which reads: "That when their men came to us, they should leave their bows and arrows behind them, as we should do our pieces when we came to them."

To the memory of this Treaty a beautiful bronze statue of Massasoit has recently been dedicated. It stands on Cole's Hill, and represents him looking out over the waters, just as the Indians watched the approach of the *Mayflower*, and in his hand is his "pipe of peace." The inscription is: "Massasoit, Great Sachem of the



## HISTORIC PILGRIM SHRINES

Wampanoags, Protector and Preserver of the Pilgrims, 1621. Erected by the Improved Order of Red Men as a grateful tribute." The statue was unveiled by a descendant of Massasoit, Princess Wontonekanaska, in full ceremonial Indian dress. Many Indian Councils participated in the ceremonies. Today we regret and deplore the routing of the Indians from our country, who were exterminated from many sections because they were feared, and feared because they were not understood.

Likewise on Cole's Hill is a memorial which is apt to be overlooked as such, for it seems just a permanent part of the whole surroundings. It is a granite bench, roomy enough for two or three people only, and was always occupied. A bronze plate in the back shows it to be the gift of the Pennsylvania Society of New England Women.

The restoration of Cole's Hill is one of the Memorials, for the United States Government and the Commonwealth of Massachusetts appropriated thousands of dollars for its beautification, and now the view out to sea is unobstructed, for the old shanties, fish wharfs and unsightly landmarks have been torn down, the old pier replaced with a new one, and a park laid out at the water's edge beside of and beyond historic Plymouth Rock.

Plymouth Rock, the very cornerstone of our country, has been lowered onto the beach where it is now washed by the waters at high tide in the exact spot where it originally stood. Above it rises the imposing pillared portico of white granite. Within the colonnade a grille fence surrounds the opening in the center through which can be seen the famous Rock. This beautiful Memorial Portico is the gift of the National Society of Colonial Dames. A large fountain to the Pilgrim Mothers will be erected as a tribute from the Daughters of the American Revolution, whose then President-General, Mrs. George Maynard Minor, so splendidly referred to them in her Provincetown address: "The Pilgrim Mothers did their full share of the work in their little State, but they had no part or parcel in the signing of the Compact. History makes but little mention of them, yet they helped to discover a world and to found a nation."

Not far away will be located the statue of the Pilgrim Woman, representing the spirit of courage, unselfishness and loyalty with which the Pilgrim women were so nobly endowed. This will be the gift of the Society of New England Women, through the personal





## HISTORIC PILGRIM SHRINES

efforts of Mrs. Richard Henry Green, wife of Captain Green, one of the founders of the Society of Mayflower Descendants, his number being *one*, and Mrs. Green's *twenty-five*.

On famous Leyden street a log cabin, replica of the first house on this first street, has been erected, and, with the adjoining property, is the gift to Plymouth of Mr. Frank Gregg, of Cleveland, Ohio. It looks strangely primitive and out of place to our Twentieth Century vision, but more than any of the other up-to-date and idealistic memorials, gives a realization that the Seventeenth Century habitations were nothing more than shelters, and that they were the abodes of hunger, privation and suffering. One glance at it, even by the most callous, will cause the head to be bowed in reverence, and thinking of the noble pioneers will impel the heart to murmur:

Three hundred years add lustre to thy brav'ry,  
Time places laurels fresh upon thy brow.  
Would thy descendants could, by emulation,  
Worthy be found to claim such kin as thou!

Pilgrim Hall has been beautified. The entire front, formerly of wood, has been constructed of granite, carried out on the old lines of simplicity and beauty embodied in its huge Doric columns. It is the handsome gift of the New England Society of New York. This is a most important gift, for it makes fireproof this building which contains many Pilgrim belongings, and though inexpensive, are priceless treasures today. In the Library of Pilgrim Hall a beautiful three-panel stained glass window, representing the coming and landing of the Pilgrims, occupies the entire front of the room, flooding it with mellow light. It is the gift of the Society of Daughters of Founders and Patriots.

In the tree decorated, grass carpeted Pilgrim Hall Park, a sundial was recently dedicated and presented by the Colonial Daughters of the Seventeenth Century. Still more recently a gem of a fountain was unveiled in this Garden. It is a replica of the *Mayflower* sailing in a sea of real water, upheld by a pedestal of dolphins, and was presented by the Daughters of the Revolution.

Burial Hill was in the days of the Pilgrims the place of their fort and their armament. Recently a reproduction of the old powder house has been erected there, dedicated and presented. The bronze tablet tells its own story: "The Old Powder House was built here in 1770. This building, erected in 1920, is dedicated to those descend-





## HISTORIC PILGRIM SHRINES

ants of the Pilgrims, by birth or of the spirit, who helped establish American Independence. Massachusetts Society of the Sons of the American Revolution." The tablet which was on the original Powder House has been placed in the interior of this replica.

Early in October, 1921, two ancient brass cannon were set in place very near the original fort site. They were made in 1550 and 1554, and are the gift of the British Government by the Honorable Artillery Company of London, through the Ancient and Honorable Company of Boston. They were discovered a few years ago in the British National Artillery Museum at Woolwich, England, and as they were the only ones of their kind in Great Britain, were parted with very reluctantly, and only because they were to be given to Plymouth—some say *returned* to Plymouth. The bronze tablet between the guns reads in part as follows: "Brass Cannon like these were named by Bradford and Winslow in the annals of Plymouth as mounted on the first Fort, 1621, and were still in use in 1645, when the Ancient and Honorable Company of Massachusetts, under its commander, Major General Gibbons, joined the Plymouth Company under the command of Captain Myles Standish to fight against the Narragansett Indians."

Another Memorial is to be presented by the General Society Sons of the Revolution, which will be to the memory of Colonel Alexander Scammell, the last officer to die before the surrender of Yorktown. The Colonel Scammell Memorial will be erected on the old Burial Hill, on the site of the school house where he taught, and will be in the form of a granite settee, in the center of which will rise a monumental tablet of granite with his bust in bronze relief.

Probably the first Memorial erected was the National Monument to the Forefathers. In order to promote this erection, the Pilgrim Society was organized over one hundred years ago, in 1820, but it was not until 1888 that it was completed, and dedicated in 1889. It stands on a broad plateau with a magnificent view of the surrounding country and harbor. It is of Maine granite, eighty-one feet in height. The center figure represents Faith, and the four seated figures represent Morality, Law, Education and Freedom. There are relief groups depicting the "Departure from Delft Haven," the "First Treaty with the Indians," "Signing of the Compact," and "The Landing at Plymouth." There are two panels con-



## HISTORIC PILGRIM SHRINES

taining the names of all the *Mayflower* passengers, while another panel reads: "National Monument to the Forefathers, erected by a grateful people in remembrance of their labors, sacrifices and sufferings for the cause of civil and religious liberty." Contributions were made to this monument by eleven thousand people and of different countries.

Not far away from Plymouth, in the South Duxbury Cemetery, is still another shrine—the grave of Myles Standish, Military Commander of Plymouth, to whom his fellow Pilgrims owed their preparedness and safety. The grave is surrounded by a high stone wall with entrances at each side, and on each of the four corners is a huge cannon with pyramids of cannon balls and connections of heavy iron chains. A massive boulder is his tombstone, inscribed simply but impressively with the name only—Myles Standish. It needs no other marking while history survives, for this spot is a shrine at which the passerby removes his hat in deep reverence toward one who helped to build for us that which we enjoy today.

Farther away on the shores of the Bay is the Monument to Myles Standish, which towers from the top of Captain's Hill, at the foot of which his house stood and where he resided for many years. It can be seen for many miles by land and sea, and it appears to follow the Boston boat right along its route, for it is visible so much of the way.

Massachusetts may well be proud that the Pilgrim Fathers sought sanctuary there. In recognition of the service rendered the Pilgrims by the Indians, as well as a tribute to Myles Standish, it is interesting to note that the present Great Seal of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, which was approved by an Act of the State in 1885, has the figure of an Indian on the shield, while the crest is a sword grasped by an uplifted arm. The sword was copied from the Damascus blade of Myles Standish, the sketch having been made for that purpose by the authorities of Pilgrim Hall, which owns the sword. The arm is "clothed and ruffled after the fashion of Myles Standish."

The Tercentenary Celebration brought us all to a fuller realization of those traditions of our forefathers and a truer appreciation of their accomplishments. All honor to anniversaries, in the celebration of which the lapsing cycles of time give us a proper perspec-



## HISTORIC PILGRIM SHRINES

tive of historical events, on which occasion they are reverently brought forth to show our loyal and abiding patriotism; and not alone for the events that have gone, but for our attitude toward the future of our country, our staunchness and abiding love for it, and consecration and sacrifice if need be, to its *Service*.

---

NOTE—The foregoing interesting chapter is based upon a paper written by the author especially at the request of the Society of Mayflower Descendants of New York, and read by her before that body.





# The Scotch-Irish in Pennsylvania

By E. MELVIN WILLIAMS, WAVERLY, PENNSYLVANIA.



RUMORE township was one of the original township divisions of Lancaster county, organized in 1729; and, when then delineated, its boundaries embraced practically the whole of the territory recognized as the domain of the Scotch-Irish in southern Lancaster. Its settlement antedated the organization of Lancaster county; and while a part of northern Lancaster was earlier settled by the virile Scotch-Irish, the seat of the Scotch-Irish in Lancaster county has for almost two centuries been in the "Lower End" of the county.

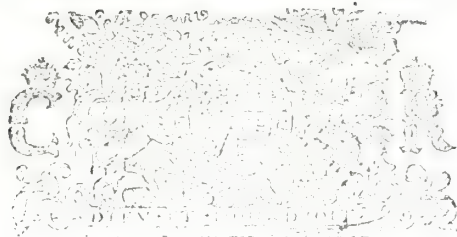
It was not without good governmental reason that the Presbyterians from Ulster were granted land in southern Lancaster. And, knowing their antecedents, it is not surprising that they were soon found to be fringing almost the whole territory. These sturdy, brave and independent men from a turbulent homeland were well-fitted for the uncertainties and dangers of the frontier; and it may be supposed that they were almost happy in constituting the front line against encroaching Maryland Catholics. Samuel Evans, in his "History of Lancaster County" (1883), points out the particular use made of the Ulsterites by the Provincial Government. After stating that "The Scotch-Irish . . . first entered this region in 1715, and, pushing past the Mennonite and Huguenot settlements, located themselves on Chikis creek," he writes:

"A few years later a cordon of settlements by these people, who were all Presbyterians, had been made and extended along Octorara creek, from Sadsbury to the Susquehanna, and thence along the river to the Conestoga. These people had been encouraged by the authorities to settle near the disputed boundary line between Maryland and Pennsylvania, because it was believed that they would be more disposed and better able to defend the settlements against the Catholic Marylanders than would either the Huguenots, the Friends, or the Mennonites."

Undoubtedly they were; it was but continuing a home feud to







CHARLES R.

[illegible]

Given at the Court at Westminster, the 3 day of August 1581. The Thirteenth year of Our Reigne.

To the Honorable and Prudent  
 Members of the Treasury of  
 Pennsylvania,

### B. The Mather's Command

CONWAY.

L O N D O N.

Printed by the Assigns of *John Bull, Thomas Newcomb,*  
and *Henry Bulls*, Printers to the Kings most  
Excellent Majesty. 1681.

PROCLAMATION OF THE CHARTER TO WILLIAM PENN, APRIL, 1681



## THE SCOTCH-IRISH IN PENNSYLVANIA

set Presbyterians to guard a frontier against Catholics, though the Scottish Presbyterian of Ulster was but a recent enemy of the Irish Catholic, by comparison with the latter's English overlord. That feud had existed for centuries, the Irishman all the while being the "underdog." The Irish of the Twelfth Century were but a "mass of warring clans," else they would probably have driven the English into the sea. There was no union among them. Still, the English were never, for long, able to get much farther into Ireland than the districts which came to be known as the "English pale"—the districts of Drogheda, Dublin, Wexford, Waterford, and Cork. And the forays of the Irishry from beyond the pale more than once carried havoc to the walls of Dublin itself. The English could make no headway in Ireland. The attempt of King Henry the Eighth to foist his Church of England upon Ireland, and so stamp out Catholicism, brought, it is true, the spectacular burning of the Staff of St. Patrick in the market-place, and the imprisonment of recalcitrant priests; but Thomas Cromwell had eventually to recognize that in Ireland the new episcopal system he had devised was a failure. Nothing could shake an Irishman's faith in himself and his religion. Centuries of attempts to subdue Ireland were fruitless; bloody repression of liberty and religion availed not. The Irishry could not be held down. Subsequent attempts laid waste much of Ireland, but as the Seventeenth Century dawned, Lord Mountjoy, Queen Elizabeth's lieutenant in Ireland, "found himself master on his arrival of only a few miles around Dublin." He had been sent to suppress a revolt fomented and skillfully led by Hugh O'Neill in the North of Ireland. The O'Neills, Earls of Tyrone, had for generations been thorns in the flesh of the English, and Hugh O'Neill was as capable and valiant as his forefather, Shane O'Neill, had been; and it took three years of devastating work with the sword before Mountjoy was able to carry Hugh O'Neill in triumph to Dublin. Famine completed the ruin of Ulster.

It was upon this spent theatre of war that, after even another attempt to bring English uniformity of religion into effect therein had failed, that Elizabeth's successor, King James the First, "the wisest fool in Christendom," suddenly resolved upon the Ulster experiment. He carried through the Ulster colonization ruthlessly but successfully. According to Green, "two-thirds of the North of Ireland was declared to have been confiscated to the Crown by the



## THE SCOTCH-IRISH IN PENNSYLVANIA

part its possessors had taken in the recent revolt; and the lands which were thus gained were allotted to new settlers of Scotch and English extraction." King James was at least original. He did not despoil the Irishry in order to bestow their lands upon some favorite courtiers, who would but set up feudal state, with Irish peasantry as retainers. He wished to sweep the tract clean, and start afresh with a people of different antecedents and religious faith. He therefore divided Ulster into small portions, which he was disposed to lease to settlers under a legitimate colonization scheme. He ordained that "no one shall obtain grants of land which he is unable to plant with men." His decree attracted Scotch Protestants, and they crossed St. George's channel in great numbers. Englishmen also came, attracted possibly by the plan of the Corporation of London, which undertook to colonize Derry, "and gave to the little town the name which its heroic defence has made so famous." The principal migration was, however, from the north-eastward, over the narrow strait that divides Scotland from Ireland. These Scotch Presbyterians were predominant in the colonization of the confiscated part, almost six entire counties, of Ulster. They settled principally in the counties of Down, Antrim, and Londonderry. Green states: "In its material results, the Plantation of Ulster was undoubtedly a brilliant success. Farms and homesteads, churches and mills, rose fast amidst the desolate wilds of Tyrone. The foundations of the economic prosperity which has raised Ulster high above the rest of Ireland in wealth and intelligence were undoubtedly laid in the confiscation of 1610. Nor did the measure meet with any opposition at the time, save that of secret discontent. The evicted natives withdrew sullenly to the lands which had been left them by the spoiler; but all faith in English justice had been torn from the minds of the Irishry, and the seed had been sown of that fatal harvest of distrust and disaffection which was to be reaped through tyranny and massacre in the age to come."

In later years there was probably some degree of inter-marriage, but the Protestant Ulsterites and Catholic Irishry never harmoniously merged. Three centuries have passed since the first Presbyterian church was established in Ireland; today the Ulster Presbyterians are so ardently Protestant, and the Irish Catholics so fervently Catholic, as to indicate that as peoples they are still distinct and separate. What are now termed Scotch-Irish can, it





THOMAS PENN  
Proprietor of Pennsylvania





## THE SCOTCH-IRISH IN PENNSYLVANIA

would seem, only be so hyphenated from the circumstance that they were the descendants of Scots who had taken up their residence in the North of Ireland. Robert Blair Risk quotes James Parton's description of the Irish and the Scotch of Ireland. Of the former he wrote: "If he gives up the struggle of life, he supplies half the world with its fun and fancy; himself often miserable, but always interesting and picturesque; the chosen of novelists, the delight of the stage, the sketching tourist's best friend, and never wanting to the comic corner of the newspapers." Of the latter, the Scotch-Irishman, so called, he wrote: "The most orderly, the most truthful, the most persistent of men; slow to feel, though susceptible of the deepest feeling; capable of enthusiasm, but not easily roused; as brave as the brave, but unacquainted with the shillalah; not slow to take offence, but moody in his wrath; not jocular, nor witty, though social and fond of his own quaint and quiet humor." These two descriptions indicate characters so different that one would hardly expect the two neighboring peoples to merge successfully.

However, religious intolerance was well-nigh chronic, and no sect could in those days look for long immunity from persecution. The only state one could confidently predict was that of the ascendancy of one. Peace, with toleration seemed impossible. The feeling of one Church against the other was too keen for half measures. And the record shows that Presbyterians in Ireland, i. e., the Scotch colonists in Ulster, had eventually to bear their cross of persecution also. "New brooms sweep clean." With the demise of one king and the accession of another, new views on matters of civil government, and especially of episcopal polity, would loom ominously for some sect. Under Charles II and James II, Presbyterians in Scotland had no peace; many came across the channel into northern Ireland, not to settle but to hide; and it would seem that the American immigrants of that period from Ireland came mainly from these Scottish refugees or from those banished to Virginia, rather than from those Scots who had settled in Ulster under James I.

The joint reign of William and Mary opened with better prospects for all sects, William solemnly declaring that there should be no persecution for conscience's sake anywhere within the realm. But he could not authoritatively speak for Ireland, for in that land James, while still reigning in England, had so well entrenched him-



## THE SCOTCH-IRISH IN PENNSYLVANIA

self that in case domicile in England became unsafe, he could escape to Ireland, and from there intrigue, surrounded by Catholic friends. During his reign he had purged all governmental offices in Ireland of Protestants; and when in 1689 he was forced to seek refuge in France, Irish Catholics were glad to conspire with him to overthrow the government of William of Orange. They did not see eye to eye with James, however. When news reached Ireland that James was coming, with officers, ammunition, and a supply of money provided by the French King, Irishmen rejoiced; but when it was disclosed that James planned to use an Irish army for an invasion of England, the Irish leaders became less enthusiastic. Such plans were distasteful to them, for all that was before them in the coming of James, as they viewed it, was the opportunity to regain Ulster for the Irish, and to drive Englishmen and Scotchmen out of Ireland. Beyond, they were not disposed to go. So James had to amend his plans, and the attack upon the Ulsterites developed. The Irish under James spent their force in a futile effort to take Londonderry, so heroically defended; and, when the siege was lifted, James temporarily fell back on Dublin, the seat of government.

But the lot of the Protestant in Ireland was still desperate, and the future uncertain. A general massacre of Protestants had been suggested to James, who, however, shrank with horror from such an expedient, though it was argued that "mercy to Protestants was cruelty to Catholics." But the dominion of James in Ireland was brief. In 1690 William of Orange himself landed at Carrickfergus, and with his forces encountered the Irish and French armies at the Boyne, there winning a brilliant victory. Churchill, later made Duke of Marlborough, and then "quietly proving himself a master of the art of war," added to the discomfiture of the Irish in the south; and in 1691 the defeat of the combined Irish and French forces at Aughrim, the death of the French general, St. Ruth, and the consequent surrender of Limerick by Sarsfield, sealed the fate of Ireland. And when the whole of Sarsfield's Irish army, ten thousand men, "chose exile (in France) rather than life in a land where all hope of national freedom was lost," the subjugation of Ireland seemed complete. "When the wild cry of the women who stood watching their departure was hushed, the silence of death settled down upon Ireland. For a hundred years the country remained at peace, but the peace was a peace of despair. The most terrible legal tyranny







## THE SCOTCH-IRISH IN PENNSYLVANIA

under which a nation has ever groaned avenged the rising under Tyrconnell." For a century thereafter, Catholic Irishry became to all intents "hewers of wood and drawers of water" to their conquerors, the Protestants. The latter looked upon themselves as mere settlers, and boasted of their Scotch or English extraction; to apply the name "Irishmen" to them was considered an insult.

However, it soon became evident that Presbyterians were as much beyond the pale as Catholics. The English Established Church was to be the only one tolerated in Ireland; and Presbyterians found themselves shut out by law from all civil, military and municipal offices. Furthermore, Scotch settlers in Ulster, after a while, after they had held land for thirty-one years, found themselves evicted by the Landed Gentry, who thereafter exacted such high rentals that life in Ulster became well-nigh impossible for the tenant. "Then it was," states Houston, "that the Presbyterians turned their faces toward the colonies, unable longer to bear the persecutions of the Established Church of England, by which all dissenters, Catholic and Presbyterian alike, were under the ban of the prelates. Their ministers were forbidden to solemnize marriages, and the children of such marriages were treated as illegitimate, and the parents subject to punishment for fornication. Vexed with suits in the ecclesiastical courts, forbidden to educate their children in their own faith, deprived of their civil rights, the sacramental test required and their only crime being non-conformity, they determined to seek a home where the long arm of prelacy was too short to reach them. During the first half of the Eighteenth Century Down, Antrim, Armagh and Derry were emptied of Protestant inhabitants. Froude says that in two years following the Antrim evictions, thirty thousand Protestants left Ulster."

The reason why there was not also an exodus of Catholic Irishry to America at this time is probably that they were so much poorer than the Scots of Ulster. Also, perhaps they saw in the departure of the Scots a sign that their own lot was brightening; that they would again come into their own. Perhaps they had such inherent hatred of the Ulsterites that, even for their own good, they would not follow a lead set by the Scots. Whatever the reason, the fact is that the emigrants were almost exclusively Presbyterians. Indeed, throughout that century those who came to America from Ireland were mainly Protestant Presbyterians-Scots, or the sons of Scots.





## THE SCOTCH-IRISH IN PENNSYLVANIA

Men of former Irish residence fought for America in the Revolution, but they were mostly Presbyterians-Scots. They were "Scotch-Irish" only in name, and that hyphenated name was not known in Ireland, where Presbyterians in Ulster were always Scots to Catholic Irishmen. King George III is said to have characterized the American Revolution as "a Presbyterian war." Horace Walpole, addressing the English Parliament once during the Revolution, said: "There is no use crying about it. Cousin America has run off with a Presbyterian parson, and that is the end of it." It was mainly the weight of the twenty-five thousand Ulster Presbyterians of the 1771-73 exodus that "changed the delegates in the Continental Congress and caused the vote of Pennsylvania to be cast in favor of the Declaration of Independence." The emigration of Catholic Irishry cannot be deemed to have well commenced until the Nineteenth Century was dawning, following the suppression by Cornwallis of the Irish revolt of 1798, in which hideous cruelty was practiced by both factions, the "United Irishmen," and the "Orangemen."

The reasons for the migration of Presbyterians from Ulster to America in the first decades of the Eighteenth Century as hereinbefore stated, have been set ahead of this only because the first land surveyed in Lancaster county happens to be in a Scotch-Irish section of southern Lancaster. It is generally recognized that the first dominant Scotch-Irish settlements in Lancaster county were in its "Upper End," or northern part, not in the "Lower End," as the five Scotch-Irish townships of southern Lancaster are sometimes called.

The settlement of the aggressive Ulsterites in Lancaster county seated a power which soon became evident in the local government. The Hon. W. U. Hensel reviewed the matter in an address he delivered in 1905, entitled: "The Scotch-Irish: Their Impress on Lancaster County." In part he said:

"Into the historic bailiwick of my county there entered almost contemporaneously three ruling strains that have made the composite citizenship of Pennsylvania for nearly two centuries. On that theatre of action there have been displayed the play and counterplay, the relation and interrelation, the action and counteraction of the several religious and political forces that were set in motion early in the eighteenth century by the English Quaker, the Scotch-Irish, and the Pennsylvania-German. Whether Robert Galt was





BENJAMIN FRANKLIN

For whom Franklin College was named, and who was present  
at its Dedication



## THE SCOTCH-IRISH IN PENNSYLVANIA

the first white settler who crossed the ridge that separates the Chester from the Pequea Valley, or if he was shortly preceded by the Pilgrim Palatines to whom in 1711 Penn 'required the friendship' of the Conestoga Indians, it is difficult to determine, and it may be profitless to inquire; but it is notable that the early assessment lists of Conestoga township, then in Chester county, which bore such characteristic names as James Patterson, Collum McQuair, Thomas Clark, and John McDaniel, discriminated as 'Dutch inhabitants' the Herrs and Kauffmans, Brubakers and Swarrs, the Brenemans and Zimmermans, the Brackbills and Shenks.

"It is equally certain that, with characteristic persistence, the Scotch-Irish pushed past his German neighbor; so that when as early as 1720 the territory of West Conestoga, beyond the Pequea, was cut off and called 'Donegal,' it was already peopled almost entirely by the more aggressive race. They held the frontier and stood on the firing line; at once they bore the odium and won the glory of battling with the savage. They worked out that great moral and political problem which has always to be solved when a weaker race throws itself across the path of advancing civilization. They made stern wrestle with all the difficulties that confront those who would at once break a new soil and settle new institutions.

"Carrying his religion with his rifle, the Scotch-Irishman in Lancaster county . . . stamped an iron heel where he settled and wheresoever he trod. Regardless of disproportionate numbers he dominated the situation over his German neighbor for a century and a half."

The Scotch-Irish migration reached out in two directions, like a two-pronged fork, one prong reaching the northwestern part of Lancaster county, and the other prong the southwestern part. In the northwestern settlement they disturbed the Germans, and in the southwestern settlement dominated the Quakers. Hensel refers to the coming of the Scotch-Irish into Lancaster county thus:

"Almost immediately they advanced across the country, leaping from Pequea to Leacock, from Leacock to Donegal, in the upper end of the county; and, on the lower side of the Mine Ridge, they occupied what was once 'the great township of Drumore,' stretching from the west bank of the Octorara to the west bank of the Susquehanna, and from the Martie hills to the disputed Maryland line. In the valleys of the Upper End, where their furrow broke the limestone lands, the pioneers whose history we commemorate were surrounded by the patient plodding and tenacious German peasants; while in the Lower End, where the slate lands were more easily cleared of the lighter timber, they were confronted by an alien ele-



## THE SCOTCH-IRISH IN PENNSYLVANIA

ment in the meek followers of Penn, and the unwarlike worshippers with Fox."

Indeed, of the two, the Quaker seemed the most perturbed and resentful. The Scotch and Scotch-Irish Presbyterians were so different in their natures and beliefs that one scarcely wonders that the passive Mennonites and equally meek Quakers were soon overrun by the upstanding Ulsterites, who were quite prepared to violate the Penn edicts, if needs be, "by protecting their homes and families from the midnight attacks of their savage foes, when no other redress could be obtained." Indeed, Nathaniel Grubb, who was a member of the Provincial Assembly of Pennsylvania, and probably was of the Grubb family of ironmasters, once said, in the council chamber, in reply to appeals for governmental protection against the Indians: "They are a pack of insignificant Scotch-Irish Presbyterians, who, if they were killed, could well enough be spared." And of course it is State record that the provincial authorities were much alarmed when the Presbyterian immigration reached such numbers as to be almost ominous. James Logan, president of the Proprietary Council of Pennsylvania, and identified with the Friends, once stated that "if the Scotch-Irish continue to come they will make themselves masters of the Province." To check the influx, there came a time when the Provincial Government would sell no more lands in Lancaster and York counties to the Scotch-Irish, though they were made advantageous overtures to migrate to the Cumberland Valley.

That the Scotch-Irish soon took dominant part in the Provincial and later in the State governance, is made clear by a study of the Civil lists. Hensel writes:

"How tame is the recital of the felicitous electioneering of the beautiful Duchess of Devonshire by comparison with the animated political campaign in which Andrew Galbraith ran for Assembly against George Stewart, the ablest and most accomplished Quaker in Lancaster county! At a time when the only poll was in Lancaster City and none save freeholders voted, Galbraith's wife, mounting her favorite mare, roused the Scotch-Irish settlements, led the horseback procession of her husband's clansmen to the election, and rallied other voters with such enthusiasm and addressed them with such eloquence as to not only then elect her husband, but to start him on a political career of unopposed success. Little wonder that





## THE SCOTCH-IRISH IN PENNSYLVANIA

when a member of the House of Bonaparte sought an American wife he found her in a granddaughter of that same Ann Galbraith.

"In the stress and storm of the Revolutionary period, neither in Massachusetts nor in Virginia was there a more fervid patriotic spirit than burned and blazed among the Scotch-Irish of Lancaster county; nowhere were vows of hostility to the Crown and Parliament more devoutly sealed than in the group which encircled 'the Witness Oak' at Donegal. They were of a race no more determined to have 'a church without a bishop,' than to live under 'a State without a king.' "

It was a Scotch Presbyterian divine, the venerable Dr. Witherspoon, who put the last straw into the scales on that memorable Fourth of July, 1776, when the Declaration of Independence was submitted to the Continental Congress at Philadelphia. The scale went down when Dr. Witherspoon made his fiery, fearless utterance: "To hesitate at this moment is to consent to our own slavery. The noble instrument on your table, which insures immortality to its author, should be subscribed this very morning by every pen in this house. He who will not respond to its accents and strain every nerve to carry into effect its provisions is unworthy the name of freeman. Whatever I may have of property or reputation is staked on the issue of this contest; and although these gray hairs must descend into the sepulcher, I would infinitely rather that they descend hither by the hand of the executioner than desert at this crisis the sacred cause of my country." Of such is the Scotch-Irishman of America made; it might almost be said that by such was America made a republic.

Donegal township was organized in 1722. A year earlier the township of West Conestoga had come into being, embracing the territory in which English-speaking emigrants had settled, and beyond that part of Conestoga township in which the Mennonite colonies were. The tax-lists of 1721, covering that part of Chester county now in Lancaster, were three in number, and bore the captions: "English Conestoga Assessments," "Palatines at Conestoga," and "Pequea List." In 1722 the captions were: "East Conestoga Assessment;" "West Conestoga, also known as Donegal township;" and "Pequea Township List of Taxables." And reference to these assessment lists shows that most of the names stated on the "English Conestoga Assessment" list appear on the later



## THE SCOTCH-IRISH IN PENNSYLVANIA

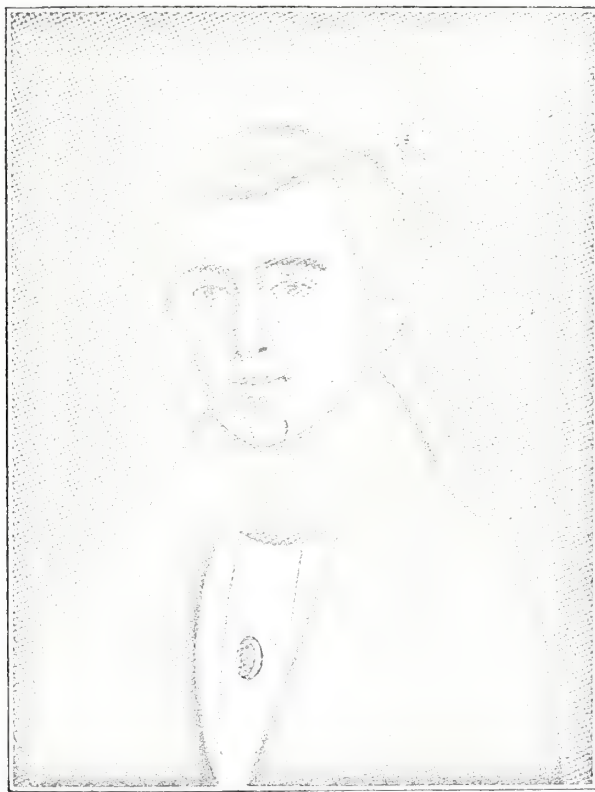
West Conestoga (also known as Donegal) township list. It is said that the settlers in West Conestoga could not for more than one year tolerate a township name that did not clearly differentiate them from the Palatines of Conestoga; therefore West Conestoga township was renamed Donegal in 1722, that being the name of the county in North Ireland from which the Presbyterians who had settled along the Chiques creek came in 1716 and immediately succeeding years.

They had emigrated from Ulster under the impression that this was a free land; a country in which one might live entirely free from governmental curb. They were Britons, and as such were not required to take the oath of allegiance; and they mostly hurried from the landing-place to the wilderness frontier without taking heed of land-warrants, surveys, and suchlike preliminaries of land-titles. They were under the impression that they could settle anywhere west of the then settled frontier, without let, hinderance, or cost. They came in such numbers that the government could not cope with them; and after some years of undisturbed possession, many resolutely declined to bother about warrant, survey, and patent, especially shunning papers that called for payment of any ground-rental, or quit-rent, to the Proprietors. However, it was not long before the Scotch-Irish set themselves right with the Provincial Government, and what is more became an influential part of that government. In the first year of the existence of Lancaster county, a man of Donegal, James Mitchell, was sitting in the Provincial Assembly; and others were taking prominent part in the civil administration of the county.

The Scotch-Irish settlers were preceded by some French-Canadian fur traders, who however can hardly be considered as legitimate settlers. These traders—Bazaillon, LeTort, Chartier, Marianda, Jessup, and others—located along the river between Conoy creek and Marietta, with the exception of Chartier, who went into Conestoga Manor, and later into Cumberland county. They all had large tracts surveyed in the Donegals, but only for speculation; and it is said that “there are very few instances where they actually took out patents for their land.”

The original limit of Donegal township embraced all to the westward and northwestward of Pequea creek, the northwestern boundary not being defined, as all was wilderness beyond. But when





ROBERT FULTON

Inventor of Navigation by Steam. Born in Lancaster  
County, Penna., November 14, 1765



## THE SCOTCH-IRISH IN PENNSYLVANIA

Lancaster county was erected in 1729, the southeastern boundary of Donegal township was set farther back, to approximately the line of the Big Chiques creek, so as to permit the organization of Hempfield township. Donegal's boundaries were thus delineated in 1729: "The township of Donegal, beginning at the mouth of the Chickasalunge, thence up the East Branch to Peter's Road, thence (taking in the present inhabitants) on a northerly course to Conewago, thence by the same and the said river to the place of beginning." The subsequent divisions have created the townships of Rapho, Mount Joy, East and West Donegal, and Conoy.

Rapho was set apart from Donegal township in 1741, as the twenty-first township of the county, taking all of the territory between the Big and Little Chiques creeks, an area of about twenty-seven thousand acres. Mount Joy township was detached from Donegal in 1759 or 1767. Its long northern and northwestern boundary is part of the Lancaster county line between it and Dauphin and Lebanon counties; its eastern boundary is the Little Chiques creek and Rapho township; and its southern and southwestern boundary is along the Lancaster and Harrisburg turnpike, on the opposite side of which East and West Donegal lie. In 1838 Donegal township was divided almost in half, and the two parts organized as East Donegal and West Donegal. The boundary line between them forms "a segment of a circle with the convex side in the direction of West Donegal." The southern half of West Donegal was detached in 1842 to form Conoy township. Conoy is the extreme westerly point of Lancaster county; its northeastern boundary is West Donegal, its eastern line is East Donegal border, its northwestern boundary is Dauphin county, and the eastern bank of the Susquehanna river borders it on the southwest. The boroughs within what was the territory of the original Donegal township are: Marietta, in East Donegal, chartered in 1830; Mount Joy, at the point where East Donegal, Mount Joy and Rapho townships meet, chartered in 1851; and Elizabethtown, in Mount Joy township, incorporated in 1827.

H. L. Steinmetz, in a paper on "The Political Divisions of Lancaster County," contributed in 1900 to the Historical Society, pointed out that:

"It is not generally known that there was a township in this county which had only a few years of existence, and which was





## THE SCOTCH-IRISH IN PENNSYLVANIA

named for William Henry Harrison, President of the United States. Such a township however was projected, laid out, and named, in 1844. In that year a petition was presented to the court of Lancaster county, signed by citizens residing within the bounds of the Twenty-second Election District of the county, composed of parts of Rapho, Mount Joy, and Donegal townships, stating that inconvenience, trouble and expense were incurred by reason of the distance to which the petitioners were subjected in attending their respective township elections, and praying the erection of a new township out of portions of each of the three above-named townships. Upon that petition the court appointed Christopher Brenner, Henry M. Reigart, and Thomas Lloyd, viewers. Two of the viewers met and returned a report creating the new township. It was called 'Harrison,' and was embraced in the Twenty-second Election District of Lancaster county. The report of the viewers was made to the August Court of Quarter Sessions, 1844; and on February 3, 1845, the court set the report aside. The matter was certiorated to the Supreme Court, and there the proceedings on the report of viewers was quashed. The attorneys were Messrs. Stevens and Penrose, and the opinion of the Supreme Court was delivered by Justice Rogers. Argument was had before the Supreme Court on December 8, 1846. By Act of Assembly, passed in 1846, Harrison township was divided into two election districts,—Mount Joy and Sporting Hill; but the act did not become operative owing to the adverse decision of the Supreme Court. However, Mount Joy was called Harrison in the election returns of 1846, and repealed in 1847. The case is fully reported in 5th Barr, p. 447."

The foregoing covers all of the political divisions of the original Donegal township.

There is no doubt as to the origin of the name given to the pioneer township division. Very many of the Ulsterites who settled in Lancaster county were from County Donegal, in Ireland. The influence of the Scotch-Irish is also seen in the naming of Derry, after Londonderry. Derry was one of the township divisions decided upon when Lancaster county was organized; but when Dauphin county was organized, Derry township could no longer be claimed by Lancaster. Rapho can also be traced without reasonable doubt, for the town of Raphoe is the ecclesiastical centre of County Donegal. "The Roman Catholic Bishop of Raphoe is practically Bishop of Donegal; and the Episcopal Bishop of Raphoe has jurisdiction in Derry." The derivative of Mount Joy, however, is not so easily determined. Dr. Dubbs suggested, though not seriously, a





OLD AND NEW CAPITOLS OF PENNSYLVANIA



## THE SCOTCH-IRISH IN PENNSYLVANIA

French origin, "Mont-Joie" being an ancient battle-cry of the Franks. There is not much evidence to support such a suggestion, even though the first white settlers in the Donegals were the French-Canadian Indian traders. Mount Joy may safely be associated with dramatic incidents of British history—either the breaking of the boom by the vessel *Mountjoy* and the consequent raising of the siege of Londonderry; or the breaking of the power of the Catholics in the North of Ireland by Lord Mountjoy in Queen Elizabeth's last years, making possible King James the First's plan to colonize Ulster with Protestants from Scotland and England. Conoy township, on the other hand, though seemingly an Irish name, is said to have been derived from a tribe of Indians that formerly inhabited the region.





# The Indians of Bergen County, New Jersey

BY FRANCES A. WESTERVELT, HACKENSACK, N. J.



WHEN the white settlers came to America they found that one great family of Indian nations—the Algonquins—occupied the country from frozen Labrador to Sunny Savannah, and from the shores swept by the Atlantic surges to the snow-capped Rocky Mountains. Among the innumeral independent nations of the Algonquin was one which its members proudly called the Lenni Lenape—the original or pure Indian. The Lenni Lenapes, or Delawares, occupied most of New Jersey, at least the southern part. It is improbable that the Indians had any general name for the whole territory now known as New Jersey, and it is quite likely that “Scheyechbi” merely designated the shore of the Delaware bay. They preferred the river valleys, but their total number, perhaps, never exceeded a thousand. They were all peaceful people, though suffering much from the wars of others and in wars that were forced upon them, until they became extinct, under the conditions involved in the contact of themselves and their kindred with an opposing civilization.

The Raritan country extended northerly to Weequahick (Bound or Dividing) creek, the dividing line between Newark and Elizabeth; and from First Mountain to the Hudson river was occupied by the Achkinheshacky Indians, who were principally settled along the river of that name. Being in such close proximity to New Amsterdam, they naturally came much in contact with the whites, and we find numerous references to them in the early records. They appear to have been peaceable for the most part, and were frequently intercessors for the warlike Raritans on the south, and the Esopus and other Indians on the north. The first conveyance on record by the Achkinheshacky Indians was made in 1630, for “Hobocan Hacking,” the grantors being Arromeauw, Tekwappo and Sackwomeck.

The Indians seem to have been quiet and comparatively industrious; they raised large quantities of provisions, and manufac-







FROM JOHN ETTL'S STATUE OF ORATAM



## THE INDIANS OF BERGEN COUNTY

tured wampum. They had their principal seat on the bank of the Overpeck, then Tantaqua creek, north of the present Fort Lee road; and an important settlement at Communipaw, whence they were ready to trade with the Dutch or to make war upon Manhattan, whichever the inhabitants of that island preferred. It is not unlikely that they were in the habit of holding their weird "Kinte-Kaey" at Yantacaw, on Third river. Undoubtedly they taught the first settlers many things about fishing, hunting, the cultivation of maize, and its subsequent utilization in the favorite form of suppaen, which soon became familiar to every Dutch youngster in the land. We may well believe, too, that the thrifty Dutch vrouws learned many a new thing in domestic economy from the squaws, experienced in housewifery peculiar to the New World. The farmers who yearly burn the grass off the Hackensack meadows learned that practice and benefits from the "Wilden." The cupidity of the early settlers led them to sell liquor to the Indians, and countless evils ensued.

The Indians of New Jersey were well built and strong, with broad shoulders and small waists, dark eyes, snow-white teeth, coarse black hair, of which the men left but a single tuft (scalp lock) on the top of the head, convenient for an enemy's scalping knife, and which the women thrust into a bag behind. They preserved their skins smooth by anointing them with the "oil" of fishes, the fat of eagles and the grease of "raccoons," which they believed in the summer to be the best antidote to keep their skins from blistering by the scorching sun, and their best armour against "muskettos," and stopper of the pores of their bodies against the winter cold. The men painted or stained their bodies, using colors extracted from plants or finely crushed stones as found along the seashore. The women, not having the advantage of Christian training and, therefore, less wise than their white sisters, were wont to paint their faces; and in general they adorned themselves more than did the men, for a proud squaw would sometimes display her charms set off by a petticoat ornamented with beads to the value of one hundred dollars or more. They dressed in the skins of wild animals, which they skillfully cured. The Indians of New Jersey did not wear war bonnets made of feathers, as did the other tribes in America.

Bishop Ettwein gives the only detailed account we have of the manner of choosing the chiefs of the various gentes:

Each Tribe has a Chief. The Chief of the great Tortoise is



## THE INDIANS OF BERGEN COUNTY

the Head, but the Tortoise Tribe cannot make or choose him; that is the Work of the Chiefs of the other Tribes, and so vice versa. None of the Chief's sons can follow him in his Dignity, because they are not of that Tribe, but the Son of his Sister, or his Daughter's Daughter's Son may follow him. The Candidate is commonly in the lifetime of a Chief appointed, to be learned and informed in the affairs of the Chief. The Election and Appointment is made in the following Manner: After the Death and Burial of a Chief, the 2 other Chiefs meet with their Councillors and People; the new Chief being agreed upon, they prepare the Speeches and necessary Belts. Then they march in Procession to the Town where the Candidate is, the two Chiefs, walking in front, sing the intended Speeches, and enter the Town singing; they go on to the East side into the Council House and round the several Fires prepared, then sit down on one side of them, upon which the Town's People come in, shake hands with them and place themselves over against them. One of the Chiefs sings a Speech, signifying the aim of their Meeting, condoles the new Chief about the Death of the old one, wiping off his Tears, &c., and then declares him to be Chief in the place of the deceased. He gives the People present a serious admonition to be obedient unto their Chief and to assist him wherever they can, with 2 Belts. (That is, he emphasizes these points of his speech by presenting two belts of wampum.) Thereupon he addresses also the Wife of the Chief and the Women present to be subject unto the Chief, with a Belt. He then tells the Chief his Duties, and the new Chief promises to observe them. All is sung.

The Head Chief with two others, has to take care of the National Concerns, to cherish the Friendship with other Nations. None can rule or command absolute, he has no Preference, nobody is forced to give him anything, but he is commonly well provided with Meat, and the Women assist his Wife in Planting, that he may get much corn, because he must be hospitable, and his House open to all. They are generally courteous and conversable. He has the Keeping of the Council Bag with the Belts, &c., and his House is commonly the Council House and therefore large.

The chief Duty of a Chief is to preserve Peace as long as possible; he cannot make War, without the consent of the Captains, and also cannot receive a War Belt. If he finds his Captains and People will have War, he must yield to them, and the Captains get the government. But as the Chief cannot make War, so the Captains cannot make Peace. If a Captain receives a Proposition for Peace, he refers it to his Chief, and says: I am a Warrior, I cannot make Peace. If a Captain brings such a proposition to his Chief he likes it, he bids him to sit down, and takes the Hatchet from him, and a Truce begins. Then the Chief says to the Captain; as thou art not used to sit still, to smoke only thy pipe, help me in that good Work,



## THE INDIANS OF BERGEN COUNTY

I will use thee as a Messenger of Peace among the Nations; and thus the Warriors are discharged.

Captains are not chosen. A Dream or an enthusiastic Turn for War, with which an old conjuror joins, persuading the man that he would be a lucky Captain, is his call, upon which he acts. After he has been 6 or 7 times in War so lucky as to lose none of his Company, or got for each one lost, a Prisoner, he is declared Captain. If the contrary happens, he is broke. There are seldom many Captains, yet always some in each tribe.

The Chief here spoken of was the Sachem of his tribe—a name derived from the root *ôki*, signifying above, (in space, and hence in power). Notwithstanding what has been said above regarding the election of a Sachem, it is clear that the office was in a sense hereditary. The descent was in the female line, in order to keep the rule within the gens. As the children belonged not to the gens of the father, but to that of the mother, the sons of a Sachem could not succeed him; but his brother or a son of his sister was eligible to the succession, and in electing a new Sachem he was chosen from among them. This custom was probably a survival of a primitive matriarchal rule. The common chiefs were chosen for their personal merit,—their bravery, wisdom, or eloquence, and the office was non-hereditary. When a person was elected Sachem or Chief, his name was taken away, and a new one conferred at the time of his installation. A Sachem or Chief could be deposed at any time by the council of the tribe; and his office was also vacated by his removal to another locality, as in the case of Mattano, Chief of the Nyack Indians, who in 1660 removed to Saten Island. The government of the tribe was a democracy; the Sachem or Chief who attempted to lead his people against their will must needs have a powerful mastery over his fellowmen, or he fared ill. At the same time, the earlier patriarchal or matriarchal influences were so strong that the free impulses of the savages were held much in check, and deference was paid even to an unpopular Chief. The Sachem was permitted to exercise a certain authority in the naming of his prospective successor, whom he chose from among the most eligible young men of the tribe and instructed in the duties and responsibilities of the office. If they proved unworthy, he would set them aside and choose another, and perchance they would fall a victim to his vengeance if he suspected them of treachery to the tribe.

There were occasional deviations from the rule, the selection of





## THE INDIANS OF BERGEN COUNTY

the Sachem failing of ratification by the tribe, as we shall see in the case of Oratamy, Sachem of the Hackensack Indians. Sometimes, either because of her descent, or for some special trait which marked her out, a woman was chosen to rule over the tribe as a Squaw-Sachem, and the verdict of history is that their sway was quite as wise and firm as that of the sterner sex. The position of woman among the Indians was far from unfavorable; she was secure in the possession of her property and of her children, and had a voice in the selection of Chief. This independence was due largely to the gentile organization of the tribe; a woman had the support of all the members, male and female, of her gens (kin).

The Council of each tribe was composed of the Sachem and the other Chiefs, either experienced warriors, or aged and respected heads of families, elected by the tribe. The executive functions of the government were performed by the Sachems and Chiefs, who were also members of the Council. The latter body was legislature and court combined, having a strict and most decorous procedure. Here matters pertaining to the welfare of the tribe were discussed, whether of peace or of war; offences against good order in the tribe were considered, and the accused tried with deliberation and utmost fairness.

The rhetorical figures were mostly suggested by natural objects, at times rising to flights of genuine eloquence. At a conference with the whites in 1649, Pennekeek, the "Chief behind the Col," that is, of the Achkinheshacky Indians, said the tribe called the Raritanooos, formerly living at Wiquaesskeek, had no Chief, therefore he spoke for them, in the Indian tongue. "I wish you could see my heart," he exclaimed, as he threw down two beavers, "then you would be sure that my words are sincere and true."

Among the Delawares, the Turtle warrior draws either with coal or paint here and there on the trees along the warpath, the whole animal, carrying a gun with the muzzle projecting forward, and if he leaves a mark at the place where he has made a stroke on his enemy, it will be a picture of a tortoise. Those of the Turkey tribe paint only one foot of a turkey, and the Wolf tribe, sometimes a wolf at large with one leg and foot raised up to serve as a hand, in which the animal also carries a gun with the muzzle forward.

On the west bank of the Tantaqua creek, later known as English or Overpeck, on a high, wide-spreading knoll, with acres of land over



## THE INDIANS OF BERGEN COUNTY

hill and dale, extending to the Hackensack river on the west, and north and south on a lower plane touching on the edge of the marshes, washed by tidal waters, was located the Indian village of Achkinheshacky, the home of Oratam, the Sachem of the tribe that inhabited this territory. The Sachem name is variously spelt in the records as follows: Oratamin, Oratamy, Oratan, Oraton, Oratum, Oratany, and the one more frequently used Oratam, and his life filled the span between 1577 and 1667. There is no question as to the truth of this statement, according to the following notes. In documentary records he is referred to as "of Achenkesacky and to his Village at Ackensack," and listed as a landowner. He gave to Sarah Kiersted (a daughter of Annake Jans, of Trinity Church property), 2,120 acres lying between the Hackensack river and Overpeck creek (early name Tantaqua) for services as an interpreter. This property began where the Overpeck flows into the Hackensack river at Ridgefield Park, up to the Fort Lee road, taking in all of Ridgefield Park, part of Bogota and Tenneck township, joining the south boundary of the Ackenkishacky village site. In 1669, Governor Carteret confirmed the patent of her gift from Oratam. (Later, Samuel Edsall purchased all or a portion of it).

On the village site the following indications of Indian occupation have been found, pointing to more than casual occupancy. A large shell heap; ruins of a fort, or palisaded section; hundreds of stone implements, one collector having over five hundred (to be loaned to the Bergen County Historical Society), a kitchen midden yielding interesting scraps that told a story. The site is well chosen above the high water mark on a stream that was one of the waterways to the Kill von Kull on the south and the Tappans on the north, only a few miles to the Hudson river via the Palisades trails, thence to "Manhattan." This location was unknown to the Historical Society until a set of old photographs was given of the site, then action was taken to communicate with some expert archaeologist to make an examination of the site, when it was found that two settlements had been made, one at Glenwood Park, the other Cedar Park. The road leading to them from the Teaneck road is "Fyke Lane," bordered with very old willows, as it leads to the water edge. Here on this beautiful, peaceful site, lived Oratum, and no doubt died, and the following copies of The New York Colonial Historical Documents are full of him and his wonderful life, and show that he



## THE INDIANS OF BERGEN COUNTY

was well called "a notable man among men in his day."

The following peace treaty was made between the Dutch and the Indians on the Lower Hudson, April 22, 1643:

Between William Kieft, Director-General and the Council of New-Netherland of the one side, and Oratamin, Sachem of the savages living at Achkinkeshacky,\* who declared himself commissioned by the savages of Tappaen, Rechqawawane, Kichtawane and Sint-sinck, of the other side, a firm peace was concluded to-day in the following terms:

All injuries done by the aforesaid tribes to the Dutch or by the Dutch to them shall henceforth be forever forgotten and forgiven.

They promise mutually not to molest each other any more in the future, but if the Indians learn, that any tribe not mentioned now, had evil intentions upon the Christians, they will faithfully forewarn them and not admit such within their limits.

For the confirmation and ratification of this treaty presents were mutually given.

We pray God, that this peace may be kept unbroken by the savages.

The ink was scarcely dry on this paper before Pachem, "a crafty man" of Achkinkeshaky, was running through all the villages, urging the Indians to a general massacre. More trouble followed, but in 1645 peace was concluded.

In 1649, a number of leading Indians, chiefs in the neighborhood of Manhattan, namely, Seysegechkimus, Oratamin, Willem of Tappaen and Pennekes from "Behind the Col," in the council chamber at Fort Amsterdam, in presence of Do<sup>e</sup> Johannes Megapolensis, minister of Rensselaerswyck, Arent Van Curler and Johannes Van Twiller, made the following proposition for a lasting peace:

1. Penneckeck, the Chief "behind the Col," made a speech in the Indian tongue, which was translated and said, the Southern Minquas had asked them to live in friendship with the Dutch, which they were willing to do and for that purpose they had brought a present to the Hon<sup>ble</sup> Director.

2. An Indian of Mechgachkamic had involuntarily or unknowingly lately done mischief at Paulus Hook, which they requested us to excuse.

3. Penneckeck said the tribe called Raritanoos, formerly living at Wiquaeskeck had no chief, therefore he spoke for them, who would also like to be our friends and sent through him their greet-

---

\*Hackensack, N. J.





## THE INDIANS OF BERGEN COUNTY

ings to the Hon<sup>ble</sup> General. Throws 3 beavers to the grounds as a present.

4. Meijterma, the Chief of Neyick, was included with his people into this agreement and would be, like them, our friends. They throw 3 beavers down.

5. He speaks for the tribe of Remahenonc as for the above with a like present.

6. Pennekeek threw down 2 beavers declaring in the name of all, that their heart was sincere and that they desire to live in friendship with us, forgetting on either side, what was past.

7. Pennekeek said: "I wish you could see my heart, then you would be sure, that my words are sincere and true." He threw down two beavers, saying that is my confirmation.

8. The Hon<sup>ble</sup> Director had in former times desired to speak with them; it was done now and they had shown their good intentions; they are now waiting to see, what he would do, laying down two beavers.

9. Pennekeek said, although the Hon<sup>ble</sup> General could not understand them, they did not doubt his good intentions.

10. In conclusion Pennekeek said: "It is the wish of the Minquas, that we and you should be and remain friends, we are ready for it.

The Hon<sup>ble</sup> Director-General first expressed his thanks to the chiefs, that they had come to visit him with offers of neighborly friendship, and he then told them that he was pleased to hear such a request. He promised, that nothing whatever should be wanting on our part and that he was willing to live with them in mutual friendship and intercourse. No cause for complaint should be given and if somebody injured them, they should themselves report it to the Director, in order that they should receive justice in accordance with the case. In token of his good will he accepted their presents on the foregoing propositions with thanks and in due time he would return the compliment.

A small present worth about 20 guilders was then given to the common savages and some tobacco and a gun to the Chief Oratamin and so the savages departed well pleased.

As is noted, Oratamin was present but said nothing. However, his superiority was recognized by the gift of the tobacco and the gun, while the "common savages" received only "a small present worth about twenty guilders."

During the ten years, 1645-55, there were occasional encounters between the Indians and the whites. The whites were continually encroaching on the natives, and in the neighborhood of Pavonia a considerable settlement of Dutch had grown up. The Indians





## THE INDIANS OF BERGEN COUNTY

became restive as they saw their lands slipping away from them, and finally seemed to have planned the extirpation of the invaders. Very early on the morning of September 15, 1655, sixty-four canoes, filled with five hundred armed savages, landed on Manhattan Island, and the warriors speedily scattered through the village. Many altercations occurred between them and the whites during the day. Towards evening they were joined by two hundred more savages. Three Dutchmen and as many Indians were killed. The savages then crossed the river and in the course of three days destroyed buildings and cattle and carried off about eighty men, women and children into captivity. In this outbreak the Indians of Hackensack and Ahasimus were conspicuous actors. It was the last expiring effort of the natives near New York to check the resistless advance of the Swannekings, as they called the Dutch. However, for a time the Indians believed they had the advantage, and proceeded to profit by it with great shrewdness. They brought some of their prisoners to Pavonia, and then treated with the whites for their ransom, demanding cloth, powder, lead, wampum, knives, hatchets, pipes and other supplies. Pennekeek, chief of the Indians of Achkinkeshaky, finally sent fourteen of his prisoners over to the Dutch authorities, and asked for powder and lead in return; he got what he wanted and two Indian prisoners besides. The negotiations continued until Pennekeek had secured an ample supply of ammunition, and the Dutch had received most of their people back again. To the credit of the savages it should be said that no complaint was made of the treatment of their captives, and they kept all their promises. The authorities of New Netherland were greatly disturbed by this brief but destructive war, and as a precaution against the recurrence of such an event advised the erection of a block-house of logs, in sight of the Indians, near Achkinheshaky. Affairs seem to have gone smoothly between the Dutch and the Hackinsacks thereafter.

\* \* \* \* \*

In 1666 Oratam was very old (said to have been fourscore years and ten), and unable to travel from Hackingkesacky to Newark to attend the conference between the whites and the natives in relation to the proposed purchase of the site of Newark. The Indian deed for Newark, July 11, 1667,\* does not bear Oratam's name, from



## THE INDIANS OF BERGEN COUNTY

which it is inferred that Oratam had died during the year. We quote from Nelson's "Indians of New Jersey," the following:

And so fades from our view this striking figure in the Indian history of New Jersey. Prudent and sagacious in counsel, he was prompt, energetic and decisive in war, as the Dutch found to their cost when they recklessly provoked him to vengeance. The few glimpses we are afforded of this Indian Chieftain clearly shows him to have been a notable man among men in his day, and that he was recognized as such not only by the aborigines of New Jersey, but by the Dutch rulers with whom he came in contact. The name of such a man is surely worthy of commemoration, even two and a half centuries after his spirit has joined his kindred in the happy hunting grounds of his race.

The following letters, taken from the New Jersey Archives, Volume I, were from Governor Philip Carteret in reference to the purchase of the Newark Tract:

ELIZ. TOWN, the 26<sup>th</sup> May, 1666.

Capt. Post and Cornelius—

This letter to accompany Capt. Treat and some of his Company, they are going to Hackinsack to Oraton; therefore so as you have begunned ij pray you to Continue, and to go long with them to said Oraton and to Interpret my letter that I have written to him, likewise to help the said Capt. Treat for to bring the Bargain of the Land concerned to a period, the same being ended you shall bring Oraton and the Owner or at least the Owners of the said Land with you; and to View the said Land, and to put the Limitts—according the use and your best Judgment not more at the present, I do remain.

ELIZ. TOWN, the 26<sup>th</sup> May, 1666.

To Oraton—Honoured Sachamore according to our agreements, in our last meeting ij have sent to you Capt. Treat, with some others and the Interpreters for to make an End—Concerning that Parcell of Land, that we were about the other day, and ij have given him full power to act with you, concerning the same so much if ij was with you myself; and what you do agree with him ij shall see you fully and duely satisfied; and as we have been and lived together in unity and amity ij do wish that it may continue it shall not fail of my side, that you may be sure of it, and you need not to question that it will prove very advantageous to you, and to the People under your Command, and as for those Complaints that you did to me of the abuses done to you at the Manhattans ij cannot help the same but you may be sure that the same hath been Committed without any consent or knowledge of the Governour and in the future this shall be amended, and ij have given him notice of it and ij am very well



## THE INDIANS OF BERGEN COUNTY

assured that if he hath known the same, for the respect that he hath for you had not suffered it, and ij do promise you that if any Man under my Command do wrong you or yours upon prove of it he shall be severely Punished, the same Justice I do expect from your side and I hope in a little time to be able to supply your People with such goods as they shall have need of, and not to go to them places where they receive affronts; in a short time I shall take an Occasion to give you a Visit in the mean while I remain, &c.

At a special meeting held in 1768 by the Six Nations, they conferred upon Governor William Franklin, of New Jersey, as the representative of the people, the euphonius name of Sagorighweyoghsta (the great arbiter or doer of justice), in recognition of his and his people's justice in putting to death some persons who had murdered Indians in this province.

During the eighteenth century the Indian title to the soil was rapidly extinguished, and at the same time the vices and diseases of the stronger race were gradually reducing their numbers. In 1758 an Indian reservation, said to have been the first within the present limits of the United States, was established at Edgepelick, or Brotherton (now called Indian Mills), in Burlington county, New Jersey. The surviving aborigines remained there until 1802, when they joined the Mohegans in New York and migrated to Wisconsin, and later to Indian Territory, now part of the State of Oklahoma. For the extinction of all Indian titles, the Legislature of New Jersey, in 1832, appropriated \$2,000, and since that date almost every vestige of Indian occupation has disappeared. New Jersey was the only State in the Union that purchased and paid for all lands procured from the Indians.

---

\*This tract was known by its Indian name Nipnichsen, and was (at least 115 morgens of it) granted by William Kieft to Jacob Jacobsen Roy. Land Papers (Albany) G. G., 141.

\*The Indian deed for Newark, July 11, 1667, is from Wapamuck the Sakamaker and Wanesane. Peter Captamin, Wecaprokikan Nepean, Perawe Sessom, Mamustome Cack-anakque, and Hairish Indians, belonging now to Hackinsack from which it is to be inferred that Oratamin had died during the year and had been succeeded by Wapamuck instead of by Hans as he had anticipated.







## Some Usages of Long-Ago



THE old colonies of Pennsylvania and New Jersey had much in common in early days in regard to Redemptioners and to Slavery. Upon these subjects Mr. William J. Buck, of Norristown, Montgomery County, Pennsylvania, a most industrious and conscientious antiquarian and historian, assembled a vast mass of memorabilia, as did also such a capable writer as the late Colonel Theodore W. Bean, also of Norristown, in his notable "History of Montgomery County" of many years ago. These sources have been copiously drawn upon by a valued contributor, as will appear upon the following pages:

A type of slavery obtained at an early day in this (Montgomery) and adjoining counties, of which later generations have no knowledge whatever. From the first settlement in Pennsylvania, a considerable business was transacted, chiefly by ship-owners and captains of vessels, in bringing from Europe persons who were desirous of coming to America and were too poor to pay for their passage or to have a competency for an outfit in so long a journey. With this class, generally from England's shores, with others from Ireland and Germany, arrangements would be made through agents to contract and bring over such persons, furnish them with food during their voyage, and perhaps some other necessities, on condition that on their arrival in an American port they have the right to sell their time for a certain number of years to repay the cost thus incurred and be of some profit to those engaged in such traffic. With the growth and development of the country, this industry, if such it might be called, grew rapidly. Labor was demanded here, and this seemed a good method by which to secure both male and female help. It was just before the Revolution that it reached its greatest height, yet, even after that war, it was not much less than before and during that eight year conflict.

In the Charter agreed upon as Laws, in England, and confirmed April 25, 1682, by Penn, we find this mention in Article 23: "There shall be a register for all servants, where their name, time, wages





## SOME USAGES OF LONG-AGO

and days of payment shall be registered." In the laws prepared on the 5th of the following month the proprietary wisely provide "that the children within the province of the age of twelve years shall be taught some useful trade or skill, to the end that none may be idle, but the Poor may work to live, and the Rich, if they have become poor, may not want. That servants be not kept longer than their time, and such as are careful be both justly and kindly used in their service, and put in fitting equipage at the expiration thereof, according to custom." William Penn deserves credit for his just spirit toward labor, considering the day in which he lived. "The Great Law," passed at Chester, December 7th, contains this clause: "That no master or mistress or freeman of this Province, or territories thereof under the penalty that every person so offending shall for each servant so sold forfeit ten pounds sterling to be levied by way of distress and sale of their goods." Strange to relate, the aforesaid excellent enactment, on William and Mary reaching the throne, were abrogated in 1693.

In the beginning of 1683 "A bill to hinder the selling of servants into other Provinces, and to prevent runaways," was passed by the Council. August 29, Governor William Penn "put ye question whether a proclamation were not convenient to put forth to impower Masters to chastise their servants, and to punish any that shall inveigle any servant to goe from his Master. They unanimously agreed and ordered it accordingly." (Colonial Records, Vol. 1, page 79.)

In 1700 an act was passed "For the Better Regulation of Servants in this Province and Territories," which provided:

That no servant shall be sold or disposed of to any person residing in any other Province or Government, without the consent of the said Servant and two Justices of the Peace of the County wherein he lives or is sold, under the penalty of Ten Pounds, to be forfeited by the seller. That no servant shall be assigned over to another person by any in this Province or Territory, but in the Presence of one Justice of the Peace of the county, under penalty of Ten Pounds. And whoever shall apprehend or take up any runaway servant, and shall bring him or her to the Sheriff of the County, such person shall for every such servant, if taken up within ten miles of the Servant's abode, receive Ten Shillings, and if ten miles or upward, Twenty Shillings reward of the said Sheriff, who is hereby required to pay the same, and forthwith to send notice to the Master or own-



## SOME USAGES OF LONG-AGO

er, of whom he shall receive Five Shillings, Prison fees, upon delivery of the said Servant, together with all disbursements and reasonable charges for and upon the same. Whosoever shall conceal any Servant of this Province or Territories, or entertain him or her twenty-four hours without his or her Master's or Owner's knowledge and consent, and shall not within the said time give an account to some Justice of the Peace of the County, every such person shall forfeit Twenty Shillings for every Day's concealment. That every Servant who shall faithfully serve four years or more shall, at the expiration of their servitude, have a discharge, and shall be duly clothed with two complete suits of apparel, whereof one shall be new, and shall also be furnished with one new axe, one grubbing-hoe and one weeding-hoe, at the charge of their Master or Mistress.

This latter clause was abolished in 1771. The object of this undoubtedly was to encourage the removal of timber, that the land might sooner come into cultivation. An act was passed May 10, 1729, "laying a duty on foreigners and Irish servants imported into this province."

Masters of servants were regarded for the time being as holding property subject to taxation. The rate in 1776 was fixed at one and a half pounds each, which was increased in 1786 to ten pounds. The State passed an act March 12, 1778, making compensation to those masters whose servants or apprentices had enlisted in the army. In 1785 there were eighty servants taxed within the present limits of Montgomery county. The highest number was in Abington, 13; Providence, 10; Cheltenham, 7; Upper Merion, 7; Douglas, 5; Horsham, 5; Whitemarsh, 5; Moreland, 4; Montgomery, 4; and Lower Merion, 3. None were returned as being in the remaining townships. That they were diminishing at this time, like negro slaves, can be observed in comparing earlier lists. "The labor of the plantations," says the "Historical Review" (attributed to Franklin, 1759), "is performed chiefly by indented servants, brought from Great Britain, Ireland and Germany; because of the high price it bears, can it be performed any other way. These servants are purchased of the captains who bring them; the purchaser, by a positive law, has a legal property in them, and, like other chattels, they are liable to be seized for debts."

Servants from the Palatinate were disposed of in 1722 at ten pounds each for five years' servitude. Prior to 1727 most of the Germans who immigrated were persons of means. In the years



## SOME USAGES OF LONG-AGO

1728, 1729, 1737, 1741, 1750 and 1751 great numbers were brought hither. Shippers advertised in 1728, "Lately imported, and to be sold cheap, a parcel of likely men and women servants." On the other hand, it sometimes happened that those who had been well-to-do in the Fatherland, in their desire to immigrate, were taken advantage of in various ways by unprincipled men, their chests rifled, or their property taken on board the vessel, and in such cases, from their destitute condition on arriving in America, would be compelled to sell themselves as redemptioners to meet their expenses. It was for half a century the practice that those who had the means should be responsible for the passage of the poorer companions, and thus reduce them to a common level of dependency and beggary.

Gordon in his "History of Pennsylvania" states that "the usual terms for sale depended on the age, health, strength and earning capacity of the persons sold. Boys and girls had to serve five and ten years, or until they attained their majority. Many parents were necessitated as they had been wont to do at home, with their cattle, to sell their children. To be released from the ship the children had in many cases to assume the passage money with their parents. Children under five years old could not be sold. They were disposed of gratuitously to such persons as agreed to raise them, to be free at the age of twenty-one years. It was indeed an humble position that redemptioners occupied. Yet from this class have sprung some of the most respectable and wealthy inhabitants of the State."

Robert Sutcliff, an English Friend, in his "Travels in America," thus speaks of the redemptioners in a visit he paid, in the summer of 1804, to his relative, William Bakewell, who was at the time residing on a farm of three hundred acres in Lower Providence township, opposite Valley Forge,—

I noticed that the two female servants employed in the family had, bothe of them, been lately hired from on board a vessel lying in the Delaware, and which had recently arrived from Amsterdam with several hundred Germans, men, women and children, of that description of people called in America redemptioners. They are the people in low circumstances, who, being desirous of settling in America, and not having money to pay their passage, agree with the American captains of vessels to be taken over on condition of hiring for a term of years, on their arrival in America, to masters who are willing to advance ten or twelve guineas to be deducted out of their wages; and it not unfrequently happens that they agree to serve two





## SOME USAGES OF LONG-AGO

or three or four years for meat and clothes only, on condition of their passage being paid. Yet, as wages in the general are rather high in America, it will easily be supposed that an active and clever person conversant in some business will make much better terms on landing than the old or the infirm, or those who come over ignorant of any business. I noticed many families, particularly in Pennsylvania, of great respectability both in our Society and amongst others who had themselves come over to this country as redemptioners, or were children of such. And it is remarkable that the German residents in this country have a character for greater industry and stability than those of any other nation.

We have here an admission that even among the Quakers some had come over as redemptioners to near the beginning of the nineteenth century.

Redemptioners frequently ran away from their masters, and advertisements appeared in the newspapers of this period of rewards being offered for their arrest and recovery. A sample is here given of three who were residents of Montgomery county. Mathias Holstein, of Upper Merion, gives notice, in the "Pennsylvania Gazette of January 29, 1750, "an English servant man named Christopher Major, about thirty years of age, tall and slender and pock-marked, ran away on Saturday, the 20th instant. Whoever takes up and restores said servant so as his master may have him again, shall have forty shillings reward and reasonable charges paid. He had a pass from his master to go to Philadelphia on the 19th instant, to return the 26th, which it is supposed he altered." Jacob Paul of Abington township, offers in the "Evening Post," February 15, 1776, "Three dollars reward—Ran away on the 26th of January, 1776, from the subscriber, an apprentice lad near five feet six inches high, named Robert Mans. He had on and took with him, one home-made light colored country coatee lined with striped linsey, an upper jacket, a pair of buckskin breeches, two home-made shirts, two good pairs of yarn hose, of a dark mixed color, one pair of strong shoes and a small rimmed hat, made at Germantown. Whoever takes up said apprentice and secures him in jail, so that his master gets him again, shall have the reward and reasonable charges." William Stroud, keeper of the prison at Norristown, had an advertisement in the "Pennsylvania Packet," October 7, 1789: "We committed to the gaol of Montgomery county a certain George Sharpe, who says he is a servant to Patrick Story, in Sussex county, State of New Jersey.





## SOME USAGES OF LONG-AGO

His master is desired to take him away in three weeks from this date, or he will be sold for his fees."

These advertisements, from varied information furnished, are well calculated to give an insight into the system of servitude as it formerly prevailed here, fully confirming the harshness of the act passed in 1700, and was still practically enforced, though almost a century had passed away since its adoption. The Jacob Paul above referred to, according to the assessor's books, was at the time the owner of two hundred and eighty acres, kept at least two grown negro slaves, seven horses, seven cattle, and a riding-chair. It may therefore be possible from the system that prevailed that the said lad of nineteen years of age was obliged to live and be treated on a level with slaves. As passes were required to go abroad, we see here how easy it was to arrest such on mere suspicion, and, if no owner came, to sell them for charges. Through brutal treatment the round might be kept up, and thus end at least their best days in degrading bondage. A law was passed as late as 1819, "that no female shall be arrested or imprisoned for or by reason of any debt contracted after the passage of this act." With the final abolition for the imprisonment of debts the institution had necessarily to die out without any special enactment or repeal, so slow has ever been the advancement and regard for popular rights, even in this great commonwealth and in an enlightened age.

A story is told of one of these "soul-drivers," as these dealers in human beings were styled sometimes, in which he was successfully tricked by one of his own men. The fellow, by a little management, contrived to be the last of the flock that remained unsold, and traveled about with his master. One night they lodged at a tavern, and in the morning the young fellow, who was an Irishman, rose early, sold his master to the landlord, pocketed the money, and hastened off. Previously, however, to his going, he took the precaution to tell the purchaser that though tolerably clever in other respects, he was rather saucy and a little given to lying; that he had even been presumptuous enough at times to endeavor to pass for master, and that he might possibly represent himself as such to him.

The evils of this system Dr. Franklin, in his paper, the "Pennsylvania Gazette," of May 9, 1751, sarcastically attacked, where he says, that in return, as a proper exchange, we should furnish rattlesnakes, to be distributed through the parks and haunts of the British



## SOME USAGES OF LONG-AGO

courtiers and office-holders, especially for the ministers, nobility and members of Parliament. With servitude has now gone its kindred evil, the indentured apprentice system. The laws, as well as the sentiment that upheld these, show, from the power conferred, that in the hands of the cruel, arbitrary, oppressive and avaricious, they must have been often abused, to the deterioration of the morals of both parties.

The early history of slavery as it existed within the limits of Pennsylvania, has perhaps not heretofore had adequate treatment. It is a subject now so at variance with existing ideas that like servitude, it becomes only the more interesting from the diversity it presents in denoting the changes going on in our social and domestic life. There is no question, but as established in Pennsylvania, it was of a rather milder character than that of the other colonies. It was a forced institution, continued and upheld by the British government as long as they possessed the authority, which an eight years' war and independence only checked. The blood shed at Brandywine, at Germantown, and the suffering at Valley Forge, was also for the benefit of the African, and for which he should also be grateful, for even before the return of peace Pennsylvania had made provisions for his emancipation.

Judging from the legislation here on slavery, the importation of negroes must have commenced soon after the arrival of Penn. In the famous protest from the Germans at Germantown, the 18th of Second Month, 1688, to their fellow-members of the Society of Friends, they say,—

Here is liberty of conscience, which is right and reasonable, here ought to be likewise liberty of the body, except of evil-doers, which is another case. But to bring men hither, or to rob or sell them against their will, we stand against. In Europe there are many oppressed for conscience sake; and here are those oppressed which are of a black color. Ah! do consider well this thing, who do it, if you would be done in this manner? and if done according to Christianity. This makes an ill report in those countries of Europe that the Quakers do here handle men as they there handle the cattle, and for that reason have no inclination to come hither. And who shall maintain this your cause, or plead for it? Truly we cannot do so, except you shall inform us better hereof, that Christians have liberty to practice these things. We who profess that it is not lawful to steal, must likewise avoid to purchase such things as are stolen, but rather stop



## SOME USAGES OF LONG-AGO

this robbing and stealing, if possible. Have not those negroes as much right to fight for their freedom as you may have to keep them slaves? We desire and require you hereby lovingly that you may inform us herein that Christians have such a liberty to do, and satisfy likewise our good friends and acquaintances in our native country, to whom it is a terror or fearful thing that men should be treated so in Pennsylvania.

From the importance of this document and the proceedings connected therewith, we regret from its length in not giving the whole. Suffice it to say that it was duly signed and transmitted to the Monthly Meeting, from thence assigned to the Quarterly Meeting at Philadelphia, and lastly to the Yearly Meeting held at Burlington, the 7th of Fifth Month, 1688, with this result on their minutes: "A Paper being here presented by some German Friends, concerning the lawfulness and unlawfulness of buying and keeping Negroes, It was adjudged not to be so proper for this Meeting to give a Positive Judgment in the Case, it having so General a Relation to many other Parts, and therefore at present they forbear it."

We see here in this evasive reply the prevailing sentiment of the English element in its favor. The moral right to uphold and countenance the institution by Friends was the question, and to whom for this purpose it was alone directed. This effort at early abolition was made but little over five years after Penn's landing, and shows that slavery must have been already pretty well established to have thus claimed attention, as it existed among a body that at this time constituted a majority of the population. The Germans, however, to their credit, put their theory into practice, and forbore in any manner to countenance slavery, and this result alone saved us from possessing a large negro population like in all of the neighboring colonies.

Reference has been made to early legislation on this subject, a matter that has hitherto been too much overlooked. We thus find, from the proceedings of Council held July 11, 1693, that

Upon the request of some of the members, that an order made by the Court of Quarter Sessions for the Countie of Philadelphia, the 4th instant, proceeding upon a presentment of the Grand Jury against the tumultuous gatherings of the negroes of the towne of Philadelphia, on the first days of the weeke, ordering the Constables of Philadelphia, or anie other person whatsoever, to have power to take up negroes, male or female, whom they should find gadding





## SOME USAGES OF LONG-AGO

abroad on the first dayes of the week, without a tickett from their Master or Mistress, or not in their company, or to carry them to goale, there to remain that night, and that without meat or drink, and to cause them to be publicly whipt next morning with thirty-nine lashes, well laid on, on their bare backs, for which their said Master or Mistress should pay fifteen pence to the whipper att his deliverie of y<sup>m</sup> to y<sup>r</sup> Master or Mistress, and that the said order should be Confirmed by the Lieut.-Governor [Markham] and Council. The Lieut.-Governor and Councill, looking upon the said presentment to proceed upon good grounds, and the order of Court to be reasonable and for the benefit of the towne of Philadelphia, and that it will be a means to prevent further mischiefs that might ensue upon such disorders of negroes, doe ratifie and confirme the same, and all persons are required to putt the sd order in execution.

An act was passed in 1705 "for the trial and punishment of Negroes." It inflicted lashes for petty offences and death for crimes of magnitude. They were not allowed to carry a gun without license, or to be whipped, if they did, twenty-one lashes, nor to meet above four together, lest they might form cabals and riots. A petition was sent to the Assembly, 4th of Twelfth Month, 1706-7, "from several freemen inhabitants of the city of Philadelphia, complaining of the want of employment and lowness of wages, occasioned by the number of Negroes belonging to some of the inhabitants of the said city and others, who, being hired out to work by the day, take away the work of the Petitioners, to their great discouragement, and praying that provisions for restraint of so many Negroes as are at present employed be made by the House, was read, and ordered to be read again."

Peter Kalm, in his "Travels" in 1748-49, thus expressed himself on the subject of slavery here: "Formerly the Negroes were brought from Africa, and bought by almost everyone who had the means to purchase them. The Quakers alone scrupled to have slaves; but they are no longer so nice and they have as many Negroes as other people. However, many cannot conquer the idea of its being contrary to the laws of Christianity to keep slaves. There are likewise several free Negroes in town, who have been lucky enough to get a very zealous Quaker for their Master, who gave them their liberty after they had faithfully worked for him some time."

Among the early advocates for the abolition of slavery residing in Montgomery county may be recalled the eccentric Benjamin Lay,





## SOME USAGES OF LONG-AGO

of Abington, who wrote a book against its evils, printed by Franklin in 1737, being a 32mo. of 280 pages, wherein he calls "all slave-keepers that keep the innocent in bondage, apostates. A practice so gross and hurtful to religion, and destructive to government, beyond what words can set forth, and yet lived in by ministers and magistrates in America. Written for a general service, by him that sincerely desires the present and eternal welfare and happiness of all mankind." He reflects on the Society for holding slaves, and says, "The best and only way for Friends or others that now have slaves is to discharge themselves of them." He uses rather coarse language, and complains of his forcible ejections for speaking on the subject in their meetings. He also introduces personal allusions concerning its leading and influential slave-holding members.

An act was passed in 1712 in Pennsylvania to prevent the importing and selling of negroes or Indians within the province, which the home government also annulled. Thomas Mayberry, a Friend, shortly after 1730 erected a forge on the Perkiomen creek, at the present borough of Green Lane, which was chiefly carried on by the labor of negro slaves down to about the Revolution.

While the institution prevailed here, we find from records that slaves generally possessed but one name, as Pompey, Cæsar, Scipio, Cato, Prince, Jamaica, Guinea, Cuff, Tom, Jupiter, Cupid. Females were commonly called Silvia, Judge, Flora, Venus, Sall, Sook and Phill. On their death they were frequently buried in their masters' orchards or on the edge of their woodlands. Friends, on this matter, also exercised a care that they be not placed in too close proximity. From Middletown records, Bucks county, we learn that on 6th of Third Month, 1703, "Friends are not satisfied with having negroes buried in Friends' burying-ground; therefore Robert Heaton and Thomas Stackhouse are appointed to fence off a portion for such uses."

Slavery in New Jersey probably attained its greatest height about 1765, or when the Stamp Act was passed, and attention began to be directed to the evils attending the colonial system of government. In the convention held at Philadelphia from January 23 to 28, 1775, it was resolved "That it be and is hereby recommended to the several members of this Convention to promote and encourage instructions or advice from their several counties, to their represent-



## SOME USAGES OF LONG-AGO

atives in General Assembly, to procure a law prohibiting the future importation of slaves into this province."

To strike a harder blow at the system of slavery, on March 29, 1788, an act was passed declaring that all vessels employed in the slave trade should be liable to forfeiture, and a penalty of one thousand pounds be imposed for building and equipping them for the traffic. Congress took no important action in this matter until March, 1807, when an act was passed against the importation of Africans into the country and declaring the slave trade unlawful.

On the organization of Montgomery county in 1785 an enumeration was taken of those still remaining in slavery, the total number being one hundred and eight. By location they were as follows: Providence township had the highest number, 20; Moreland, 19; Norriton, 14; Perkiomen, 7; Lower Merion, 6; Worcester, 5; Frederick, 5; Abington, 4; Montgomery, 4; Upper Salford, 2; Springfield, 2; Whitemarsh, 2; Franconia, 2; Lower Salford, 2; Douglas, 1; Upper Hanover, Hatfield, Towamensing, Whitpain, Gwynedd and Plymouth contained no slaves at any time.

Slaves were taxed in 1776, four pounds, and in 1786, forty pounds. The census of 1790 returned 440 free colored persons and 114 slaves in Montgomery county; in 1800 the number was reduced to 33 slaves, of which nine were in Providence, 3 in Lower Merion and three in Moreland township. In 1810 there were three, and by 1830 only one slave left. In 1880 the county contained 1,763 colored population.

The estimable Dr. Thomas Graeme advertised in October, 1752, that "A mulatto slave, named Will, about twenty-nine years of age, being of a Negro father and an Indian mother," ran away from his plantation in Horsham township (Montgomery county now), and that "whosoever secures him in any legal gaol shall have five pounds reward and reasonable charges paid." In February, 1806, the "Norristown Herald" carried an advertisement for Peter Custer, Providence township, near Trappe, that he had for sale "a black woman about thirty-five years of age and slave for life, with two children, the one about nine years old and the other three years. The children are entered in the office."

The climax of all these auction sales appears in the notice of John Jones, of the Manor of Moreland, near the Crooked Billet hotel, in which he offers for sale "a likely negro woman, about twenty-



## SOME USAGES OF LONG-AGO

nine years old, had the small-pox, and understands country business well. Also a Negro child, her boy, one year old." Such cases were the sad features of American slavery, and which in the end wrought the destruction of the infamous system.

When arose opposition to human slavery, and sympathy for an enslaved race, there came into existence almost spontaneously, what came to be known as "the Underground Railroad." Our fathers and grandfathers knew more of the meaning and details of this system of aiding colored slaves from their bondage in the Slave States to Canada, than we do today. It was in existence many years prior to the Civil War in course of which the slaves were emancipated. Its name came about in this way: The concerted active management of Abolitionists in the Free States secreted and shielded the colored slave in his attempt to gain a free country. Here in Pennsylvania, slaves were hunted down and easily tracked as far as Columbia. There the pursuers lost all trace of them. The most scrutinizing inquiries, the most vigorous search, failed to give any knowledge of them. The pursuers seemed to have reached an abyss which they could not fathom, and then bewildered and discomfited, they declared "there must be *an underground railroad somewhere*." It will be remembered that this was just at the beginning of the railway systems in this country, and there seemed some mystery connected with these thoroughfares. So it was, (contends Dr. Smedley in his book entitled "Underground Railroad"), that the slave-owner called the system "underground."

The branch of this "railroad" that passed through Montgomery county is known in history as the "Northern Route." It was a section of the line which extended from Columbia, Pennsylvania, to Canada. The southern terminus of this route was at Columbia, on the Susquehanna river, from whence arrivals were noted and consigned to the friendly agents along the line of operations. The founder of the southern depot nearest the supply of passengers was William Wright, of Columbia, Lancaster county, Pennsylvania. As early as 1787, Samuel Wright laid out the town of Columbia. The lots were disposed of by lottery and all sold, and many substantial persons from Bucks, Montgomery, and Chester counties and Philadelphia settled there. A majority of these people were Quakers, or





## SOME USAGES OF LONG-AGO

descendants of Quakers, and carried with them to the new settlement convictions hostile to the institution of slavery. The Wrights gave many small lots to the colored people in the northeastern part of the town and encouraged their settlement at the place. This brought into one community a large number of colored people, who became a source of refuge to those who were constantly fleeing northward. William Wright was uncompromising in his hatred of slavery; an active man, he enjoyed a presence of mind equal to all emergencies. He assisted all fugitives who applied to him, and when he heard of any fugitives being recaptured, he lost no time or opportunity, either by process of law, device or artifice, in securing their escape. On several occasions, when fugitives came to his place pursued, he hastily dressed them in women's clothing, and sent them by night-time to Daniel Gibbons, near Lancaster City. The free colored population of the town were industrious as a class, and thoroughly enjoyed the sympathy of the whites, who aided them in hastening the flight northward of those who reached them. The place soon became known to slave-owners, but early experience taught them to give it a wide berth. On one occasion a "slave-catcher," by the name of Isaac Brooks, made his appearance in search of a "run-away nigger," as he was pleased to call him. He was soon surrounded by a score of stalwart colored men and hustled out of the town, stripped of his clothing and unmercifully whipped with hickory withes. He was never seen in Columbia afterwards. Brooks was a providence in carrying the news southward. His misadventure was told to many households, repeated by masters and servants, until through Maryland and parts of Virginia it was well-known to all escaping or runaway slaves that once at Columbia they were comparatively safe.

The number of arrivals made it necessary to provide a means of transit to northern cities and Canada. Agencies were sought out among earnest sympathizing Abolitionists in Lancaster, Chester, Montgomery and Bucks counties. Phoenixville, Norristown and Quakertown were stations on the line.

All roads led to Canada in those days. The route through Montgomery county was deemed extremely perilous, because it lay near a great city, to which news of escaped slaves was promptly reported, especially after the advent of the telegraph, and by reason of a large circulation of daily papers, carried through the country by





## SOME USAGES OF LONG-AGO

railroad every day. The danger was further increased by the strong public opinion in favor of sustaining the law, especially after the passage of the Fugitive Slave Law, in 1850. Rewards were constantly offered for the apprehension of slaves, and the officers of a vigilant secret service in Philadelphia were ever on the alert. The Abolitionists, or "Woolly Heads," as they were frequently called, were persecuted and ostracized by the Whig and Democratic parties, while presiding judges and ministers of the gospel, with but few exceptions, looked upon them as among the most dangerous agitators of the age. They were, however, men and women who lived up to their conviction of duty, and time has fully vindicated their exalted humanity and patriotism. If the cause they pursued hastened the madness of the fatal hour when the South flew to arms and sought to dis sever the country, then they may rightly claim to have been benefactors of mankind.

Among those who were most active, zealous and influential in arousing the spirit of revolt against the sin of slavery and the horrid catalogue of crimes committed in its name was the Rev. Samuel Aaron. He was a gifted orator, with a flow and force of language which never failed to hold his audiences, whether they assented to his views or not. He was at times the impersonation of eloquence enraged, as his keen invective flowed in torrents; and when he called his followers around him in the old Baptist meeting-house, or, perhaps, in front of the old court-house, to review some act of "Northern submission to the slave-power of the South, the occasion was esteemed of more than usual public interest. Such a leader inspired an enthusiastic following, and nowhere on the long line of transit were worn and weary passengers received with greater solicitude, cared for more tenderly and dispatched with greater promptness and prudence, than at Norristown.

The gentlemen composing this "railroad staff" were not of the mutual admiration school. They were agitators, antipathetic, many of them valuable, all of them independent thinkers. They represented the activities of life in all its callings, from the plowman to the philosopher. When the news of the Fugitive Slave Law reached the North, these men came together at the peril of their lives and firmly resolved to resist it at all hazards. While defiant, they were not wanting in that prudence and caution necessary to their usefulness, and by day and by night their vigilance extended from the Plymouth



## SOME USAGES OF LONG-AGO

Valley to the hills of Providence. The counsels of the cool and philosophic Allan Corson, of Plymouth, were matched by the promptness of Thomas Hopkins, William W. Taylor and Charles Corson, of Providence, in forwarding passengers through to Bucks county. In Norristown, Dr. William Corson was among the first to report arrivals. In active practice, a consistent friend to the colored people, slave or free, and by reason of his intercourse in his daily visits to all localities in the town and many miles in all directions around it, if arrivals occurred he was sure to be apprised of it. With coadjutors such as Lawrence E. Corson, James Paxon, Jacob Bodey, Daniel Ross, John Williams and John Augusta, the business in hand was quickly and efficiently dispatched. If a collection of money was necessary to forward passengers, John Augusta and John Williams were always ready to go to the right ones to get it. Paxon was always ready to give asylum to passengers, and the giant Bodey could always be relied upon for transportation. There was not a member of this staff who had not his special office of usefulness, and among them the quiet, unobtrusive, but persistent George Wright was always found responsive to duty. An enthusiastic follower of his cherished friend Aaron, he never tired in kindly offices to relieve the suffering and hungry as they tarried in or fled through the town. There was a direct connection between Norristown and the anti-slavery office in Philadelphia, *via* night-trains on the Norristown railroad. Rev. Samuel Aaron, Dr. William Corson, Isaac and John Roberts and Mary R. Roberts were in charge of this line of transportation. Daniel Ross would house or conceal the passengers until a late hour, when they would be ticketed through to waiting friends at or near Ninth and Green streets, then *via* the Philadelphia line, to Canada. Contributions were liberal in support of this line.

In 1841, Thomas Read lived four miles west of Norristown. The slaves he received were chiefly men, who, following directions given them, came in the night. Some were brought. He sent many to Miller McKim, at the anti-slavery office in Philadelphia, William Still being generally the receiving agent. Others were sent in various directions. Some remained and worked for him when required.

After the passage of the Fugitive Slave Law the determined members of the organization still persevered in their efforts to aid the fugitives to escape. Others faltered and knew not what to do. At an evening company where several of these faltering ones were



## SOME USAGES OF LONG-AGO

in attendance, two young school-girls were present and listened to the conversation. The thought occurred to them to test by actual experience the standing of those present. Leaving the room upon some pretext, they shortly after knocked at the kitchen door, and, closely disguised and muffled, said they were fugitives and asked for help. This brought the question home to the men present, "Would they give aid?" A long parley ensued, the girls being left in the kitchen. It was finally decided to take them to a neighboring house, and, as soon as a wagon could be procured, two of the men volunteered to drive them to Quakertown. By this time the girls were so full of laughter at the success of their plan that when passing close to a light their emotions were discovered to be other than those of grief and fright, and the disguise was detected. But the joke was so serious to some of the men that they could not laugh at it. The girls were severely reprimanded; yet all concerned were glad at heart that they had discovered how those present stood in regard to the Fugitive Slave Law. At a convention held in the old court-house in Norristown shortly after the enactment of that law, a committee of prominent anti-slavery advocates was appointed to circulate petitions for signatures asking for a repeal of the law.

Thomas Read's daughter Mary was appointed one of the committee. Being young at the time, she thought she had but to present the petition, and names would be willingly put thereto. But she was astonished at the almost universal reception she met with. Doors were shut in her face as soon as she made known her desire. People insulted her, snubbed her and would not talk with her on the subject. One minister, however, thought it his duty to talk with her, and pointed out the wrong she was doing: "Nay, she was committing a crime, for laws were made to be upheld and not to be opposed." His morality took the law without question, and he wanted her to do the same. Needless to say she did not.

While this describes the general public opinion, there were many benevolent individuals who had not courage to express their secret convictions, yet were willing to aid the Abolitionists by pecuniary contributions. John Augusta, an old colored resident of that place, and an important *attaché* of the Underground Railroad, said that many citizens came to him and remarked: "John, I know you must be needing considerable money to forward passengers on your road. When you need contributions come to me, but do not let my name be





## SOME USAGES OF LONG-AGO

mentioned as one contributing." Norristown first became a station of the Underground Railroad about 1839, the year of the first meeting of the Anti-Slavery Society there. The number of fugitives who passed through there, assisted by their friends, increased from year to year, as many as fifteen or twenty being occasionally concealed within the town at one time. A very strong and bitter animosity existed there against the Abolitionists, especially in the early days of the anti-slavery agitation; and for individuals to make any active efforts in behalf of fugitives was to incur general denunciation and social ostracism. Malignant threats were made, but never carried into effect. The furthest extent of a mob demonstration was the stoning of the Baptist meeting-house and the breaking up of an anti-slavery meeting which was being held there. This was the only building in which these meetings were held in the early part of the work in that town. In later times, when public sentiment was growing strong in favor of emancipation, very many, even among public officials, were hearty sympathizers and silent helpers. The positions which they held, depending upon public suffrage or popular favor, made it politic for them to enjoin secrecy when bestowing aid and to make their sentiments known to but few, even of the well-known and trusted Abolitionists.

As public sentiment in Norristown was inimical to the anti-slavery cause until the exigencies of the times and the acknowledged justness of universal liberty throughout the country made it popular the harboring of fugitives in that place was particularly hazardous. Yet among those who dared to do it, who was openly known to do it, and who built a secret apartment in his house for that especial purpose which it was almost impossible to discover, was Dr. Jacob L. Paxson. Independent and fearless, he did his own thinking, kept his own council, took his own course, and concealed, fed, and forwarded hundreds that even the anti-slavery people knew nothing of. He kept a horse and wagon, and took them himself to William Jackson, Quakertown; Jonathan McGill, Solebury; and to William H. Johnson, Buckingham, all in Bucks county. He entertained abolition speakers after the passage of the penal slave law, when they were refused admittance to the hotels. One evening when Garrison, Burleigh and several others were at his place, Samuel Jamison, who owned a large manufacturing establishment adjoining, came in and informed him of a conversation he had just overheard in a small as-





## SOME USAGES OF LONG-AGO

semblage of men concerning a plot which was being laid to burn his house if he did not dismiss his guests. "Tell them to burn it," said Paxson, "and scatter the ashes to the four winds; I'm a free man."

A few days after the Christiana riot, Parker, Pinkney and Johnson, an account of whom is given in the description of the tragedy and the narrative of Isaac and Dinah Mendenhall, came on foot in the night to Norristown, accompanied by another person whose name is not known. Dr. William Corson announced their arrival to John Augusta. The four men were concealed in a lot of shavings under a carpenter-shop, which stood three feet above ground on Church street near Airy. There they remained four days, and were fed with food passed to them upon an oven-peel across a four-foot alley from a frame house in which Samuel Lewis, a colored man, lived. During this time the United States marshal's detectives were watching every part of the town. On the fourth day a meeting was held by a few trusted friends in the office of Lawrence E. Corson, Esq., to devise means for their escape. Dr. Paxson proposed engaging five wagons for that evening, four to be sent in different directions as decoys to lead off the vigilant detectives. The plan was adopted, and the wagons and teams were engaged of Jacob Bodey, whose sympathies were known to be in favor of fugitives. But he would accept no pay, saying he would do so much as his share. The first was sent up the turnpike road, and shortly after the second was sent down that road; another was sent across the bridge toward West Chester, and the fourth out the State road toward Downingtown. The attention of the alert officers being now attracted in these directions, the men, after having shaved and otherwise changed their personal appearance, walked from the carpenter-shop to Chestnut street and down Chestnut to the house of William Lewis, colored, where the fifth wagon, which was to go directly through the town and up the Mill Creek road, was waiting for them. Dr. Paxson was there also, and saw the men, with William Lewis, colored, as their driver, start safely for Quakertown. Lewis was a little tremulous with fear at the perilous undertaking, which, with the haste, somewhat confused him at the start. On the road he became bewildered, and went several miles out of the way, which gave Parker the impression that he was partly intoxicated, a condition in which Lewis never was known to be. From Quakertown they journeyed to Canada, traveling part of the way on foot and part by public con-



## SOME USAGES OF LONG-AGO

veyance. On the following day the United States marshal was informed that they had left Norristown and were out of his reach. Officers were at once dispatched to Quakertown, but the Underground Railroad there disappeared from their view and its passengers could be tracked no further.

It is known and vouched for by many that knew the facts, concerning three cases where runaway slaves at their own request were packed in wooden boxes as merchandise and sent north to Philadelphia, where they were received by friends and passed on to the North and became free men. One of these cases was that of Henry (Box) Brown, a slave in Richmond, Virginia. He conceived the plan of getting away from slavery by having himself boxed up and shipped as merchandise to Philadelphia, and went to work accordingly to effect his object. With the help of some friends, whom he had made acquainted with his plans, he arranged with a firm in Philadelphia to receive him as merchandise, and then got reliable men in Richmond to help him there. A man made the box, and he got in it, taking with him a sack (*sic*) of water, some crackers, a cup, a gimlet and a sponge. The lid was nailed fast, and the box marked "This side up with care." A reliable person was secured to take the box, pay the freight, and start it on its way to Philadelphia. After all his arrangements had been made he received word from his Philadelphia friends not to attempt to send the goods, as there was too much risk; but, determined not to be baffled, he replied that the goods were shipped and would be in Philadelphia at a certain time.

A trusty man was on hand at the time appointed but the train arrived without the goods. It was explained that an accident had occurred which would cause a delay of four hours. The excitement and anxiety increased, but the box finally arrived. It was taken charge of, and the proper parties notified of the arrival of their goods. This was twelve o'clock at night, and all assembled at the place appointed to receive him.

By this time the excitement was great. Some were sure he would be dead, and much concerned as to what disposition they should make of the remains. When the box was carried in it was received almost with the silence of death. All seemed afraid to hear their own voices. It was put down, and one tapped it on the top with the question: "Is all right?" "An answer came from out the box: "All right, sir." The lid was quickly pried off, and Henry Box



## SOME USAGES OF LONG-AGO

Brown stood erect and sang a hymn he had learned for the occasion. Then there was rejoicing. Their anxiety was over and their pent-up spirits set free.

Where the delay occurred the goods had to be reloaded. The box was turned with the marked side down, so that he stood on his head till the veins on his forehead and face were as thick as his finger. Two men sat on the box, and one tapped it and wondered what it contained. The gimlet was to bore holes to let in more air, if necessary, and the water was to drink. Instead of drinking it, he put it on the sponge and bathed his face and head. Scientific men, who saw the box, said this was the only thing that saved his life, and that bathing with the water restored carbon to the exhausted air.

A few days after his arrival in Philadelphia there was an anti-slavery meeting held in the Baptist meeting-house at Norristown, and Henry and his box and all his outfit were exhibited there. From here he took the Underground Railroad to the land of freedom.

The other cases mentioned where slaves were brought North in boxes were reported in Still's "Underground Railroad." They were the cases of William (Box), Peel Jones and Leah Green. Jones was boxed up in Baltimore and shipped by the Ericson line of steamers in the month of April, 1859, reaching Philadelphia in seventeen hours after shipment, and was safely delivered to his friends, who cautiously awaited his arrival in the City of Brotherly Love.

The third case was that of Leah Green, an interesting girl and the slave of James Noble, of Baltimore. William Adams had proposed marriage to her. She concluded to accept the offer only when she was free, believing the duties of wife and mother incompatible with a condition of servitude. She finally concluded to escape. Her trusted friends placed her in a wellworn box, such as was commonly used in sending goods from Baltimore. A quilt, a bottle of water and some hard bread were carefully stowed away with the girl, and she was shipped as freight on the Ericson line. Her intended mother-in-law, a free colored woman, took passage on the same line. The box was carefully watched, and upon arrival at Philadelphia was promptly forwarded to the consignee. Leah Green was happy. She subsequently married the man of her choice, and was a free woman. She settled in Elmira, New York, and died three years after her marriage.





## SOME USAGES OF LONG-AGO

The indefatigable "Underground Railroad" conductor hereinbefore named mentions other instances as follows:

John and Jane French, with their little boy two years old, were slaves in Maryland. Like many others they had heard of a place in the north where they might be free if they could get there, and they resolved to make the effort. They had been told there were people in Pennsylvania who would help them. They came to Oxford and then by the underground railroad through Downingtown, Lionville and Kimberton, from William Fussell's to my place. I saw at once that it was a very important case and one that required prompt action. We put them in a room, no one but my wife knowing they were in the house. I went to see Edwin H. Coates, told him what I had in charge, and asked him to accompany me that night on our journey, which he readily agreed to. I directed my hired man to have the horses so they might be used if needed, and when Edwin arrived after all had gone to bed we started for George Lukens', Kulpville. We arrived just at dawn and were very kindly received. We returned about noon, our absence having excited some remark. None suspected where we had been except a fugitive slave who was living with me at the time. As soon as we left, George Lukens took his charge to William H. Johnson's, Bucks county. They arrived in the evening, when Jane told them she could go no further. They fixed up a room for her and made her as comfortable as possible. The next morning she had a fine baby boy, which she named William Taylor. To part with these people and receive their simple expressions of thanks is more precious than silver or gold.

Perry and Lucy Simons were slaves in Virginia, where they remained until they were about fifty years old. When the last of their seven children had been sold to traders to go South they resolved to leave their old master and seek freedom. By the aid of friends, after many weeks of travel, they reached my place. I locked them in a room, charged them not to look out of the window and informed my wife that I had a charge. We took care of them through the day and that night I took them across the Perkiomen, at Tyson's mill, and left them at daylight with directions for Richard Moore's at Quakertown. This was just after the Fugitive Slave law was passed, making every Northern man who assisted them a kidnapper, and we knew that we were watched. I told them as I had been true to them I hoped they would not betray me. They answered: "No, Massa; God bless you. We will never betray you."

John and Sue Burns were slaves in Newcastle county, Delaware. They were a young couple, who had one boy about two years old, and they resolved that they would not raise children for the slave market. John took one of his master's horses, put his wife and child on





## SOME USAGES OF LONG-AGO

the horse, and traveling himself on foot, started for freedom. They took the horse as far as they thought safe and then turned him loose to return home so that he might arrive before morning, and they kept on their course to Thomas Garret's, Wilmington, a distance of fourteen miles, getting there before daylight. Thence by way of Kennet Square, Downingtown, Kimberton, and Phoenixville, they came to our place in Montgomery county. They remained for a short time in the neighborhood, and then became very uneasy for fear of being captured and taken back into slavery. They were put on the road for Canada as the only place of safety. Like all other slaves they had been told that there was a place under the north star where they could be free, but how far it was they had but a faint idea. I never saw one, however, that thought it too far or too much of a hardship to go there. These were a very interesting couple and a very bright little boy.

Eliza and her son were slaves to a man named Gibbs living near Havre de Grace, Maryland. They ran off, came by way of Oxford through Chester county to F. F. Pennypacker's and on to my place. There she wished to stay and in a short time we found we were in trouble, but we concluded to meet it. I went to Norristown, called on Thomas and Amy Bruff, stated the situation and offered to pay them to take care of her. I told them that I would find a home for her as soon as she was able to be moved, and instructed them to call on Dr. William Corson if needed and tell him I would pay all expenses. The Dr. was called on, but, as I expected, he would take nothing for his services. Her child was deformed. We took her to our place and had her there for several months. Finally the child died and was buried at the Friends' meeting-house in Providence. In the meantime her son lived with Jacob L. Paxson. After the child died she and her son started for Canada. So it would appear to those who stood aloof that the road of those engaged in the underground railroad was not always strewn with roses; but there was a consolation that outsiders did not understand.

William and Perry Lewis, brothers, and Henson Clemens, were slaves in West Virginia, all very stout young men and very determined in asserting their right to themselves. They made their way through Maryland into York county, Pennsylvania, and by way of Columbia and Lancaster to James Fulton's, in Chester county. There they stayed a short time until kidnappers made their appearance in the neighborhood. Then they came to E. F. Pennypacker's and my place. They were all good farm hands, found ready employment, and stayed about the neighborhood for several years. Perry Lewis lived with me three years. He was a very good farm hand and efficient in assisting me in helping his own people on their road to liberty. Finally he got married and moved to Norristown, where he



## SOME USAGES OF LONG-AGO

died, as did also his brother William. Their comrade Henson, after remaining for about two years, became uneasy, fearing he might be captured and taken back into slavery, and concluded to go to Canada. We gave him instructions and put him on the road. After a tiresome journey he arrived in safety. After he got there he got a friend to write to me giving an account of his journey and the reception he had met on his arrival, how much he was pleased with the place, and expressing many thanks to me and his friends in Montgomery county for the acts of kindness he had received at their hands.

Jerry was a slave of a man named Ball, who lived in Mill Creek hundred, Newcastle county, Delaware. His master had given him his freedom by telling him he might go and earn a living, that he was to be a free man, but without taking a legal course to secure it. Jerry had married, and lived in the same township within five miles of his master, in a log cabin, or hut, on a common near Red Clay creek, and within three miles of the Pennsylvania line. His master's home was not more than five miles from the latter state. Jerry was living peaceably and quietly in the neighborhood, and supported himself by working for farmers when he could, employment being scarce and wages low. Twenty-five cents per day was the price for a common day's work and forty and fifty cents for harvesting. When not thus engaged he lived by fishing and trapping. At that time, sixty years ago, thousands of acres of land lay waste in that region, with here and there a log cabin, or hut, occupied by a poor man, or a slave not claimed by his master. Such tenants paid from seven to fifteen dollars rent for their cabins and as much land as they saw proper to make use of. Such was the case with Jerry. Finally his old master died and trouble began.

Ball's heirs laid claim to Jerry as part of their father's estate, but Jerry insisted that his master had set him free and that he would not serve them. Finally one of his master's sons, in company with six or eight others, went to Jerry's cabin to capture him. He had received word of their coming, and prepared to defend himself as well as he could by fortifying his cabin. They surrounded the house and broke in the door. As one attempted to enter, Jerry struck at him with an ax, missed the man, struck the door, and broke it to pieces; then took his gun and shot, but missed his man. The load took effect on a man named Robinson, who was sitting on his horse forty or fifty yards off, and destroyed one of his eyes. (I often saw him carrying his mark for trying to capture poor Jerry.) He then fought his way out and ran for the woods. They followed and, after a race of a mile, overpowered him and took him captive to Newcastle. He was put in jail and sold to a slave trader to be taken South. This occurred within one mile of where I was living and took such a



## SOME USAGES OF LONG-AGO

hold on me, although I was then only ten or twelve years old, that when I arrived at manhood I set up a station on the Underground Railroad and kept it open until slavery was abolished by the proclamation of Abraham Lincoln, trying to obey the injunction that "Whatsoever ye would that others should do to you do you even so unto them."

Fred Douglas, later the Hon. Frederick Douglas, ex-Marshall of the District of Columbia, was a passenger on the Underground Railroad from slavery to his present position. He was a slave in Talbot county, Maryland, and his master's name was Aull. He passed through Philadelphia. Robert Purvis, E. M. Davis, and J. Miller McKim, of Philadelphia; Horace Greeley and Gerritt Smith, of New York, and Charles Sumner and others, of Boston, arranged to send him to London, and while there his freedom was bought by penny contributions.

The following incident is from the pen of Robert Purvis, one of the most active agitators in the anti-slavery cause, and occurring in Bucks county had a peculiar interest to their friends in Montgomery with whom they were co-operating.

Among the hundreds of cases which came under my notice, none excited my interest more deeply than that of four brothers, who came from Frederick County, Maryland, and arrived in Philadelphia in the summer of 1836. They were finely developed and handsome young men, reputed to be the children of their master, and after his death, finding themselves slaves when they had been promised their freedom, they took "French leave" and arrived safely in Philadelphia, under the assumed Christian names of Basil, Thomas, Charles and William, and retaining the surname of Dorsey. I took three of the brothers to my farm in Bucks county—Thomas preferring to live in the city. I succeeded in securing places with some of the neighboring farmers for Charles and William, Basil remaining in my employ. The latter was a married man, having a wife and two children whom he left in Maryland. She was a free woman and by a previous arrangement with her brother-in-law likewise free, they were brought to Philadelphia, where I met them and took them to my house. This man proved afterwards to be a false and treacherous villain. He opened a correspondence with the son of their old master, who bought these men at the settlement of his father's estate and had become their owner. By a well-arranged plan, with the assistance of a notorious slave-catcher, they were enabled to surprise and capture Thomas, who was hurried before one of the judges of the court and sent back to slavery. He was carried to Baltimore and imprisoned with the view of shipping him thence to the New Orleans market. By the timely efforts of his friends in Philadelphia money





## SOME USAGES OF LONG-AGO

was raised, and the sum of one thousand dollars paid for his freedom. He afterwards became the popular caterer of Philadelphia, and died a few years ago, leaving a handsome competence to his family. Immediately following the capture of Thomas, by the direction of the brother-in-law, they went to Bristol and secured the services of a constable by the name of Brown, who repaired with the claimant and his friends to Doylestown and obtained warrants from Judge Fox for the arrest of the three brothers. Basil, while ploughing at some distance from the house, was overpowered after a severe struggle by the slave-holder and his friends, placed in a carriage and taken to Bristol, three miles distant, where he was thrown into a cell used for criminals. I had just returned from the city and was in the act of eating my supper, when a neighbor's son came in great excitement to tell me that Basil had been carried off. I sprang from the table and hastening in the direction where I knew the man had been working, learned from the farmers assembled there the particulars of this outrage with the added information that he had been taken to Bristol. Burning with indignation, hatless as I was, I hurried thither, where I found the captors and the captive.

An excited crowd of people was gathered about the market house, whom I addressed, and succeeded in enlisting their sympathies in behalf of the poor victim. After a parley with the slaveholder, it was agreed that we should meet there at seven o'clock in the morning and start thence for the purpose of appearing before Judge Fox, at Doylestown. Availing myself of the kind offer of a friend, I was driven rapidly home for the purpose of securing the safety of Basil's brothers. I was rejoiced to find them already there. They had heard of Basil's capture and were pursued by a part of those men led by Brown, who had taken him. These men had halted in a field near my residence, evidently deliberating how to proceed. By my advice, Charles, in whose hands I placed a double-barreled gun heavily charged, walked out in front of the house and defied them. The slave-catchers, thinking doubtless discretion the better part of valor, instantly departed. Under the cover of the darkness I was enabled to convey the two men to my brother Joseph's farm, about two miles distant, and that night he drove forty miles and left them in New Jersey at the house of a friend. There they remained safely until an opportunity offered to send them to Canada. The next morning about six o'clock I was on my way to Bristol. Before reaching there I met a woman who informed me that at five o'clock a wagon passed her house and she heard Basil cry out, "Go tell Mr. Purvis they are taking me off." The object of the movement was to deceive me in regard to time and enable them to appear before Judge Fox, and by *ex-parte* testimony have the case closed and the victim delivered into their custody. Upon receiving this information I hastened home and quickly harnessing a fleet trotting





## SOME USAGES OF LONG-AGO

horse pursued them. I left instructions that Basil's wife and children should follow in another carriage. By good fortune I came upon the *fugitive* kidnappers about four miles from Doylestown, where they had stopped for breakfast. I immediately drove to the residence of William H. Johnson, the noted abolitionist, who instantly took hold of the matter, and went out to spread the news far and wide among the anti-slavery people. I arrived in Doylestown fully an hour before Basil was brought by his captors who were of course amazingly surprised to see me. I at once secured the services of the ablest lawyer in the town, Mr. Ross, the father of the late Judge Ross, who urged the postponement of the case upon Basil's oath of having free papers left in the hands of a friend living in Columbia, Pennsylvania.

Doubtless the judge was deeply impressed by the appearance in the court-room of the delicate and beautiful wife and the young children clinging to the husband and father, who, looking the picture of despair sat with the evidence in his torn and soiled garments of the terrible conflict through which he had passed. The claimant obtained legal services in the person of a Mr. Griffith, a young lawyer. Notwithstanding the urgency of their counsel to have the case immediately decided, the judge postponed it for two weeks.

This was all I expected to obtain. My duty lay clearly before me, and I resolved that no effort should be spared to secure Basil's freedom. With this view, I strove to arouse the colored people to rescue him in the event of his being remanded to his captors. The plan adopted was to assemble in squads about the three leading roads of the town and use means adequate for the purpose of liberating him. Most fortunately, however, by an unexpected turn of events, a resort to these desperate measures was rendered unnecessary. Desiring to make use of every available means to secure the liberty of this worthy man, I called upon that eminent lawyer and philanthropist, David Paul Brown, and asked him if he would not appear in behalf of the defense. He promptly responded to my request, saying, "I am always ready to defend the liberty of any human being." I then tendered him a fee of fifty dollars, which he at once refused. "I shall not now," he said, "nor have I ever accepted fee or reward, other than the approval of my conscience, and I respectfully decline receiving your money; I shall be there;" and turning to his barber he asked: "Will you get me up so that I can go in the stage coach which leaves at four o'clock in the morning?"

The day of trial came and the slave-holder was there, bringing with him additional proof in the persons of his neighbors to swear as to the identity of the man. Armed with the bill of sale, the victory seemed an easy one. The claimant at one time was willing to take five hundred dollars for his slave, which we agreed to give, yielding



to the earnest entreaty of Basil, although it was in violation of our principles, as we have always denied the right of property in man. He advanced his price to eight hundred dollars at Doylestown, and when that was agreed to declined taking less than one thousand dollars. Basil then said, "No more offers if the decision goes against me. I will cut my throat in the court-house; I will not go back to slavery." I applauded his resolution; horrible as it might be, it seemed better than his return to a living death. There for the first time I unfolded our plans for his liberation. The case was called promptly at the hour agreed upon, and Mr. Griffith spreading out his bill of sale and pointing to his witness, the friends of the claimant who had come for the purpose of identifying this man as his property, opened his case with an air of the utmost confidence in the result. Mr. Brown in his turn quickly rose and the magnetism of his presence was felt by the crowded court-room, nine-tenths of whom were doubtless in sympathy with the poor slave. He commenced by saying, "I desire to test this case by raising every objection, and may it please your honor these gentlemen, who hail from *Liberty*, Frederic county, Maryland, are here according to law to secure their "pound of flesh," and it is my duty to see that they shall not get "one drop of blood." As a preliminary question I demand authority to show that Maryland is a slave state." Mr. Griffith, with a self-satisfied air, remarked: "Why, Mr. Brown, everybody knows Maryland is a slave State." "Sir, everybody is nobody," was the quick retort of his opponent.

The judge entertained the objection, and Mr. Griffith went out and soon returned with a book containing a compilation of the laws of Maryland. The book was not considered authority, and poor Mr. Griffith, confused and disconcerted, requested Mr. Brown to have the case postponed until afternoon. "Do you make that request," inquired his adversary, "on the ground of ignorance of the law?" Mr. Griffith in an appealing tone said: "Mr. Brown, I am a young man and this is my first case; I pray you do not press your objections; give me some time, for should I fail in this case, it would be ruinous to my future prospects." Laying his hand on the young lawyer's shoulder, Mr. Brown replied, "Then, my dear sir, you will have the consolation of having done a good deed, though you did not intend it." The judge was prompt in dismissing the case, saying that he would not furnish another warrant, but they might secure his re-arrest by obtaining one from a magistrate. Profiting by this suggestion, Griffith and his clients hastily left the court-room. I was equally prompt; having previously ordered my horse and buggy to be brought in front of the court-house, I took hold of Basil and hurried him towards the door. In the excitement which prevailed, a colored man who was outside, seeing me hustling Basil before me, and thinking he had been remanded to slavery and I was his master,



## SOME USAGES OF LONG-AGO

raised a heavy stick and was about to strike me, when a friendly hand interposed, and saved me from the blow. We were no sooner seated in the vehicle than the slave-catchers, armed with a magistrate's warrant, came rushing upon us. As they were about to seize the horse, a stroke of the whip on the young and excited animal, caused him to rear and dash ahead. A round of hearty applause from the sympathizing crowd served as an additional impetus to urge us onward. After running the horse about two miles, I came upon a party of colored men who were to assist in rescuing the slave. Resting a short time, I pursued my journey to Philadelphia, a distance of twenty-six miles, and drove directly to my mother's house, where Basil was safely lodged. I afterwards accompanied him to New York, and placed him in the hands of Joshua Leavitt, the editor of *The Emancipator*, who sent him to Connecticut to find employment on his father's farm. He remained there some time and then removed with his family to Northampton, where he worked for Mr. Benson, a brother-in-law of William Lloyd Garrison. Mr. Dorsey died a few years ago, a highly esteemed and respectable citizen, leaving a widow and a number of children.





## Old-Time Elocutionary Books

BY CHARLES A. INGRAHAM, CAMBRIDGE, NEW YORK.



NO little entertainment has been derived of late by the writer in glancing through several old-time school readers; it has been very interesting to note the gradual improvement in both the material make-up of the volumes, and as regards the character and literary merit of the selections. The earlier books are crudely manufactured, the paper being coarse, and the binding of calfskin or wood overlaid with paper. The selections, which in the older compilations are thoughtful and serious, grow at last to entertain pieces of a humanistic and even humorous kind, in this manner constituting the series an index of the prevailing literary standards at the various dates of publication. Levity, however, has been accorded but small concessions in these old reading-books, for the compilers evidently labored under the deep conviction that their responsibility in selecting the mental and moral teachings of the youth of America was very great. Piety, patriotism and the homely virtues are the elements which in various phases are repeatedly ventilated in the language of the greatest of ancient and modern authors. Another aim was, by precept and example, to inculcate in these books a knowledge of the elements of elocution and to encourage its practice; for in those days oratory played a prominent and influential part in public affairs. Altogether, the old American school-readers, in the period of our national development when the "Three R's" constituted practically all of the people's education, exercised a cultural influence which we can hardly estimate too highly.

Taking up the volumes in the order of their publication, the first to be mentioned is "The Art of Speaking," published in Boston, Massachusetts, by Ebenezer Larkin, in 1793. The work opens with an essay recommending oratory, and giving in minute detail instructions to be observed by the reader or speaker; the writer enters minutely into his subject, and for every emotion and sentiment gives an appropriate reflection in tone, facial expression or





## OLD-TIME ELOCUTIONARY BOOKS

gesture. Nothing so elaborate of this kind has ever come under my observation. Moreover, in the Lessons which compose the body of the book, these multitudinous directions, explained in the essay, are placed very frequently on the left margins as ready guides for the reader. Theoretically, the student with these helps before him should have little difficulty in rivaling Demosthenes or Cicero, but practically the reading would be of an automatic, lifeless character. However, as a general guide to the art of oratory, this book has much value in pointing out the methods which, consciously or unconsciously, must be adopted by the accomplished public speaker. The selections are mostly from Greek and Latin orations and from Milton and Shakespeare. Of the gestural facilities of the hands alone, the author says: "With the hands, as Quintilian says, we solicit, we refuse, we promise, we threaten, we dismiss, we invite, we entreat, we express aversion, fear, doubting, denial, asking, affirmation, negation, joy, grief, confession, penitence. With the hands we describe, and point all circumstances of time, place and manner, of what we relate; we excite the passions of others, and soothe them, we approve and disapprove, permit or prohibit, admire or despise. The hands serve us instead of many sorts of words, and where the language of the tongue is unknown, that of the hands is understood, being universal."

The statement is made that the English language is eminently adapted to oratory, in that though it is in certain respects less effective than the Italian, Greek, Spanish and Turkish, ours has a greater variety in its articulated sounds and an equal copiousness of expression.

"An American Selection of Lessons in Reading and Speaking," by Noah Webster, Jun., was published at Albany, New York, in 1804. This compilation differs radically from the one just considered, which is severely classical and without representation of any American author, by having half of its contents the work of our own native authors. The courage and national pride of Mr. Webster is to be commended in that at a time when American literature was considered by the elite as unworthy to be seen on the same shelf with the works of English writers, he prepared a school-reader that placed our writers on a par with the classics, one of the pieces being entitled, "The Faithful American Dog." Here may be perused not only Shakespeare and Addison, but the Declaration of Independ-



## OLD-TIME ELOCUTIONARY BOOKS

ence, the wise sayings of Benjamin Franklin, and the adventures of "Old Put." On the title page appears the motto, quoted from Mirabeau: "Begin with the infant in the cradle; let the first word he lisps be WASHINGTON." In his preface the writer says that the school readers employed are deficient in interest to the youth of America, "while the writings that marked the Revolution, which are not inferior in any respect to the orations of Cicero and Demosthenes, lie neglected and forgotten." This book was designed for elementary schools, colleges and academies needing nothing beyond those in use: "Art of Speaking," "Enfield's Speaker," "Scott's Lessons," etc., "which respect distant nations or ages." The volume contains several articles and other material not easily located or even known by the present generation.

Perhaps the most popular school-reader ever published in America was Lindley Murray's "English Reader," the copy before me having been printed in 1820 at Concord, New Hampshire. Murray's "English Grammar," published in 1795, had already made the author widely and favorably known as an educator, and opened the way for the introduction of his "Reader" generally in this country and England. Though born in Pennsylvania, Murray, not long after the Revolution, made his home in England and died there in 1826. During the war he accumulated a fortune in mercantile pursuits, but his gratitude to the land of his birth and his appreciation of the eloquent words and noble deeds of the heroes of the Revolution seem to have been very luke-warm, for in his "Reader" every American writer and orator is ignored. It is, of course, an excellent and improving selection in verse and prose of the standard authors, but its tone is cold and arbitrary, adapted to the minds of experienced and mature persons, but of too solemn and philosophical a spirit to hold the attention of youth. In his introduction the compiler discusses the chief points of oratorical teaching, but acknowledges that "the correct and natural language of the emotions is not so difficult to be attained as most readers seem to imagine. If we enter into the spirit of the author's sentiments, as well as into the meaning of his words, we shall not fail to deliver the words in properly varied tones."

The rejection by Murray of the writings of American statesmen and authors was not resented on this side of the Atlantic, for we really could not compete at that time with the established fame



## OLD-TIME ELOCUTIONARY BOOKS

of Old-world writers, though Washington Irving and others were beginning to loom on the literary horizon of the United States. American periodicals were compilations principally, and made up of selections from English magazines, for the reason that it was better material than could then be produced here and was to be had for nothing. This literature, being unknown to the people and fresh and able, it was a long time before American talent had developed sufficiently to enable a publisher to run a magazine independent of English sources of supply. As late as 1850, when the issuing of "Harper's" began and for years after, that periodical was practically a mere reprint from English serials.

In the year 1836 "The North American Reader" appeared, published simultaneously at Trenton, New Jersey, and Baltimore, Maryland, the author being Lyman Cobb. This is a notable compilation, and superior to "The English Reader" in that it is replete with home authors and inspired, through the presence of many typical American pieces, with that free, liberal, enterprising and familiar spirit which we appreciate and admire. Among the many interesting and little-known selections which this book contains is a "Dialogue between Charles II and William Penn" at the time of the departure of the latter for America, a portion of which is here transcribed:

*Charles:* Well, friend William! I have sold you a noble province in North America; but still I suppose you have no thoughts of going thither yourself.

*Penn:* Yes I have, I assure thee, friend Charles, and I am just come to bid thee farewell.

*Charles:* What! venture yourself among the savages of North America! Why, man, what security have you that you will not be in their war-kettle in two hours after setting foot on their shores!

*Penn:* The best security in the world.

*Charles:* I doubt that, friend William; I have no idea of any security against these cannibals, but in a regiment of good soldiers, with their muskets and bayonets. And mind, I tell you beforehand, that, with all my good-will for you and your family, to whom I am under obligations, I will not send a single soldier with you.

*Penn:* I want none of thy soldiers, Charles; I depend on something better than thy soldiers.

\* \* \* \*

*Charles:* How then will you get the lands?

*Penn:* I mean to buy their lands of them.





## OLD-TIME ELOCUTIONARY BOOKS

*Charles:* Buy their lands of them! Why, man, you have already bought them of me.

*Penn:* Yes, I know I have, and at a dear rate, too; but I did it only to get thy good-will, not that I thought thou hadst any right to their lands.

*Charles:* Zounds, man! no right to their lands!

*Penn:* No, friend Charles, no right at all: what right hast thou to their lands?

*Charles:* Why, the right of discovery, to be sure; the right which the Pope and all Christian kings have agreed to give one another.

*Penn:* The right of discovery! A kind of strange right, indeed! Now suppose, friend Charles, that some canoe-loads of these Indians, crossing the sea, and discovering thy island of Great Britain, were to claim it as their own, and set it up for sale over thy head, what wouldst thou think of it?

*Charles:* Why—why—why—I must confess, I should think it a piece of impudence in them.

*Penn:* Well, then, how canst thou, a Christian, and a Christian prince too, do that which thou so utterly condemnest in these people whom thou callest savages? . . .

The publication of this "Reader" abounding in the writings of American authors, indicates the development of a national spirit and an appreciation of our literature; as a people we were beginning to cast off the ill-fitting English swaddling clothes which we had so long worn, and were arraying ourselves in a literary raiment adapted to our territory and genius. Public schools, fostered by the States, were multiplying, academies and colleges were being founded, and the people were giving promise of ultimately coming into their birthright of an original literature of weight and distinction. But Lyman Cobb, the compiler of "The North American Reader," apprehensive about sending his book alone upon the untried sea of American letters, clung to the introduction of "The English Reader," and prefixed it to his own compilation.

The volumes so far referred to, are of rather a primitive material makeup,—coarse, and dark-tinted paper, and inexpert bindings. The book, however, which is next discussed, "An Essay on Elocution: With Elucidatory Passages from Various Authors," by John Hanbury Dwyer, published at Albany, New York, in 1843, compares favorably in its fine, white paper, clear type and workmanlike binding, with the output of the best present-day publishers. The compiler in making his selections was evidently under the spell





## OLD-TIME ELOCUTIONARY BOOKS

of English literary influences, for while honoring a few American authors, the bulk of the book is from other sources. The author takes a fling at the mechanical school of oratory in this way: "The writer differs from those who have gone before him, and by whom systems have been laid down for the movement of every feature of the human face, and limb of the human form. Those systems are fallacious; for while the mind of the Tyro is busied in consideration of how, or when, he shall point the toe, extend the arm, or knit the brow, the main spring, that very mind which should give all—life, motion and effect—is employed in a worse than secondary, while the primary cause is totally neglected."

Sweet's "Practical Elocution," compiled by Samuel Niles Sweet and published at Troy, New York, in 1846, is an excellent collection of extracts from standard writers, and it is very evident that the author was not tied up to any preconceived notion that Greece, Rome and England held all the literature of any value. He introduces the practice of appending to each selection a biographical sketch of the author, and directions for the most effectual manner of reading. Daniel Webster is honored in the volume by no less than eight titles, under one of which, "Eloquence,—its True Nature," he says: "True eloquence does not consist in speech. It can not be brought from far. Labor and learning may toil for it, but they will toil in vain. Words and phrases may be marshalled in every way, but they cannot compass it. It must exist in the man, in the subject, and in the occasion." This book throughout has the real literary atmosphere, and, like all of its kind, has nothing in its pages but the most meritorious material and the highest social, patriotic and religious sentiments. This class of books in their day exercised an untold influence for good citizenship upon the youth of the land.

Contemporary with Sweet's "Practical Elocution" were the "Eclectic Readers" of William Holmes McGuffey, which were for many years the most popular and widely distributed works in their department throughout the country, and which from time to time passed through several revised and expanded editions. These were the "Readers" in the common schools both North and South, of the generation which made up the contending armies of Civil War days, and from their pages were learned the stirring speeches and impassioned verse that were declaimed from every school platform on



## OLD-TIME ELOCUTIONARY BOOKS

the weekly "speaking days," and lay at the foundation of the fame of a class of orators of commanding importance from the days of Lincoln to the beginning of the Twentieth Century. Mr. McGuffey was born in Washington county, Pennsylvania, in 1800. He was educated in what became Washington and Jefferson Academy in that State, became Professor of Ancient Languages in Miami (Ohio) University, and after serving six years in that capacity was transferred to the chair of Moral Philosophy. He also became a Presbyterian minister and throughout his life occupied several pulpits, but devoted himself principally to educational work, serving successively as president of the Cincinnati (Ohio) College, and of Ohio University, and finally in the chair of Moral Philosophy and Political Economy in the University of Virginia, at Charlottesville, the institution which had Thomas Jefferson as its founder, and which he occupied until his death, May 4, 1873.

Closely affiliated with oratorical study is the subject of composition, and hence it is in order to mention Quackenbos' "Rhetoric," an old American work, the first edition of which appeared in 1854. The author, George Payn Quackenbos, (1826-81) was a very erudite man who devoted his life to teaching, but who exercised his greatest influence in the preparation of school text-books. His work in this line was extensive and he compiled volume after volume on various subjects,—grammar, arithmetic, rhetoric, United States history and natural philosophy.

His "Advanced Course of Composition and Rhetoric" and his "Illustrated School History of the United States," are very familiar to the writer and have been kept within easy reach of his desk for many years. Each of these books shows the careful attention of a painstaking and scholarly mind with a genius for combining comprehensiveness with condensation. His "Rhetoric" covers a vast extent of teaching, from the origin of language through the development of English speech, and on into the treatment in detail of its rhetorical principles. While more recent books of this kind have crowded Quackenbos' "Rhetoric" aside, it still remains, to those who are fortunate enough to have a copy of it, an "Old Reliable," containing without frills all the essentials of the subject. His chapters on "The Unity of the Subject" undoubtedly have given a solid foundation to many a notable writer and speaker.

Mr. Quackenbos was born in New York City, and after graduat-



## OLD-TIME ELOCUTIONARY BOOKS

ing at Columbia College in 1843 began his career as a teacher in North Carolina. Later, he returned to New York and was principal there of a private school for a long period of years. Besides his other engrossing pursuits he engaged in literary work and was for two years editor of the "Literary Magazine." An ethical undertone may be distinguished throughout his "Rhetoric," similar to that which is found in the old reading books which I have cited; in his preface he calls attention "to the successive steps, by which with Divine aid, man was enabled to develop a system of spoken language, to frame that elaborate and wonderful fabric without which civilization would be blotted from the globe." Mr. Quackenbos died July 24, 1881. His son, Dr. John Duncan Quackenbos, still living (1923), scientist and author, has published more than a score of standard works on history and physics, and is widely known in Europe as well as in the United States for his original and successful applications of suggestive therapeutics in mental and moral disease.

"The National Fifth Reader" is a large volume of six hundred pages, half-leather binding, marbled edges, and printed in excellent style. It was compiled by Richard G. Parker and J. Madison Watson, and was published in New York in 1866. It contains an elaborate treatise on elocution and an admirable selection of the best American and other authors, with brief biographical and other notes. So many and diversified are its titles that it is a valuable work of reference. These "Readers" in their old worn pages have quaint, curious or otherwise interesting selections which are worthy of preservation and are not to be found elsewhere. An instance in the volume before me is "The Months," by Henry Ward Beecher, an eloquent review of their seasonal associations and ethical teachings.

It is, perhaps, not inappropriate to name as my last citation, "How to Read," by J. B. Kerfoot, published in 1916 at Boston; for this book is devoted, not to reading orally and objectively, but to reading subjectively: that is, it treats of the manner in which we should individually receive the author's ideas. While this aspect of the subject is somewhat foreign to the scope of the discussion, it yet has a bearing, for, whether reading alone or listening, it is essential to know how to dispose in our minds of the communicated facts or



## OLD-TIME ELOCUTIONARY BOOKS

fancies. The work in hand is a fine-spun book of literary conceits, but the author gives the gist of his argument in these words:

“Talkers of cant tell us that culture is something that we can receive from without; something that exists independently of its possessors; something that can be imparted, and accepted, and built into our consciousness and our personalities like bricks into a wall.

. . . Do not believe them. Culture is always unique, for it is an individual achievement—a by-product of personal living. . . . The only reason that culture is in any way derivable from books is that reading is a form of living.”







# Highland Scottish Clans

SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES REPRESENTED IN AMERICA

BY JOEL N. ENO, A. M.

GRAHAM



HE lineage of the clan of Graham dates back to William de Graham of Abercorn and Dalkeith, who obtained a grant of those lands from David I, King of the Scots. He was a witness to a charter from that King to the monks of Holyroodhouse, and to another charter to the Priory of Durham, 1139. His son, Peter de Graham, granted lands in his manor of Dalkeith to the monks of Newbottle and his two sons, Henry and William, both witnesses to a charter of Ada, the mother of William the Lion, King of the Scots. Henry de Graham confirmed the grant of his father to the monks of Newbottle, and was succeeded by his son, Henry de Graham, who was one of the "Magnate Scotial" in the Parliament of Scone, February 2, 1284, who acknowledged Margaret the "Maiden of Norway" as heir to the throne. He married the daughter of Roger Avenel, on whose death in 1243 he obtained the estates of Avenels in Eskdale. His successor was his son, Sir Nicholas de Graham, Knight of Dalkeith, who sat in Parliament in 1290. He was one of the nominees of Robert Bruce, 1292, and swore fealty to Edward I, 1296.

Sir Nicholas was succeeded by his son, Sir John de Graham, who confirmed grants of his predecessors to the monks of Melrose, and made a donation himself to the church of Westerker, in which he is designated "Lord of Abercorn." His successor was his son, John de Graham, who made a grant of Elvyston, county of Edinburgh, to John, son of Richard Graham, which was confirmed by David II, March 23, 1362. He died without issue, when his sisters became his heirs; one married William More and got the barony of Abercorn; another, Margaret, married William Douglas of Lugton, ancestor of the Earls of Morton, and to her came the barony of Dalkeith.



## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

This line of descent thus became extinct for the want of male issue, therefore we return to the other son of William de Graham, whose grandson, John de Graham, second son of William de Graham, became the ancestor of the ducal house of Montrose. This progenitor witnessed the confirmation of a charter to the Monastery of Newbottle in 1170, and was present at the Court of William the Lion in 1200, when William Comyn resigned his claims to certain lands to the Church of Glasgow. His son, William de Graham, was a witness to a charter of Alexander de Seton, confirmed by William the Lion in 1200. His son, David de Graham, of Kinnabur, County of Forfar, had a grant of that lordship and other lands near Montrose from William the Lion, and of lands in the country of Midlothian from his kinsman, Henry de Graham of Dalkeith. His son, Sir David de Graham, Knight of Dundoff, as sheriff of the County of Berwick, witnessed a grant from Patrick, Earl of March to the Monastery of Coldingham, 1260, and obtained a charter of his whole lands from Alexander III, also acquired the lands of Kincardine in Perthshire from the Earl of Stratheim. His heir, Sir Patrick Graham, his eldest son, succeeded his father on his death about 1270. He was sent to negotiate the marriage of Prince Alexander, son of Alexander III, with Margaret, daughter of Guy, Earl of Flanders, in 1281. He sat in the Parliament at Scone, February 5, 1284, when Margaret, the Maiden of Norway, was acknowledged as heir to the crown of Scotland. He swore fealty to Edward I, 1292, and was summoned to attend that monarch to France two years later. He fell in battle with the English at Dunbar, April 28, 1296. Of his two sons, Sir David Graham, Knight of Kincardine, was his heir. He was taken prisoner to England in 1296 by Edward I, but was released soon afterwards upon agreeing to serve that king in his foreign wars. He had from Robert I several grants in consideration of his faithful services, and exchanged with His Majesty, Cardoss, County of Dunbarton, for the lands of Old Montrose, County of Forfar. He appears to have had but one son, Sir David, his heir, who signed the famous letter to his Holiness the Pope, asserting the independence of Scotland in 1320. He was one of the guarantors of a treaty with England in 1322, and died not long afterwards, when he was succeeded by his son, Sir David Graham, Knight of Kincardine and Old Montrose, a personage remarkable for patriotism and valor. He was one of the Scotch barons appointed to negotiate



## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

the ransom of David II, made prisoner at the battle of Durham, October 17, 1356. He sat in Parliament, September 26, 1357, when the treaty for the release of David II was approved, and was one of the guarantees and took the oath of homage and fealty to Robert II, March 27, 1371. His issue were a son and daughter, and at his death, April 4, 1373, the titles and estates descended to the former as Sir Patrick Graham, Knight of Kincardine and Lord of Dundoff. He was a commissioner to treat with the English, August 20, 1394, and was dead in 1404. His eldest son William succeeded him, who had a charter from Robert, Duke of Albany, dated February 12, 1407, containing an entail of the lands of Auld Montrose. He was succeeded by his grandson, Patrick, who having been appointed one of the lords of regency during the minority of James II was made a lord of parliament by the title of Lord Graham in 1445. He died in 1466, and his son William became the second Lord Graham on his death. In 1472 his eldest son William succeeded to the title and estates, and for gallantry displayed at the battle of Sauchiebrun in 1488, where his royal master, James II lost his life, he was created, March 1504-5, Earl of Montrose. The Earl fell with James IV at Flodden Field, September 9, 1513, and was succeeded by his only son William, second Earl of Montrose. His eldest son, Robert Lord Gordon, fell at the battle of Pinkie, and at the Earl's death, May 24, 1571, he was succeeded by his grandson John, third Earl of Montrose. This nobleman was appointed chancellor in 1598-9 and held the seals until 1604, when it was required the chancellor should be a lawyer. His lordship was then constituted Viceroy of Scotland. He died November 9, 1608. His successor, his eldest son John, fourth Earl of Montrose, was appointed president of the council in Scotland, July, 1626. His death occurred on November 24 and he was succeeded by his only son James, the illustrious Royalist commander created Marquess of Montrose, May 6, 1644. He was captain-general and commander-in-chief of all the forces raised in Scotland for the King's service. He gained brilliant victories against the army of the Covenant, but was surprised and defeated at Philiphaugh by the Parliament forces. He then left Scotland, but after the beheading of Charles I he made an armed descent upon Orkney, was made prisoner, and executed at Edinburgh, May 21, 1650. The Marquess's honors were restored at the Restoration by Charles II to his only surviving son James, the second Marquess of Montrose, called *The*





## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

*Good*, who at the return of Charles II was made a privy counselor. He died February 23, 1669, and was succeeded by his son James, the third Marquess of Montrose. His lordship dying in 1684, was succeeded by his only son James, who was installed a Knight of the Garter in 1705, and created April 24, 1707, Duke of Montrose. The Duke, who previously to the Union filled the office of lord-president of the council in Scotland, was appointed on the accession of George I, one of his Majesty's principal secretaries of state. His grace died January 7, 1742, and was succeeded by his second son William, second Duke of Montrose. His eldest son David had been created a peer of Great Britain, May 23, 1722, as Earl and Baron Graham of Bedford, County of Northumberland. He died unmarried, and the title reverted to his brother, who thus became not only Duke of Montrose but also Earl Graham. The Duke died September 23, 1790, and his son James became the third Duke of Montrose. He held office in Pitt's administration in 1783 and 1804, and in that of Duke of Portland in 1807. He obtained the annulment of the law prohibiting Highlanders from wearing the kilt. He was a Knight of the Garter, lord-justice general of Scotland, lord-lieutenant of counties of Stirling and Dumbarton, and chancellor of the University of Glasgow. He died December 30, 1836, and was succeeded by his eldest son James, who held office under the Earl of Derby in 1852, again in 1858. His death occurred December 30, 1874, and he was succeeded by his third son, Douglas Beresford Malise Ronald, the fifth Duke of Montrose, born November 7, 1852.

The badge of the clan is "Buaidh-chraobh na labhras" (laurel). The clan pipe music: March "Raon-ruairi" (Killiecrankie). Lament—"Cumha chlebhers" (Claverhouse's Lament). Gathering—"Lathaallt-eire" (Battle of Auldearn).

### Sub-Clans:

Allardice, named from an estate in Kincardineshire, is in the Branch Graham of Menteith.

Bontein.

Bontine.

Bunt-ain-en-ine, Norman le Bonnetin, good pet.

MacGibbon, son of Gilbert.

MacGilvernock, son of the devotee of St. Marnock.

Menteith and Monteith, all in branch Menteith.

MacGrime, a variation, also Graeme.





## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

*Gordon*—The first mention of the name of Gordon in Scotland is in a charter granted by Richard de Gordon (perhaps from Gordon parish in Berwickshire) to the Abbey of Kelso in 1150. He is said to be a grandson of a famous knight who slew some monstrous animal in the Merse in the time of Malcolm III. Other Gordons figure in history about this time, one of whom, Betram de Gordon, wounded with his arrow Richard of England at Chalons. Tradition ascribed to him two sons—Richard Gordon of Gordon, and Adam Gordon of Huntly. There are at least one hundred and fifty-seven main branches traced to this Scottish family.

The families of the two sons mentioned above were united by their great-grandchildren, Alicia, and Sir Adam, who was a soldier and in the Crusade to Palestine was slain. His grandson, Sir Adam, is the first member of the family to be definitely mentioned in history. He first took the English side in the Scottish struggle for independence. He was Justiciary of Lothian under Edward I in 1308, and sat in the English council at Westminster as a representative of Scotland. Tardily joining Bruce after the battle of Bannockburn, he was granted in 1318 the lordship of Strathbique in Aberdeenshire, to which Gordon gave the name of Huntly, from a village in the Gordon estates in Berwickshire. He was killed at the battle of Halidon Hill in 1333, and left two sons, Adam and William. The youngest son, laird of Stichel in Roxburghshire, was the ancestor of William de Gordon of Stichel and Lochinver, founder of the Galloway branch of the family, represented in the Scottish peerage by the viscounty of Kenmure. The Viscount Kenmure was created in 1633; the sixth viscount, William Gordon Kenmure, was a Jacobite leader and was taken prisoner at Preston, confined in the Tower and executed, his estates and titles being forfeited. The estates and titles were restored by an act of Parliament in 1824, and his direct descendant John Gordon became Viscount Kenmure. On his death the succeeding peer was Adam, the eighth viscount; he died in 1847 without issue, and the title became dormant. Most of the Gordons of Ireland and Virginia are offshoots of this stock.

The eldest son of Sir Adam, also named Adam, inherited the Gordon-Huntley estates. He was father of Sir John, the next recipient of the estates and title, was taken prisoner at Durham in 1346, and had a confirmation of the charter of Strathbogie in 1376 as great-grandson of Sir Adam. Sir John had two illegitimate sons,



## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

Jock of Scurdarque and Thomas Gordon of Ruthven, ancestors of the earls of Aberdeen and Tam of Ruthven, also a wide circle of Gordons in Mar, Buchan and Strathbogie.

Sir Adam, who succeeded his brother Sir John, was slain at Hamilton, dying without male issue. His daughter and heiress, Elizabeth, married Sir Alexander Seton, and she with her husband was confirmed in 1408 in the possession of the barony of Gordon and Huntly in Berwickshire, and of the Gordon lands in Aberdeen. The Seton-Gordons are their descendants. Their son Alexander was created in 1445 Earl of Huntly, and had grants from the crown of the lordship of Badenoch and other lands in the counties of Inverness and Moray. The Earl died in 1470, and was succeeded by his second son, George, as second Earl of Huntly. Among his acquisitions from the crown were Schevas in Aberdeenshire and Boyne, Enzie and Netherdale in Banffshire. He was chancellor of Scotland, 1498-1500. He died before January 30, 1502, and the titles and estates devolved on his eldest son Alexander, who became third Earl of Huntly. He added to the family acquisitions Strathovon in Banffshire and the Brae of Lochaber, and led the Scottish vanguard at the battle of Flodden. He died in 1524 and was succeeded by his grandson George, a son of his eldest son John. Under George, the fourth Earl of Huntly, the family reached its height of power and he was reputed to be the wealthiest, wisest and most powerful subject of Scotland. He had a grant of the earldom of Moray, was lieutenant of the north, and was made chancellor in 1547. After Queen Mary's return he was stripped of the earldom of Moray, led a revolt, and was slain at Corrichie, 1562, a sentence of attainder being pronounced on his corpse. His second son George succeeded as the fifth Earl of Huntly. He was restored to the forfeited earldom in 1562, but a year later was attainted and sentenced to death for treason, but the sentence was reversed two years later and he was made chancellor of Scotland. He died in 1576 and was succeeded by his son George as the sixth Earl of Huntly, who was created April 17, 1599, Marquess of Huntly. He was educated in France as a Roman Catholic, and gained prominence as the head of the Roman Catholic party in Scotland. He was engaged in plots for the Spanish invasion of Scotland, was convicted of carrying on treasonable correspondence, and though found guilty was pardoned by the King. He abjured his religious faith during different periods



## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

of his lifetime, was involved in a private war with the Grants and Mackintoshes, who were assisted by the earls of Atholl and Murray. He set fire to Murray's castle of Donebriestie in Fife, and stabbed the earl to death with his own hand. This outrage, which originated the ballad "The Bonnie Earl of Moray," brought down upon Huntly enemies who ravaged his lands. Finally his castle of Strathbogie was blown up by the King, and he left Scotland in 1595, returning secretly very soon afterwards, and was restored to his estates and was appointed lieutenant of the north. His loyalty to the crown was questioned and he was summoned before the privy council, excommunicated and imprisoned. He was again accused of Romanist intrigues in 1616, and though pardoned by King James, on the accession of Charles I lost much of his influence at court. He was deprived in 1630 of his heritable sheriffships of Aberdeen and Inverness, and in feud between the Crichtons and Gordons his second son, Lord Melgum, was burnt to death while being entertained in the house of James Crichton of Fendraught. For the ravagings of the lands of the Crichtons Huntly was held responsible, and being summoned before the privy council, he was imprisoned in Edinburgh Castle. He left his confinement in shattered health and died on his journey to Strathbogie, June 13, 1636, after declaring himself a Roman Catholic.

His eldest son George, second Marquess of Huntly, distinguished himself by his zeal in the royal cause during the civil war. He was brought up as a Protestant and created Earl of Enzie by James I. On succeeding to his father's title, his influence in Scotland was employed by the King to balance that of Argyll in the dealings with the Covenanters, but without success. He was captured and beheaded by order of the Scots Parliament, March 30, 1649, at Edinburgh. His eldest son George Lord Gordon joined the Marquess of Montrose and fell at the battle of Alford, unmarried. His second son James joined the banner of Montrose during the civil war and fled to France, where he died of grief in 1649 when hearing of the melancholy fate of Charles I. He died unmarried and the title and estates fell to Lewis, the third son, also third Marquess of Huntly, who was restored to his honors and estates by Charles II. He died 1653 and was succeeded by his only son George, who was elevated to a dukedom as Duke of Gordon, November 1, 1684. Though educated in a French Catholic seminary, he refused to support James II's





## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

efforts to impose Roman Catholicism on his subjects. The King appointed him keeper of Edinburgh Castle, and he offered little resistance when the castle was besieged by the forces of William III. He died December 7, 1716, and was succeeded by his only son Alexander, second Duke of Gordon, a zealous adherent of the Chevalier St. George, "the Old Pretender," in 1715. He however after the surrender of Gordon Castle gained the royal pardon. He died November 28, 1728, and his sons became noted celebrities in Scottish and English history. Cosmo George succeeded his father; the name of Cosmo was given him in compliment to Cosmo de Medicis III, Grand Duke of Tuscany, with whom his father was in the closest habits of friendship; Lord Lewis Gordon took an active part in the Jacobite rising of 1745. General Lord Adam Gordon became commander of the forces in Scotland in 1782, and governor of Edinburgh Castle, 1786.

Cosmo George, third Duke of Gordon, was one of the representative peers of Scotland, and died in France, August 5, 1752. He was succeeded by his eldest son Alexander as the fourth Duke of Gordon, who was enrolled among the peers of Great Britain, February 12, 1784, in the dignity of Baron Gordon of Huntly, and in consequence of his descent on his maternal side, of the barony of Norwich. He died June 17, 1827, and was succeeded by his son George, fifth Duke of Gordon, a distinguished soldier who raised the corps now known as the second battalion of the Gordon Highlanders. He died without issue, May 28, 1836, when the dukedom of Gordon with the English peerages of Norwich and Gordon became extinct.

The marquise of Huntly passed to his cousin and heir-male George, who was the fifth Earl of Aboyne, a descendant of Lord Charles Gordon, the fourth son of George, the second Marquess of Huntly, who was created Earl of Aboyne and Lord Gordon of Strathaven and Genlivet in the peerage of Scotland by Charles II, September 10, 1660, in consideration of his loyalty and service. George, the ninth Marquess of Huntly, was a colonel of the Aberdeen militia, and died June 17, 1853, when it was succeeded by his eldest son Charles as the tenth Marquess of Huntly; at his death, September 16, 1862, his eldest son Charles became the eleventh Marquess of Huntly.

The war cry of the Gordons is "A Gordon! A Gordon!" The clan pipe music: Salute—"Failte nan Gordanach" ("The Gordon's





## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

Salute"). March—"Spaidsearachd nan Gordanach" ("Gordon's March"). Quickstep—"The Cock o' the North." The badge—Iadh-shlat, Eitheann (Ivy).

### Sub-Clans:

Adam.

Adie.

Edie.

Huntly.

*Grant*—The clan Grant is purely of Gaelic origin, and its territory has been chiefly in Strathspey, and from remote times acknowledged to be of the same stock as the MacGregors. The first record of the clan appears in 1258, when Sir Laurence and Robert, "*dicti Graunt*," were witnesses to an agreement with Archibald, Bishop of Moray. The former was sheriff of Inverness in the time of Alexander III (1249-58). By marriage with the heiress of Glencharney he acquired many lands in fact the greater part of Strathspey.

John Grant, probably a son of Sir Laurence, and a Robert Grant, were taken prisoners at the battle of Dunbar in 1296, and the former obtained a charter of lands of Inverallan in Strathspey in 1316. A Sir John Grant was taken prisoner at Haledon Hill in 1333, and in 1346 he obtained the keeping of the Castle of Danaway. The first mentioned John Grant was succeeded by his son Patrick, who appears in the records in 1345 and 1362. His son Malcolm is mentioned in 1394. John Macomochie Grant, supposed son of Robert and he of Sir John, was knighted before 1357, and was the father of Sir Duncan of Freuchie, and Grant. The latter settled later in the fifteenth century at Gartenberg, parish of Duthil, and were known as the clan Donochy. His son, dying before his father, left a son, John "the Bard," under whom the Grants first established themselves in Urquhart and Glenmorriston. The Urquhart barony was held by the Lords of the Isles, and John the Bard was granted a charter of the barony of Urquhart, and his son John Mor a charter of Glenmorriston barony.

Sweton, the son of John of Gartenberg and grandson of Ducan, had three sons; Ducan, the eldest, died unmarried; James, the second son, was of Dalvey, parish of Cromdale, County of Elgin, or Moray, now North Eastern County. He was solicitor general of Scotland in James II reign and purchased Dalvey from another branch of the



## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

Grant family and was Baronet of Dalvey, August 10, 1688. He died without issue in 1695, and was succeeded by his brother, Sir Ludovic Grant, as second Baronet of Dalvey, but owing to the position of the family as Jacobites he did not assume the title. He died in 1701, leaving no issue, and was succeeded by his brother, Sir Sweton Grant, as the third baronet, who also did not assume the baronetcy. On his death without issue, the title and estates devolved on his cousin. Sir Patrick Grant, the fourth baronet, a son of Sweton of Inverladenian, County of Inverness, who was a son of Duncan Grant of Gartenberg. Sir Patrick Grant died April 10, 1755, in his 101st year. His eldest son, Sir Alexander Grant, succeeded him as the fifth baronet, and died without issue August 1, 1772, and was succeeded by his brother, Sir Ludovic Grant, as the sixth baronet. His death occurred September 17, 1790, and his eldest son, Sir Alexander Grant, became the seventh baronet. At his death, July 26, 1825, he was succeeded by his eldest son, Sir Alexander Cray Grant. He filled the office of chairman of committees in the Parliament of 1826 and 1830, and was a member of the Board of Control during Sir Robert Peel's administration in 1835. He was twice returned to Parliament by the borough of Cambridge, and resigned in 1843 to become commissioner for auditing public accounts. He died unmarried, November 29, 1854, and was succeeded by his brother, Sir Robert Innes Grant, as the ninth baronet. His death took place August 1, 1856, and he was succeeded by his eldest son, Sir Alexander Grant, as tenth baronet, vice-chancellor of the University of Edinburgh, also director of public instruction in the Bombay Presidency; his death took place November 30, 1884. He was succeeded by his son, Sir Ludovic James Grant, as the eleventh baronet, an eminent advocate and a member of the faculty of the University of Edinburgh.

The Reformation gave the Grants fresh opportunities of adding to their possessions. Thus, in 1539 James, the third Laird of Freuchie, became bailie of the Abbey of Kinloss, and in 1569 his son John obtained a gift of the Abbey. Sir James Grant of that ilk and his son Ludovic, eighth Laird of Freuchie, adhered to William II of Scotland or Orange, and were with the clan in the fight at the Haughs of Cromdale. In 1715 and 1745 he adhered to the House of Hanover, but Glenmorriston was out for the Stewarts and fought in the whole campaign which ended at Culloden. In 1715 the strength



## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

of the clan was eight hundred men; in 1745, eight hundred and fifty men. The marriage of Ludovic to Margaret, daughter of James, Earl of Seafield, brought that title in 1811 into the family in the person of her grandson, Sir Lewis Alexander Grant, the ninth Baron of Luss.

Sir Lewis assumed the maternal name of Ogilvie, in addition to that of his paternal family, and was known as Sir Lewis Alexander Ogilvie-Grant, the fifth Earl of Seafield. He died unmarried, and was succeeded by his brother, Francis William, the sixth Earl of Seafield. His eldest son, Francis William, member of Parliament from Inverness-shire, died unmarried before the death of his father. His lordship died July 30, 1853, and was succeeded by his second son, John Charles, as the seventh Earl of Seafield. He married Hon. Caroline Stuart, youngest daughter of Walter Robert, the eleventh Lord Blantyre. His lordship was elected a representative peer and was created Baron Strathspey of the United Kingdom, and died February 11, 1881. The Countess of Seafield succeeded in 1884 to the Grant and Seafield estates, and died October 6, 1911, having devised the estates in trust for the eleventh Earl and his successors to the title.

Ian Charles, the only son of the seventh Earl, succeeded as the eighth Earl of Seafield. He died unmarried, March 31, 1884, when the Barony of Strathspey became extinct and the Scottish honor devolved on his uncle James as ninth Earl of Seafield. He was member of Parliament for Elgin and Nairn, 1868 to 1874. He was created Baron Strathspey of Strathspey in the counties of Inverness and Moray, in the peerage of the United Kingdom, June 17, 1884, and died June 5, 1888, when he was succeeded by his eldest son, Francis William, tenth Earl of Seafield, and at his death, December 3, 1888, his eldest son James became the eleventh Earl of Seafield, and thirtieth Chief of Clan Grant. He died of wounds received in action, November 12, 1915. He was succeeded in the barony of Strathspey and the baronetcy of Nova Scotia by his brother, Sir Trevor Ogilvie Grant, the thirty-first Chief of the Clan Grant; and in the Earldom of Seafield and other Scottish peerages by his only child, Nina Caroline, now Countess of Seafield.

The lineage of the Earls of Seafield traces back to Sir Duncan Grant, first of Freuchie, now called Castle Grant. He obtained certain interests as heir of his mother in certain lands in Morayshire.





## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

His son John was interested in the lands of Inverallan. Dying before his father, his son, John the second of Freuchie, had as his heir his son James the third of Freuchie, also a son John who had a charter of the barony of Corrimony in 1509 and was the ancestor of that family. James, mentioned above, died August 26, 1553, and was succeeded by his eldest son John, the fourth of Freuchie, who left a issue of seven daughters, and two sons: Duncan, the eldest, died before his father, and Patrick, who was the ancestor of Grant of Rothremurchus. The fourth of Freuchie was succeeded by his grandson John as the fifth of Freuchie, who died September 20, 1622, and John, his eldest son, became the sixth of Freuchie. Of his family of seven sons and three daughters, James, the eldest, became the seventh of Freuchie; his sixth son Mungo became the ancestor of the Grant of Kinchirdie. James Grant, the seventh of Freuchie, was buried October 10, 1663. Of a family of five children, Ludovic became his successor, and Patrick was the ancestor of Grant of Wester Elchies. Ludovic Grant, the eighth of Freuchie, was the first of the Grants who obtained a charter, February 28, 1694, erecting his lands into the regality of Grant. He was buried November 19, 1714, and was succeeded by his second son, Alexander. He was a brigadier-general in the army and lord lieutenant of the counties of Inverness and Banff, and sat in the first five parliaments of Great Britain. At his death without issue, August 14, 1719, he was succeeded by his brother, James Grant, of Pluscardine, afterwards Sir James Colquhoun, sixth Baronet of Luss, and subsequently Sir James Grant of Grant. By his marriage with Anne, only daughter of Sir Humphrey Colquhoun, at the death of his father-in-law he assumed the name of Colquhoun, also became the sixth Baronet of Luss, and on his becoming heir to his brother, he resumed the name of Grant. Sir James Grant died January 16, 1746-47, and was succeeded by his eldest living son, Sir Ludovic Grant, who died March 18, 1773, and his eldest son James became the eighth Baronet of Luss. He was general cashier of the Excise in Scotland, 1795-1811, Lord Lieutenant of County of Inverness, 1794-1809. At his death, February 18, 1811, he was succeeded by his eldest son, Sir Lewis Alexander Oglivie Grant, previously mentioned.

There are two baronets of the surname Dalvey, 1688, mentioned in early part of this narrative; Monymusk, 1705; and Ballindalloch (a MacPherson) 1838. The lineage of the Monymusk branch is





## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

traced to James Grant of Grant, whose youngest son Archibald in Ballentomb was ancestor of Grant of Cullen and Monymusk. His brother Duncan was the ancestor of Grant of Easter Eichies. Archibald was succeeded by his son Duncan, and the succession follows for the next four heirs, all named Archibald, until 1717, when Sir Francis Grant succeeded his father. He was created a Baronet of Nova Scotia, December 7, 1705, and was appointed one of the senators of the College of Justice by the title of Lord Cullen from his estates in Beichan. In 1713 he acquired the estates of Monymusk and fixed his residence there. He was a profound lawyer, noted for his integrity, philanthropy and piety, a warm supporter of the cause of the Prince of Orange and afterwards of the Union. He was buried March 26, 1726, and his eldest son, Sir Archibald Grant, became the second Baronet. He was a noted advocate, and represented the County of Aberdeen in the Parliament from 1722 to 1732. He died September 17, 1778, and was succeeded by his only son, Sir Archibald Grant, as third Baronet. He was in the service of the East India Company. His death occurred September 30, 1796. His eldest son Archibald became the fourth Baronet. His death took place April 17, 1820, and he was succeeded by his eldest surviving son, Sir James Grant, as fifth Baronet, who died unmarried, August 30, 1859, and was succeeded by his brother, Sir Isaac Grant, as the sixth Baronet. He died unmarried, July 19, 1863, and was succeeded by his nephew, Archibald Grant, the son of Robert of Tillyfour, convener of the County of Aberdeen, the fourth son of Sir Archibald Grant, the fourth Baronet. Sir Archibald was a captain in the Fourth Light Dragoons, and died unmarried, September 5, 1884, and was succeeded by his brother, Sir Francis William, a captain in the 16th Lancers. He died December 13, 1887, leaving no issue, and was succeeded by his cousin, Sir Arthur Henry Grant, as the ninth Baronet. He was the only son of Commander Arthur Grant of the Royal Navy, who was the son of Rev. James Francis Grant, rector of Merston, Sussex and Wrabness, of County of Essex, formerly of the Royal Navy. Sir Arthur Henry Grant was engaged in military service of Great Britain, and died February 29, 1917, when he was succeeded by his eldest son, Sir Arthur Grant, as the tenth Baronet of Monymusk, County of Aberdeen, lieutenant-colonel of the Fifth Battalion Gordon Highlanders.

George Macpherson of Invershie married Grace, daughter of



## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

Colonel William Grant, of Ballindalloch. His heir, William of Invershie, died unmarried April 12, 1812, and was succeeded by his nephew, Sir George MacPherson Grant, who inherited as heir of provision to his father's maternal uncle, General James Grant, the estates of Ballindalloch and assumed the surname of Grant. He was created a baronet July 25, 1838. Sir George, who represented the County of Sutherland in Parliament for seventeen years, died in November, 1846, and was succeeded by his son, Sir John Macpherson-Grant, as second Baronet. He was for several years Secretary of the Legation at Lisbon. He died December 2, 1850, and his eldest son and heir, Sir George Macpherson-Grant, became the third Baronet. He was a member of Parliament for Elgin and Nairn, 1879-86. His death took place December 5, 1907, and he was succeeded in title and estates by his eldest son, Sir John Macpherson Grant, the fourth Baronet. He was a member of the Royal Company of Archers. Sir John died November 25, 1914, and was succeeded by the fifth and present baronet of Ballindalloch, his eldest son, Sir George Macpherson Grant, a member of the Royal Company of Archers, the King's Bodyguard of Scotland.

The war cry of Clan Grant is "Stand fast Craigellachie"—The Rock of Alarm. Clan pipe music—Pibroch, "Stand fast Craigellachie." Gathering, "Craigellachie." Salute, "Elchie's Salute." Badge, Giuthas (pine tree).

### Sub-Clans:

Gilroy, from Gaelic Gille Ruadh, servant of Roy.  
MacGilroy.  
MacIllroy.

*Gunn*—The origin of the fierce and turbulent Clan Gunn is shrouded in mystery; some authorities claim that they were descended from the Norse Kings of Man, and that Guin, their progenitor, was the second son of Olaf the Black, being of that island, and his wife Christina, daughter of Farquhar, Earl of Ross, who flourished in the reign of Alexander II. Others state that their progenitor was Gunnias or Gunn, brother of Swayne, a famous Freswick pirate who had been banished from Orkney by Earl Harold the Wicked, and who arriving in Caithness, fixed his residence in Ulster, where he rose to such wealth and power that he became known as "The Great Gunn of Ulster."

In process of time his descendants became numerous and were



## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

known as the Clan Gunn. They and the Keiths bore a mutual hatred to each other and there was a constant feud between them. Lachlan Gunn of Braemor had an only daughter Helen, famous for her beauty. On her marriage day with her cousin, Alexander Dugald Keith, a retainer of Keith of Ackergill, a rejected suitor, surrounded her father's house with an armed body of Keiths, slew many of them, who were unprepared for the attack, and carried the prospective bride to Ackergill, where she became the victim of her abductor and eventually threw herself from the summit of the tower. Raid upon raid then ensued between the two tribes. During one of them in 1426, a desperate battle was fought at Harpsdale, the Keiths being assisted by the Mackays of Strathnaver. The conflict was rancorous and bloody, but indecisive. Another encounter took place in 1438 on a greater scale on the Muir of Tannach, when victory fell to the Keiths.

George Gunn, the chief of the clan in the middle of the Fifteenth Century, lived in barbaric pomp in his Castle of Habery at Clyth. From the office he held that of Justiciary, he was known as Crouner Gunn, but by the Highlanders as "Am Braisteach-Mor," from a great silver brooch that fastened his plaid. Weary of the feud, he and the chief of the Keiths agreed to meet with twelve horsemen a side at the Chapel of St. Tears and settle it amicably. The Keiths came with twenty-four men, two on each horse, and attacked the Gunns, who were engaged in prayer; the latter, however, fought desperately, but were cut to pieces. George Gunn was slain and stripped of his arms, armor and brooch. Soon after, William MacKames, a kinsman of the Keiths, killed George of Ackergill and his son with ten men, at Drummay, as they were traveling from Invergue towards Caithness. The Earl of Sutherland in 1585 fought the Clan Gunn at Aldgowne, and though they were inferior in numbers they gained a desired victory, slaying one hundred and twenty men of their enemy and putting the rest to flight. Clan Gunn through its continuous warfare became depleted in numbers, and at the commencement of the Seventeenth Century emigrated to Sutherlandshire under William and Henry Gunn. On account of its numerous warfares the clan became disintegrated and the subclans became known from their personal heads. The clan pipe music: Salute—"The Gunns' Salute." Badge—"Aitionn" (juniper) or "Lus nan laoch" (rosroot).





## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

### Sub-Clans:

Gaunson for Gunson.

Georgeson.

Henderson, from the Gaelic MacEanruig, son of Henry.

James, Jameson, Jamieson, MacIamais, MacKames, Mac-Keanish.

Ian (John) MacIain, MacKean, Kean, Keene, Johnson.

Madrus, Manson.

Neil, Nelson.

Thomas, MacComos, MacOmish.

Thorkell, MacCorkle.

MacRob, Rob(i)son.

MacWilliam, Williamson.

Alexander, Sanderson.

Sweyn, Swanson.

*Lamont, or Lamond*—The home of the Clan Lamont was in Argyllshire, where they held land from the earliest times. The name is undoubtedly derived from the Norse *lagamadr*, a lawman. This was a title given by the Norwegians to an official they placed in the various islands and districts under their rule. Though the derivation is Norse, there is a belief that the founders came from Ireland. The Gaelic form of the name is *M'Laomuinn*; Latin, *Lawmundus*, *Lawmanus*.

The first of the clan of whom there is absolute historical evidence is Ferchar, who flourished about 1200. His grandson Laumun, son of Malcolm, was the first to use the name which has since become hereditary, accordingly he is counted as the first chief of the clan. Sir Laumun, with his uncle Duncan, in 1238 granted to the monks of Paisley certain lands at Kilmun and at Kilfinan and Kilmory on Lochgilp. Among his ancestors was Dunsleibhe, who with his brother Gilchrist, ancestor of the clan MacIachlan, possessed in the Twelfth Century the whole district of Cowal. Thus the possessions of Clan Lamont at that time proved to have been of wide extent.

Sir Laumun was summoned in 1293 to do homage to John Balliol, King of the Scots, and he died the following year. His descendant, John Lamont, lord of Inverchaolian, son of Godfrey Lamont, held in commedian the Rectory of Kilmory in Arran, and witnessed in 1431 a charter of Swene McEwen of Otter. This Godfrey died before 1433, and from him descended John McGorre Lamont,





## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

who received in 1500 from John Lamont of Inveryne a charter of lands of Knockdow, including the lands of Inverchaolain. He had a charter in 1540 from Archibald, Earl of Argyll, of the lands of Innellan for the taking of Neill Bridocht and the slaughter of his men at the Howe of Ardlamont. His eldest son, John McGorre Lamont, renounced under revision the lands of Kilmarnock and Brockley to Sir John Lamont of Inveryne, and was appointed by Queen Mary, April 8, 1557, attorney for Sir John "in all matters and pleas whomsoever." Three years later he received a new charter of his lands from Sir John, and was made baile of Toward by the Earl of Argyll in 1565. James VI in February, 1573, granted a commission to the heirs of Duncan Lamont of Inveryne to prosecute an action against John Lamont of Knockdow for the invasion of his lands and for his murder by a most cruel death in November, 1572. John McGorre Lamont was still living in 1580. His son, John McGorre Lamont, died 1603, leaving a son, Gilbert Lamont, who died about 1635. His eldest son, Duncan Lamont of Knockdow, with the rest of his clan espoused the royalist cause and was out under Montrose.

The greatest blow to the Lamonts was dealt in 1646. The civil wars of that period gave a great opportunity for private feuds, and Ardkinglas, Dunstaffnage and other Campbell leaders acting under their chief's orders, ravaged the Lamont country and besieged and took the castles of Toward and Ascog. They carried their prisoners to Dunoon and massacred them to the number of two hundred on the Gallowhill. Thirty-six gentlemen of the name of Lamont were hanged on a single ash tree. Sir James, the Lamont chief, was hunted for his life. John Campbell Ardtarig took possession of the Knockdow estate and it was held by him till the Restoration. These deeds in 1661 formed one of the principal counts against the Marquess of Argyll at his trial for high treason, which resulted in his execution.

Duncan was killed at Gallowhill as mentioned above, and his son Ninian became the head of the family. He married his cousin Anna, daughter of Ninian Stewart of Ascog, and by her had issue John McGorre Lamont, who died before 1697 and was succeeded by his brother, James McGorre Lamont. He was Commissioner of Supply for County of Argyll, signed the Declaration of Loyalty to George I, 1715. He died 1739. His eldest son and heir Colin ac-



## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

quired from the Melville family by purchase in 1753 the adjoining property of Kolmichael, including Kilmarnock and Brackleys, renounced by his predecessor in 1554. Colin Lamont of Knockdow died October 15, 1757, and his two sons, James and Colin, died during their minority and the estates devolved on their uncle, Rev. Alexander Lamont, minister of Kilfinan. His successor at his death, May 31, 1781, was his third son James, a distinguished agriculturist, chamberlain of Arran for the Duke of Hamilton. He died December 6, 1829, and his eldest son Alexander succeeded him. He was a lieutenant-colonel in Buteshire militia, and at his death, August 21, 1861, he was succeeded by his only son, Sir James Lamont of Knockdow, Inverchaolain, County of Argyll. He represented Buteshire in Parliament, 1865-68, and was a noted Arctic explorer and author of several works on that subject. He was created a baronet, July 16, 1910, his death occurring July 29, 1913. His eldest son Norman succeeded to title and estates as the second Baronet of Knockdow. He was private secretary to the Prime Minister Right Honorable Sir H. Campbell Bannerman, 1906-8, and president of the Board of Trade under Right Honorable Winston S. Churchill, 1909-10.

The Lamonts of Knockdow are one of the oldest cadets of the clan, and are still in possession of its ancient territories. The present chief of the clan is Major John Henry Lamont, late of the Ninth Lancers, who was born in 1854. The Lamonts of Ardlamont held the lands of "The Ard" as early as 1356. About two centuries later their designation was changed to Lamont "of Ascog." The seat of this family was Ascog Castle, near Kilfinan, which was destroyed by the Campbells in 1646. The families of Auchagoyll (now Otter) and Auchinshellich (or Willowfield) are both from Walter Lamont of Inverryne, legitimated 1581; Cowstoun from Patrick Lamont, crowner of Cowal in 1450. The clan pipe music: Lament—"Cumha an Fhograich," "The Wanderer's Lament." Salute—"Mhic Lao-mainn ceud failte dhuit," "A Thousand Welcomes to Thee, Lamont." March—"Captain Lamont's March." Badge—"Craogh-ubhal fhiadhain" (crab-apple tree) or "Machallmonaidh" (Dryas).

### Sub-Clans:

Black, named from B(o)urdon, a parish in Durham.

Brown.

Lamb, Lambie, Lammie, Lamondson, Lamont, Landers, Lemon, Lemmon, Limont, MacClymont, MacLymont, Lucas, Luke.



## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

MacAlduie, MacGilledow, Gaelic MacGille, Duibh for Mac.  
Dhomh'uilre, Donald the black.

MacGillegowie, Macilwhome and Meilkeham for MacLoam.  
MacLucas.

MacPatrick, aspirated MacPhoruh, the Gaelic MacPhadhruig.  
Patrick.

MacSorley, Sorley, Gaelic Semhaerle for Somerled.

Toward, from village of Towart in Argyll.

Turner, a woodturner.

White.

*Leslie*—Few Scottish surnames have made a greater figure in Europe than that of Leslie. Four Scottish peerages once belonged to the clan, several of whom rose to the rank of Count in France, Poland, Russia and Hungary. The first of the name on record was Bartolf of Leslie, proprietor of the lands of that name in the reign of William the Lion, 1165-1214. His son Malcolm was in the Twelfth Century a constable of the Castle of Inverury in the Garioch, which he held for David, Earl of Huntingdon; and the office continued to be held by his descendants. His great-grandson Norman acquired Fythkill in Fife, afterwards called Leslie, about 1282. He was the father of Sir Andrew Leslie, who signed that famous letter of the Magnates Scotiae to the Pope in 1320 declaring that while one hundred Scotsmen remained alive they never would submit to England. By his marriage with Mary, daughter and co-heiress of Sir Alexander Abernethy, he acquired Ballinbriech in Fife and Caisnie in Forfar.

Sir Andrew, 1325-53, son of the preceding Sir Andrew, had a son Sir Andrew, 1359-98. The latter resigned to his son Norman the estates of Ballinbriech, Lour, Dunlopy, Cushny and Rothy, reserving his own life rent. In 1391 Norman having had a son Duncan who was believed to have been killed in the Holy Wars, Norman entailed the estates of which he was fiar, failing his male issue, to Sir George Leslie, ancestor of the Rothes family. In 1398, about the time of the death of his father, David returned home and claimed possession of the estates. He was hostage in 1424 for the ransom of James I, and died in 1439, leaving a daughter Margaret, who inherited the original Leslie property and married Andrew Leslie of the Balquhain branch and was ancestress of a line of Leslie of that ilk in Garioch.

The third son of Sir Andrew Leslie and Mary Abernethy





## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

(whose name has not been preserved) was father of Sir George Leslie, the heir entailed in Ballinbriech as above explained, who however was kept out of possession first by Andrew's life rent and then by the unexpected return of David Leslie. He was however in possession of Rothies in 1390, and died in 1411. His son, Norman Leslie of Rothies, obtained in 1439 Ballinbriech and the other entailed lands. His son, George Leslie, was a Lord of Parliament as Lord Leslie of Leven. His lands were in the sheriffdoms of Aberdeen, Elgin, Perth and Fife, united into the barony of Ballinbriech, and he was created by James II the first Earl of Rothies, before March 20, 1457-58. The Earl died in 1487 or 1490, and was succeeded by his grandson George, the son of John of Balmain, his second son. George, the second Earl of Rothies, died before March 6, 1513, and his brother William became the third Earl of Rothies. He fell at Flodden, September 9, 1513, and was succeeded by his eldest son George as fourth Earl of Rothies. He was an extraordinary lord of session, sheriff of Fife, and Ambassador in 1550 to the court of Denmark. His eldest son Norman had in 1540 a charter of Ballinbriech, but being the principal actor in the murder of Cardinal Beaton, May 29, 1546, he was attainted and his father came into possession of the charter of the forfeited lands, which he alienated to his third son Andrew, thereby passing over his second son William, who was implicated in the murder mentioned above, but obtained a remission in 1548. Norman, the Master of Rothies, died of wounds received at the battle of Picardy in 1554 while in the French service. George, the fourth Earl of Rothies, died in Dieppe, France, in 1558, on his way home from attending as representative of the Scottish estates at the marriage of Queen Mary with the Dauphin. There was a suspicion of his having been poisoned for political purposes. His son Andrew's right was disputed by his elder brother William, but on terms of a *decreet arbitral* of Queen Mary, May 2, 1566, he renounced all title to the earldom, receiving certain compensation.

Andrew, the fifth Earl of Rothies, died in 1611 and was succeeded by his grandson John, a son of his eldest son James, as the sixth Earl of Rothies. Earl John dying August, 1641, was succeeded by his only son John as the seventh Earl of Rothies. He carried the sword of state at the coronation of Charles II, was taken prisoner at Worcester, and was held in great esteem by His Majesty and became one of the most distinguished statesmen of his day. He





## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

obtained a new charter of his titles July 4, 1663, as Earl of Rothes, Lord Leslie and Ballinbriech, and was created May 29, 1680, Duke of Rothes, Marquess of Ballinbriech, Earl of Leslie, Viscount of Lugtoun, Lord Auchmontie and Caskieberrie. He died 1681, when his dukedom became extinct, and the earldom passed to his daughter Margaret, Countess of Rothes; at her death in 1685, on her son John devolved the earldom of Rothes. John, the ninth Earl of Rothes, was a representative peer, vice-admiral of Scotland and governor of Stirling Castle. He was active on the government side in 1715, and commanded the horse volunteers at Sheriffmuir. He was successively colonel of the Scots Greys and Scots Foot Guards. At his death, May 9, 1722, he was succeeded by his son John as tenth Earl of Rothes, a major-general in the army, lieutenant-general of the staff in Ireland in 1751, and a representative peer from 1723. He died in 1767, and his successor as the eleventh Earl of Rothes was his son John, who dying without issue was succeeded by his sister, Jane Elizabeth Leslie, Countess of Rothes, whose right of succession was disputed by her uncle, the Honorable Andrew Leslie, equerry to the Princess Dowager of Wales; the court of session and House of Lords, however, decided in her favor. The countess died in 1810 and was succeeded by her eldest son, George William, as the thirteenth Earl of Rothes. His lordship died in 1817, and his eldest daughter, Henrietta Anne, became Countess of Rothes. She married George Gwyther, who assumed the surname and arms of Leslie. The countess died January 30, 1819 (her husband March 24, 1820), and was succeeded by her son, George William Evelyn, as the fifteenth Earl of Rothes. He died March 10, 1841. His son, George William Evelyn Leslie, became the sixteenth Earl of Rothes, and at his death unmarried, January 2, 1859, the family honors devolved on his sister, Henrietta Anderson Morshead, as Countess of Rothes. She married Hon. George Waldegrave, the third son of the Earl Waldegrave, who assumed the surname of Leslie. The Countess died February 10, 1886, without issue, and was succeeded by her aunt, Mary Elizabeth, the daughter of Henrietta Anne, the twelfth in the line of succession of the earldom. The countess married Captain Martin Edward Haworth, who by royal license, 1886, assumed the surname of Leslie. The Countess died September 19, 1893, and was succeeded by her grandson, Norman Evelyn Leslie, son of Martin Leslie Leslie, as the nineteenth and present Earl of Rothes, and Baron Leslie and



## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

Ballinbriech in Scotland, a representative peer for Scotland. Leslie House, Leslie, Fifeshire, is the family seat.

### Sub-Clans:

Abernethy, from a brook and estate in Perthshire.

Morey, from estate in Fifeshire.

*Lindsay*—The clan is one of the great antiquities of Scotland, Randolph, sire of Toeny, living in 1018, a descendant of Ivar, Jarl of the Uplanders, is said to be ancestor of the family. The surname is derived from fief near Cauxon, Normandy, and they are supposed to be legitimate heirs male to the Dukes of Normandy. Though other families in Scotland may have been more historic, none can in genealogical importance equal that of Lindsay. The Lindsays claim that they were barons at a period of the earliest parliamentary records; in fact, they formed a petty principality, having a petty parliament consisting of great vassals of the clan with whose advice they acted on great and important occasions.

Early in the Twelfth Century, Sir Walter de Lindesia attended David, Earl of Huntingdon, afterwards King David I, in his colonization of the Lowlands. The descendants of Sir Walter divided into three branches, one of which held the baronies of Lamberton in Scotland, and Kendal and Molesworth in England; another held Luffness and Crawford in Scotland, and half of Limesi in England; a third held Breneville and Byres in Scotland, and certain lands not by baronial tenure in England. The heads of all these branches sat as barons in the Scottish Parliament, two hundred years before the elevation of the chief of the house to an earldom in 1398. The Lindsays held the great mountain district of Crawford in Clydesdale, from which the title of earldom is derived, from the Twelfth Century to the close of the Fifteenth, when it passed to the Douglas, earls of Angus.

Sir Walter was succeeded by Sir William de Lindesay, who witnessed the charters of King David. His son, William de Lindesay, sat in Parliament, 1145, and was one of the justiciaries of Scotland. He was witness to the charters of King Malcolm. His son, Sir William de Lindesay, sat in Parliament in 1164, was hostage for King William 1174, and afterwards justiciary. He appears as the first proprietor of Crawford, but was styled Baron Luffness in Parliament. He was an heir of Randolph de Lindesay, a great lord of



## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

Northumbria in right of his wife Ethelreda, grand-daughter of Earl of Cospatrik. Sir William married Aleanora, daughter of Gerard, a grandson of Randolph de Limesay, founder of Hertford Priory and tenant-in-chief of considerable estates in 1086. Sir William died about 1200, and his son, Sir David de Lindesay, a justiciary, 1208, married Marjory, a member of the Royal family. His eldest son, Sir David de Lindesay, succeeded his father as third Lord of Crawford, and his maternal uncle as Lord of Limesay and Wolverley in England. He was high justiciary of Lothian in 1238. He died unmarried, and was succeeded by his brother Gerard. The latter dying without issue, the English estates reverted to his sister Alice, wife of Sir Henry Pinckney, and the lordship of Crawford to Sir David de Lindsay, lord of Brenevil, who had a charter of the Byres from Gilbert, Earl of Pembroke, 1233, and of Chirden in Tyndale from Margaret, Countess of Pembroke, daughter of Alexander III, 1244. His heir, David de Lindsay, was one of the Regents, 1255, high chamberlain 1256, and died in the Crusade of St. Louis, 1268, leaving two sons, Alexander and William. The former succeeded to the lands in Northumberland, granted to his father by the Countess of Pembroke, also to Brenevil and the Byres and afterwards to Crawford. He was a conspicuous supporter of Sir William Wallace and King Robert Bruce, and sat in Parliament in 1308. His eldest son, Sir David de Lindsay, was one of the barons who signed and sealed the letter to the Pope affirming the independence of Scotland, and was Ambassador to England, 1349 and 1351. He was custodian of the Edinburgh and Berwick Castles. His eldest son David was killed at Durham. His second son and heir James was hostage for King David, 1351, Ambassador to England, 1357. He died 1358, and his only son James became Lord of Crawford. He was Ambassador to England, 1395, was conspicuous in chivalry, and is frequently mentioned by Froissart and other chroniclers. He died in 1397, leaving no male issue, and was succeeded by his cousin David, first Earl of Crawford, son of Alexander of Glenesk, and grandson of Sir David de Lindsay. William, the youngest son of the latter Lord of Abercorn and Byres, was an ancestor of the first Earl of Lindsay. He obtained the barony of Byres by charter, 1365-66. He was a celebrated knight, one of the "Enfants de Lindsay" commemorated by Froissart. He obtained the barony of Abercorn on his marriage with Christiana, daughter of Sir William Mure of Abercorn. His





## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

son, Sir William Lindsay, the second of the Byres, married Christiana, daughter of Sir William Keith, Marischal of Scotland, with whom he got the barony and castle of Dunnottar, Kincardine, which he afterwards exchanged with the Keiths for that of Struthers, now styled Crawford Priory. His son, Sir John, was created Lord Lindsay of the Byres in 1445, and was justiciary of Scotland north of the Forth in 1457. He died February 6, 1482, and was succeeded by his eldest son David, the second Lord Lindsay. He is noted in history as presenting the "great gray horse" to James III before the battle of Stauchieburn, when he brought to his standard a thousand horse and three thousand foot, the strength of Fife. He died without issue in 1490, and was succeeded by his brother John as the third Lord Lindsay. He had the cognomen of "John out-with-the-sword." He died after December 25, 1496, and leaving no issue was succeeded by his younger brother Patrick as the fourth Lord of Lindsay. He was a celebrated "forspekar," or advocate, in his early youth, and his wise advice and quaint parable before the battle of Flodden are recorded by Pitscotte. Dying in 1526, his eldest son John's death preceding him, he was succeeded by his grandson John as the fifth Lord Lindsay. He was one of the four nobles to whom the charge of the infant Queen Mary was committed in 1542. His successor was his eldest son Patrick as sixth Lord Lindsay, an ardent reformer and Lord of the Congregation, remembered for his share in the murder of Rizzio, the deposition of Queen Mary, and his challenge to Bothwell at Carberry Hill. He obtained the hereditary ballieship of the regality of the Archbishopric of St. Andrews, which was retained by his descendants till the abolition of the heritable jurisdictions in 1748. He married Euphemia, daughter of Sir Robert Douglas, one of the beautiful sisters surnamed "the Seven Fair Porches of Lochleven." He died December 11, 1589, leaving his eldest son James the seventh Lord Lindsay; on his death his eldest son John became the eighth Lord Lindsay. At his death, November 1, 1609, his brother Robert became ninth Lord Lindsay. At his death, July 9, 1616, his son John became the tenth Lord Lindsay of the Byres, and was created by Charles I, Earl of Lindsay and Lord Parbroath, the patent stating as a preamble that the grantee Lord Lindsay is one of the most ancient of the Scottish nobility, the first in rank of the Greater Barons and Lords of Parliament being thus ranked by the Royal Commissioners in the "Decreat of Ranking in 1609."





## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

Earl John became known as of great intimacy with his chief, Ludovic, sixteenth Earl of Crawford, the latter having no children, resigned the Earldom of Crawford into the hands of Charles I for a regrant, January 15, 1642, in favour of Earl John and his heirs. At the death of his uncle, Sir John, he assumed the style of "Earl of Crawford and Lindsay," and became one of the leading spirits of the Covenant. He was present at Marston Moor and became high treasurer of Scotland and president of Parliament. He changed sides and in 1647 signed the "engagement" for the release of Charles I, losing all his offices by the act of classes when his enemy the Marquess of Argyll obtained the upper hand. After the defeat of the Scots at Dunbar, Crawford regained his influence in Scottish politics, and in 1661 was restored to his former dignities, but his refusal to abjure the Covenant compelled him to resign them two years later.

The Earl of Crawford is the head of the house of Lindsay, and as before noted the title was created in the last decade of the Fourteenth Century. David, the first Earl of Crawford, whose descent has been already noted, represented the chivalry of Scotland. He fought a "passage of arms" before Richard II of England on London Bridge with Lord Welles, where he displayed great prowess and unhorsed his antagonist. He was admiral of Scotland, 1403, and Ambassador to England, 1406. By his marriage he acquired the lordship of Strathnairn. He died in February, 1406-7, and was succeeded by his eldest son Alexander as second Earl of Crawford. He was knighted at the coronation of King James, May 21, 1424, was a hostage for King James, and was imprisoned in the Tower of London. His death took place in 1439, and his son David became the third Earl of Crawford. He was killed in 1446, while endeavoring to prevent a conflict between the Lindsays and Ogilvies. His eldest son Alexander, known as the "tiger earl," became the fourth Earl of Crawford, and like his father was one of the most powerful of the Scottish nobles. He was hereditary sheriff of Aberdeenshire and Forfarshire, fought in rebellion the battle of Brechin, 1452, and was defeated by the King's forces under the Earl of Huntly. He was attainted but afterwards restored, and died shortly afterwards in September, 1453. David, his son, became the fifth Earl of Crawford. He was lord high admiral and lord chamberlain, was frequently an Ambassador to England, and was created Duke of Montrose, which dignity was not assumed by his successors. He attained a



## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

grandeur and magnificence which constituted him the greatest personage of this eminent family. At his death in 1495 his younger son John became the sixth Earl of Crawford. He was accused with his sister-in-law of murdering his elder brother Alexander, master of Crawford, but an inquiry into his alleged crime was arrested by the fatal field of Flodden, where in company with the greater part of the Scottish nobles he fell near the person of King James IV. Leaving no issue, he was succeeded by his uncle Alexander, Lord of Auchtermonzie, as the seventh Earl of Crawford. At his death his son David became the eighth Earl of Crawford. His son Alexander, known as the "Wicked Master," having seized, imprisoned and tried to kill his father, was found guilty of constructive parricide, which by the law of Scotland rendered him incapable of succession. In consequence of his son's behavior the eighth Earl resigned his title to the King, and the dignity passed to David, the son of his second son Walter, Lord of Beaufort and Edzell, son of the third Earl of Crawford. This ninth Earl of Crawford with the consent of the Crown reconveyed the earldom to his kinsman David, son of the "Wicked Master," who was a faithful adherent of Queen Mary's cause. He was succeeded by his son David as the eleventh Earl of Crawford. This David, a grandson of Cardinal Beaton, was concerned in some of the risings under James VI. He was converted to Roman Catholicism and was in communication with the Spaniards, favoring their invasion of England. After his death the earldom passed to his son David, a lawless ruffian known as "the Prodigal," who alienated the greater part of the earldom. He died 1621, and his brother, Sir Henry Lindsay or Charteris, became the thirteenth Earl of Crawford. Sir Henry's three sons, George, Alexander and Ludovic, became in turn Earls of Crawford. The latter attained high military rank in Spain. During the civil war he commanded a regiment of horses in behalf of the King, fought at Marston Moor and Philiphaugh, and was taken prisoner at Newcastle. At his death as before stated, the earldom was taken up by John, Earl of Lindsay, and the lordship and chiefship passed first to Lord Spynie, whose line failed with the death of his grandson George, the third Lord, when the families of Edzell and Balcarres held the chieftainship.

At the death of Sir John, first Earl of Lindsay and seventeenth Earl of Crawford, in 1676, at the age of eighty, his son William



## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

became the eighteenth Earl of Crawford. He was styled "the great and good Earl of Crawford." He was like his father an ardent Covenanter, and the last champion of the Covenant in political life, concurred in the Revolution of 1688, and was appointed president of the Council, 1689. He died March 6, 1698, and his eldest son John became nineteenth Earl of Crawford and third Earl of Lindsay. He was a general officer and one of the representative peers for Scotland. At his death, January 4, 1713-14, the honors of the title and estates fell to his son John, the twentieth Earl of Crawford. He won high reputation as a soldier, and held a command in the Russian army in their war against the Turks. Having returned to the English army, he commanded the Black Watch, subsequently Lord Crawford-Lindsay's Highlanders. In 1745 he commanded the forces which held the Lowlands in tranquility. He died of a wound received at the battle of Krotzka in 1738, on December 25, 1749. He left no male issue, and to the honors and estates his successor was his kinsman, George Crawford-Lindsay, a son of Patrick, son of Patrick, son of David, the seventeenth Earl of Crawford. His death occurred August 11, 1781, and his eldest son George became the twenty-second Earl of Crawford. He died unmarried, January 30, 1808, when the earldoms of Crawford and Lindsay were separated.

The title and estates of the latter devolved on David Lindsay, a kinsman of the twenty-second Earl of Crawford and a descendant of the fourth Lord of Lindsay of the Byres, and he became the seventh Earl of Lindsay. Both David and his successor Patrick died without male issue, and in 1878 the House of Lords decided that Sir John Trotter Bethune, Baronet, also a descendant of the fourth Lord Lindsay of the Byres, was entitled to the earldom. In 1894 John's cousin, David Clark Bethune, became eleventh Earl of Lindsay. The earldom of Crawford remained dormant from 1808 until 1848, the honors and estates of Crawford devolving on Alexander, the sixth Earl of Balcarres, and who became the twenty-third Earl of Crawford. At his death, James, his son, became the twenty-fourth Earl of Crawford, who was created in the peerage of the United Kingdom Baron of Wigan of Haigh Hall, County of Lancaster, July 5, 1826. His lordship had the Earldom of Crawford confirmed to him by Her Majesty on the report of the House of Lords in 1848. He died December 15, 1869, and was succeeded by his eldest son, Alexander William Crawford Lindsay, as twenty-





## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

fifth Earl of Crawford. His lordship acquired a high reputation for his works on religion, philosophy and art, and was one of the most accomplished and learned men of his time. He died December 18, 1880, his successor being his only son, James Ludovic, twenty-sixth Earl of Crawford. He died January 31, 1913, and his eldest son, David Alexander Edward, became the twenty-seventh and present Earl of Crawford.

The Earls of Balcarres are descended from John Lindsay, Lord Memuir, a younger son of David Lindsay, the ninth Earl of Crawford. John bought the estates of Balcarres in Fifeshire in 1581. He was a member of the Scottish privy council and one of the commissioners of the treasury called the Octavians. A man of intellectual attainments, he left two sons, the younger, David, succeeding to the family estates. He was a noted alchemist and was created Lord Lindsay of Balcarres in 1641. He died in 1641 and was succeeded by his eldest son Alexander. He received the special thanks of King Charles II for his eminent services to the royal cause. He was created at the Hague, January 9, 1650-51, Earl of Balcarres and Lord Balniel. He became also hereditary governor of Edinburgh Castle, secretary of state, and high commissioner to the general assembly. His lordship died in exile at Breda, August 20, 1659. His son Charles became the second Earl of Balcarres, and another son, Colin, the third Earl. The latter, a strict adherent of the house of Stuart, was compelled at the time of the Revolution to retire to the Continent, remaining in exile ten years. He returned to Scotland, joined the standard of the Chevalier, and owed his safety to his friend the Duke of Marlborough and the act of indemnity. His eldest son by his fourth marriage, Alexander, became his successor as fourth Earl of Balcarres, and in 1744, on the death of David Lindsay of Edzell, *dejure* Lord Lindsay of Crawford and chief of his house. At his death without issue, July 25, 1736, he was followed by his brother James as the fifth Earl of Balcarres. He fought for the Stuarts at Sheriffmuir, afterwards was pardoned, and entered the English army, serving under George II at Dettingen. He was with the English troops in America during the struggle of Independence, and was governor of Jamaica from 1794 to 1801. He became a general in 1803, and died at Haugh Hall near Wigan, May 27, 1825. This earl did not claim the earldom of Crawford, although he became earl *dejure* in 1808, but in 1843 his son, James Lindsay,





## HIGHLAND SCOTTISH CLANS, SUB-CLANS AND FAMILIES

did so, and in 1848 the claim was allowed by the House of Lords as previously narrated, and the Earldom of Balcarres became united with that of Crawford. The badges of the Lindsays are the rue and lime trees.

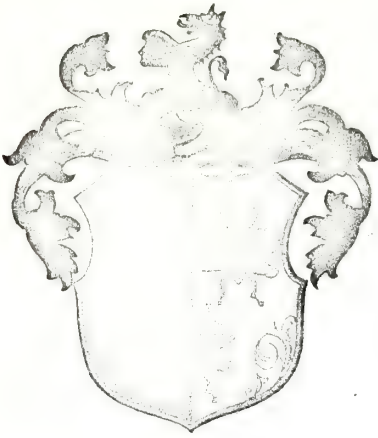
### Sub-Clans:

Crawford, from estate in Forfarshire.

Deuchar, from estates in Forfarshire.



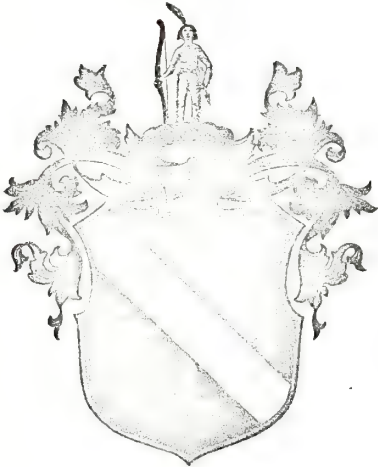




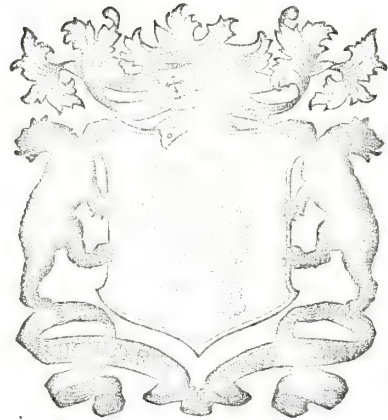
Dorr



Crawford



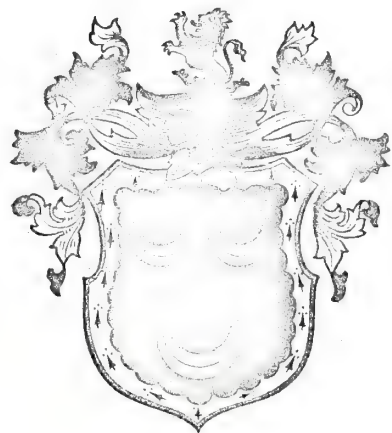
Allen



Vernon



Howland



Alden



# Dorr Family

BY MRS. HEROLD R. FINLEY, ST. LOUIS, MISSOURI.



THE Dorr Family was founded in Massachusetts about 1670, settling in Roxbury, Massachusetts. The first of whom anything is definitely known was Edward Dorr, who swore fidelity at Pemaquid in 1674, and from there removed to Boston and Roxbury. He died in Roxbury, February 9, 1733-34.

*II. Ebenezer Dorr*, son of Edward Dorr, was born in Roxbury, Massachusetts, January 25, 1687-88, and continued to reside there. He was ensign by 1726-27, and captain of militia in 1732.

He married (first), February 16, 1709-10, Mary Boardman, of Cambridge, daughter of Aaron Boardman and wife Mary. He died in Roxbury, February 25, 1760, aged seventy-two years.

*III. Ebenezer (2) Dorr*, son of Ebenezer (1) and Mary (Boardman) Dorr, was born February 2, 1712-13, in Roxbury, Massachusetts. He married, March 5, 1735, Amy Plympton, of Medfield, daughter of Lieutenant Joseph and Priscilla (Partridge) Plympton. He served in the Revolutionary War as a member of the Committee of Correspondence and Safety. He died in Roxbury, August 8, 1782, in his seventieth year, and was buried in the Eustis street cemetery, the first burial place in Roxbury, where his father also was interred.

Ebenezer and Amy (Plympton) Dorr had thirteen children, of whom one son died in infancy. Seven of their sons served in the Revolution, one son dying in Mill Prison.

*IV. Ebenezer (3) Dorr*, son of Ebenezer (2) and Amy (Plympton) Dorr, was born in Roxbury, Massachusetts, March 20, 1738-39. He became a character of picturesque importance in the history of the early days of the American Revolution. On the same night that Paul Revere struck out on his midnight ride to Lexington and Con-

---

NOTE—The related Ames Family appeared in the July issue of "Americana."



## DORR FAMILY

cord across Cambridge Common, Ebenezer Dorr, mounted on a jogging old horse with saddle bags dangling behind him, and with his face concealed by a large flapping hat, looking very much like a country doctor, or indeed a peddler (as he was afterwards mentioned in history), rode out over Boston Neck, through Roxbury and Lexington, rousing the country folks up and "To Arms." He reached Lexington at the same time as his compatriot, Paul Revere, bearing dispatches from General Warren that the British were on the way to destroy military stores at Concord. Soon after leaving Rev. Jonas Clark's house in Lexington, Dorr and Revere were captured by a reconnoitering party of British, but alarmed by the ringing of the country church bells, the enemy released them, and the two patriots dashed on to Concord. (See article on Sullivan Dorr, "The Biographical Cyclopedia of Representative Men of Rhode Island," Providence, 1881).

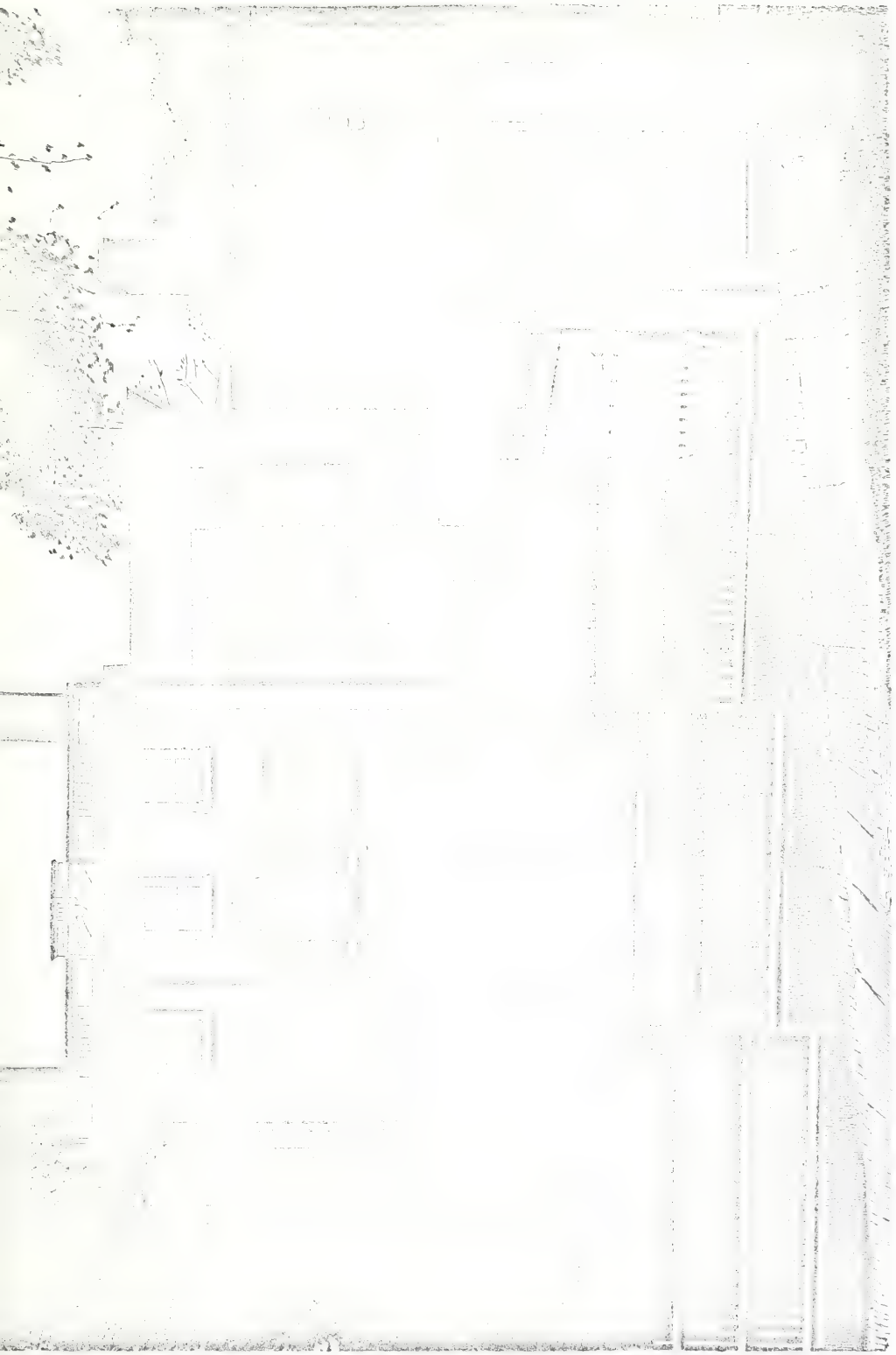
Ebenezer Dorr married (first), January 7, 1762, Abigail Cunningham, of Boston, daughter of William and Elizabeth (Wheeler) Cunningham. He was a resident of Boston at the time of the birth of his son, Sullivan, mentioned below.

V. *Sullivan Dorr*, son of Ebenezer (3) and Abigail (Cunningham) Dorr, was born in Boston, Massachusetts, October 20, 1778. At about twenty years of age he went to Canton, China, where he engaged in mercantile pursuits, and amassed a considerable fortune. Returning to his native country, he took up his residence in Providence, Rhode Island, in 1805, where between 1809-10 he built the "Dorr Mansion," now one of the historic landmarks of Providence. We are told that he was a man of remarkable system, punctilious in all his engagements, industrious and prudent, of the highest integrity, and of scrupulous fidelity to all his obligations. He did not flatter, he did not deceive. After devoting many years to mercantile pursuits, he was chosen, in 1838, to succeed Hon. Richard Jackson as president of the Washington Insurance Company. Twenty years of his life were devoted to the interests of this corporation, which, under his faithful administration, achieved success, and eventually took the highest rank among institutions of a similar character in Providence. He was a trustee of Brown University from 1813 to the end of his life.

Sullivan Dorr died in Providence, March 3, 1858. "No man



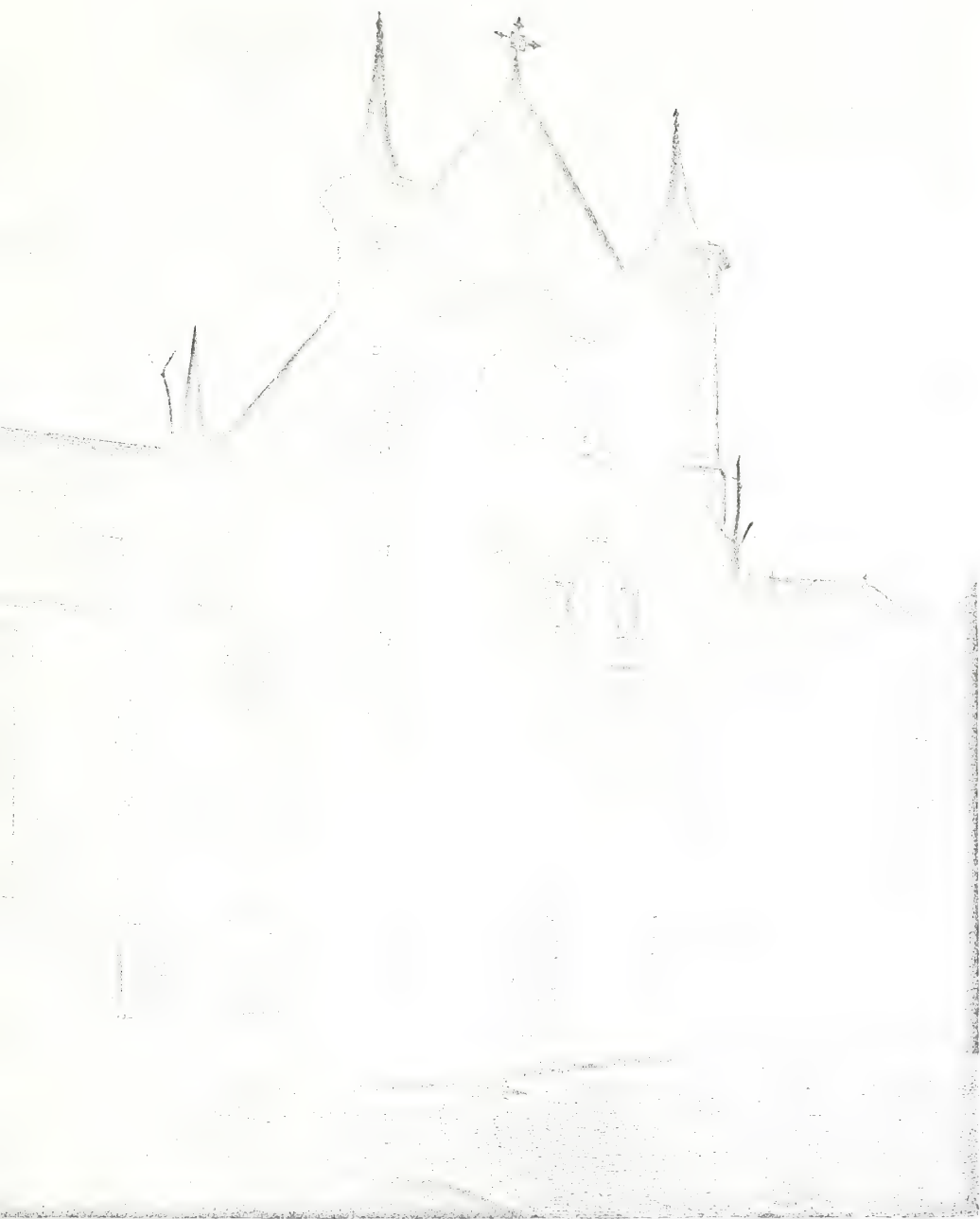




SULLIVAN DORR HOUSE

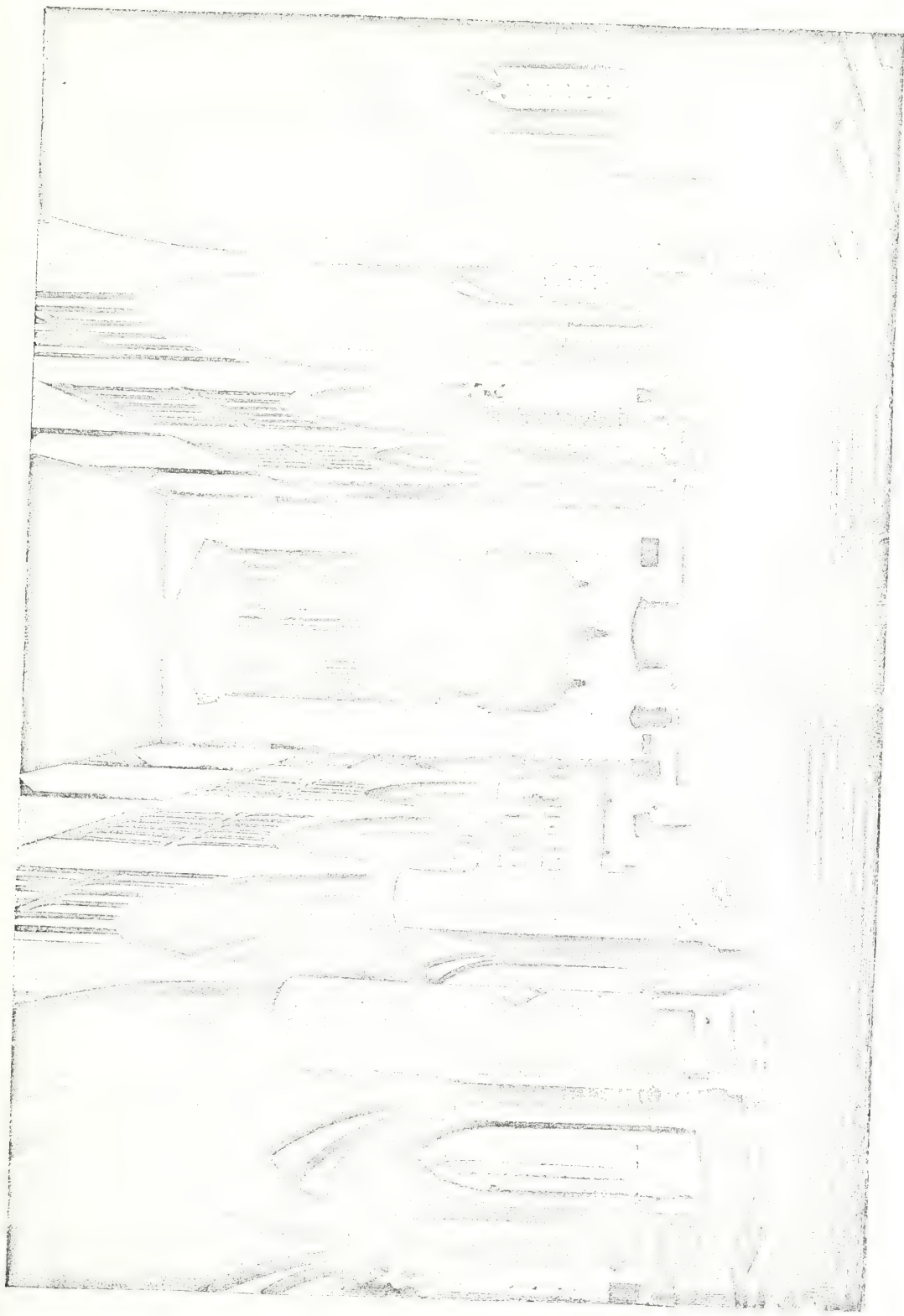
PROVIDENCE, R.I.





ST. PETER'S CHURCH, LEYDEN, HOLLAND.





ST. PETERS CHURCH, LEYDEN, HOLLAND.





*Ann Crawford Allen*

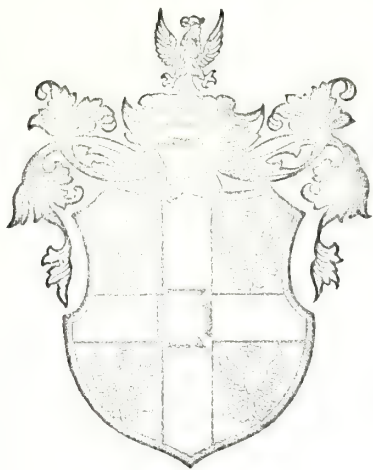




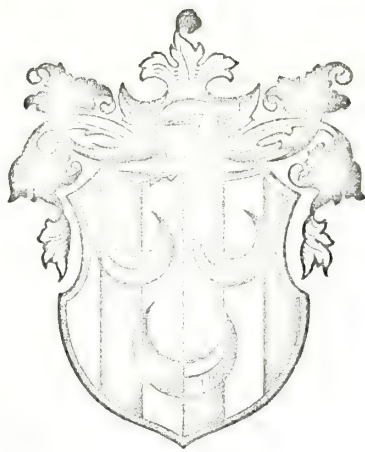


*Lydia (Wren) Dorr*

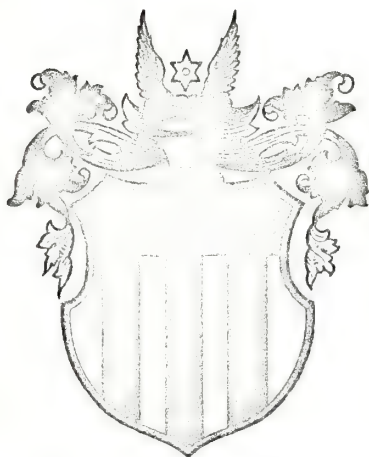




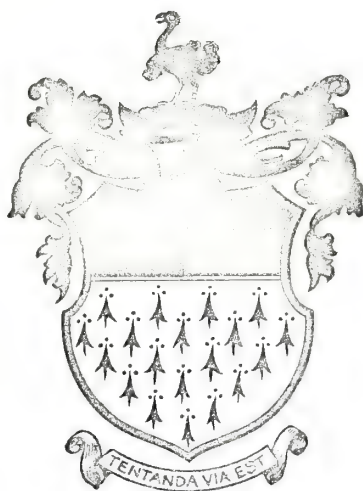
Fenner



Waterman



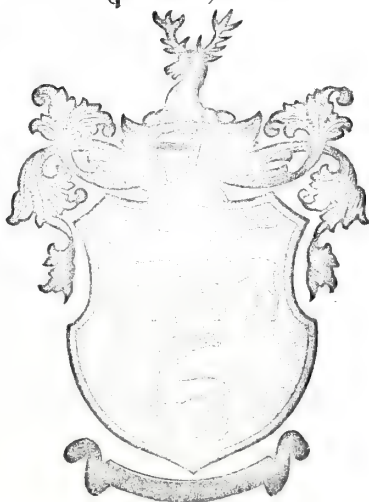
Tew



Peckham



Weedon



Greene.



## DORR FAMILY

among us," said the "Providence Journal," "enjoyed or deserved a higher reputation for the sterling qualities that make up a manly character. Inflexibly honest, courteous in his manners, kind in his feelings, he was respected by all who knew him, and beloved by all who knew him well."

Sullivan Dorr married, October 14, 1804, Lydia Allen, daughter of Zachariah and Ann (Crawford) Allen, of Providence. Their children were: 1. Thomas Wilson, 1805-1854, previously mentioned. 2. Allen. 3. Ann Allen, married Moses Brown Ives. 4. Mary Throop, mentioned below. 5. Sullivan Dorr. 6. Candace Crawford, married Edward Carrington. 7. Henry Crawford.

*VI. Mary Throop Dorr*, daughter of Sullivan and Lydia (Allen) Dorr, and sister of Thomas Wilson Dorr, was born October 16, 1811, and died February 14, 1869. She married, June 27, 1839, Hon. Samuel Ames, of Providence. (See Ames VI, page 305, Volume XVII, "Americana" Magazine.

The family lines of Fenner, Waterman, Bernon, Harris, Tew, Bullock, Richmond, Peckham, Weeden, Greene, Clarke, Almy, Easton, Coggeshall, Borden, Pearce and Gorton, from whom Mrs. Frank A. Sayles can claim descent, are all worthy of mention, but the achievements of these families are too well known matters of Rhode Island history to need especial mention in this chronicle.

Mrs. Sayles is descended from eleven of the *Mayflower* Pilgrims, through the Bullock, Bosworth and Richmond connections on her mother's side; namely: John Howland; John Tilley and daughter, Elizabeth (from whom, also, Mr. Sayles was descended); John (1) Billington and wife, Eleanor; Francis (2) Billington; Thomas Rogers; John Alden; William Mullins and wife, Alice; and his daughter, Priscilla, who became the wife of John Alden.

She is a descendant in the sixth generation from Gabriel Bernon, a French Protestant refugee from La Rochelle, France, whose pedigree can be traced in a direct line to Raoul de Bernon, of La Rochelle, who married, about 1300, Charlotte de Tailmont, and claimed descent from the Dukes of Burgundy.

A curious and distinctly interesting ancestry comes through the Webb family on the maternal line of Judge Samuel (3) Ames.

The Webb family goes back to Sir Alexander Webb, of Gloucestershire, England, born 1474, a general in the armies of Kings Henry VII. and VIII.



## DORR FAMILY

His first child was Henry Webb, who married the daughter of Sir Robert Arden, of Warwickshire, England. From them descended Christopher Webb, of Braintree, who came to this country before 1645, the emigrant ancestor of all the Webbs in America.

The third child of Sir Alexander Webb was Abigail, who married Richard Shakespeare, the grandfather of William Shakespeare, the greatest of English poets and dramatists. This is a side issue, but possesses interest.

The mother of Christopher Webb, the emigrant, was Mary (Wilson) Webb, daughter of Sir Thomas Wilson, who had a most distinguished career. Born 1525, he was educated at Eton and Kings College, Cambridge, and became private tutor to the sons of the Duke of Suffolk. In 1553 he withdrew to the Continent upon the accession of Queen Mary, who ordered him to return to England to be tried as a heretic. This he refused to do and was arrested and imprisoned and tortured by the Inquisition at Rome, but was released upon the death of the Pope, when the populace broke open the prison of the Inquisition. Later he returned to England and became private secretary to Queen Elizabeth, upon her accession to the throne in 1558. He was member of Parliament in 1563, ambassador to the Netherlands, 1576, Privy Councillor and Secretary of State, 1577, and dean of Durham, 1579-80. He died June 16, 1581, in London.

Other interesting genealogical lines lead to Long Island and Connecticut and bring into view the Feake, Fones and Underhill families.

Of the former, Lieutenant Robert Feke was the most noted representative, being an historic founder of Massachusetts Bay Colony, afterwards removing to Greenwich, Connecticut. His wife was Elizabeth (Fones) Winthrop, widow of Henry Winthrop, of London, her cousin. The mother of Elizabeth Fones was Anna Winthrop, sister of Governor John Winthrop, of Massachusetts.

Another ancestor who took an important part in Colonial affairs was Captain John Underhill, who resided successively in Boston, Massachusetts, Dover, New Hampshire, Stamford, Connecticut, and at various towns on Long Island. He, also, was an historic founder of Massachusetts Bay Colony, 1630, and was governor of Dover and Exeter, New Hampshire, 1641. Under the government of Nieuw Netherland he became one of the "Eight Men" in 1645.

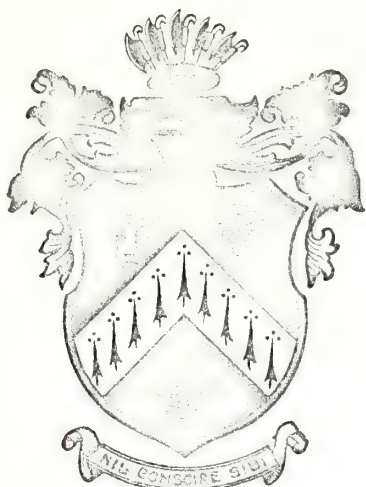




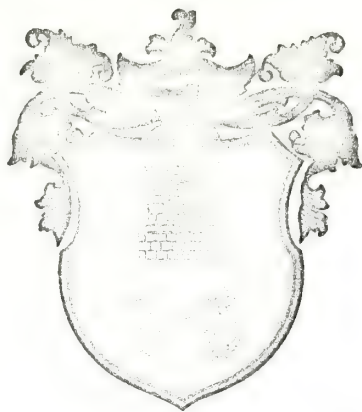


*Robert Fiske*





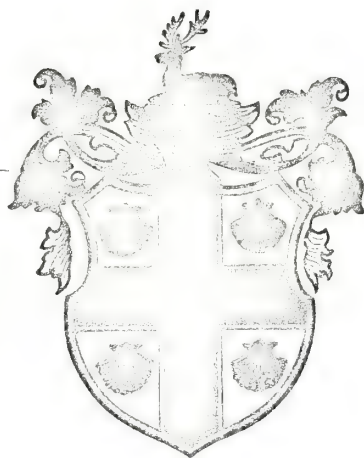
Clarke



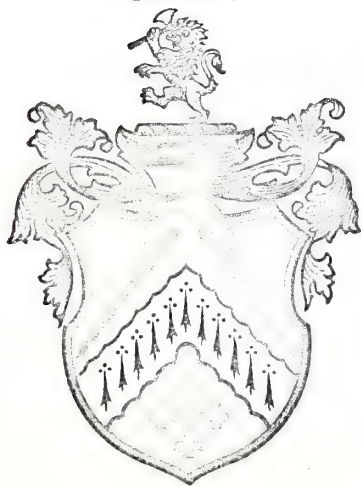
Almy



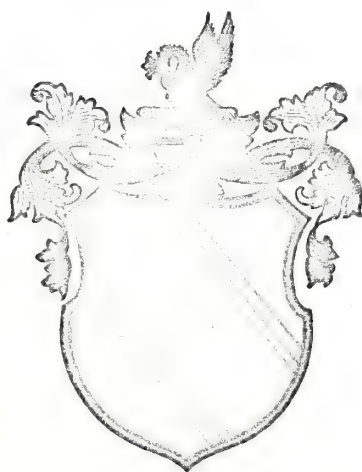
Easton



Coggeshall



Borden



Pearce



## DORR FAMILY

The father of Captain John Underhill was John Underhill, of England, a soldier under Robert Dudley, Earl of Leicestershire, accompanying him to the Netherlands in the war against Spain, 1585.

It would be too long a task to mention the names of all those from whom Mrs. Sayles claims descent, whose Colonial services, both civil and military, entitle them to honorary recognition by the hereditary societies.

By virtue of such service, Mrs. Sayles is a member of the National Society of Colonial Dames in the State of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations, of the Society of Mayflower Descendants in the same, of the Hereditary Order of Descendants of Colonial Governors, and of the Daughters of the American Revolution.

---

EDITOR'S NOTE—The ancestral history of the Ames Family, immediately related to that of the Dorr Family as above, appeared in the mid-summer "Americana." In relation to this we have received just as this number of our magazine was going to press, the following from a valued contributor, Charles W. Super, LL.D., of Athens, Ohio, an educator and author of international reputation, and which is an important addition to matter hitherto appearing upon our pages.

MR. EDITOR—Referring to your genealogy of the Ames Family, appearing in your last issue, it may be of interest to you to learn that said family has a permanent memorial in this county (Athens), in the name of a township and a village. Amesville and Ames township received their name from Silvanus Ames, who was born in Bridgewater, Massachusetts, in 1771. "Judge Ames," as he was familiarly called, was one of the early political leaders of southeastern Ohio. One of his sons was Bishop Ames, a famous divine of the Methodist Episcopal Church. He must have made himself a man of mark early in his ministerial career. Although he had spent most of his life in the West, he was elected to the Episcopate at a General Conference in Boston in 1852. In the village of Amesville, Ohio, was established the first public library in the Northwest Territory. The date of the "Laws and Regulations" is February, 1804. Some of the books are still in existence.





## Mrs. William Lawson Peel

BY JOHN P. DOWNS, BROOKLYN, NEW YORK.



PREEMINENTLY a leader, Mrs. William Lawson Peel came of an old régime, and in her life the finest idealism and the tenderest sentiment of an ante-bellum Dixie found expression, she an ambassador of the Old South at the court of the new. She was a true daughter of the Confederacy, her father wearing the Gray, and although but a child when the wild forces were loosened, her heart was enlisted and she gave proof of her devotion in a thousand tender ministries to the cause that "rose without shame and fell without dishonor." By heredity and environment distinctively a Georgian, she was also made by the same forces intensively an American. She did much to heal the breach between the sections by going back to the fountain head of patriotism and emphasizing the great things in common between the North and the South.

When the United States entered the World War in 1917, Mrs. Peel quickly evinced by her stalwart Americanism the fact that she was of fighting blood. Like a true soldier, she was night and day at her post, and with a constancy that never faltered she gave her country's cause her labors and her prayers. She came of regnant family, in her long line of distinguished ancestry reaching back to the manor halls of England. She was in undisputed fact "the daughter of a hundred earls." She was a granddaughter of Major Philip Cook, the first commandant at Fort Hawkins, then on the western frontier of Georgia, and her aunt, Mrs. Winship, was the first child of Anglo-Saxon parents born on the site of the present city of Macon. Her father, General Philip Cook, was commander of a brigade in the Confederate army, and in later years represented the Americus district in Congress for several terms. He was the commissioner appointed on behalf of the State of Georgia with others to form a body charged with supervising the building of the new State Capitol at Atlanta. Later he was Secretary of State, and in after years his son, Philip Cook, filled the same high office. Gen-





## MRS. WILLIAM LAWSON PEEL

eral Philip Cook married Sarah Lumpkin, a daughter of the famed Lumpkin family that gave Georgia a Chief Justice and several Supreme and Superior Court judges, a governor, and several members of Congress. General Philip and Sarah (Lumpkin) Cook were the parents of Lucy Marion Cook—Mrs. William Lawson Peel, of Atlanta.

Lucy Marion Cook was born on her father's extensive plantation in Schley county, Georgia, November 13, 1849, and died at her home on Peachtree street, Atlanta, Georgia, February 16, 1923. After completing her preparatory education, she entered Wesleyan Female College at Macon, whence she was graduated with honors. It is of interest to know that Wesleyan Female College at Macon was the first institution to confer upon a woman a diploma carrying with it a recognized college degree.

On April 22, 1874, in Washington, D. C., her father then a member of Congress, Lucy Marion Cook married Colonel William Lawson Peel, of an early Colonial Georgia family, who survives her, a distinguished banker, merchant and civic leader of the Empire State of the South. Four children were born to Colonel and Mrs. Peel: 1. Lucy Cook, married William H. Kiser, of Atlanta. 2. William Lawson (2), who died in his thirteenth year. 3. Sarah Elizabeth, married Dr. Stephen H. Watts, of Virginia. 4. Marion Crompton, married Dr. Ferdinand Phinizy Calhoun, of Atlanta.

At the Peel home on Peachtree street, Atlanta, many distinguished visitors were entertained and a charming hospitality was dispensed. There with gracious manner the hostess, a radiantly gifted woman, received her friends with a dignity and beauty which captivated all hearts.

Mrs. Peel's interests in life were many and widely varied. Although at her passing she was almost ready to celebrate her golden wedding day, and she had reached the Psalmist's "three score years and ten," she was mentally so vigorous, energetic and alert as to cast a doubt upon the correctness of the record of her years. She was a woman of deep and tender emotions, yet practical and wise, with a clear vision and equal to any task, dealing with large problems with a rare grasp of understanding. With penetrating instinct she went direct to the kernel of a problem, and moreover she had a genius for command which was recognized and respected. Though her own interests were centered in her own State, there



## MRS. WILLIAM LAWSON PEEL

was hardly a phase of American life that her interest did not compass, and all movements for the betterment of the people anywhere met with her hearty support and coöperation.

Perhaps the great public interest of the life of this many-sided versatile woman of genius was the Daughters of the American Revolution. She founded Joseph Habersham Chapter of that society, of which she was made honorary life regent, and in which her memory is forever enshrined. The beautiful home of the chapter, a replica of the Joseph Habersham home in Savannah, is an enduring monument to her, for that home, built in Atlanta at a cost of seventy-five thousand dollars, is due largely to her activities and untiring zeal in directing the campaign. Mrs. Peel was elected State Regent of the Daughters of the American Revolution, and after retiring from that office accepted the office of Vice-President General of the National Society for the State of Georgia, and in both these high positions that brought her prominently into the public eye she bore herself with a poise, grace and charm that won her high commendation.

It was Mrs. Peel's pride in the resources of her native State that gave birth to Georgia Products Day, an annual festival, now one of the fixed events of the calendar. The effect of this movement in stimulating the development of the State's material resources has been most pronounced.

Mrs. Peel, who had come to a full realization of the vital importance of records, was one of the first to plead for the adequate safeguarding of Georgia archives, not only those in the State Capitol, but those in different counties, and it is gratifying to know that largely to the interest she aroused resulted the creation of a State Department of Archives, and the erection of fireproof buildings at many county seats.

Mrs. Peel wrote with vigor, and her articles, abounding in epigram and graceful expression, long remained in the memory of the readers. Many of the phrases she coined became slogans; any contribution in the public prints bearing her name was sure of a wide, interested circle of readers, and as her articles were always along constructive lines and practical, she was able to institute many reforms and attain fruitful results. She compiled and issued three volumes of genealogy as Joseph Habersham publications, these volumes being on the shelves of most of the public libraries in the United States, and in constant demand.



## MRS. WILLIAM LAWSON PEEL

In association with her honored husband, Colonel William L. Peel, she was helpful in making Atlanta the musical metropolis of the South, and as a patron of grand opera Colonel Peel has been president of the Atlanta Music Festival Association from its beginning, and to that association Atlanta owes its annual season of Metropolitan Grand Opera, a season that attracts music lovers in annual pilgrimage to Atlanta from hundreds of miles around, thousands making the journey for this express purpose. Georgia Day, February 12, has been alluded to as a monument to Mrs. Peel's public spirit, and another is Roosevelt Boulevard, a tribute to President Roosevelt, who both received and conferred an honor in their friendship, which was marked by mutual admiration. Roosevelt Boulevard is the old highway running a distance of eighteen miles between Atlanta and Roswell, the old home of the ex-President's mother. After Mr. Roosevelt's death, Mrs. Peel secured the passage of a resolution changing the name of the highway to Roosevelt Boulevard.

Mrs. Peel was a member of St. Mark's Methodist Episcopal Church, South. Her religion was of the practical kind, and found expression in kindly deeds. She was ever the friend of those in distress, and a patron of talent of every kind if in need of a patron. One of numerous similar instances will here be noted. Finding on one occasion a talented musician doing menial work and living in quarters where an atmosphere existed stifling to genius and wholly uncongenial, Mrs. Peel never rested until she had placed this gifted woman in her proper environment. It was not unusual for her to introduce people before gatherings in her own home, and that introduction would open the way to recognition, employment and success.

To sum up the character of Mrs. Peel: "She was a woman of varied interests, of deep convictions, of generous impulses, of wide horizons; intolerant of sham, of pretense, of falsehood, but loyal to righteousness and to truth. In an age of drifting, she held fast to the Rock of Ages. Immortality to her was an assured fact. With her the blue of heaven was always vaster than the clouds. Neither was she troubled by doubts, fears or misgivings, but went to her grave as she went to her sleep—to find at the end of the starlight the beginning of the dawn—a sunrise beyond the shadows."





## Editorial—Literary Notes

---

“A Life of Francis Amasa Walker, by James Phinney Munroe; the Biography of an Eminent American.” Henry Holt & Co., New York.

The above entitled work presents the career of one of the really useful men of his day—one who served well as a soldier in the War for the Union, and in various distinguished civil capacities afterward. Born in Boston, in 1840, he was graduated from Amherst College at the age of twenty, third in a class of twenty-eight, the winner of prizes for essay writing and extempore speaking, and recipient of the Phi Beta Kappa key. He had also displayed proficiency as a writer, particularly in the field of economics, his first effort being a contribution to the “National Era,” of Washington, D. C., on “Thoughts on the Hard Times,” this written in his seventeenth year, in 1857, the year of a great financial panic. Immediately after graduation, he took up law studies in the offices of Devens and Hoar in Worcester, Massachusetts, the distinguished lawyers under whom he was reading being that General Charles Devens of Civil War fame and Attorney General in President Hayes’ Cabinet, and Senator George Frisbie Hoar. During the latter part of this period he was drilling with a rifle battalion commanded by Devens as major, and when that body was called to the field, young Walker sought to accompany it but was held back by his father, who considered him not sufficiently robust. In July of the first war year (1861), having attained his majority, he entered the army with the rank of sergeant-major, but was shortly afterward commissioned as a captain in the Adjutant General’s staff corps, and eventually was made brigadier-general by brevet, for particularly conspicuous service in the battle of Chancellorsville. Notable incidents of his military career were his capture by the enemy, his escape, and recapture. He was a prolific correspondent, but the details of his soldier experiences find sparing narration, for the reason that only a few of his many letters to his relatives were pre-

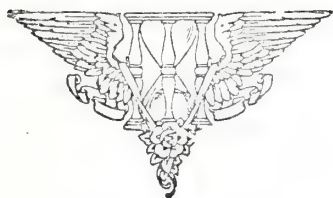




## EDITORIAL

served, he believing and his family agreeing that a letter once read and answered should be destroyed.

Returning to civil life, General Walker for a time taught in a seminary, and served as an editorial writer on the "Springfield (Mass.) Republican." In 1869 he was appointed to a position in the Interior Department in the national capital, and was soon made Superintendent of the Ninth Census under appointment by President Grant. He was subsequently Commissioner of Indian Affairs, a Professor in Yale University, and president of the Massachusetts Institute of Technology. He was the author of several works, two of which marked him as the leading economist of America—"The Wages Question," published in 1877, which was made part of the curriculum at Oxford, and "Political Economy," published in 1883. He was the first president of the American Economic Association, and filled many other positions of usefulness and honor. He died at the early age of fifty-seven.





# INDEX

Vol. XVII

January, 1923—December, 1923

Ames Family, Mrs. Herold R. Finley.....	303
Ancestral Heads of New England Families (Conclusion), Frank R. Holmes .....	Appendix No. 1
Baker Line, The .....	112
Beginnings of Education, The; Connecticut, the First State to Institute Common Schools, Henry A. Tirrell.....	160
Beginnings of Bristol County, Massachusetts; The Story of Massasoit, Elizabeth Poole and Zerviah Mitchell, Frank Walcott Hutt .....	231
Bicknell, Thomas W., The Narragansett Trail.....	40
Bingham, William, Founder of City of Binghamton, William F. Seward .....	128
Bust of William Pitt, Presented to the City of Pittsburgh.....	153
Champe, John, Patriot Spy of the Revolution, Daniel Van Winkle .....	310
Clark, Will L., Valley Forge, Its Park and Memorials.....	263
Connecticut College, Rev. Benjamin T. Marshall, D. D.....	32
Cory-Corrie Line, The.....	111
Darby Line, The .....	113
Dorr Family, Mrs. Herold R. Finley .....	465
Downs, John P., Mrs. William Lawson Peel.....	470
Dunn, Jacob P., Misunderstood Mythology.....	180
Marquette's Monsters .....	102
Early Discoveries and Explorations, Frank R. Holmes.....	86
Editorials .....	110, 225, 353, 474
Eno, Joel N., Highland Scottish Clans, Sub-Clans and Families Represented in America, with Origin of Their Names..	315, 436
Finley, Mrs. Herold R., Ames Family.....	303
Dorr Family .....	465

(iii)



Sayles Family .....	192
Golden Chain of Memory, The; Cape May, Carmita de Solms Jones .....	64
Hackensack; County Seat of Bergen County, New Jersey, Frances A. Westervelt.....	278
Hathaway, Carson C., The Story of Arlington National Ceme- tery .....	145
Highland Scottish Clans, Sub-Clans and Families Represented in America, with Origin of Their Names, Joel N. Eno, A. M. ....	315, 436
Historic Pilgrim Shrines, Mrs. Alton Brooks Parker (Amelia Day Campbell) .....	357
History of Buffalo, Article from—Literature of Buffalo.....	1
Holmes, Frank R., Early Discoveries and Explorations.....	86
Ancestral Heads of New England Families (Conclusion) .....	Appendix No. 1
Palisades Interstate Park.....	186
Honeyman, A. Van Doren, Plainfield, New Jersey.....	214
Hutt, Frank Walcott, Beginnings of Bristol County, Massa- chusetts; The Story of Massasoit, Elizabeth Poole and Zerviah Mitchell .....	231
Indians of Bergen County, New Jersey, The, Frances A. West- ervelt .....	388
Ingraham, Dr. Charles A., Sir William Johnson, His Character and Public Services .....	117
Old-Time Elocutionary Books.....	427
Johnson, Sir William, His Character and Public Services, Dr. Charles A. Ingraham.....	117
Jones, Carmita de Solms, The Golden Chain of Memory; Cape May .....	64
Literature of Buffalo, From "History of Buffalo".....	1
Marquette's Monsters, Jacob P. Dunn.....	102
Marshall, Rev. Benjamin T., D. D., Connecticut College.....	32
Misunderstood Mythology, Jacob P. Dunn.....	180
Narragansett Trail, The, Thomas W. Bicknell.....	40
Old-Time Elocutionary Books, Charles A. Ingraham.....	427
Palisades Interstate Park, Frank R. Holmes.....	186
Parker, Mrs. Alton Brooks (Amelia Day Campbell), Historic Pilgrim Shrines .....	357



# INDEX

v

Peel, Mrs. William Lawson, John P. Downs.....	470
Pettingell, Frank R. Hervey, Contributed.....	203
Pierson and Allied Families, Clyde F. Ryan.....	110
Plainfield, New Jersey, A. Van Doren Honeyman.....	214
Pittsburgh, City of, Bust of William Pitt Presented to.....	153
Ryan, Clyde F., Pierson and Allied Families.....	110
Sayles Family, Mrs. Herold R. Finley.....	192
Scotch-Irish in Pennsylvania, The, E. Melvin Williams.....	374
Seward, William F., William Bingham, Founder of City of Binghamton .....	128
Story of Arlington National Cemetery, The, Carson C. Hatha- way .....	145
Tirrell, Henry A., The Beginnings of Education; Connecticut the First State to Institute Common Schools.....	160
Valley Forge, Its Park and Memorials, Will L. Clark.....	263
Van Winkle, Daniel, John Champe, Patriot Spy of the Revolu- tion .....	310
Westervelt, Frances A., Hackensack, County Seat of Bergen County, New Jersey.....	278
The Indians of Bergen County, New Jersey.....	388
Williams, E. Melvin, The Scotch-Irish in Pennsylvania.....	374





# ILLUSTRATIONS

---

	Facing Page
Alden, Coat of Arms.....	465
Allen, Coat of Arms.....	465
Allen, Ann Crawford, Steel Engraving.....	Between pages 466-467
American Legion Club House, Binghamton, New York.....	141
Arlington Memorial Amphitheatre, Arlington National Cemetery	150
Almy, Coat of Arms.....	Between pages 468-469
Ames, Coat of Arms.....	303
Ames, Judge Samuel, Steel Engraving.....	Between pages 306-307
Ames, Mary Throop Dorr, Steel Engraving...Between pages 306-307	
Ames, Mary Townsend Bullock, Steel Engraving.....	
.....Between pages 308-309	308-309
Ames, Commander Sullivan Dorr, U. S. N., Steel Engraving....	
.....Between pages 308-309	308-309
Angell, Coat of Arms.....	Between pages 194-195
Arnold, Coat of Arms.....	Between pages 200-201
Arnoldia Relics, Charlestown, Rhode Island, Exhumed 1921....	61
Baker, Coat of Arms.....	Between pages 112-113
Broome, Colonel .....	Frontispiece No. 2
Darby, Coat of Arms.....	Between pages 114-115
Bernon, Coat of Arms.....	465
Bingham, William .....	128
Binghamton Club, Binghamton, New York.....	141
Borden, Coat of Arms.....	Between pages 468-469
Blackstone House, Connecticut College.....	37
Branford House, Connecticut College.....	35
Brant, Joseph (Thayendanegea), War Chief of the Iroquois, Brother of Molly Brant.....	120
Buffalo Academy of Music, As Reconstructed 1893.....	19
Buffalo Historical Society Building.....	29
Buffalo Public Library.....	27
Bullock, Coat of Arms.....	Between pages 308-309
Chorley Parish Church, England.....	360



Clarke, Coat of Arms.....	Between pages 468-469
Coggeshall, Coat of Arms.....	Between pages 468-469
Cold Spring School House, Last Days of.....	4
Commemorative Stone and Tablet on the Barbican, Plymouth, England .....	Between pages 198-199
Communipaw, New Jersey, from old print.....	95
Confederate Soldiers' Memorial, Arlington National Cemetery..	145
Conventional "Piasa Bird".....	183
Coronation Rock, Charlestown, Rhode Island.....	61
Cory, Coat of Arms.....	Between pages 112-113
Cory, L., Steel Engraving.....	Between pages 112-113
Court House, Buffalo, Built 1816, Taken down 1876.....	23
Crawford, Coat of Arms.....	465
Cross and Stocks, Standish, England.....	357
Davenport, Jonas, Original Recommendation of.....	379
Dorr, Coat of Arms.....	465
Dorr, Sullivan House, Providence, R. I., Steel Engraving.....	466-467
Dorr, Lydia (Allen), Steel Engraving.....	Between pages 466-467
Dorr, Thomas Wilson, Steel Engraving.....	Between pages 308-309
Dragon and Man-Child.....	180
Dragon as included in "Fauna of Canada," by Champlain.....	183
Embarkation of the Pilgrims, Steel Engraving.....	Between pages 200-201
Oratam, John Ettl's Statue of.....	388
Feke, Robert, Steel Engraving.....	Between pages 468-469
Fenner, Coat of Arms.....	Between pages 466-467
Fillmore, President .....	1
Forty Men's Graves, 1675, at Cocumscussuc, near Wickford, Rhode Island .....	53
Franklin, Benjamin .....	381
Freeman, Coat of Arms.....	Between pages 194-195
Fulton County Jail, during the Revolution known as Fort Johns- town .....	123
Fulton, Robert, Inventor of Navigation by Steam.....	385
Gaston, Coat of Arms.....	Between pages 468-469
Gorton, Coat of Arms.....	Between pages 308-309
Grant, Ulysses S., General, Autograph letter of.....	148
Greene, Coat of Arms.....	Between pages 466-467
Hackensack, New Jersey, About 1820.....	278



Hackensack, New Jersey, The Green in 1780.....	278
Harris, Coat of Arms.....	Between pages 308-309
Hinds, Sergeant, House in Binghamton, New York.....	134
Hoboken, New Jersey, View of, 1856.....	99
Hopkins, Coat of Arms.....	Between pages 200-201
Howland, Coat of Arms.....	465
Hudson River, The, Castle Point, the Elysian Fields, near Hoboken, New Jersey .....	97
Indians frightening off Eclipse of the Moon.....	180
Inman, Coat of Arms.....	Between pages 194-195
Iron Triangle hung in belfry of county Court House of Johnstown in 1772.....	125
Johnson, Sir William, Hall .....	121
Johnson, Sir William, Indian Superintendent for all British America .....	117
Johnson, Sir William, Monument erected by Johnstown Aldine Society, 1905 .....	125
King George's Crown, Homespun Blanket.....	285
Landing of the Pilgrims, Steel Engraving.....	Between pages 200-201
Leonard, Captain Joseph, Residence near Binghamton, New York .....	134
Library, Connecticut College for Women.....	32
Map showing Hudson Anchorage and entrance into New York Bay .....	86
Mausoleum of Admiral Dewey, Arlington National Cemetery..	145
Mayflower Compact.....	Between pages 304-305
Mayflower, The, Steel Engraving.....	Between pages 192-193
Maxfield, Louis Henry, Grave of.....	150
Memorial Tablet, "In Memory of Wausaunia," Rebecca Kellogg Ashley .....	130
Mitchell, Melinda (Teeweeleema), Descendant of Massasoit....	237
Monument of Miss Pool, Taunton Cemetery, Massachusetts....	247
Monument to Archibald Butt, Arlington National Cemetery....	150
Monument marking site of Battle of Johnstown.....	125
Monument with original mast of the Maine, Arlington National Cemetery .....	145
Mullins, Coat of Arms.....	Between pages 194-195
New London Hall, Science Building, Connecticut College.....	35



Old and New Capitols of Pennsylvania.....	387
Old Camp School House, Valley Forge, Pennsylvania.....	267
Old Camp School House, Interior of, Valley Forge, Penna.....	267
Olney, Coat of Arms.....	Between pages 194-195
Paine, Robert Treat, Signer of Declaration of Independence....	
.....	Frontispiece No. 3
Pearce, Coat of Arms.....	Between pages 468-469
Peckham, Coat of Arms.....	Between pages 466-469
Penn, Thomas, Proprietor of Pennsylvania.....	377
Penn, William, Proclamation of the Charter to, April 1681.....	374
Perry, Oliver Hazard, Statue.....	Frontispiece No. 1
Pierson Coat of Arms.....	Between pages 110-111
Pierson, Hettie M., Steel Engraving.....	Between pages 110-111
Pierson Homestead, Westfield, New Jersey, (Remodeled by Miss Hettie M. Pierson, 1917).....	Between pages 110-111
Pierson Homestead, Westfield, New Jersey, (Residence of Theophilus and Oliver M. Pierson) Built 1801.....	
.....	Between pages 110-111
Pierson, Oliver M., Steel Engraving.....	Between pages 110-111
Pierson, Sarah, Steel Engraving.....	Between pages 110-111
Pillory and Stocks, Standish, England.....	363
Plant House, Connecticut College.....	37
Plymouth Rock, Steel Engraving.....	Between pages 304-305
Rate of Toll, Bergen, New Jersey, Turnpike Co.....	293
Roger Williams Trading House, Floor Timbers and Cellar Wall, Built in 1644 .....	53
Rhodes, Coat of Arms.....	Between pages 194-195
Richmond, Coat of Arms.....	Between pages 308-309
Saleholme, Steel Engraving.....	203
Sayles, Coat of Arms.....	Between pages 192-193
Sayles, F. A., Steel Engraving.....	Between pages 198-199
Sayles, Mary Wilkinson (Fessenden), Steel Engraving.....	
.....	Between pages 196-197
Sayles, M. F., Steel Engraving.....	Between pages 196-197
Signing of the Compact in the Cabin of the Mayflower, 1620, Steel Engraving .....	Between pages 304-305
Signers of the Declaration of Independence, Portraits of the...	
.....	Frontispiece No. 4





Standish Cross, Standish, England.....	363
Standish Hall, Standish, England.....	357
Standish Pew, Chorley Parish Church, England.....	361
Steere, Coat of Arms.....	Between pages 194-195
St. Peter's Church, Leyden, Holland (Interior), Steel Engraving .....	Between pages 466-467
St. Peter's Church, Leyden, Holland, Steel Engraving.....	Between pages 466-467
St. John's Episcopal Church, Johnstown, New York, (Original Church and insert).....	126
Taunton, Massachusetts, The Common with Old Court House..	231
Taunton, Massachusetts, Green, 1839.....	247
Tavern, John Hopper's, Signboard, at Hopperstown, (Now Hohokus, New Jersey).....	291
Tew, Coat of Arms.....	Between pages 466-467
Tilley, Coat of Arms.....	Between pages 200-201
Tomb of unknown soldier of World War, Arlington National Cemetery .....	150
Tomb of 2111 unknown dead, Arlington National Cemetery....	145
Tryon County (N. Y.) Court House and County Clerk's Office, Original (Insert) .....	121
Townsend, Coat of Arms.....	Between pages 308-309
Valley Forge, Pennsylvania, Massachusetts Monument, National Arch, Fort Washington, and Continental Army Hut:....	265
Washington's Headquarters, Valley Forge, Pennsylvania.....	276
Washington Memorial Chapel, Valley Forge, Pennsylvania....	263
Waterman, Coat of Arms.....	Between pages 466-467
Weeden, Coat of Arms.....	Between pages 466-467
Wilkinson, Coat of Arms.....	Between pages 200-201
Williams, Coat of Arms.....	Between pages 194-195
Winthrop, Coat of Arms.....	Between pages 308-309
Winsor, Coat of Arms.....	Between pages 194-195
Whipple, Coat of Arms.....	Between pages 194-195















